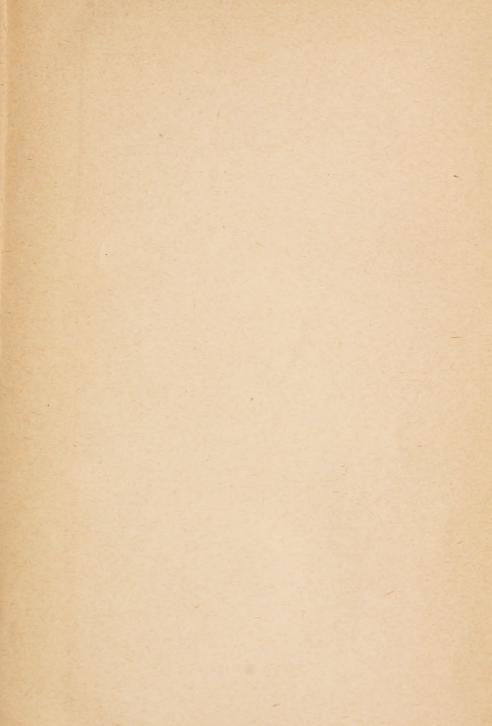


Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2008 with funding from Microsoft Corporation





# PLATO'S REPUBLIC

JOWETT AND CAMPBELL

#### London

#### HENRY FROWDE

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE AMEN CORNER, E.C.



Mew York

MACMILLAN & CO., 66 FIFTH AVENUE

# PLATO'S REPUBLIC

## THE GREEK TEXT

EDITED, WITH NOTES AND ESSAYS

BY THE LATE

## B. JOWETT, M.A.

MASTER OF BALLIOL COLLEGE REGIUS PROFESSOR OF GREEK IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD DOCTOR IN THEOLOGY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF LEYDEN

AND

### LEWIS CAMPBELL, M.A., LL.D.

HONORARY FELLOW OF BALLIOL COLLEGE EMERITUS PROFESSOR OF GREEK IN THE UNIVERSITY OF ST. ANDREWS



VOL. III. NOTE

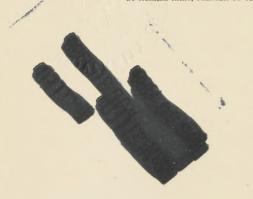
Drford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

PA 4279 R4 1894 V, 3

### Orford

PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS
BY HORACE HART, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY



# CONTENTS OF VOL. III

NOTES TO	THE	KEPUBI	LIC -					
								PAGES
Воок	Ι.							1-56
Воок	ΙΙ				•	,		57-108
Воок	III							109-161
Воок	ΙV				,		,	161-209
Воок	V .		,				,	209-262
Воок	VI		,					262-313
Воок	VII			,	. 1			314-359
Воок	VII	Ι.	,					359-406
Воок	IX	p						407-439
Воок	Χ				187			439-484
					23 26 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12 12			
INDEX .			,					485-512



## NOTES ON THE REPUBLIC OF PLATO

#### BOOK I.

**The second title**,  $\pi \epsilon \rho i \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \sigma v$ , found in Par. A and Republic other MSS., is probably a later addition. The plural form, πολιτειῶν  $\gamma'$ ,  $\delta'$ ,  $\epsilon'$ , &c., also occurs.

The scene is laid in the house of Cephalus at the Peiraeus, and the whole discourse is supposed to be repeated by Socrates the day after it actually took place. To the Republic as to the Charmides, Lysis, Parmenides, and in a less degree to the Protagoras, Euthydemus, Symposium and Phaedo, Plato has given the form of a narrated dialogue. By this device he is enabled to combine description with dramatic effect.

The unfinished trilogy of the Timaeus, Critias, and Hermocrates professes to be a continuation of the Republic (cp. Tim. ad init.), but may have been added long afterwards (cp. the parallel relation of the Sophist and Statesman to the Theaetetus, which last would seem, from a comparison of the style, to have been written at an earlier time). The Republic contains no hint of the more comprehensive scheme. In the Timaeus Socrates is represented as having on the previous day set forth the principles of his ideal commonwealth to a select company, consisting of Timaeus, Critias, Hermocrates, and a fourth person, whose name is not mentioned.

**ΤΑ ΤΟΥ ΔΙΑΛΟΓΟΥ ΠΡΟΣΩΠΑ**] Socrates is the principal speaker, the chief interlocutors being Glaucon and Adeimantus, the sons of Ariston and Perictione, and brothers of Plato, who, like a painter, introduces the names and portraits of his family in several of his

VOL. III.

1 9

Republic I.

dialogues (himself and Adeimantus in the Apology; Charmides and Critias in the Charmides; Critias in the Timaeus and Critias; Adeimantus, Glaucon, and Antiphon in the Parmenides). There are present also Thrasymachus, the sophist, who is 'charmed' into silence at the end of the First Book (cp. ii. 358 B), Cephalus and his eldest son Polemarchus, who soon vanish from the scene, Lysias (the orator) and Euthydemus, also sons of Cephalus, Niceratus the son of Nicias (cp. the Laches), Charmantides and Cleitophon. The last five, if we except a few words from Cleitophon (i. 340 A, B), are mute auditors. The circumstances of the opening scene are quickly lost sight of. Polemarchus once again appears, v. 449 B. Thrasymachus interposes once in v. 450, and is made the subject of a good-humoured remark in vi. 498 c.

Critics have discussed at length not only the date at which the Republic was written, which can only be approximately guessed at, but the date which the author intended to be represented in it. The year assumed by Boeckh 1 for the imaginary scene is 411 or 410 B.C. Most of the characters in the Republic and also in the Timaeus and Critias agree with this date. Socrates himself was then about fifty-seven or fifty-eight years old, Lysias had just returned from Thurii to Athens in 411; the calamities of the year of the thirty had not yet fallen upon his house; Prodicus and possibly also Protagoras, both of whom are referred to as living persons in x. 600 c, may have been still alive (the date of Protagoras' death is quite uncertain: Prodicus is spoken of as a living person in the Apology). Hermocrates, if, as is probable, the Syracusan general of that name is intended in the Timaeus, may well have been at Athens at the time, after his banishment, and on his way to Pharnabazus. The minor discrepancy respecting the death of Cephalus, which is said by the pseudo-Plutarch (Vit. Or. iii. 3) to have occurred before the settlement of Lysias at Thurii (B.C. 443), is not worth noticing. Even if we accept this last statement on such authority,—and it is more or less contradicted by Lysias,—there is no reason to suppose that Plato would have cared about accuracy in such a minute detail. He is careless of such dramatic proprieties. His dialogues, like the plays of Shakespeare, are works of fiction, which have only a certain degree of historical truth. Many anachronisms occur in them, e.g. Ismenias the Theban, who did not become famous until some time after

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> De tempore quo Plato Rempublicam peroratam finxerit, dissertationes III: K'leine Schriften, iv. 437 sqq.

Republic

3

Socrates' death, is mentioned by him in the Republic (i. 336 A) among great potentates; in the Menexenus, Aspasia, the mistress of Pericles, continues her survey of Greek history down to the peace of Antalcidas, B. c. 387; in the Symposium (193 A), Aristophanes, at the banquet of Agathon, which is supposed to have taken place in 416 B. C., uses an illustration taken from the dismemberment of Arcadia, or rather of Mantinea, by the Lacedaemonians (B. C. 385). It is doubtful whether Parmenides and Socrates can ever have met, as they are said to have done in the Theaetetus (183 E), Sophist (217 c), and Parmenides (127 B); and certainly the meeting is not to be taken as historical on the authority of Plato. These examples are enough to show that Plato is not to be appealed to as an authority for the dates of his dramatis personae, any more than Shakespeare or Sir Walter Scott. It is not known at what date the worship of Bendis was introduced in Attica, though it appears to be referred to in an inscription found at Salamis (Foucart, Associations religieuses, p. 209), but for the reason just stated this point is likewise unimportant.

To defend uncertain, or try to reconcile inconsistent, statements in a work of imagination is out of place and alien to the true spirit of criticism.

Socrates and Glaucon are about to return from the Peiraeus after a festival, when they are detained by Polemarchus. He takes them pp. 327 A home with him, and Socrates enters into conversation with Cephalus, the aged father of the household.

- C. Age is in itself a time of peace. The sorrows of old men are to be attributed to their own faults and tempers.
- S. The world will say that you are happy in old age because you are rich.
- C. Neither a bad rich man can be happy in age, nor a good poor man.
  - S. What is the chief advantage of riches?
- C. Not to have deceived any one in word or deed, and to have paid one's debts to gods and men.
- S. But is justice simply to speak the truth and pay your debts, or are there exceptions to this rule?
  - C. Yes, there are.
- 'And yet,' interrupts Polemarchus, 'the definition which has been given has the authority of Simonides.'

Cephalus retires to look after the sacrifices.

Republic I.

A

KATE BHN χθές] The old anecdote that the words with which the Republic opens were found after Plato's death with various transpositions in his tablets—which is narrated by Diogenes Laertius (fl. 200? A. D.) on the authority of Euphorion (fl. circa 241 B. C.) and Panaetius (185?—110? B. C.)—Diog. Laert. iii. 25. 37 Εὐφορίων δὲ καὶ Παναίτιος εἰρήκασι πολλάκις ἐστραμμένην εὐρῆσθαι τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς πολιτείας—and by Dionysius of Halicarnassus (fl. circa 30 B. C.) de comp. verb. v. p. 209 (Reiske) τὴν δέλτον ῆν τελευτήσαντος αὐτοῦ (sc. τοῦ Πλάτωνος) λέγουσιν εὐρεθῆναι, ποικίλως μετακειμένην τὴν ἀρχὴν τῆς Πολιτείας ἔχουσαν τήνδε, κατέβην χθὲς εἰς Πειραιᾶ μετὰ Γλαύκωνος τοῦ ᾿Αρίστωνος,—may be true, but is more likely to have been invented.

τῆ θεῶ] Bendis, as is proved by the words of Thrasymachus, i. 354 A ταῦτα δή σοι, & Σώκρατες, εἰστιάσθω ἐν τοῖς Βενδιδείοις. The prominent part which the Thracians take in the procession seems to show that she is a Thracian goddess: Proclus (Theolog. 353) and others identify her with Artemis. Cp. Schol. in Rep. ἐπεὶ καὶ Βένδις παρ' αὐτοῖς (sc. τοῖς Θραξὶν) ἡ "Αρτεμις καλεῖται. It is not a little curious that the Platonic Socrates should care to be present at the inauguration of one of those 'strange divinities' who seem to have clustered about the Peiraeus in the fourth century, B.c. and even earlier (Foucart, op. cit. p. 57). See especially Laws x. 910 c.

καὶ ἡ τῶν ἐπιχωρίων] καὶ anticipates the mention of the Thracians, who are equal if not superior to the natives of Peiraeus. The second καὶ and a δέ corresponding to μέν, which might have been expected, pass into οὐ μέντοι ἡττον . . . ἡν = οὐχ ἡττον δὲ . . . καὶ ῆν.

Β θεωρήσαντες] 'Having seen the spectacle,' corresponding to ἅμα τὴν ἐορτὴν βουλόμενος θεάσασθαι.

κατιδών οὖν πόρρωθεν ἡμᾶς οἴκαδε ώρμημένους Πολέμαρχος ὁ Κεφάλου ἐκέλευσε δραμόντα τὸν παῖδα περιμεῖναί ἑ κελεῦσαι] 'Thereupon Polemarchus, the son of Cephalus, catching sight of us from afar, after we had set out on our way home, bade (ἐκέλευσε) his servant run and bid us (κελεῦσαι) wait for him.'

οὖτος, ἔφη, ὅπισθεν προσέρχεται]. 'There he is coming up behind.' Οὖτος is 'deictic.'

άλλὰ περιμένετε ... ἀλλὰ περιμενοῦμεν] 'But, pray you, wait.' 'But we intend to wait': cp. infra 328 β ἀλλὰ μένετε. This expostulatory use of ἀλλά implies resistance and opposition, which is to be overcome in the mind of another. The second ἀλλά deprecates the assumption implied in the first, that they do not intend to wait.

ώς ἀπὸ τῆς πομπῆς] 'As if from the procession,' i.e. it was natural to suppose they had been there. From the direction in which they were coming, Socrates infers that they had been at the spectacle, but does not know it.

Republic I. 327 C

όρφες οὖν ήμας, ἔφη, ὅσοι ἐσμέν;] A similar playful threat occurs in the Philebus, 16 A åρ', ὧ Σώκρατες, οὖχ ὁρφες ἡμῶν τὸ πληθος, ὅτι νέοι πάντες ἐσμέν; καὶ οὐ φοβεῖ μή σοι μετὰ Φιλήβου ξυνεπιθώμεθα; in the Phaedrus, 236 c ἐσμὲν δὲ μόνω μὲν ἐν ἐρημία, ἰσχυρότερος δὲ ἐγὼ καὶ νεώτερος: in the Charmides, 176 c ὡς βιασομένου, ἔφη, ἐπειδήπερ ὅδε γε ἐπιτάττει. Cp. also Symposium 213 c, where Socrates claims the protection of Agathon against the apprehended violence of Alcibiades. Plato frequently repeats not only the same thought, but even small dramatic traits and terms of expression.

οὐκοῦν, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, ἔτι ἐν λείπεται] ἐλλείπεται is the reading of A II M and other MSS. 'Is there not still left out the supposition of our persuading you?' For the use of the passive cp. Philebus 18 p τὸ δ' αὐτό μοι τοῦ λόγου νῦν τε καὶ σμικρὸν ἔμπροσθεν ἐλλείπεται. See Goodwin, M. and T. 490, 2. The marginal reading of A ἐν λείπεται, 'Is there not still one alternative which remains?' is perhaps better and more emphatic and has been adopted in our text; but the other reading may still be defended. The emendation may be due to the fact that ἔτι is otiose; it does not introduce a second omission. There is a combination of two ideas: 'Is there not still the supposition?' and 'Have you not omitted the supposition?' Both = 'Have you not omitted the supposition which still remains?'

ώς τοίνυν μὴ ἀκουσομένων] The genitive absolute is placed in a dependent relation to the main verb διανοεῖσθε by the addition of ώς: cp. vii. 523 c ώς ἐγγύθεν... ὁρωμένους λέγοντός μου διανοοῦ: Xen. Cyr. viii. 4. 27. Goodwin, M. and T. 864, 918. The expression of the antecedent in οὕτω adds a peremptory emphasis like 'even' in Shakespeare. See Schmidt's Shakespeare Lexicon, s.v. 'even,' § 8. 'You may even be assured we won't listen.'

άρά γε . . . οὐδ' ἴστε ὅτι λαμπὰς ἔσται] 'Are you really not aware that—?' Adeimantus is surprised at the ignorance of the torch-race which Socrates' early departure betrays.

τῆ θε $\hat{\omega}$ ] For the torch-race see the article λαμπαδηδρομία in Smith's *Dictionary of Antiquities*. There is a difficulty in reconciling the form of the race described in Pausanias (Attica c. xxx. 2 έν 'Ακαδημία δέ έστι Προμηθέως βωμός καὶ θέουσιν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ πρὸς τὴν πόλιν ἔχοντες καιομένας λαμπάδας τὸ δὲ ἀγώνισμα ὁμοῦ τῷ δρόμ $\hat{\omega}$ 

328 A Republic I. 328 A

φυλάξαι την δάδα έτι καιομένην εστίν άποσβεσθείσης δε, οίδεν έτι της νίκης τω πρώτω, δευτέρω δε αντ' αὐτοῦ μέτεστιν' εὶ δε μηδε τούτω καίοιτο, ό τρίτος έστιν ό κρατων εί δε και πασιν αποσβεσθείη, οὐδείς έστιν, ότω καταλείπεται ή νίκη), which is between single competitors who run the whole course and where there is no passing on of the torch, with the favourite use of the image in such passages as Laws vi. 776 B γεννωντάς τε και έκφέροντας παίδας, καθάπερ λαμπάδα τον βίον παραδιδόντας άλλοις έξ άλλων: Lucretius ii. 70 'Et quasi cursores vitaï lampada tradunt': Persius vi. 61 'Cur me in decursu lampada poscis?' Compare also Aesch. Agam. 312, 313 λαμπαδηφόρων νόμοι, άλλος παρ' άλλου διαδοχαίς πληρούμενοι, and the application of the image in Herod. viii. 98 to the Persian ayyapor or royal postrunners. All these latter passages seem to imply a line of runners, each of whom carries the torch a certain distance and then hands it on to a successor. The form of the race which Plato has in mind in this passage was probably of this kind, the contest being between several competing lines running side by side.

διαδώσουσιν ἀλλήλοις άμιλλώμενοι τοῖς ἵπποις: ] The relation between άμιλλώμενοι and διαδώσουσιν is not to be pressed: all that is necessarily implied is that the competitors were on horseback, and that they passed the torch from one to the other: not that the transmission took place while the riders were at full speed.

έξαναστησόμεθα γάρ] Γάρ does not merely refer to ἄξιον θεάσασθαι, but introduces reasons for the mention of the παννυχίς. ['I mention the night-festival,] for we will rise after supper,' &c. The supper, torch-race and night-festival are entirely forgotten in the sequel.

В

εἰς τοῦ Πολεμάρχου] Cephalus, the rich Syracusan, had settled in Attica at the invitation of Pericles (Lys., c. Eratosth. § 4, p. 120) about 440 B.C. He was joined there by his three sons, Polemarchus, Lysias and Euthydemus, who are mentioned here, and are spoken of by their aged father as young men (328 p). Polemarchus, however, is represented as head of the household. although Cephalus, whom Plato has probably kept alive for the purpose of the dialogue, still acts as the family priest. And Lysias, who was born in 458 B.C., would at the imaginary date of the dialogue (if that is B.C. 411) be forty-seven years old. In the Phaedrus (257 B) Socrates suggests that Lysias should cease to busy himself with the composition of paradoxical orations, and, like his brother Polemarchus, turn to philosophy. Polemarchus was put to death by the order of the Thirty Tyrants in 404 B.C. Of Euthydemus,

328

В

who must not be confounded with the Sophist of that name, Republic nothing more is known.

καί δὴ καί] calls particular attention to the stranger Thrasymachus, a sophist or rhetorician who came to Athens about the year 430 B.C.: facetiously described by Plato in the Phaedrus (267 c) as a sort of rhetorical Titan (τὸ τοῦ Χαλκηδουίου σθένος). 'He was a great master of the pathetic—would put people into a rage and out again.' 'No one better at inventing or answering calumnies '.' In the Rhetoric of Aristotle (ii. 23) the same character appears: 'Herodicus was wont to say of Thrasymachus that he was ever Thrasymachus (bold in battle), as Conon said of Thrasybulus that he was truly Thrasybulus (bold in council) '.' He is spoken of with more respect by other writers (Cic. de Orat. iii. 32 3).

Cleitophon may be inferred to be a disciple of Thrasymachus from the part which he takes in the skirmish with Polemarchus (infra, 340 A). In the Cleitophon Cleitophon charges Socrates with exhorting people to virtue, but with not telling them what it is; and for this reason he resorts to Thrasymachus and other sophists. The dialogue recalls in many passages the First Book of the Republic: it is probably spurious and may have been suggested by the passage just cited.

διὰ χρόνου γὰρ καὶ ἐωράκη αὐτόν] 'For indeed it was a long time since I had seen him.' Καί adds emphasis to the sentence and refers to μάλα πρεσβύτης μοι ἔδοξεν κ.τ.λ. (not 'It was long since I had actually seen him'). The connexion of the sentences is: 'He appeared to me very aged. And no wonder, for . . . .'

οὐ δὲ θαμίζεις] Compare II. xviii. 385: τίπτε, Θέτι τανύπεπλε, ἰκάνεις ἡμέτερον δῶ αἰδοίη τε φίλη τε; πάρος γε μὲν οὔ τι θαμίζεις.

¹ Phaedrus 267 C, D τῶν γε μὴν οἰκτρογόων ἐπὶ γῆρας καὶ πενίαν ἐλκομένων λόγων κεκρατηκέναι τέχνη μοι φαίνεται τὸ τοῦ Χαλκηδονίου σθένος ὀργίσαι τὰ αὖ πολλοὺς ἄμα δεινὸς ἀνὴρ γέγονε, καὶ πάλιν ἀργισμένοις ἐπάδων κηλεῖν ὡς ἔφη διαβάλλειν τε καὶ ἀπολύσασθαι διαβολὰς ὁθενδὴ κράτιστος. ib. 269 D ὅσον δὰ αὐτοῦ (sc. ῥητορικῆς) τέχνη, οὐχ ἦ Λυσίας τε καὶ Θρασύμαχος πορεύεται, δοκεῖ μοι φαίνεσθαι ἡ μέθοδος.

<sup>2</sup> Aristot. Rhet. ii. 23, 29 καὶ ὡς Κόνων Θρασύβουλον θρασύβουλον ἐκάλει, καὶ Ἡρόδικος Θρασύμαχον "αἰεὶ θρασύμαχος εἶ."

<sup>3</sup> 'Quid de Prodico Chio, quid de Thrasymacho Chalcedonio, de Protagora Abderita loquar? quorum unusquisque plurimum temporibus illis, etiam de natura rerum, et disseruit et scripsit.'

C

Republic I. 328 C

T)

E

The latter words have suggested the emendation over in this passage. But this is unnecessary, and less expressive. The  $\delta \dot{\epsilon}$  in over  $\delta \dot{\epsilon}$  may be explained as adversative to the idea contained in  $\dot{\eta}\sigma\pi\dot{\alpha}\dot{\zeta}\epsilon\tau o$ : i.e. 'You are welcome, Socrates, but you do not come often enough.'

χρῆν μέντοι] The imperfect here, as in ἦν, ἔδει, ἦμεν immediately following, is quite general, but there is a shade of difference between it and χρή infra.  $\chi \rho \hat{\eta} \nu$ , 'you ought to do what you have not been doing':  $\chi \rho \hat{\eta}$  simply, 'you ought to do what you can do.'

οὐδὲν ἄν σε ἔδει] Goodwin, M. and T. 423, points out that in such cases 'the leading verb takes ἄν when the chief force falls on the necessity, propriety, or possibility of the act rather than on the act itself.'—'There would be no need (as there now is) of your coming hither.'

ήμεις The familiar use of the plural for the singular.

νῦν δέ σε χρὴ πυκνότερον δεῦρο ἰέναι] 'But as things are (i.e. seeing that I am an old man) you should come here oftener.' In the Laches (181 c) the old man Lysimachus addresses Socrates in a similar strain: χρῆν μὲν οὖν καὶ πρότερόν γε φοιτῶν αὐτὸν παρ' ἡμῶς καὶ οἰκείους ἡγεῖσθαι, ὥσπερ τὸ δίκαιον. νῦν δ' οὖν ἀπὸ τῆσδε τῆς ἡμέρας, ἐπειδὴ ἀνεγνωρίσαμεν ἀλλήλους, μὴ ἄλλως ποίει, ἀλλὰ σύνισθί τε καὶ γνώριζε καὶ ἡμῶς καὶ τούσδε τοὺς νεωτέρους, ὅπως ἃν διασώζητε καὶ ὑμεῖς τὴν ἡμετέραν φιλίαν, κ.τ.λ., in which as in the speech of Cephalus there is an imitation of the garrulity of old age.

τοῖσδέ τε τοῖς νεανίαις] Cephalus thus speaks of his sons, although they are men of middle age. Some early interpreters and Boeckh make τοῖσδέ τε τοῖς νεανίαις refer only to Glaucon and Adeimantus, the Athenian youths, and Serranus renders 'et hos adolescentes tecum adducas velim.' This notion, which was probably strengthened by the v. r. νεανίσκοις, is really inadmissible.

καὶ μὴν . . . χαίρω γε] 'Believe me, Cephalus, that I have a real pleasure in talking to very old men:' γε is omitted in A and other MSS.

καὶ δὴ καὶ σοῦ ἡδέως ἄν πυθοίμην] καὶ δὴ καί, as often, introduces a special instance: 'I take a pleasure in conversing with all old men . . . and of you in particular I should like to ask.'

τοῦτο . . . ἐξαγγέλλεις] The vague phrase  $\ddot{o}$  τί σοι φαίνεται τοῦτο is made clearer by the explanatory clause πότερον . . . ἐξαγ-

328

E

γέλλεις. τοῦτο refers to δδὸν . . . ποία τίς ἐστι, κ.τ.λ., 'the nature Republic of the path of life in old age; ' but the meaning is defined by the addition of emeron ... mountai, which gives the reason for asking Cephalus to give his own experience in the matter. τοῦ βίου is a partitive genitive depending on χαλεπόν, 'a harsh part of life.' χαλεπόν sc. εστι: this is preferable to making it an accusative governed by εξαγγέλλεις, which might seem natural but for φαίνεται As in Iliad xxiv. 486: preceding.

> μυησαι πατρός σείο, θεοίς ἐπιείκελ' 'Αχιλλεύ, τηλίκου ώσπερ έγων όλοφ έπὶ γήραος οὐδφ,

and Odyssey xv. 246:

οὐδ' ἵκετο γήραος οὐδόν,

life is compared to a house, of which Cephalus is standing on the threshold—i.e. old age—preparatory to leaving it: (or old ( age or even death may be a house which he is entering). The meaning of the metaphor has been generalized by familiar use. It occurs also in Herodotus iii. 14, 12 ές πτωχηΐην ἀπίκται έπὶ γήραος οὐδῶ.

διασώζοντες την παλαιάν παροιμίαν 'Keeping up the old adage,'- ηλιξ ηλικα τέρπει.

ξυνιόντες] is the resumption of συνερχόμεθα. The present in both cases has a generalized meaning, not 'are coming' but 'come together.' Cp. vi. 493 c ή οὖν τι τούτου δοκεί διαφέρειν ὁ τὴν των πολλών και παντοδαπών ξυνιόντων όργην και ήδονας κατανενοηκέναι σοφίαν ἡγούμενος; ξυνόντες, the correction of Ast and Buttmann, is unnecessary.

αναμιμνησκόμενοι 'calling to mind,' reminding one another.' The word more commonly governs the genitive: περί here gives indefiniteness.

καὶ ἄλλ' ἄττα ἃ τῶν τοιούτων ἔχεται] 'and other things connected therewith.' For this idiomatic use of ἔχεται cp. Theaet. Ι 45 Α όσα παιδείας έχεται.

τότε μεν εῦ ζῶντες The participle is in the imperfect tense.

έπὶ τούτω δη τὸ γηρας ύμνοῦσιν όσων κακών σφίσιν αἴτιον (and from this they take occasion' (τούτω referring to προπηλακίσεις τοῦ γήρωs) 'to bewail old age as bringing upon them innumerable evils.' ὑμνεῖν is used in a depreciatory sense, as viii. 549 D οἶα φιλούσιν αί γυναίκες περί των τοιούτων ύμνείν.

Κερμθίε Ι.
 Γ. cause, as an old man I am sure that I should have felt the same.'
 329 Β Το άλλ' ἔνεκα ἀργυρίου λέγε ('if money is the question').

καὶ ἄλλοις, καὶ δὴ καὶ Σοφοκλεῖ] The first καί prepares the way for the particular example of Sophocles.

C ἔτι οἶός τε εἶ . . . συγγίγνεσθαι] Hirschig, approved by Cobet, would delete these words. But they are required by the cry of shame, εὐφήμει, which follows.

ἀποφυγών] This passage is imitated by Cicero, De Senectute c. 14 'Quum ex eo quidam iam affecto aetate quaereret, utereturne rebus Venereis, "Dii meliora, (inquit,) libenter vero (μέντοι) istinc tanquam a domino agresti ac furioso profugi." Cp. the description of Sophocles in Aristophanes, Ran. 82 ὁ δ' εὔκολος μὲν ἐνθάδ', εὔκολος δ' ἐκεῖ, which expresses the same character.

παντάπασι γὰρ... ἐπειδὰν αἱ ἐπιθυμίαι παύσωνται κατατείνουσαι καὶ χαλάσωσι... ἀπηλλάχθαι] It is best to omit γάρ after ἐπειδάν with Par. A: the clause ἐπειδὰν αἱ ἐπιθυμίαι... χαλάσωσι being taken as an explanation of ἐν τῷ γήρα. This involves an asyndeton of παντάπασι, which introduces an emphatic resumption of the first clause of the sentence παντάπασι... ἐλευθερία. The asyndeton at δεσποτῶν κ.τ.λ. is the common asyndeton which is allowed in an explanatory statement. We note the absolute use of κατατείνουσαι and χαλάσωσι: the word κατατείνουσαι has the same general sense with συντείνω, συντόνως, and other compounds of τείνω.

Εστι] 'it is the case.' Arist. Ath. Pol. ch. 55 (Kenyon: Col. 28) ἔστι δὲ ψηφίζεσθαι, 'and the case is one of voting.'

τῷ τοιούτῳ] SC. τῷ μὴ κοσμίῳ καὶ εὐκόλῳ, κ.τ.λ.

ξυμβαίνει] These words are also imitated by Cicero, De Senect. cc. 2, 3, and the story of Themistocles and the Seriphian is repeated. Cicero, like Virgil (who πάντας ἀνθρώπους ἐκέκαστο κλεπτοσύνη), freely appropriates the turns of expression, as well as the subject matter, of his Greek master. But while the Latin poem is moulded by Virgil into a true work of Roman genius, the Latin dialogue is an inartistic imitation of the Greek model, being neither Greek in character nor Roman: a monologue rather than a dialogue, in which the grace of conversation, as well as much of the subtlety of philosophical thought, is lost.

čκίνουν] 'tried to draw him out.' Cp. Lysis 223 A έν νφ

είχον ἄλλον ἤδη τινὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων κινείν: Xen. Mem. iv. 2. 2 Republic ὁ Σωκράτης βουλόμενος κινείν τὸν Εὐθύδημον.

τὸ τοῦ Θεμιστοκλέους] For a different version of the story, in which Timodemus of Belbina in the Saronic gulf (now the Island of St. George) called also the Aphidnean, takes the place of the Seriphian, see Herod. viii. 125.

329 E

εὖ ἔχει] 'is in point.' The abruptness of the expression is softened by the repetition of it with ὁ αὐτὸς λόγος (330 A), in the corresponding clause, where also the words τοῦς πλουσίοις are parallel with τῷ Σεριφίῳ in the preceding part of the sentence.

ων κέκτησαι] Socrates returns to the fact on which the conversation turns, supra 329 Ε διὰ τὸ πολλὴν οὐσίαν κεκτῆσθαι.

330 A

ποι ἐπεκτησάμην] 'Acquired, do you say?' This use of ποίος is not necessarily derisive or ironical, as in Gorg. 490 c ποίων ίματίων; but only implies a humorous feeling of contrast between the suggestion and the fact. Cephalus may be supposed to speak with a gentle smile, remembering that his additions had been but small to the diminished fortune which he had received. Cp. infra ἐγὰ δὲ ἀγαπῶ, κ.τ.λ.

В

τουτοισί] 'to my sons here'—an emendation of Bekker for τούτοισω, the reading of the MSS. The 'Ionic' dative plural form in σι(ν) is rare in the Republic and occurs mostly in passages which have a poetical tinge, i. 345 E, iii. 388 D, 389 B, viii. 560 E, 564 C.

C,

διπλη η οἱ ἄλλοι ἀσπάζονται αὐτά] The dative or adverbial termination in διπλη probably here expresses the manner and not the measure of excess: 'in a two-fold way' as compared with, rather than 'double as much as.' It is taken up in ταύτη and in κατὰ τὴν χρείαν, ἦπερ οἱ ἄλλοι. The MS. emendation καὶ οὐ κατὰ τὴν χρείαν is clearly erroneous and makes havoc of the sense. With διπλη ή τρ. vii. 539 D ἔτη διπλάσια ἡ τότε.

χαλεποὶ . . . ξυγγενέσθαι] For the construction cp. Phaedr. 275 Β χαλεποὶ ξυνείναι.

καταγελώμενοι] The participle is imperfect =  $ο \hat{\iota}$  κατεγελώντο.

D E

καὶ αὐτὸς . . . ἠδίκηκεν] The sentence becomes anacoluthic at καθορά, which would naturally have been καθορών: cp. vi. 495 p οὖ δὴ ἐφιέμενοι πολλοί, κ.τ.λ. where a main verb similarly takes the place of a participle. The resumptive δ' οὖν, 'however this may be,' make the irregularity less striking. Cp. Tim. 28 p ὁ δὴ πῶς οὐρανὸς ἢ κόσμος ἡ καὶ ἄλλο ὅ τί ποτε ὀνομαζόμενος . . . σκεπτέον δ' οὖν περὶ αὐτοῦ πρῶτον.

Republic I.

τῷ δὲ . . . γηροτρόφος] 'but if a man is conscious of no injustice, hope is ever present to cheer him (ἡδεῖα), and to be his kindly nurse in age.' The order of the words is not ἐλπὶς ἡδεῖα καὶ ἀγαθή, but ἡδεῖα πάρεστι καὶ πάρεστιν ἀγαθὴ γηροτρόφος.

A B

ἀλλά γε εν ἀνθ' ένὸς οὐκ ἐλάχιστον . . . εἶναι]. εν ἀνθ' ένὸς, an adverbial idiom, like εν πρὸς εν Laws i. 647 β. The emphasis is on οὐκ ἐλάχιστον. 'But, comparing one thing with another, I should not reckon wealth as least useful for this object.' In οὐκ ἐλάχιστον . . . χρησιμώτατον there seems to be a confusion of two constructions: οὐχ ἥκιστα χρήσιμον and χρησιμώτατον. Stobaeus gives ἀλλ' εν γε.

C

τοῦτο δ' αὐτό... λάβη] 'but as to this very thing, justice I mean, shall we say thus simply (as you imply), that it is truthfulness, and the restoration of what a man receives from another?' τοῦτο δ' αὐτό refers to εἰς τοῦτο, which itself goes back to τὸ γὰρ μηδὲ ἄκουτα... ἀπιέναι δεδιότα. The train of thought is as follows: 'You imply that a man may depart from life with a clear conscience if he has only told the truth and paid his debts, and that justice consists in this. But is it simply this—no more and no less? Are there not circumstances—e.g. if the man to whom we are speaking or to whom we are in debt is mad, in which to tell a lie or refuse to return a loan would be right; to speak the truth and return the loan wrong?'

For the indirect and natural way in which the subject of the dialogue is introduced, compare the Charmides; and for the familiar Socratic manner of commencing the argument with an external and superficial definition which is afterwards set aside or deepened by criticism and the consideration of instances, see the opening passages of the Charmides, Laches, Meno, Theaetetus.

Casuistry has a place in ancient as well as in modern thought, in Greek philosophy as well as in the theology of the Schoolmen and the Jesuits. It is not essentially the product of civilization or the consequence of deep pondering over moral problems. Amongst barbarous nations we already notice a tendency to casuistical distinctions: the letter, not the spirit of a contract, is observed by them; if the word of promise can be kept to the ear, the real or natural meaning of it is of no account (Thucyd. iii. 34). Early morality is legal and external, easily giving opportunity for such evasions; it is a morality of compulsion, not of willing obedience: the attitude of the savage towards a duty or obligation is to avoid fulfilling it so far as he can. In civilized

1.

331

13

societies too a strong tendency to casuistry sets in when there is an abrupt transition from the old to the new, when the younger generation becomes dissatisfied with it and dares to criticize traditional morality and belief. It is this tendency which asserts itself in the transitional stage of Greek philosophy. Serious doubts arise when it is discovered that the old rule, which formerly claimed unquestioning obedience on all occasions, is found in the eye of reason and an enlightened conscience to admit of an exception. The course of such a revolution is well represented in the criticism and development of Cephalus' definition: but Plato artistically avoids the indignities which often arose out of such conflicts of the old and new by first requiring the retirement of Cephalus.

That simple rules, 'Thou shalt not lie,' 'Thou shalt not steal,' are modified by circumstances, was apparent enough to the contemporaries of Socrates. Aristotle, in the Nicomachean Ethics, is fond of turning aside into these by-paths of morals, which seem however to have rather an intellectual than a practical interest for him. Casuistical inquiry was carried still further in later writers, for example, in Panaetius, from whom Cicero partly borrowed his treatise 'De Officiis'; and the tendency was strengthened in later times by the parallel growth of law cases. Ancient casuistry is fresher than modern, and nearer to the first thoughts of mankind about right and wrong, growing up not so much out of the conflict of established principles, as in the effort to establish, widen, or purify them,—becoming in the hands of Socrates and Plato a sort of dialectic which undermines the maxims and aphorisms of the older times and prepares the way for higher and more universal conceptions of morality.

άπλῶς οὖτως] (1) 'thus absolutely:' οὔτως, i.e. 'as your words imply'; ἀπλῶς, 'absolutely,' i.e. making no allowance for circumstances. Cp. Laws i. 633 p τὴν ἀνδρείαν δέ, φέρε, τί θῶμεν; πότερον ἀπλῶς οὖτως (as implied in what precedes) εἶναι πρὸς φόβους καὶ λύπας διαμάχην μόνον, ἢ καὶ πρὸς πόθους τε καὶ ἡδονὰς καί τινας δεινὰς θωπείας κολακικάς; infra iii. 386 β λοιδορεῖν ἀπλῶς οὖτως τὰ ἐν "Αιδου, referring to the opinion of the terrors of the other world which has been just alluded to. Or, (2) 'just absolutely,' οὖτως being used idiomatically as in ῥαδίως οὖτω (ii. 377 β, 378 Λ) without any special reference.

δ ἀποδιδούς] 'The restorer in the case mentioned'; hence the article, which is omitted with  $\epsilon \theta \hat{\epsilon} \lambda \omega \nu$  in what follows  $(\alpha \hat{\nu} \delta)$   $\alpha \hat{\nu} \ldots$ 

Republic λέγειν), 'any more than if he were willing to tell the whole truth to a person in this condition.' The subject of ἀποδιδούς and ἐθέλων is one and the same person: 'neither the restorer... nor the same person if he wished.'

D ὅρος ἐστὶ δικαιοσύνης] 'The definition or determining principle of justice:' ὅρος is here used as in Aristotle but in a less technical sense. Like other Aristotelian terms in Plato it retains several other meanings. The logical sense of 'term' or 'proposition' which appears occasionally in Aristotle is as yet unknown.

πάνυ μὲν οὖν] 'Nay, but it is.' Μὲν οὖν is a corrective of the preceding sentence.

καὶ μέντοι ... καί] like καὶ δὴ καί implies a sort of meditative transition, μέντοι calling attention to a new feature in the case. 'Well, said Cephalus (since you take up the argument), I hand it over to you.' The intervention of Polemarchus appears to Cephalus a fit opportunity for retiring: so he takes advantage of it to bequeath the argument to him. The second καί indicates that as Polemarchus has put in a word, the natural consequence of the interruption is that Cephalus should resign the argument.

331 I)- Polemarchus, who 'inherits' the argument, is now called upon -336 A· to defend the thesis of Simonides.

- S. What does the divine poet mean by 'debt' in his definition of justice? Not simply that which has been lent; e.g. to the madman?
- P. Certainly not; for if the madman were our friend, we should be doing him harm; whereas Simonides thinks that harm should be done to enemies, as is fitting  $(\pi\rho\sigma\sigma'_{1}\kappa\epsilon\iota)$ , not to friends.
- S. So Simonides meant by 'debt' 'what is fitting' (τὸ προσῆκον). And Justice is the art of benefiting friends and harming enemies. But when does it benefit us, as piloting benefits us when we are at sea?
  - P. When we make war.
  - S. Then Justice is of no use in time of peace?
  - P. In partnerships.
  - S. Partnerships in what?
  - P. In money transactions.
- S. Not in buying and selling: in buying or selling a horse a horse-dealer will be a better partner than a just man.
  - P. No, but in keeping money safe.

S. That is, while it is not put to any use? Justice, then, is only useful when the money is useless. But he who is strong in guarding is strong in attacking, as we see in medicine and in war, and so the just man, who is a good guardian of money, must also be an accomplished thief,—but always for the benefit of friends and harm of enemies.

Republic I. 331 D--336 A

Polemarchus, in desperation, repeats his definition—Justice benefits friends and harms enemies. Socrates proceeds to ask: Who are our friends? those who seem good to us, or those who are good?

- P. Those whom we think good.
- S. Then, if they seem and are not, the just will do good to bad men, and harm the good, who to him seem bad.

Polemarchus cries out against this conclusion and in order to avoid it, proposes to emend the definition. 'A friend must not only seem, but also be a good man.'

S. Then Justice now means doing good to our friends who are good and harm to our enemies who are bad. But stay! Will the just do harm to any man? When harm is done to any creature, that creature loses something of his proper virtue. If harm therefore is done to any man, he loses something of justice. Our theory would make the just man the author of injustice, which is contrary to reason. That cannot have been the meaning of the wise Simonides, but must have been suggested by Periander, or Perdicas, or Xerxes, or some other rich and seeming-powerful man. (Cp. Gorg. 466.)

The first book of the Republic is a preface to the rest; Socrates pulls out the stuff which is hereafter to be spun and woven. The analogy of the arts is introduced, but fails to give any clear conception of the virtues.

δ Πολέμαρχος τῶν γε σῶν κληρονόμος;] 'Is not Polemarchus your heir?' That is, 'since the argument is yours' ( $\gamma \epsilon$  adding emphasis to  $\sigma \hat{\omega} \nu$ ), 'does not Polemarchus inherit it?'

The character of Cephalus is distinguished by gentleness and goodness. There may also be traced in him the mannerism and garrulity of age: the love of anecdote and quotation, the matured experience of 'the evening of life.' Cicero (Ep. ad Att. iv. 16), who acknowledges himself to be what he truly is, an imitator of Plato in very minute particulars, remarks as follows on the retirement of Cephalus: 'Quum in iis libris quos laudavi

331

Republic I.

desideras personam Scaevolae, non eum temere demovi, sed feci idem quod in Πολιτεία Deus ille noster Plato. Ouum in Piraeum Socrates venisset ad Cephalum locupletem et festivum senem, quoad primus ille sermo haberetur, adest in disputando senex; deinde quum ipse quoque commodissime locutus esset, ad rem divinam dicit se velle discedere, neque postea revertitur. Credo Platonem vix putasse satis consonum fore, si hominem id aetatis in tam longo sermone diutius retinuisset.' So in the Laches (189 B.C) the old man Lysimachus apologizes for the shortness of his memory: he 'cannot recollect the questions he would ask, or the answers to them.' Accordingly he subsides into a listener, who, though unable to take a part in the argument, is ready to act on the conclusions obtained. It may be noted also that the simpler conception of life and duty, the poetical and proverbial expression of it is better suited to the aged than to those who were deeply versed in the Sophistical and dialectical method of a later generation.

E ff.

Sophistic cynicism, superficiality, and vehemence of assertion prove to be no match for the dialectic of Socrates. Many questions are raised, 'of which we have a taste only and not a full meal,'—among them the question whether the just or unjust man is the happier, which in the sequel (iv. 445 A) 'becomes ridiculous.' The second book proceeds to ask in a more earnest strain, 'What is justice stripped of its externals?' Socrates then considers justice in the State, to help him to find justice in the individual. The justice thus found exists somewhere in the relations of society (ii. 372 A).

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

λέγε δή, . . . . ἐγὼ δὲ ἀγνοῶ] Observe the pretended awe for the authority of Simonides; the 'accustomed irony of Socrates' in professing his own ignorance, and assuming the knowledge of his companion. Simonides' definition, however, is not set aside, though certain explanations of it are, cp. esp. 335 E.

ἀλλὰ μέντοι, . . . . τοῦτο μέντοι ] 'Αλλά opposes the words which follow to, μέντοι regards them as a limitation of, Socrates' rejection of Cephalus' definition. The second μέντοι limits the limitation introduced by the first. 'But (as opposed to what I have said) I said, it is true that it is not easy to disbelieve Simonides—for he was a wise and inspired man: still what he means by this . . . I fail to see.' It is true that the criticism of Cephalus' definition must be modified, if that definition has the authority of Simonides: but before we can appeal to his authority we must first understand his meaning. For τοῦτο ὅ τι λέγει, 'what he means by this,' cp. Symp. 178  $\rm D$  λέγω δὲ δὴ τί τοῦτο ;

σοφός] With a light touch of irony, as in Theaet. 151 Β πολλούς μεν Republic δη εξέδωκα Προδίκω, πολλούς δε ἄλλοις σοφοίς τε καὶ θεσπεσίοις ἀνδράσι.

μὴ σωφρόνως] i.e., 'when not in his right mind.' The adverb refers to the condition of the agent, not to the mode of action. It is probably used to avoid the awkward conjunction of two participles: μὴ σωφρονοῦντι ἀπαιτοῦντι.

331 E

ἀπαιτοῖ] i.e. 'at a time when you might suppose him to demand it.' Cp. Goodwin, M. and T. 555. He explains the optative as due to the fact that ἀποδοτέον = δέοι ἀν ἀποδιδόναι (resuming the previously expressed condition εὶ μανεὶς ἀπαιτοῦ). Cp. also ib. 521, for the forms of indefinite sentences.

332 A

ἢ τὸ τοιοῦτον] 'Than this sort of thing'—i. e. than the making restoration to a man who is out of his mind.

άλλο μέντοι . . . . κακὸν δὲ μηδέν ] 'Something different, certainly, said he; for he thinks that the debt which friends owe to friends is a benefit, and no injury whatever.' Μέντοι as elsewhere in answers is used in confirmation of a previous suggestion: cp. v.  $469 \, \text{E}$  'Εατέον ἄρα τὰς νεκροσυλίας . . .; 'Εατέον μέντοι, ἔφη, νὴ Δία. Phaedo  $73 \, \text{D}$  ἄλλα που μυρία τοιαῦτ' ἄν εἴη. Μυρία μέντοι νὴ Δία.

μανθάνω, ἦν δ' ἐγώ] A similar argument occurs in the Memorabilia of Xenophon (iv. 2. 16, 17) where Socrates says that deception may be just towards enemies, and in some cases even towards friends; e.g., a general may fairly deceive dispirited troops by falsely telling them of the approach of allies; or, again, you may steal a sword from a melancholy friend who is about to destroy himself.

В

**εάνπερ**] Emphatic; 'that is to say, if.' The defining περ limits the assumption to the case in point. Cp. Theaet. 166 c εάνπερ ἀνομοίωσις γίγνηται.

ηνίξατο ἄρα . . . ὀφειλόμενον] Compare similar expressions in Charm. 162 Α ηνίττετο ἄρα, ὡς ἔοικεν, ὅπερ ἄρτι ἐγὼ ἕλεγον, ὁ λέγων τὸ τὰ αὐτοῦ πράττειν σωφροσύνην εἶναι: and Theaet. 152 C τοῦτο ἡμῖν μὲν ηνίξατο τῷ πολλῷ συρφετῷ.

C

ἀλλὰ τί οἴει; . . . Σιμωνίδη] This is the reading which gives the best sense and which is found in nearly every MS. Like τί δή, τί μήν in some of their uses, τί οἴει; = τί οἵει ἄλλο; 'But what else do you suppose him to have done?' Cp. Gorg. 480 B τί γὰρ δὴ φῶμεν; sc. ἄλλο. There is a touch of humour in making Polemarchus agree so heartily in the views suggested by Socrates, as if they had always been familiar to him. The same confidence is shown

VOL. III.

Republic
I.
332

in his previous answers, into which he is led by the arguments of Socrates. The Zurich edition of 1881, adopting Madvig's punctuation, reads " $E\phi\eta$  with a capital letter, making  $d\lambda\lambda\dot{a}$   $\tau l$   $ole{le}$ ; a part of the previous sentence. But the use of " $E\phi\eta$  in the sense of  $\xi vv\dot{\epsilon}\phi\eta$  is doubtful; and the use of  $d\lambda\lambda\dot{a}$  in continuing the previous sentence is very abrupt.

Another expedient is to cancel  $\epsilon \phi \eta$  and the stops, and place a dash after  $\kappa a \lambda \epsilon \hat{\iota} \tau a \iota$ :  $\hat{a} \lambda \lambda \hat{a} \tau \hat{\iota}$  or  $\hat{\iota} \epsilon_i$ ,  $\hat{a} \tau \rho \hat{o} s$   $\Delta \iota \hat{o} s$ ,  $\hat{\eta} \nu \delta' \hat{\epsilon} \gamma \hat{\omega}$  ( $\hat{\eta} \nu \delta' \hat{\epsilon} \gamma \hat{\omega}$  being repeated, cp. infra 348 d  $\epsilon \phi \eta \ldots \hat{\eta} \delta' \delta' s$ ). This receives some support from  $\tau \hat{\iota} \hat{a} \nu \delta' \hat{\epsilon} \iota$  below, but no change is really necessary.

& πρὸς Διός] Socrates now fairly warms to the argument; he exults in the train of thought which occurs to him; he begins enthusiastically with a frequently recurring formula (v. 459 A, Lysis 214 E, &c.—'By Heaven, I said'—to construct the Sorites which follows.—'To invite Socrates to an argument is like inviting horsemen to a plain' (Theaet. 183 D).

εὶ μὲν . . . εἰρημένοις] δεῖ, sc. (1) ἡμᾶς, 'If we are to be consistent with what we said before': or (2) τὸ νῦν λεγόμενον, 'If this case is to go along with the rest.'

τί δὲ ὁ δίκαιος;] sc. δυνατός ἐστι ποιεῖν, gathered from δυνατώτατος ... εὖ ποιεῖν above. An elliptical form of expression, in which we must supply some word to be gathered from the context: cp. infra 341 c τί δὲ κυβερνήτης; κ.τ.λ., and Gorgias 502 Λ τί δὲ ὁ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ Μέλης; κ.τ.λ.

έν τῷ προσπολεμεῖν] 'In going to war with others.' Thucyd. viii. 96. 5 ἐν τούτῷ μόνῷ Λακεδαιμόνιοι 'Αθηναίοις πάντων δὴ ξυμφορώτατοι προσπολεμῆσαι ἐγένοντο. The repetition of ἐν τῷ with ξυμμαχεῖν, though not necessary to the sense, is retained as having the greater MS. authority.

χρήσιμον ἄρα] ἄρα, 'Then I am to understand.' Socrates carries on the argument a little further by extracting the answer from the respondent in a more general or abstract form. An explanation or new mode of statement, especially in dialogue, often takes the form of an inference.

τί δὲ δή; marks the resumption of the main subject.

ξυμβόλαια . . . κοινωνήματα] 'By contracts do you mean partnerships?' The more general word is substituted for the sake of extending the analogy.

Ε

333 A πεττῶν] πεττοί are 'draughts,' which were played in various ways. According to one mode of playing the game, you blocked up your antagonist so that he was unable to move. This process of 'shutting up' is used as an illustration of Socrates' method of arguing in vi. 487 B, C ὥσπερ ὑπὸ τῶν πεττεύειν δεινῶν οἱ μὴ τελευτῶντες ἀποκλείονται, κ.τ.λ.

Republic I.

> 333 B

άλλ' εἰς πλίνθων] The new illustration is suggested by the word  $\theta$ έσις.

ωσπερ δ κιθαριστικὸς τοῦ δικαίου] Plato in his lively manner passes unexpectedly from one illustration to another.

εἰς κρουμάτων] sc. κοινωνίαν: 'as a partner in playing the harp.'

ὅταν...σῶν εἶναι] 'When you want to deposit it and have it kept safely': σῶν εἶναι sc. τὸ ἀργύριον: the subject is changed, as below—ὅταν μηδὲν δέη αὐτῷ χρῆσθαι ἀλλὰ κεῖσθαι (sc. αὐτό).

С

καὶ κοινῆ καὶ ἰδίᾳ is a transition from the word κοινωνία: 'whether the guardians of it are partners or not.'

1)

Socrates' 'incessant talk of cobblers, physicians, curriers, and cooks' (Gorg. 491 A) has left an impress on many passages in Plato. Both his political and his moral ideal are influenced by the analogy of the arts. But he repeatedly shows his sense of the inadequacy of the comparison of the 'art of living' to any particular art. And in the Statesman, 297 E, where the examples of the pilot, the physician, and the weaver are once more elaborately employed, he dwells expressly on the imperfect and provisional nature of the argument from example: ibid. 277 c.

E

οὐκ ἄν οὖν] Par. A reads οὖκ οὖν omitting ἄν, but οὖκ ἄν οὖν was clearly written in the margin, until a wormhole interfered with the  $\nu$  of ἄν. The '?' in the critical note may therefore be cancelled.

εἴτε πυκτική is added to vary the notion of μάχη from ὁπλιτική above, which has suggested the new topic; and also to introduce ψυλάξασθαι, 'to parry a blow.'

καὶ λαθεῖν . . . ἐμποιῆσαι; ] The Zurich edition (1887) reads ἐμποιήσαs, the conjecture of Schneider; but the emphasis falls on the wrong word, for the principal point is not that he who can guard against disease can be secret in producing it, but that he can produce it at all: that he does it secretly is merely a way in which Plato prepares for κλύψαι and ψωρ δεινός in the following lines. It is better to retain the reading of the MSS., placing the comma after ψνλάξασθαι, although the construction λαθεῖν ἐμποιῆσαι

Republic I. 333 E =λάθρα ἐμποιῆσαι ('best skilled to implant it by stealth') is not free from suspicion. The second infinitive (sc. ὅστε ἐμπ.) may be excused by the emphasis and by the position of δεινότατος. Early editors, following the MSS., put the comma after  $\lambda a \theta ε iν$ . But  $\lambda a \theta ε iν$  νόσον, 'to elude a disease,' is hardly defensible; and in leading up to the parallelism of  $\phi iλ a \xi$  with  $\kappa \lambda i \psi a$  and with  $\phi i \rho$  in what follows, it is essential that  $\phi i \lambda i \xi a \sigma \theta a$  and  $\lambda a \theta ε iν$  should be in separate clauses. Other emendations are (1)  $\kappa a i \nu j \pi a \theta ε iν$  in  $q \beta$ ': but these MSS. are of questionable authority: (2) the omission of  $\kappa a i \lambda a \theta ε iν$ —suggested by Muretus; in support of which it might be urged that the 'accretion' may have been due to a gloss on  $\phi i \lambda i \delta a \theta ε iν$ . [L. C.]

To this it is right to add the following note by Professor Jowett:—

There is no MS. authority worth speaking of for any variation of the text in this passage. The principal emendation is that of Schneider,  $\hat{\epsilon}\mu\pi\sigma\iota\hat{\eta}\sigma\alpha_{S}$  for  $\hat{\epsilon}\mu\pi\sigma\iota\hat{\eta}\sigma\alpha_{L}$ , but to this it may be objected that the proper opposition is between  $\phi\nu\lambda\hat{\alpha}\xi\alpha\sigma\theta\alpha_{L}$  and  $\hat{\epsilon}\mu\pi\sigma\iota\hat{\eta}\sigma\alpha_{L}$ , not between  $\phi\nu\lambda\hat{\alpha}\xi\alpha\sigma\theta\alpha_{L}$  and  $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$ . The suggestion of Muretus that  $\kappa\alpha_{L}$   $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$  should be omitted, as well as the MS. correction  $\kappa\alpha_{L}$   $\mu\hat{\eta}$   $\pi\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$  (q  $\beta'$ ), is hardly worthy of notice. It is better to retain the old punctuation which places the comma after  $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$  and not after  $\phi\nu\lambda\hat{\alpha}\xi\alpha\sigma\theta\alpha_{L}$ . The chief reason why the passage has given trouble to interpreters is the impression that  $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$  can only be used with a personal object, and that therefore  $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$   $\nu\delta\sigma\sigma\nu$ , 'to dodge a disease,' is not good Greek. To this it may be replied that such personification involves a less flaw of language than the false opposition of  $\phi\nu\lambda\hat{\alpha}\xi\alpha\sigma\theta\alpha$  and  $\lambda\alpha\theta\epsilon\hat{\iota}\nu$ .

334 A κλέψαι] 'To steal an enemy's plans and proceedings.' Κλέψαι = 'by stealth' (1) 'to get possession of,' or (2) 'to obtain advantage over.'

ώς γοῦν... σημαίνει] 'That is certainly what the argument implies.' The qualification with γοῦν indicates Polemarchus' reluctance to admit the conclusion, although he cannot rebut the argument.

ἀναπέφανται] expressing an unexpected result, as infra, 350 c: Sophist. 233 c δοξαστικὴν ἄρα . . . δ σοφιστὴς . . . ἔχων ἀναπέφανται.

В

κατὰ σὲ . . . . Σιμωνίδην] Compare Theaet. 160 d, where there is a similar ironical use of the poets: κατὰ μὲν "Ομηρον καὶ Ἡράκλειτον καὶ πᾶν τὸ τοιοῦτον φῦλον . . . . . κατὰ δὲ Θεαίτητον. For the humour

of attributing to the respondent what Socrates has drawn out of him, compare also Gorg. 470 B, 503 C; Theaet. 163 A; Euthyd. 290 E.

*I*. 334 B

C

D

E

Republic

 $\epsilon \pi'$  ωφελία....  $\epsilon \chi \theta \rho \hat{\omega} \nu$ ] 'For the good, however, of friends, and the harm of enemies.' There is a humorous pretence of fairness in adding this limitation, which is also the link of connexion with what follows.

οὐκέτι . . . . ἔλεγον] Cp. the passage in Meno 80 A, B, in which the influence of Socrates on his adversary is compared to that of the torpedo (νάρκη τῆ θαλαττία): ἀληθῶς γὰρ ἔγωγε καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν καὶ τὸ στόμα ναρκῶ: and Euthyphro 15 B, where Socrates himself is compared to Daedalus, as he makes the arguments of his adversary 'walk away': Alcibiades I. 127 D, which has perhaps been imitated from this passage: ἀλλὰ μὰ τοὺς θεούς, ὧ Σώκρατες, οὐδ' αὐτὸς οἶδ' ὅ τι λέγω, κ.τ.λ.

ώφελεῖν . . . ἡ δικαιοσύνη] Sc. δοκεῖ supplied from the previous words. Cp. vii. 517 Β τὰ δ' οὖν ἐμοὶ φαινόμενα οὕτω φαίνεται, ἐν τῷ γνωστῷ τελευταία ἡ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ἰδέα καὶ μόγις ὁρᾶσθαι, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ ἐχθροὺς ὡσαύτως] Sc. τοὺς δοκοῦντας εἶναι πονηρούς, ἢ τοὺς ὄντας, κἄν μὴ δοκῶσι.

τούτοις . . . φίλοι] 'These then have the good for their enemies and the bad for their friends.' τούτοις, sc. τοῖς περὶ ταῦτα άμαρτάνουσιν.

άλλ' ὅμως δίκαιον] ὅμως—i. e. notwithstanding their mistake, the principle which has been laid down is to be applied, and the result in this case is that the evil are to be benefited and the good harmed.

μηδαμῶς] Polemarchus, moved not by shame, like Gorgias or Polus (Gorg. 482 c, &c.), or Thrasymachus (infra 352 B), but by honest indignation, entreats Socrates to alter the course of the argument. 'Do not let us have that conclusion, Socrates.' Cp. infra 335 Λ κελεύεις, κ.τ.λ. For the ellipse of οὖτω θῶμεν, or some similar expression, cp. Gorg. 497 Β μηδαμῶς, ὧ Καλλίκλεις: Euthyd. 294 C.

οσοι διημαρτήκασι τῶν ἀνθρώπων] 'That is to say, those of mankind who are in error.' These words are added to explain πολλοίς, and refer to ἀρ' οὐχ άμαρτάνουσιν (supra, c). For the compound verb (δια = diverging from the aim) cp. Theaet. 178  $\Lambda$  ἢ οὖν καὶ τυγχάνει ἀεί, ἢ πολλὰ καὶ διαμαρτάνει ἐκάστη;

πονηροὶ γὰρ αὐτοῖς εἰσίν] 'For they have bad ones.'
τὸν δοκοῦντά τε ... καὶ τὸν ὄντα] The article, though repeated

Republic I. 334

for the sake of emphasis both with ὅντα and δοκοῦντα, refers to the same person. It may be expressed: 'He is our friend, who not only seems, but who also is a good man.'

E 335 A

E

ἡ αὐτὴ θέσις] 'The same mode of statement': cp. μεταθώμεθα supra: viz., 'our enemy is he who not only seems, but is so.'

κελεύεις... ἐλέγομεν] 'You would have us add to our idea of justice more than we included in our first statement.' The particle η depends on the notion of a difference or comparison which is contained in προσθείναι. Cp. Phaedr. 228 p οἶs ἔφη διαφέρειν τὰ τοῦ ἐρῶντος ἡ τὰ τοῦ μή: Gorg. 481 c ἀλλά τις ἡμῶν ἴδιόν τι ἔπασχε πάθος ἡ οἱ ἄλλοι. In what follows the words νῦν πρὸς τούτφ ὧδε λέγειν are in apposition with προσθείναι and explanatory,—hence the asyndeton. λέγειν is governed by κελεύεις. By the terms of the argument the words ἀγαθὸν ὅντα, κακὸν ὅντα are added, not in limitation, but in definition of φίλον and ἐχθρόν: 'our friend who is good,' 'our enemy, who is bad.'

Β ἔστιν ἄρα . . . βλάπτειν ] Cp. Crito 49 B, C οὐδαμῶς ἄρα δεῖ ἀδικεῖν.
Οὐ δῆτα. Οὐδὲ ἀδικούμενον ἄρα ἀνταδικεῖν, ὡς οἱ πολλοὶ οἴονται, ἐπειδή γε οὐδαμῶς δεῖ ἀδικεῖν. Οὐ φαίνεται. Τί δὲ δή; κακουργεῖν δεῖ, . . . ἡ οὕ;

That it is not right to harm even the evil is proved as follows:— When animals are harmed, they are made worse in that quality which is characteristic of them. That quality in man is justice: therefore, when man is harmed, he is rendered more unjust: whence follows the absurdity that justice is the cause of injustice. The argument is verbal, but hints at the truth more fully stated in ii. 379 c ff.  $(o \dot{v} \dot{o} \dot{v} \dot{a} \rho a, \dot{\eta} \nu \dot{o}' \dot{e} \gamma \dot{\omega}, \ldots o \dot{v} \dot{o} \dot{e} \dot{\omega} \nu \dot{\nu} \nu a \nu \tau \sigma \kappa o \lambda a \zeta \dot{\sigma} \mu \epsilon \nu o \iota)$ .

C μὴ οὕτω φῶμεν] 'Shall we be told that we must not say in like manner...?' Cp. 337 Β μὴ ἀποκρίνωμαι ὧν προείπες μηδέν;

άλλὰ τῆ δικαιοσύνη δή] δή emphasizes the real subject of inquiry; of which the previous cases are only illustrations. 'And by justice then can the just make men unjust?' So in οὐδὲ δὴ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ (infra, p).

τοῦτο δὲ δὴ νοεῖ αὐτῷ] 'And this moreover means for him.' Cp. Euthyd. 287 D ὅ τί μοι νοοῖ τὸ ῥῆμα;

σοφῶν . . . μακαρίων] Both σοφῶν and μακαρίων are here ironical. μακάριος originally means 'blessed,' and is sometimes applied to the dead: also, as here, to persons who have any cleverness or excellence—' blest with understanding.' Cp. Meno 71 Β κινδυνεύω σοι δοκεῖν μακάριός τις εἶναι, ἀρετὴν γοῦν εἴτε διδακτὸν εἴτε ὅτῷ τρόπῷ παραγίγνεται εἰδέναι.

ἔγωγ' οὖν . . . μάχης] 'for my part, anyway (οὖν) I am ready to share in the battle':—said in answer to the previous words of Socrates—'you and I will make war together.' The reading ἔγωγ' οὖν is better than the emphatic ἐγὼ γοῦν. After Socrates has declared that both are ready to take up arms, there would be no meaning in Polemarchus' asseveration—'I at all events am ready to do so,' as though there were a doubt of Socrates.

Republic I. 335 E

τὸ ἡῆμα.. βλάπτειν] τὸ φάναι is in apposition with τὸ ἡῆμα: 'the saying which affirms that it is just to do good to friends and harm to enemies.'

336 A

'lσμηνίου τοῦ Θηβαίου] Cp. Meno 90 Λ, where Ismenias is said to have made himself a fortune in some sudden or irregular manner.—
He was put to death by the Lacedaemonians in B.c. 382 after the seizure of the Cadmeia, on the ground that he had taken bribes from Persia.

μέγα οἰομένου δύνασθαι] 'who imagined that he had great power,' but had it not really, because Plato is not prepared to admit, as he here intimates by the word οἰομένου, that any man is really great or powerful who 'cannot do what he will.' (Gorg. 466 ff.)

oòòè roûro] Through the windings of dialectic we arrive at last in view of the Christian precept,—'Recompense to no man evil for evil.' After every caution and reservation something more is needed than the text of the old poet, which is only on a level with the old Hebrew saying, 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour and hate thine enemy.'

Yet the definition of Simonides is really a very good one, nor can any objection be raised to the explanation of  $\partial \phi \epsilon \iota \lambda \delta \mu \epsilon \nu o \nu$  as  $\pi \rho o \sigma \hat{\eta} \kappa o \nu$ . Socrates is unfair to it, in his attempt to elevate into a universal principle, that which is only a maxim or rule of conduct.

336 B-340 B

Thrasymachus breaks in with an impatient cry—'Instead of asking questions and criticizing answers, why not at once give your definition of the just? But don't treat us to such stale rubbish as 'the fitting' or 'the expedient.'

Socrates deprecates the anger of the great Sophist and assures him that his own and his host's error is involuntary. They are only too ready to learn, if he will teach them.

Thrasymachus laughs sardonically at 'the accustomed irony' of Socrates,—who now alleges the further difficulty that the most obvious answers have been forbidden him. He ends by prevailing

Republic I. 336 B-

on Thrasymachus (who is really eager to speak) to give his own definition, that justice is the interest of the Stronger. In States, for example, the government, whether despotic, democratic or oligarchical, makes all its laws with a view to its own maintenance and security. And it is just for the subject to obey the laws. 'But do governments never make mistakes in the laws which they pass?'

T. ' Yes, sometimes.'

S. 'Then it is sometimes just for the subject to do what is inexpedient for the ruler.'

Polemarchus sees the point at once. But Cleitophon takes up the cudgels to defend his master's thesis. By 'what is expedient for the Stronger,' he says that Thrasymachus meant what the Stronger thought expedient for himself.

336 B διαλεγομένων . . . μεταξύ] 'In the midst of our discussion :' μεταξύ is to be taken with the participle: cp. Apol. 40 B, where Socrates says of the δαιμόνιον σημεῖον—πολλαχοῦ δή με ἐπέσχε λέγοντα μεταξύ.

ιορμα . . . διεκωλύετο] 'had been attempting,' 'had been repeatedly prevented,'—the iterative force of the imperfect.

ἀντιλαμβάνεσθαι] meaning originally 'to seize,' 'grasp'; has two secondary senses in Plato, (1) 'to lay hold of with the view of objecting':—so Soph. 239 D ἀντιλαμβανόμενος ἡμῶν: infra, vi. 497 D φόβω ὧν ὑμεῖς ἀντιλαμβανόμενοι δεδηλώκατε μακρὰν . . . καὶ χαλεπὴν αὐτοῦ τὴν ἀπόδειξιν; (2) 'to get possession of': so Parm. 130 E, where Parmenides says of Socrates—οὔπω σου ἀντείληπται φιλοσοφία, ὡς ἔτι ἀντιλήψεται. 'To get hold of,' i. e. 'to interpose in,' is the meaning here. Cp. Gorg. 506 A χρὴ ἀντιλαμβάνεσθαι καὶ ἐλέγχειν.

The sketch of Thrasymachus may be compared with that of Polus in the Gorgias, or of Dionysodorus and Euthydemus in the dialogue which bears the name of the latter: or with the vanity of Hippias and Prodicus in the Protagoras. The greater masters of the Sophistic art, such as Gorgias and Protagoras, have a higher character attributed to them; they preserve a stately equanimity, and are treated with a certain degree of respect by Socrates.

ώς δὲ διεπαυσάμεθα . . . εἶπον] 'when we had ceased, and I had thus spoken.' The two clauses refer to the same moment. The last words of Socrates coincided with the break in the discussion. The emendation of Cobet—ως δὴ ἐπαυσάμεθα,—which appears to arise from a supposed difficulty in explaining διεπαυσάμεθα, is

B

C

D

E

needless. Cp. Symp. 191 c ΐνα . . . διαπαύοιντο καὶ ἐπὶ τὰ ἔργα Republic τρέποιντο. The compound signifies 'intermission.'

συστρέψας] i. e. 'gathering himself up,' i. e. for a spring. Cp. the Homeric ἐάλη τε χανών (Il. xx. 168), of the angry lion. ἦκεν is rather to be taken as the aorist of ἵημι than as the imperfect of ῆκω. Cp. Herod. ix. 49, § 2 ἐπῆκε τὴν ἵππον ἐπὶ τοὺς Ἔλληνας. ἑαυτόν is easily supplied from what precedes: 'He gathered himself together and sprang upon us as if to tear us in pieces.' Cobet's conjecture (Varr. Lectt. ed. sec. p. 526), διασπασόμενος for διαρπασόμενος, is quite unnecessary. Cp. Il. xvi. 355 αἶψα διαρπάζουσιν (sc. οἱ λύκοι τὰς ἄρνας).

διεπτοήθημεν] 'We were panic-stricken,' a metaphor taken from the scaring of birds. Cp. Od. xviii. 340 διεπτοίησε γυναῖκας, i. e. 'he scattered them in terror,' whereupon βὰν δ' ἴμεναι διὰ δῶμα.

είς τὸ μέσον φθεγξάμενος] 'He called out to the whole company.' Cp. Laws ii. 664 c τὰ τοιαῦτα είς τὸ μέσον ἀσόμενος: Herod. vi. 130 ἔλεξε ἐς μέσον τάδε.

ύποκατακλινόμενοι] The verb is used by Plutarch (1) of a wrestler allowing himself to be beaten, (2) of one who in a banquet takes the lower place. The latter seems to give the more natural metaphor here. See Liddel and Scott, s.v. The word here, taken in the sense of 'giving way to,' or 'giving place to,' may have a suggestion of either or both associations.

οὐκ ἀποδέξομαι, ἐάν] 'I will not tolerate this sort of nonsense.' As elsewhere (infra, vii. 525 D οὐδαμῆ ἀποδεχόμενον, ἐάν τις, κ.τ.λ.), the object of the verb is resolved into a hypothetical or relative clause.

καὶ ἐγὼ . . . γενέσθαι] Cp. Theocritus xiv. 22 οὐ φθεγξη ; λύκον εἶδες; ἔπαιξέ τις: Virg. Ecl. ix. 53 'Vox quoque Moerim | Iam fugit ipsa; lupi Moerim videre priores.' It is suggested, rather than expressed, that Thrasymachus is a wolf.

εἰ γάρ ] εἰ γάρ τι, the reading of Ven. Π, is perhaps better suited to the irony of the passage; cp. Gorg. 488 Λ ἐγὼ γὰρ εἴ τι μὴ ὀρθῶς πράττω κατὰ τὸν βίον τὸν ἐμαυτοῦ, εὖ ἴσθι τοῦτο ὅτι οὐχ ἑκὼν ἐξαμαρτάνω, ἀλλ' ἀμαθίᾳ τῆ ἐμῆ.

μὴ γὰρ δὴ...δυνάμεθα] 'If we were looking for a piece of gold, we should not, if we could help, allow ourselves to give place to one another and spoil our chance of finding it. Do not then imagine that in looking for justice, a thing more precious than many pieces of gold, we are weakly yielding to one another, and

Republic I. 336 E not doing our utmost to bring the hidden thing to light; believe me, friend, that we are doing our best; but the fact is that we cannot.'

After οὐ δυνάμεθα some such word as 'find' or 'bring it to light' has to be supplied from φανῆναι αὐτό.

For this mode of expression, in which an antithetical compound sentence is treated as a simple one, and is contained within a single negative or interrogative, cp. ii. 374 B: Phaedo 68 A, B.

οἴου γε σύ] 'Believe it, friend, we are.' The reading of  $\mathbf{z}$ , and of the old editions—οἶόν γε ἐστίν, is feeble and without authority. The text may be said to have the support of the great majority of MSS., being the least possible correction of them. οἴον must be connected with σπουδάζειν ὅ τι μάλιστα (not with οὐ σπουδάζειν). Cp. the use of οἴεσθαί γε χρή in a very similar sentence (Phaedo 68 B), where it is in the same way disconnected from the negative—οὐκ ἄσμενος εἶσιν αὐτόσε; οἴεσθαί γε χρή (sc. ἄσμενον ἰέναι αὐτόν): also Crito 53 D οὐκ οἴει ἄσχημον φανεῖσθαι τὸ τοῦ Σωκράτους πρᾶγμα; οἴεσθαί γε χρή. Another reading, but of small authority, is μὴ οἴον σύ.

337 A

χαλεπαίνεσθαι] 'Than to be the victims of your anger.' Το form passives of verbs governing the dative, like  $\phi\theta$ ονέω, πιστεύω, &c., was a growing tendency in the Greek of this period. See Essay on Platonic Syntax in vol. ii. p. 180,  $\beta$ .

σαρδάνιον] probably from σαίρειν, 'to grin.' The word occurs already in Homer (Od. xx. 302).

εἰρωνεία] cp. Symp. 216 Ε ήγεῖται δὲ πάντα ταῦτα τὰ κτήματα οὐδενὸς ἄξια, καὶ ἡμᾶς οὐδὲν εἶναι, λέγων μὲν οὕ, εἰρωνευόμενός τε καὶ παίζων πάντα τὸν βίον πρὸς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους διατελεῖ: and Theaet. 150 c ἄγονός εἰμι σοφίας, καὶ ὅπερ ήδη πολλοί μοι ἀνείδισαν, ὡς τοὺς μὲν ἄλλους ἐρωτῶ, αὐτὸς δὲ οὐδὲν ἀποκρίνομαι περὶ οὐδενὸς διὰ τὸ μηδὲν ἔχειν σοφόν, ἀληθὲς ὀνειδίζουσι. For the meaning of the word cp. Ar. Eth. N. ii. 7, 12 ἡ δ' ἐπὶ τὸ ἔλαττον (προσποίησις) εἰρωνεία καὶ εἴρων: and Theophr. Charact. ἡ μὲν οὖν εἰρωνεία δάξειεν ἃν εἶναι . . . προσποίησις ἐπὶ τὸ χεῖρον πράξεων καὶ λόγων. The word gains a new association from the application of it to Socrates, who not only pretended ignorance with the view of gaining an advantage in argument, but sincerely believed it to be the natural condition of man.

δήλον ... πυνθανομένω] 'Το a questioner who puts the question in this form, I believe you clearly saw that no one would answer.' The words  $\delta \hat{\eta} \lambda \sigma \nu$  of  $\mu \alpha i$   $\sigma \sigma i$   $\hat{\eta} \nu$  resume  $\epsilon \hat{\nu}$  of  $\nu$   $\hat{\eta} \delta \eta \sigma \theta \alpha$ , the previous sentence being repeated in οὖτω. For the enclitic after οἶμαι in parenthesis cp. Theaet. 147 A ή οἴει τίς τι συνίησί τινος ὄνομα, ὁ μὴ οίδε τί έστιν:

Kepublic

337

( `

μηδ' . . . σν 'Not even if the answer to the question (sc. τὸ έρωτώμενον) happens to be one of these?' Others would render, 'Not if one of these chanced to be the truth?' Such an emphatic or predicative use of ov with τυγχάνει is doubtful, whereas the omission of a nominative, which is easily gathered from the rest of the sentence, is in the manner of Plato.

ώς δη ομοιον τοῦτο ἐκείνω] ' Just as if the two cases were alike.' For this use of ώς δή cp. Aesch. Agam. 1633 ώς δή σύ μοι τύραννος 'Αργείων έσει: Soph. O. C. 800 ώς δή σὺ βραχέα, ταῦτα δ' έν καιρῷ λέγεις.

οὐδέν γε ... ἐγώ] 'There is nothing to prevent it.' This is said in the same spirit as οὐκ ἄν θαυμάσαιμι, a few lines below (cp. Charm. 164 A καὶ οὐδέν γέ σε ἴσως κωλύει ἀληθη λέγειν).

ήμεις] is ironical. Socrates provokingly says: 'A man can't help thinking as he does, though you and I join in forbidding him.'

ἄλλο τι οὖν, . . . ποιήσεις; ] ἄλλο τι is used by Plato chiefly in two ways: (1) ἄλλο τι ημ—' Is it not the case that . . .?'—where the ellipsis of ἐστί or γίγνεται is lost sight of in the familiarity of the phrase; cp. Phaedo 70 c ἄλλο τι η εἶεν αν αί ψυχαὶ ἡμῶν ἐκεῖ; Theaet. 154 Ε άλλο τι ἡ ἡρέμα, ως πάνυ πολλήν σχολήν ἄγοντες, πάλιν έπανασκεψόμεθα . . . ; 'Shall we not,' &c.: (2) ή is dropped and άλλο τι like οἴει, δοκείς, βούλει, and the like words, is taken adverbially: cp. Gorg. 495 c ἄλλο τι οὖν . . . δύο ταῦτα ἔλεγες; ' You spoke of them as two, did you not?' and infra i. 342 D ἄλλο τι οὖν . . . οὐδὲ ἰατρὸς οὐδεὶς . . . τὸ τῷ ἰατρῷ ξυμφέρον σκοπεῖ . . .; 'Then said I, neither does any physician consider what is for the interest of the physician: is not that true?' See Riddell's Digest, § 22. In the present passage Thrasymachus says: 'And that is what you are going to do, is it not?' i.e. 'I am to presume then that this is your intention,'-as if the absurdity were too glaring to be further expressed. Instead of saying sharply 'Do you mean to tell me . . . ?' he says with assumed calmness 'I am to understand then that you intend . . .?'

Republic I. 337

ήδως . . . ἀργύριον This is a jest at the expense of the sophists. which Socrates is always either repeating or insinuating, as infra, 345 A. He has not had the good fortune 'to hear the fifty drachma course of Prodicus' (Cratyl. 384 B). He is informed by Callias, 'who has spent more than all the rest of the world upon the Sophists,' that a complete course of education may be had of Evenus at a cost of five minae (Apol. 20 A): Hermogenes, the younger brother of Callias, who is poor, must get these expensive lessons at second hand (Cratyl. 301 c). And the trains of disciples who follow them in dutiful order (Protag. 315 B), and are ready almost to carry them about on their heads (infra x. 600 D), are constantly ridiculed. The gains of Protagoras (Meno qi p), which are greater than those of Pheidias or ten other sculptors, are ironically assumed as a proof of the truth of his doctrines. Compare also the mention of Socrates' own circumstances in Apol. 23 B έν πενία μυρία είμί.

Ε τίς]. See above note on δηλον οἶμαί σοι supra B.

έπειτα . . . εἴη] εἴη, though apparently redundant, is found in all the MSS. ἀπειρημένον αὐτῷ εἴη is written as if not a participle μη είδώς but εἰ μη εἰδείη had preceded.

οὐ φαύλου] 'who is not to be disregarded.' Ironicè: see above ὑπὸ ὑμῶν τῶν δεινῶν (337 A) and note.

προσεποιεῖτο . . . ἀποκρινόμενον] 'He pretended to contend for my being respondent.' φιλόνεικος, 'loving contention': hence φιλονεικεῖν, 'to show a contentious spirit,' 'to be contentious.' But like other words in Greek, it passes readily from the state to the act, and the feeling of the etymology is lost through frequent use. Cp. Protag. 360 Ε φιλονεικεῖν μοι δοκεῖς τὸ ἐμὲ εἶναι τὸν ἀποκρινόμενον: Phil. 14 Β οὐ δήπου πρός γε αὐτὸ τοῦτο φιλονεικοῦμεν. The Venetian MS. T. has φιλονικεῖν. C. F. Hermann and Cobet would restore φιλόνικος, φιλονικέω, φιλονικία in Plato throughout, relying on Plato's own remarks connecting the word with νίκη (ix. 581 A, 586 c), in which he is followed by Aristotle (Rhet. ii. 12, 6). But Plato's fanciful etymology is no sufficient ground for judging of the orthography of a word.

κουε δή]. The sham compliment which precedes is too much for Thrasymachus, who immediately begins like a crier (oyez! oyez!) to proclaim his idea of justice. For the definition cp. Laws iv. 714 C οὕτε γὰρ πρὸς τὸν πόλεμον οὕτε πρὸς ἀρετὴν ὅλην βλέπειν

δεῖν φασὶ τοὺς νόμους, ἀλλ' ἥτις ἃν καθεστηκυῖα ἢ πολιτεία, ταύτη δεῖν τὸ ξυμφέρον†, ὅπως ἄρξει τε ἀεὶ καὶ μὴ καταλυθήσεται, καὶ τὸν φύσει ὅρον τοῦ δικαίου λέγεσθαι κάλλισθ' οὕτως. Πῶς; "Οτι τὸ τοῦ κρείττονος ξυμφέρον ἐστί.

Republic I. 338 C

το ... ξυμφέρον] The participle with the article is used as a noun; hence τοῦ κρείττονος, not τῷ κρείττονοι. The new philosophy is first of all damaged by a broad joke from Socrates. If Polydamas the Pancratiast, who is our superior, finds the expediency of eating beef, does not expediency, and therefore justice, require that we, who are his inferiors, should eat beef too? Thrasymachus replies angrily and pompously, endeavouring to re-invest the subject with the dignity that has been lost. A similar jest occurs in the Charmides (161, 162), where justice, having been defined, as in iv. 443, to be τὸ τὰ ἐαυτοῦ πράττειν, the question is raised whether this means 'making one's own coat.' Cp. also Gorg. 490 c, where a similar question is provokingly asked—whether, as the wisest is to have most, the wise physician is to have most food.

άλλ' οὐκ ἐθελήσεις] The future here appears to be used as a stronger present: a sense of predetermination being expressed in it: 'But you won't.' Cp. Charm. 166 A ἔχεις οὖν μοι . . . δείξαι; ἀλλ' οὐχ ἔξεις: Prot. 354 D ἀλλ' οὐχ ἔξετε.

καὶ τοῦτο . . . τί ποτε λέγεις;] 'And with what meaning do you say this?' καί indicates surprise, as in καὶ πῶς;

εὶ Πουλυδάμας ἡμῶν κρείττων] Polydamas is mentioned by many ancient writers as a Pancratiast of great strength and stature, who was at one time in the pay of Darius Ochus, and, amongst other wonderful feats, slew lions, and fought unarmed with armed men.

βδελυρὸς ... λόγον] 'That is abominable of you, Socrates: you understand me in the sense in which you can do my argument most mischief.' κακουργεῖν implies malice.

[)

τίθεται . . . ἡ ἀρχή] 'The government in each case makes the laws.' The articles τούς and ἡ are correlative—τίθεται ἡ ἀρχὴ τοὺς νόμους. This removes Schneider's objection to ἡ. The interchange of the generic present and gnomic aorist (τίθεται . . . θέμεναι . . . ἀπέφηναν . . . κολάζουσιν) is noticeable. Par. A reads έκάστη—a manifest error. The thesis of Thrasymachus has a verbal and superficial truth. There are governments everywhere who have power in their hands and make laws for their own interest, and

E

Republic I.

obedience to government is right. The abstract notion of law is the same amid every variety of law and custom, and authority in the ruler is the correlative of justice in the subject. The statement is a paradox which partly gains force from the appearance of honesty in confessing what other men are trying to conceal. Cp. Callicles in the Gorgias 483 ff.

An opinion equivalent to this is cited by Aristotle, Pol. i. 3, 4 τοῖς μὲν γὰρ δοκεῖ ἐπιστήμη τέ τις εἶναι ἡ δεσποτεία . . . τοῖς δὲ παρὰ φύσιν τὸ δεσπόζειν. Nor are modern parallels wanting. When Hobbes says that power is the source of right, this is really the enunciation (of a principle which is carried out only in his own 'kingdom of darkness.' He seems to have confused the duty of obedience to authority in the abstract with the duty of obedience to a particular authority. That authority always exists and always claims obedience may be readily allowed: the dispute is whether the authority does or does not reside in a certain person. 'Mankind are rightly jealous of their principles being reduced to the level of their practice.' It must be allowed that the theory of the Sophist is realized in fact whenever power is preferred to justice, or conventionality perverts truth. But the elevation of this distortion of life and nature into a philosophical theory is deservedly hated.

339 B αὐτόθι] Sc.  $\epsilon \nu \tau \hat{\eta} \sigma \hat{\eta} \, d\pi o \kappa \rho l \sigma \epsilon \iota$ . δή is emphatic and ironical: 'it is true.'

οὔπω... μεγάλη] Socrates, ignoring the irony of σμικρά, says gravely: 'It is not yet clear, even whether it is a great one,' i. e. 'it may be a great one for anything we yet know.'

ταῦτ' ἔσται, κ.τ.λ.] 'That is what I am going to do '—implying that the grumbling exhortation of Thrasymachus was rather unnecessary. The special use of μέντοι in interrogations with οὐ may be compared with the use of δήπου in claiming the recollection or agreement of the person addressed. But μέντοι further implies a transition of thought, or the renewal of an old thought, cp. infra vii. 521 D οὐκ ἀθλητὰς μέντοι πολέμου ἔφαμεν τούτους ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι νέους ὄντας; and 346 A οὐχὶ ἐκάστην μέντοι φαμὲν ἑκάστοτε τῶν τεχνῶν τούτῷ ἐτέραν εἶναι, κ.τ.λ.

Justice is the expediency of the superior, but the superior may err, and then inexpediency becomes justice. This 'reductio ad absurdum,' which Polemarchus receives with triumph, is rejected by Cleitophon, who argues that the word 'expedient' is to be taken as 'expedient in the thought or mind of the ruler.' The idea which

the ruler has of his interest, however inexpedient in fact, always remains the idea which the ruler has of his interest. Polemarchus truly retorts that this is an after-thought: Socrates, however, does not object to the change, but Thrasymachus prefers a different mode of shifting his ground. He argues not that the expedient is what seems to the ruler to be expedient, but that the ruler when he errs is not to be called a ruler.

339

Republic 1.

τους δέ τινας | For the qualifying use of the indefinite after the article, cp. Phileb. 13 C τàs δέ τινας έτέρας αὐτῶν κακάς: Herod. i. 114 τον δέ κού τινα αὐτῶν ὀφθαλμον βασιλέως εἶναι.

1)

C

τί λέγεις σύ; ἔφη The reading of Stephanus τί λέγεις; omitting σύ, is adopted by Schneider and inferred by him from Bekker's silence to rest on the authority of Par. A, where, however,  $\sigma \dot{\nu}$  is read, but is marked as doubtful  $(.\sigma \dot{v})$ . For the text, which gives more point to σύ in the reply, cp. Aristoph. Nub. 1174 τοῦτο τοὐπιχώριον ἀτεχνῶς ἐπανθεῖ, τὸ τί λέγεις σύ; The question of Thrasymachus is rudely expressive of indignation and surprise. Socrates returns with a stroke of the hammer: 'I am saying what you say yourself.' There is the same form of the 'retort courteous,' infra in oiual and o'cou-'I think so,' said he. 'Then,' said I, 'you must further think,' &c. Compare a similar repetition in iv. 430 c ἀποδέχομαι τοίνυν τοῦτο ἀνδρείαν εἶναι. Καὶ γὰρ ἀποδέχου, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, πολιτικήν γε, καὶ ορθώς αποδέξει.

οταν οί μὲν ἄρχοντες, κ.τ.λ. The sentence has a second apodosis: άρα τότε κ.τ.λ. resuming οἴου . . . ωμολογησθαι. Cp. Theaet. 171 B έξ ἁπάντων ἄρα . . . τότε . . . ξυγχωρήσεται.

Е

άρα τότε . . . ἀποδεχώμεθα] The whole argument may be briefly summed up as follows: 'Justice is the interest of the superior.' 'But what if the superior is mistaken about his interest?' 'But,' says Cleitophon, 'he cannot mistake about what he thinks to be his interest; and that was what Thrasymachus meant.' 'But that,' retorts Polemarchus, 'was not the assertion actually made by Thrasymachus.' 'Never mind,' says Socrates; 'we will take this instead of the other.' Cleitophon tries to evade the 'reductio ad absurdum' of Thrasymachus' argument by substituting after the manner of the Sophists appearance for reality. Justice thus becomes not the stronger's interest, but what appears to the stronger to be his interest. This, however, is not what Thrasymachus actually said (338 c, E).

οὐκ ἀναγκαῖον . . . λέγεις;] ' Must it not then follow that, in that ~

Republic I. 339, E case, it is just to do the very opposite of what you say?' According to Madvig's punctuation, which is here followed, αὐτό (emphatic) is joined to τοὐναντίον. (Madvig also, unnecessarily, reads συμβαίνει.) The older punctuation was συμβαίνειν αὐτὸ ούτωσί, δίκαιον εἶναι, κ.τ.λ.,—αὐτό unemphatic and referring to the case put in the first part of the sentence; the antecedent, as in Polit. 263 Β μήποτε παρ' ἐμοῦ δόξης αὐτὸ ἐναργῶς διωρισμένον ἀκηκοέναι, having inexact reference to what precedes. [L. C.]

\*οὐκ ἀναγκαῖον...λέγεις;] 'Is it not necessary for the matter to turn out thus, that it is just to do the opposite of what you say?' αὐτό, 'the matter,' has a vague antecedent in what precedes: cp. Polit. 263 Β μήποτε παρ' ἐμοῦ δόξης αὐτὸ ἐναργῶς διωρισμένον ἀκηκοέναι. ούτωσί is explained in the clause which follows. It is better to explain the passage thus—placing the comma after ούτωσί, than with Madvig (who unnecessarily reads συμβαίνει) to delete the comma connecting αὐτό with τοὐναντίον and making ούτωσί mean 'in that case.' 'Must it not then follow that, in that case, it is just to do the very opposite of what you say?' [B. J.]

340
A

τὸ γὰρ τὰ κελευόμενα, κ.τ.λ.] The first γάρ introduces a justification, 'You are right,' says Cleitophon, and in that 'Thrasymachus was consistent, since he defined justice to be obedience to the command of the ruler.' The second γάρ with καί admits Cleitophon's assertion so far, but proceeds seriously to justify the argument by adding what had been suppressed. 'Yes, I was right: for he also defined justice to be the interest of the stronger. And these two general principles are rendered inconsistent by his admission that the ruler sometimes makes a mistake about his own interest.'

B ἀλλ', ἔφη... ἐτίθετο] 'But, said Cleitophon, he meant by the expediency of the superior, what the superior in his view thought expedient for him; this, he said, was to be done by the subject, and this he maintained to be justice.' The asyndeton is relieved by an emphasis on τοῦτο. For the optative see Goodwin M. and T. 694, 700.

τοῦτο ποιητέον εἶναι τῷ ἥττονι] ἔλεγεν has to be repeated with these words. Cleitophon's dialectic recalls the passage with Polemarchus, supra, 334 c ff. Thrasymachus passes by the interposition of Cleitophon and defends himself from another point of view. He maintains not that what the superior thinks for his interest is just, but that the superior, qua superior, can never err.

Socrates is ready to argue the question on the new ground proposed Republic by Cleitophon. But Thrasymachus takes a different line. ruler makes no mistake qua ruler; when he gives commands which are inexpedient for him, he loses his title to be called the ruler or stronger.'

340 C-342 E

S. Very well: We will speak of the ruler in the strictest sense of the term. Turning to the analogy of the arts we note that the physician qua physician is a healer only; and he takes fees not as physician, but as money-maker. The pilot, qua pilot, considers not his own safety but that of the passengers in his ship. The art which rules each function is self-sufficing and perfect and in need of nothing, while that whereto it ministers has need of many things. In other words, a true form of government does not regard its own interest, but the interest of that which is governed by it. And in all cases, the ruler, who is truly such, rules not for himself but for his subjects.

340

ηκιστά γ', ἔφη, κ.τ.λ. Thrasymachus raises a new objection: 'The superior is not the superior when he errs.' We say indeed that 'the ruler has erred,' as in the case of other arts we say that 'the physician, the calculator, has erred.' But this is an incorrectness of language; for in erring 'the physician is no longer physician,' 'the ruler is no longer ruler.' Yet the possibility of error in the ruler had been admitted by Thrasymachus in 339 c without this restriction. The question which is here introduced—viz. how far words are to be restricted to their good senses—is one which has occasioned considerable perplexity in the infancy of philosophy. Are  $\epsilon i \beta o \nu \lambda i a$ ,  $\pi \rho o a i \rho \epsilon \sigma i s$ ,  $\tau \epsilon \chi \nu \eta$ ,  $\phi \rho o \nu \eta \sigma i s$ ,  $\sigma o \phi i a$ , and the other names of habits which occur in the Ethics of Aristotle, to be taken only in their better signification?—e. g. εὐβουλία, as implying a good end, προαίρεσις, as the deliberate choice always of good, σοφία and φρόνησιs as concerned with truth only? How far, again, is the meaning of such terms to be extended by analogy? The answer seems to be that the use of language is determined by custom and association, and aims only at such a degree of precision as is necessary. for the attainment of perspicuity. Words are not necessarilyambiguous because they are taken in good, bad, or neutral senses, if the sense in which they are taken is clearly indicated by the context.

The Sophist in Plato is apt to develop his argument into a speech - he 'goes running on in a long harangue, like brazen pots Republic I. 340 which, when they are struck, continue to sound unless some one puts his hand upon them' (Protag. 329 A). So Protagoras, in the dialogue which bears his name, objects to the short 'cut and thrust' method of Socrates, and prefers a stately display: and in the Gorgias, Socrates himself, when he can get no more answers out of his adversaries, is obliged to make 'one man do the work of two,' and embody a series of questions and answers in a single long speech.

D συκοφάντης . . . ἐξαμαρτάνει] 'You are a sharper, Socrates, in argument.'

For the argumentative use of αὐτίκα cp. Protag. 359 Ε αὐτίκα εἰς τὸν πόλεμον οἱ μὲν ἐθέλουσιν ἰέναι, οἱ δὲ οὐκ ἐθέλουσιν. The most general meaning of the word is 'immediately'—'to begin with'; when used as it is here, it may be conveniently translated 'for example.'

λογιστικόν] λογιστικόs is used in Plato in both senses, (1) of calculating and (2) of reasoning. The latter sense, however, is chiefly confined to the neuter. For the first sense cp. vii. 526 Β οῖ τε φύσει λογιστικοὶ εἰς πάντα τὰ μαθήματα... ὀξεῖς φύονται: for the second, iv. 439 D τὸ μὲν... λογιστικὸν προσαγορεύοντες. Cp. the converse transition of meaning in the use of the word μαθήματα.

λέγομεν τῷ ῥήματι] 'The expression which we use is.' Plato is fond of contrasting the expression with the thought: cp. Theaet. 166 D τὸν δὲ λόγον αὖ μὴ τῷ ῥήματί μου δίωκε: Gorg. 450 D οὐχ ὅτι τῷ ῥήματι οὕτως εἶπες: ῥῆμα, in the sense of 'expression,' is opposed to ὅνομα, 'a single word.' Cp. Cratyl. 399 A, B, where Δι φίλος, which is a ῥῆμα, when contracted into Δίφιλος becomes an ὄνομα.

τὸ δ', οἶμαι] 'Whereas in fact, as I conceive.' Cp. Laws i. 630 p τὸ δὲ πῶs χρῆν ἡμᾶs λέγειν; 'but how in fact ought we to say?' τὸ δέ is often thus used in Plato, and may be explained either as an accusative, 'as to this,' or as a nominative, 'the fact is.'

E τοιοῦτον . . . ἀποκρίνεσθαι] 'Understand, then, that my answer to you just now was of this nature.'

341 A εἷεν] Like 'So' in German, and 'Well!' or 'Good!' in English, implies assent with every degree of expression, grave or ironical—in this passage making rather light of the attack of Thrasymachus: 'Very well, Thrasymachus; you think me unfair?' Elsewhere εἶεν simply expresses agreement with a former proposition for the sake of getting on to a new one: cp. infra 349 D, Protag. 312 Ε εἶεν' ὁ δὲ δὴ σοφιστὴς περὶ τίνος δεινὸν ποιεῖ λέγειν;

οὐδέ γ' ἂν ἐπιχειρήσαιμι Sc. βιάσασθαι τῷ λόγφ. The boisterousness of Thrasymachus is contrasted with the provoking quietness of Socrates. Cp. infra 345 B η είς την ψυχην φέρων ένθω τον λόγον; where the rejoinder is  $\mu \hat{a} \Delta i a$ , . . .  $\mu \hat{\eta} \sigma \hat{v} \gamma \epsilon$ .

Republic 1. 34 I

τοιοῦτον] 'Any similar misunderstanding.'

ον νῦν δ νῦν—(ő written over an erasure) is the reading of Par. A. Cp. ον ἄρτι ἔλεγες infra c: either ő or őν is quite admissible, but the masculine is more lively.

C

οὐδὲν ὢν καὶ ταῦτα] (1) 'Though here again you are nobody,' i. e. 'with as little effect as ever.' Thrasymachus has been prophesying that Socrates will try to cheat, but without success: Socrates replies that he is not such a madman as to try and cheat Thrasymachus. The latter rejoins that he has made the attempt, though in this case, as on former occasions, unsuccessfully; or (2) [B. J.] 'Although you made a fool of yourself at this too,' i. e. at cheating Thrasymachus, as you would also have done at shaving a lion if you had attempted it. For οὐδεν ων cp. viii. 556 D ἄνδρες ἡμέτεροί είσιν οὐδέν (according to one reading), and for the idiomatic καὶ ταῦτα, Charm. 154 Ε πάνυ καλὸς καὶ ἀγαθός ἐστι καὶ ταῦτα.

Thrasymachus now argues that justice is the interest of the ruler regarded in his capacity of ruler, and therefore as unerring. Socrates accepts the position, and retorts that the ruler in his capacity of ruler has no concern with his own interests. To prove this, an appeal is made to the favourite analogy of the arts. The physician in his capacity of physician is not a taker of money, but a healer of the sick: the pilot is not to be thought of as a sailor, but as having a function of his own. And every man who has an art and function has in one sense an interest; but that interest is only the perfection of his art, and the art when perfect has no further need or interest.

D

οὐδεν . . . ὑπολογιστέον 'This must not be taken into the account: 'i.e. as interfering with our conception of him. Cp. Laws iii. 702 C μηδεν ύπολογιζομένους τὸ ξενικὸν αὐτῶν.

αρ' οὖν . . . τελέαν εἶναι There is a slight play upon the word ξυμφέρου, which is here used not of the artist but of the art. 'But has any of the arts an interest other than its own perfection?' In other words they are complete in themselves and self-contained. There is no reason to stumble at the words, or with MSS.  $q \beta'$  and some modern editors to alter the text by the insertion after ἄλλο of

Kepublic I. 341 D οὖ προσδεῖται, ἡ ἐξαρκεῖ ἐκάστη αὐτὴ αὐτῆ ὥστε (deleting ή). This is an interpolation rather than an emendation—a clumsy attempt to improve on the original text.

E ωσπερ, ἔφην ἐγώ] Thrasymachus does not understand the meaning of this self-sufficiency of art. Socrates therefore adds an illustration. 'The body is not self-sufficing, because it requires the assistance of medicine: but the art of medicine (or any other art) is self-sufficing, because needing nothing external.'

 $\nu \hat{\nu} \nu$ ] adds a slight emphasis which is sufficiently expressed in English by 'has been': but the word seems otiose, and may perhaps be a corruption of  $\hat{\eta} \mu \hat{\nu} \nu$ .

ἐπὶ τούτῳ] 'For this purpose,' referring to the whole clause, viz. ἐπὶ τούτῳ ὅπως τούτῳ (sc. τῷ σώματι) ἐκπορίζη τὰ ξυμφέροντα. Cp. supra D ἐπὶ τούτῳ πέφυκεν, κ.τ.λ.

342 A ἔσθ' ὅ τι προσδεῖταί τινος ἀρετῆς] 'Does art at all require any excellence?' Socrates maintains a purely ideal conception of art or knowledge, because Thrasymachus had insisted on a purely ideal conception of the ruler. Thrasymachus might indeed have replied that this ideal of art is a mere fiction, or that the arts and sciences are dependent on one another. But such an answer, though familiar to modern thought, would have been strange to early Greek philosophy, perhaps even to Socrates, who has a clearer idea of art in the abstract than of the circumstances by which the arts are conditioned, or of their relation to one another.

σκεψομένης τε καὶ ἐκποριζούσης] Here as elsewhere the present and future are combined. Cp. x. 604 a μαχεῖσθαί τε καὶ ἀντιτείνειν.

δεῖ ἐκάστη τέχνη] Whether the reading of Par. A, δεῖ ἀεί, is the result of dittographia, or the omission of ἀεί in the other MSS. is due to the resemblance of ΔΕΙ–ΑΕΙ, is uncertain.

καὶ τοῦτ' ἔστιν ἀπέραντον] The argument from infinity is a reductio ad absurdum characteristic of Greek speculation. How could art and knowledge, like the good, be other than finite? Unless they were a law to themselves, what limit was there to them? So Plato argues in the dialogue which bears the name of Parmenides (132 E ff, 133 A), that behind an idea and the particulars corresponding to it there may arise another idea and again another idea of that idea and its particulars, and so on to infinity. Aristotle, in his criticism of Plato's Ideas (Met. i. 9. 3), repeats the same objection in a particular form, which he calls the argument of the

τρίτος ἄνθρωπος: i. e. behind the idea of humanity and individual men there arises another idea inclusive of both, and so on to infinity.

Republic I.

τὸ ξυμφέρον σκοπείν] is a further explanation of επὶ τὴν αύτῆς πονηρίαν, ' for its own defect, to consider what is expedient.'

342

αὐτὴ δὲ ἀβλαβὴς . . . ὀρθὴ οὖσα, κ.τ.λ.] ' And it is itself whole and unimpaired while it remains true—that is, so long as each art in its entirety is exactly what it is.' The latter words are an expansion or explanation of δρθη οὖσα.

ούτως, έφη, φαίνεται ] Cp. infra c φαίνεται, έφη, ούτως. φαίνεται is expressive of a careless indifference, 'so it seems'—which develops into reluctance (infra συνεχώρησεν . . . μάλα μόγις), as Thrasymachus becomes more alive to the impending consequences.

C

άλλὰ μὴν . . . τέχναι] 'But the arts have rule in their several spheres.' The missing link is now supplied, and Thrasymachus begins to be aware that he is caught in the toils of his adversary. For if the arts have no interest of their own, and yet are rulers or superiors, then in this case the ruler or superior does not seek his own interest. This idea that the only ruler is the scientific ruler, that government is an art, frequently recurs in Plato, and is the foundation of the famous notion of the 'philosopher-King.' Cp. viii. 552 B; Theaet. 170 A, B; Polit. 303 B.

τῷ ἀρχομένω like ἐκείνω οδ τέχνη ἐστίν above, is neuter, including both things and persons: there is therefore no occasion to change the reading from ἐκείνο to ἐκείνον against the authority of the best MSS. Cp. infra 345 D έφ' ῷ τέτακται . . . ἐκείνω τῷ ἀρχομένω τε καὶ θεραπευομένω: 346 D έκείνο έφ' ὧ τέτακται.

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

φ αν αὐτὸς δημιουργή] 'And that (i. e. the person or thing) for which he himself executes the work.' For the dative after δημιουργείν cp. Laws viii. 846 E.

> 343 -1-344 C

The impatience of Thrasymachus bursts forth again: 'As if the shepherd cared for the sheep and not for his own wages or profit! Justice is in reality another's good, that is to say the advantage of the ruler. The just man everywhere reaps harm and loss. But the unjust man who has power,—he is the happy man; above all when his power is supreme. For injustice, if practised on a sufficient scale, is stronger than justice, and much more worthy of a free and aspiring nature.

ἐπειδη οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] Thrasymachus, foreseeing the inevitable

Republic I. 343

conclusion, makes a bold diversion. He is indignant at the paradox of Socrates, that the ruler seeks only the interest of his subjects, and places the opposite point of view in the strongest light. 'Even a child might know that the idealism of Socrates is the very reverse of the truth.' This he expresses in a coarse Aristophanic manner. Cp. the part taken by Callicles in the Gorgias; see especially 449 B, 511 A, 521 C, where several retorts courteous are given. For τί and ὅτι cp. Hipp. Maj. 290 C καὶ ἐγώ· τί μάλιστα; ψήσω. ὅτι, ἐρεῖ, τῆs ᾿Αθηνᾶs τοὺs ὀφθαλμοὺs οὐ χρυσοῦs ἐποίησεν. τοι adds a slight emphasis: 'because, to say the truth.' Cp. supra 330 B οὖ τοι ἔνεκα ἦρόμην.

αὐτῆ] 'as far as she is concerned.' Cp. Lys. 208 D ἐκείνη σε ἐᾶ ποιεῖν ὅ τι ἄν βούλη, ἵν' αὐτῆ μακάριος ἦs: Soph. 229 Ε ὅταν αὐτοῖς ἐξαμαρτάνωσιν.

οὐδὲ πρόβατα οὐδὲ ποιμένα] 'You do not know either sheep or shepherd,' i.e. you do not know which is which. For this disjunctive form of expression cp. x. 605 β οὕτε τὰ μείζω οὕτε τὰ ἐλάττω διαγιγνώσκοντι.

ὅτι δὴ τί μάλιστα;] 'Because of what?' i.e. what is that which makes you say it? a verbal notion  $=\gamma i \gamma \nu \epsilon \tau a\iota$  has to be supplied. The second ὅτι is a repetition of the first. Cp. Charm. 161 c ὅτι δὴ τί γε; ἔφη. "Οτι κ.τ.λ. ὅτι . . . τί is a combination of a causal with an interrogative construction; or ὅτι which would properly introduce a causal sentence is converted into an interrogative by τί. There is no doubt about the meaning: the difficulty is to explain the syntactical relation. In an idiom the syntax may be lost or cannot certainly be traced. Compare ἵνα τί (sc. γένηται): Apol. 26 c ἵνα τί ταῦτα λέγεις;

В

ότι οἴει, κ.τ.λ.] The state of Thrasymachus' temper is worthy of attention. His imagined superiority is not greater than the real interval between himself and Socrates. He may be compared to an angry child struggling in the hands of a giant, who for a moment lets him go. Immediately his spirits begin to rally, and his impudence revives, only to entitle him to a more thorough castigation. The instinct of self-defence leads him to avoid the short interrogatory method of Socrates; he makes an oration, and after having had the pleasure of hearing himself speak, is about to retreat with dignity. But Socrates, with the help of the rest of the company, practises a method of detaining him which is quite as effectual as physical force. He is at first reluctant to be cross-

examined, but afterwards in the skilful hands of the master, he shows real good-humour, and takes some interest in the subject of inquiry.

Republic
1.
343

διανοείσθαι πρός] Cp. Laws. i. 626 D αὐτῷ δὲ πρὸς αὐτὸν πότερον ώς πολεμίω πρὸς πολέμιον διανοητέον; 628 D ώσαύτως . . . πρὸς πόλεως εὐδαιμονίαν . . . διανοούμενος. Faesi, Badham, and Cobet would read διακείσθαι, a change not required by the sense and which has no authority.

οὕτω πόρρω εἶ] 'You are so far out of the way.' Cp. ( C Lys. 212 A οὕτω πόρρω εἰμὶ τοῦ κτήματος: Theaet. 151 C πόρρω ὅντες τοῦ εἰδέναι.

άλλότριον ἀγαθὸν . . . οἰκεία δὲ . . . βλάβη] Cp. Ar. Eth. N. v. 1, § 17; 6, § 6.

οἱ δ' ἀρχόμενοι] Either 'and the subjects—,' or 'and they, as subjects—.' For the latter cp. ii. 380 B οἱ δὲ ἀνίναντο κολαζόμενοι: Protag. 315 B οὖς ἄγει . . . κηλῶν τῆ φωνῆ . . . οἱ δὲ κατὰ τὴν φωνὴν ἔπονται κεκηλημένοι.

δ μὲν δίκαιος ἀπὸ τῶν ἴσων] 'the just man contributes a larger D sum out of an equal fortune, the unjust a smaller.'

ἀπέχθεσθαι] appears to be used (as the accent implies) for the present passive. Cp. ἀφελεῖσθαι supra.

λέγω . . . πλεονεκτείν] ὅνπερ, not ὅπερ, which is found in some inferior MSS., is the true reading; the antecedent is inferred from 343 Β τοὺς ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν ἄρχοντας . . . ἄρχουσιν.

ἢ τὸ δίκαιον]  $SC. \epsilon lν aι.$ 

344 A

E

την τελεωτάτην ἀδικίαν] cp. Euripides' description of tyranny (Phoen. 549) as ἀδικίαν εὐδαίμονα, and the preceding speech of Eteocles concluding with the lines:

εἴπερ γὰρ ἀδικεῖν χρή, τυραννίδος πέρι κάλλιστον ἀδικεῖν, τἄλλα δ' εὐσεβεῖν χρεών.

ἔστι δὲ τοῦτο τυραννίς] Villainy on a large scale is no longer villainy, just as successful treason is no longer treason. The picture of the tyrant, which is faintly given here, is further developed in the next book, and finally worked up in Books viii and ix.

οί . . . τῶν τοιούτων κακουργημάτων] 'For robbers of temples, man-stealers, burglars, swindlers, and thieves are the names which

В

Republic I. 344 are given to those who do wrong in the particular branches of this class of crimes.' The genitive depends on κατὰ μέρη (which is a resumption of ἐψ' ἐκάστῳ μέρει). The class implied is the class which comprises the various forms of robbery, τοιούτων referring back to τἀλλότρια...δημόσια. For this use of τοιοῦτος cp. iv. 430 Β τὴν δὴ τοιαύτην δύναμιν καὶ σωτηρίαν: Crat. 405 Β ἀπολύων τῶν τοιούτων κακῶν.

ἐπειδὰν δέ τις] The interchange of singular and plural varies the style. So above—ὅταν τις ἀδικήσας μὴ λάθη. And elsewhere—νι. 498 C ὅταν δὲ λήγη μὲν ἡ ῥώμη, πολιτικῶν δὲ καὶ στρατειῶν ἐκτὸς γίγνηται, τότε ἤδη ἀφέτους νέμεσθαι.

344 D-348 A

Socrates entreats Thrasymachus to stay and answer the momentous question, 'What way of life is best?' He will thereby confer an immense benefit on the whole company. Only let him be consistent and not shift his ground. If the physician is to be regarded as a healer of the sick, not as a receiver of fees, the shepherd is not to be described as a glutton, or a money-maker, but simply as a feeder of sheep. In so far as he is a shepherd, he tends his flock not for his own advantage, but for their good. All art is exercised for the good of its object—else why does the artist ask for pay? Every art has its proper function, beyond which it has no interest or requirement. And the earning of payment is the function of a separate art (μισθωτική) rehich is only accidentally associated with the other arts, such as medicine, shepherding, or the government of men. Hence the true rulers will not take office without reward, unless they are threatened with the penalty of being ruled by their inferiors. The last is the only motive by which a good man can be induced to govern.

344 D ὥσπερ βαλανεὺς ἡμῶν καταντλήσας . . . τὸν λόγον] Compare the imitation of the expression by Lucian (Encom. Dem. § 16)—ἢ πού  $\gamma \epsilon$ , ἔφην, διανοῆ καταχεῖν μου τῶν ὤτων ὥσπερ βαλανεὺς καταντλήσας τὸν λοιπὸν λόγον; ἀθρόον—'in a mass'—expresses the flood of words which the Sophist pours out upon them.

 $\ddot{\eta}$  σμικρὸν . . . ζώ $\dot{\eta}$ ] For the form of the sentence compare Laches 185  $\Lambda \dot{\eta}$  περὶ σμικροῦ οἴεσθε νυνὶ κινδυνεύειν καὶ σὰ καὶ Λυσίμαχος, ἀλλ' οὐ περὶ τούτου τοῦ κτήματος, ὁ τῶν ὑμετέρων μέγιστον ὂν τυγχάνει; For the sentiment cp. Gorg. 500 c, where Socrates in like manner pleads with Callicles that he should be serious in speaking of a subject so important as the end of human life.

διαγόμενος] sc. τὸν βίον. The middle voice marks the personal

interest which each man has in his own way of life. 'How his life Republic may be passed by each one of us to the greatest advantage.'

I.

344

έγω γάρ... ἔχειν [There is no use in my remaining:] 'for, I am of a different opinion about the matter' (i.e. about the nature and profitableness of justice). This is the most satisfactory, way of taking the passage.

Some editors place a mark of interrogation after  $\tilde{\epsilon}\chi\epsilon\omega$ . Thrasymachus would then be understood to say, in answer to the question  $\hat{\eta}$   $\sigma\mu\kappa\rho\delta\nu$  . . .  $\zeta\phi\eta$ ; 'Do I think anything else?' i. e. about the importance of the question. But this is wanting in point. Schneider gives to the sentence a slightly different turn by placing a full stop after  $\tilde{\epsilon}\chi\epsilon\omega$ , and supposes the words to be ironical: 'Just as if I think otherwise!' But the irony is not sufficiently marked.

ἔοικας, ἡν δ' ἐγώ, . . . κήδεσθαι] ἔοικας sc. οἴεσθαι τουτὶ ἄλλως ἔχειν. 'So you seem; or rather you seem not to care a bit about us.' Socrates affects to understand Thrasymachus to mean that he thinks differently about the importance of the question.

οὖτοι κακῶς σοι κείσεται] 'It will not be a bad investment.' For the use of κείσεται] 'It will not be a bad investment.' For the use of κείσεται in the sense of 'being invested or laid up' so as to yield a return of profit or interest, cp. Soph. O. C. 1518 ἄ σοι | γήρως ἄλυπα τῆδε κείσεται πόλει, and above 333 c ἀλλὰ κεῖσθαι which is the explanation of παρακαταθέσθαι καὶ σῶν εἶναι, i.e. 'to be left on deposit.'

The Sophist is presented in a ludicrous point of view. He has been clamouring for a fee (337 p), and now the fee is offered to him as a bribe to prevent his running away.

ἐγὼ γὰρ . . . πείθομαι] 'For my part (τό γ' ἐμόν) I tell you that I am not convinced.'

έστω μὲν ἄδικος] 'Let a man be unjust,'—not 'Let her (sc. injustice) be as unjust as she will,' which is poor and tautological.

ὅμως . . . κερδαλεώτερον] 'Still this does not convince me, for one, that injustice is more profitable than justice.' οὐ πείθει: sc. this supposed impunity of injustice. The nominative to  $\pi είθει$  is gathered from the previous sentence. 'Grant that the unjust man may be unpunished, still this does not convince me,' &c. The slight difficulty of this accounts for the reading of Ficinus (mihi suades).

345 A Republic

The sign the weight with the argument bodily into your soul?' 'By Heaven,'

345
B I said, 'don't.' The impatience of Thrasymachus is met by Socrates with a cry of horror. 'God forbid!—not that, whatever you do.' The coarseness of the Sophistic method of imparting knowledge is compared to forcing food down another person's throat.

C ἔτι γὰρ . . . ἡυλάξαι] Socrates, as his manner is, resuming,—
returning on the old track (ἀναλαβών, ἴχνος μετελθών), says to Thrasymachus: You see that 'having at first defined the physician as
the true physician (341 c, 342 A) you did not think fit afterwards
(343 B) to retain the same accuracy in speaking of the shepherd.'
For ψυλάττειν, 'to keep in mind,' cp. Theaet. 182 C τοῦτο μόνον
φυλάττωμεν.

ποιμαίνειν] Par. A has πιαίνειν here in the text, which agrees with μέλλοντα έστιάσεσθαι πρὸς τὴν εὐωχίαν infra, and with παχύνειν supra 343 B. But the same MS. has ποιμαίνειν in the margin by the first or second hand,—which is clearly right and necessary to the sense.

Τῆ δὲ ποιμενικῆ... εἶναι] Cp. supra 342 B. Plato is speaking
 ideally. No art ever perfectly fulfils its function.

έπεὶ . . . ποιμενικὴ εἶναι] 'Since it has sufficiently provided what concerns itself with a view to its being perfect, so long as it lacks nothing of being the art of shepherding.' The subject of ἐκπεπόρισται (Perf. Mid.) is ἡ ποιμενική, as is shown by the nominative βελτίστη.

Ε ἔν τε πολιτικῆ καὶ ἰδιωτικῆ ἀρχῆ] 'In a public as in a private exercise of power': that is to say:—'And this applies not only to the shepherd and the physician, but also to the statesman.'

σὺ δὲ τοὺς ἄρχοντας . . . ἀλλ' εὖ οἶδα] The words τοὺς ἀληθῶς ἄρχοντας recall Thrasymachus' own assumption (343 B) that the term is used in the strictest sense. The fact that the artist will not work without pay, shows that as far as his art is concerned he studies not his own interest but the interest of his subject-matter. This is also the case with the true ruler: he too, for the same reason, will not rule without being rewarded.

οὖκ] SC. οἴομαι.

τὰς ἄλλας ἀρχάς There is a slight inaccuracy in the expression,

which arises out of the somewhat forced analogy supposed to exist between the art of government and the other 'arts' or 'offices.' Cp. 342 c  $\sharp \rho \chi o \nu \sigma i \gamma \epsilon$  at  $\tau \epsilon \chi \nu a \iota$ , and infra 346 E.

Republic I. 345

αὐτοῖσιν] The rare Ionic form is here adopted for emphasis and euphony. The other passages where it occurs in the Republic are iii. 388 p, 389 p; viii. 560 e, 564 c.

346 A

ἐπεὶ τοσόνδε εἰπέ] In assigning to each art a separate power or function, Socrates is preparing to distinguish the other arts from the art of pay.

ἀλλά] deprecates the imputation of perversity conveyed in Socrates' last words:—'But I admit that to be the difference.'

οὐκοῦν καὶ μισθωτικὴ μισθόν] 'The art of pay,' as the giving and receiving of money is quaintly termed, is distinct from the other arts: the art of the physician is no more  $\mu$ ισθωτική because the physician takes fees, than the art of the pilot is the art of medicine, because a sea-voyage may accidentally improve the health of the sailor. 'The art of pay' has a curious sound to modern ears, because there is no such use of language among ourselves. But Plato might have defended the expression by saying that although applicable to all the arts, the art of pay had, like them, an end and a function, viz., that of providing maintenance for the practitioners of all of them.

ωσπερ ὑπέθου] 'as you proposed.' Cp. supra 341 B.

ἔστω, ἔφη] Thrasymachus becomes more reserved in his replies, as he begins to see the inevitable consequence. 'Let us suppose so.' Cp. Gorg. 504, 505.

С

ηντινα ... ἀφελοῦνται] 'Whatever benefit all craftsmen have in common manifestly arises from their additional use (προσχρώμενοι) in common of some one and the same thing '—(τινὶ τῷ αὐτῷ)—since the arts are peculiar and the benefit common. προσχρώμενοι, i.e. using in addition to their peculiar arts. ἀπ' ἐκείνου, 'from that' and not from their own art.

D

οὐ φαίνεται] 'Apparently not.' οὐ φαίνεται, like φαίνεται (cp. note on 342 c) has various shades of meaning which can only be determined by the context. As with οὔ φημι, οὖκ έῶ, the negative is attracted to the main verb: οὖ φαίνεται = φαίνεται οὖκ (ὡφελεῖσθαι).

αρ' οὖν ... οἶμαι ἔγωγε] 'Does the art then confer no benefit,' when the artist works for nothing?' 'I should think it does.'

E

Republic 346 E

The point of Socrates is to show that the good which the art does is separable from the good of the artist. Now the artist is not benefited unless he is paid, but his art confers a benefit all the same.

καὶ ἐπιτάττει] The arts have already been spoken of in several places as exercising command: supra 342 C, E; 345 E.

διὰ δὴ ταῦτα . . . ἀλλὰ τῶ ἀρχομένω] 'For which reason,' i.e. because the ruler considers the interest not of himself but of his subjects. ταῦτα refers to the preceding sentence. The clause which follows, ὅτι ὁ μέλλων, κ.τ.λ., is a resumption and further explanation of it, and is itself again resumed in ὧν δη ἔνεκα.

κατά την τέχνην ἐπιτάττων] Thrasymachus is again and again reminded, and in every form of speech (cp. οἱ ἀληθῶς ἄρχοντες: 346 β έάνπερ βούλη ἀκριβῶς διορίζειν, and D εὶ δεῖ ἀκριβῶς σκοπεῖσθαι, κ.τ.λ.), that at his own suggestion (346 E) they are speaking of the ruler qua ruler.

μισθον δείν ὑπάρχειν δείν, sc. ἐλέγομεν, the construction being continued from the previous sentence; and this is assisted by the interposition of ώς ἔοικε. Cp. Phileb. 20 p τόδε γε μήν, ώς οἶμαι, περὶ αὐτοῦ ἀναγκαιότατον είναι λέγειν: Soph. 263 D παντάπασιν, ως ἔοικεν, ή τοιαύτη σύνθεσις . . . γίγνεσθαι λόγος ψευδής.

( όθεν κινδυνεύει . . . αἰσχρὸν νενομίσθαι 'And this would seem to be the reason why the willingness to hold office, without waiting to be compelled, has been thought discreditable.' 'Nos autem versamur non in republica Platonis, sed in faece Romuli.' Compare the fable of Jotham (Judges ix. 8-15).

έὰν μη αὐτὸς ἐθέλη referring to the indefinite τωά which is the subject of ἄρχεσθαι. For αὐτός referring to an indefinite word cp. Gorgias 520 c.

ἐπεὶ κινδυνεύει . . . τὸ τῷ ἀρχομένω Compare the derisive words of St. Paul (1 Cor. vi. 4): 'If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church': and of Christ (Matth. xx. 26, 27), in which there is a similar irony arising out of their intense contrast to the spirit of this world: 'Whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.'

πας . . . δ γιγνώσκων 'every man of understanding.'

άλλά τοῦτο μὲν δη καὶ εἰσαῦθις σκεψόμεθα | Socrates, as else- $\mathbb{R}$ where, availing himself of the facilities of conversation, breaks off

347

D

(Protag. 347 B, 357 B, 361 E, &c.), and defers a topic which is liable to become tedious. Instead of arguing out the question whether justice is the interest of the ruler, he takes up the subsequent statement of Thrasymachus, viz., that the unjust life is better than the just.

Republic I. 347 E

ποτέρως] This reading, which has the support of the best MSS., is preferred to Ast's conjecture πότερον.

πότερον] πότερον ώς, the reading of A  $\Pi$ , admits of explanation, the ώς being used pleonastically, as in ώς ἀληθῶς, ώς ἐτέρως (Phaedr. 276 c, Soph. 221 c). But it may also be due to a variation of reading between πότερον and ποτέρως.

ηκουσας, ην δ' έγω Plato thus prepares the way for the part to be taken by Glaucon in Book ii.

έξευρεῖν] sc. ὅπη ἀν πείθωμεν, to be supplied from πείθωμεν.

348 A

αν μèν τοίνυν . . . ἐσόμεθα] With ἀντικατατείναντες, 'replying to each other in set speeches,' compare Protag. 329 Λ δολιχὸν κατατείνουσι τοῦ λόγου. For ἀριθμεῖν δεήσει compare Cratyl. 437 D τί οὖν τοῦτο, ὧ Κρατύλε, ὥσπερ ψήφους διαριθμησόμεθα τὰ ὀνόματα, καὶ ἐν τούτφ ἔσται ἡ ὀρθότης; where Socrates, in a similar manner, repudiates the arithmetical method of determining the principles of language; also Gorgias 471 E, where Socrates refuses to permit the element of numbers to influence his judgement, and Theaet. 171 A, where the method of 'counting noses' is ironically retorted on Protagoras.

οσα . . . λέγομεν] οσα (SC, ἀγαθὰ) έκάτεροι ἐν έκατέρῳ (ἐν τῷ δίκαιον εἶναι καὶ ἐν τῷ ἄδικον εἶναι) λέγομεν.

В

ἀνομολογούμενοι πρὸς ἀλλήλους] 'by the method of mutual admissions,'

όποτέρως, κ.τ.λ.] gentler and less direct than ποτέρως. 'Would you tell me which of the two ways you prefer?' Cp. Euthyd. 27 I Β όπότερον καὶ ἐρωτᾶς, ὧ Κρίτων;

οὔτως, ἔφη] 'As you propose,' referring to the words ầν δὲ ὅσπερ... ῥήτορες ἐσόμεθα.

'Perfect injustice,' says Thrasymachus, 'is more profitable than perfect justice.' 'Then will Thrasymachus maintain that the unjust are wise and good?' 'Undoubtedly, if only they have supreme power. In that case injustice is not only wise and good, but noble and strong.' And now Thrasymachus has told Socrates his whole mind, and they can argue on a satisfactory basis.

348 B-350 C Republic I. 348 B-350 C

Socrates begins by putting Thrasymachus to the question:

'Well:—but will the just man try to gain advantage over the just? or aim at more than what is just?' 'If he did, he would not be the diverting creature that he is.' 'Or would he claim to take advantage of the unjust?' 'He might claim to do so, but he would not be able.' But the unjust claims to take advantage both of his like and of his opposite, the just. Analogy shows this to be inconsistent with goodness and wisdom. No true musician aims at overstraining the lyre,—no artist seeks 'to do better than well.' And so the just man is like the good and wise artist, the unjust man like the bad artist. Now things which are alike have similar qualities, and therefore the just man is wise and good. To all this Thrasymachus is reluctantly forced to assent.

348 B έξ ἀρχῆς] 'Beginning at the beginning,' as in Theaet. 179 Ε μᾶλλον σκεπτέου' καὶ έξ ἀρχῆς, ὥσπερ αὐτοὶ ὑποτείνονται.

εἰκός γ', ἔφη ... ἢ δ' ὅς] 'That's a charming notion and a likely, seeing that I affirm injustice to be profitable and justice not.' 'Then what do you say?' 'The opposite,' said he. For ἢδιστε, as we might say in English, 'you funny man,' which expresses the affected amusement of Thrasymachus at being supposed to entertain such an opinion, see above 337 D ἡδὺς γὰρ εἶ: vii. 527 D ἡδὺς εἶ, ... ὅτι ἔοικας δεδιότι τοὺς πολλούς: also Gorgias 491 E ὡς ἡδὺς εἶ τοὺς ἡλιθίους λέγεις τοὺς σώφρονας. ἀλλὰ τί μήν in this and similiar places is equivalent to ἀλλὰ τί μὴν ἄλλο: as below 349 D ἀλλὰ τί μέλλει; for ἀλλὰ τί μέλλει ἄλλο; and ἀλλὰ τί οἴει; for ἀλλὰ τί οἴει ἄλλο; supra 332 c and elsewhere. Cp. also Sympos. 206 E ἔστι γάρ, ὧ Σώκρατες, ἔφη, οὐ τοῦ καλοῦ ὁ ἔρως, ὡς σὺ οἵει. 'Αλλὰ τί μήν; Τῆς γεννήσεως καὶ τοῦ τόκου ἐν τῷ καλοῦ.

ἢ τὴν δικαιοσύνην . . . γενναίαν εὐήθειαν] Thrasymachus is at first unwilling to hazard the assertion that injustice is virtue and justice vice. He says that justice is simplicity, injustice discretion. The statement is at length extracted from him that injustice is to be classed with wisdom and virtue, justice with their opposites. This proposition, which has been craftily drawn out of him, is the step in the argument which leads to his destruction. ἢ marks the astonishment of Socrates: 'And you mean to say?' Cp. infra iii. 396 B ἢ μιμήσονται;—πάνυ γενναίαν εὖήθειαν: 'sublime simplicity.' For the ironical use of γενναίος cp. infra ii. 372 B μάζας γενναίας, V. 454 Λ ἢ γενναία . . . ἡ δύναμις τῆς ἀντιλογικῆς τέχνης: Viii. 544 C ἡ γενναία δὴ τυραννίς: Soph. 231 B ἡ γένει γενναία σοφιστική: and for εὖήθεια iii. 400 E οὖχ ἡν ἄνοιαν οὖσαν ὑποκοριζόμενοι καλοῦμεν ὡς εὖήθειαν.

κακοήθειαν] a paronomasia: κακοήθεια is not the opposite of Republic εὐήθεια in the sense in which Thrasymachus uses it. But Socrates snatches at the etymological meaning of εὐήθεια to make a point against Thrasymachus.

348 D

σὺ δὲ . . . λέγειν] to transfer these words to Socrates, as is done on the authority of Par. A in the Zurich edition of 1887, interferes with the flow of the passage. The occurrence of  $\tilde{\eta}$   $\delta'$   $\tilde{s}s$  after  $\tilde{\epsilon}\phi\eta$ , though uncommon, is sufficiently accounted for by supposing a pause after ποιείσθαι. Cp. Xen. Oecon. c. xvii. 8 πάνυ μεν οὖν,  $\epsilon \phi \eta^* \hat{\eta} \nu \delta \epsilon \gamma \epsilon \hat{\eta}$ ,  $\epsilon \phi \eta$ , κ.τ.λ. and infra 351 A  $\nu \hat{\nu} \nu \delta \epsilon \gamma$ ,  $\epsilon \phi \eta \nu$ . The distinction of persons in Par. A, however, is clear.

λυσιτελεί . . . ἔλεγον 'Even this sort of thing is advantageous, if undetected, but not worth mention: the real profit (ἀλλά sc. ἐστὶν ἄξια λόγου) is in what I was just now speaking of,' that is, in τελέα ἀδικία. νῶν δή refers chiefly to 344 B, C.

¿θαύμασα] Aorist of the immediate past.

E

τοῦτο . . . στερεώτερον (1) 'This new position is firmer,'— 'now you are on more substantial ground': or perhaps (2) 'this is harder to make an impression upon, i. e. to deal with satisfactorily in argument. Par. A here reads ραιον for ράδιον, as ράιδιον for ράου in ii. 370 A.

άληθέστατα . . . μαντεύει 'That guess of yours is wonderfully near the truth.'

349 A

άλλὰ τόδε μοι πειρῶ, κ.τ.λ.] A singular argument follows the admission that the unjust desires universal excess. The admission, which is rather unmeaning, seems to have arisen out of the desire of Thrasymachus to attribute to him every possible preeminence. In the argument the grasping nature of the unjust is contrasted with the moderation of the just, whose desires reach no higher than justice, and this, as Thrasymachus says, is the reason why he is such an amusing creature. The aim of the one is affirmed to be excess in all cases, the aim of the other, excess over deficiency, and attainment of the right measure. Immediately Socrates appeals to the analogy of the arts. No true artist desires excess in all cases, and the true artist is wise and good; therefore the just, not the unjust, is wise and good. But the conclusion thus arrived at contradicts the hasty assertion of Thrasymachus, that injustice is to be classed with wisdom and goodness, justice with their opposites. Compare the French proverb, 'Le mieux est l'ennemi du bien,'

Republic and the words of Pembroke to King John (Shak., King John, I. iv. 2. 28)—

349 B

'When workmen strive to do better than well, They do confound their skill in covetousness.'

Also Lear i. 4. 369 'Striving to better, oft we mar what's well': and Sonnet 103. 9, 10:—

'Were it not sinful then, striving to mend, To mar the subject that before was well?'

Cp. also Gorgias 508 Λ σὲ δὲ πλεονεξίαν οἴει δεῖν ἀσκεῖν γεωμετρίας γὰρ ἀμελεῖς: and the Kantian conception of freedom as obedience to law. The two kinds of measure in the Politicus (283), viz. (1) the comparative measure of more and less; and (2) the reference to a standard, belong to the same line of thought. Summed up in a word or two, the argument is that justice, if it be like the arts, aims not at excess, but at law and measure.

οὐδαμῶς . . . εὐήθης] 'Far otherwise, else he would not have been the amusing and simple-minded individual that he is.' ἀστεῖος. 'townbred,' as opposed to 'living far off in the fields.' Hence it acquires the meaning of 'witty,' 'clever,' which easily passes into that of 'amusing,' 'charming,' 'the cause of wit in others.' Cp. Lysis 204 ἀστεῖόν γε, ἢ δ' ὅς, ὅτι ἐρυθριᾶς. 'It's charming to see you blush.'

οὐδὲ τῆς δικαίας] sc. πράξεως, which is found in one MS.

 $\epsilon i \ldots \mu \eta$ ] Although  $\epsilon i$  is interrogative,  $\mu \eta$  and not  $\delta i$  is used, because Socrates asks whether this, in the opinion of Thrasymachus, is probable. The use of  $\tilde{a}\nu$  in the preceding sentences has given a hypothetical turn to the expression. Cp. Goodwin, M. and T. 667, 5.

C

τοῦ δὲ ἀδίκου] Sc. ἀξιοῖ πλέον ἔχειν. 'But he does claim to have more than the unjust.' The context shows that this only applies where the unjust errs on the side of deficiency. For the use of δέ, when a negative has preceded in the first clause, compare i. 354  $\Lambda$  ἄθλιόν γε εἶναι οὐ λυσιτελεῖ, εὐδαίμονα δέ: iv. 422 D ὑμῖν δέ: and for the use of πλεονεκτεῖν in this passage cp. Laws iii. 691  $\Lambda$  πλεονεκτεῖν τῶν τεθέντων νόμων.

τί δὲ δὴ ... πράξεως] 'What of the unjust? Does not he claim as his due more than the just man, more than the just action?'

ωδε δη . . . τοῦ ἀνομοίου] 'Let us put the matter thus: the just does not desire more that his like, but more than his unlike;

D

E

350 A

В

C

but the unjust desires more than both his like and unlike.' With Republic this statement Thrasymachus is remarkably well satisfied. Cp. Philebus 27 E, where Philebus is similarly entrapped: ήδονή καὶ λύπη...τῶν τὸ μᾶλλόν τε καὶ ἦττον δεχομένων ἐστόν; ΦΙ. Ναί, τῶν τὸ μᾶλλον, ὧ Σώκρατες οἰ γὰρ ἄν ήδονὴ πῶν ἀγαθὸν ἦν, εἰ μὴ ἄπειρον ἐτύγχανε πεφυκὸς καὶ πλήθει καὶ τῷ μᾶλλον.

ἄριστα, ἔφη, εἴρηκας . . . καὶ τοῦτ', ἔφη, εὖ] Thrasymachus accepts with ludicrous eagerness and want of foresight the restatement of his own opinion.

δ δὲ μὴ μὰ ἐοικέναι] Par. A (reading ὁ δέ, μὴ ἐοικέναι) omits the first μή, which, though not necessary, makes the meaning more distinct.

τοιούτος ἄρα . . . ἔοικεν Sc. τοιούτος, οδοί είσιν εκείνοι οδοπερ εοικεν.

άλλὰ τί μέλλει; ] sc. ἄλλο.

ούχ ούτως ] SC. λέγεις;

άρμοττόμενος λύραν 'In tuning his lyre.'

έν τη έδωδη ή πόσει i.e. 'in the diet which he prescribes.'

άλλ' ἴσως . . . οὖτως ἔχειν] Thrasymachus makes a grudging admission: 'I suppose that this must be as you say.'

ἔγωγε, ἔφη] Thrasymachus still holds this fast.

ἀναπέφανται] 'has turned out to be.' The word expresses the new light in which the subject is suddenly revealed to Thrasymachus and the company. Cp. i. 334 A κλέπτης ἄρα τις ὁ δίκαιος . . . ἀναπέφανται. The skilful management of refractory opponents in the hand of Socrates is one of the comic elements of the Platonic dialogue. Other striking examples are the treatment of Polus and Callicles in the Gorgias, of Anytus in the Meno, of Euthydemus and Euthyphro in the dialogues which are named after them. Perhaps the highest exhibition of this dramatic power is to be found in the Protagoras, in which Socrates adapts himself to numerous adversaries with the happiest versatility.

δ δη Θρασύμαχος] The reading δή, which is found in Ven.  $\Pi$ , but not in Par. A, is more emphatic and expressive than δέ, which however has the authority of A M r. δή marks the transition from a dramatic to a descriptive passage and may be translated: 'Now Thrasymachus assented to all this,' δέ, according to the English idiom, is better omitted, and the words may be translated simply: 'Thrasymachus assented,' &c. The latter reading has been retained by Hermann and Baiter.

VOL. III.

Republic I. 350 D τότε καί] is probably a mock heroic form of expression (like the imitation of Homer in Protag. 315 d καὶ μὲν δὴ καὶ Τάνταλόν γε εἰσείδον): cp. esp. Il. v. 394 τότε καί μιν ἀνήκεστον λάβεν ἄλγος. καί adds emphasis to τότε εἶδον: 'Ay, and then I saw.' The unusual order has led to the erroneous punctuation of Par. A, which places the point after τότε.

Θρασύμαχον ἐρυθριῶντα] Compare Protag. 312 Λ, where the youthful Hippocrates is seen by the light of the opening dawn to have a blush upon his face, as he professes his intention of becoming a disciple of the Sophist.

350 D-352 B

The comparative strength of justice and injustice is tested by an independent argument. Suppose a city to have triumphed in complete injustice, and to have subjugated many other cities. Can this triumph be secured without the help of justice? Can a city or an army or a band of robbers do any unjust thing in common, if they do not keep faith with one another? And what is true of large bodies of men is true also of two or three. If they are absolutely unjust, they will quarrel and fight and hate each other and be paralysed in action. And it is true also of the individual. If he is completely penetrated by injustice, he will be divided against himself and cannot stand. And he is the enemy of just men, and also of the Gods whose justice even Thrasymachus will not venture to deny. Complete injustice, therefore, is complete powerlessness.

350 D ἔφαμεν] Cp. supra 344 c. Socrates, with an apparent graciousness, but really with the object of drawing Thrasymachus into a fresh contradiction, reasserts a proposition formerly maintained by Thrasymachus (supra 344 c). Thrasymachus, who has learnt from experience to be cautious of Socrates, is in reply surly and reserved. For the plural, including the speaker as well as the respondent, cp. Theaet. 210 B  $\mathring{\eta}$  οὖν ἔτι κυοῦμεν . . .  $\mathring{\omega}$  φίλε;

οὐδὲ ἃ νῦν λέγεις ἀρέσκει . . . δημηγορεῖν ἄν με φαίης] 'I am not contented with your last conclusion any more than with the former ones, and I could answer you: but if I did, I well know that you would say I was haranguing.'

Е

μηδαμῶς . . . παρά γε τὴν σαυτοῦ δόξαν] Cp. Gorgias 500 B καὶ πρὸς φιλίου, ὧ Καλλίκλεις, μήτε αὐτὸς οἴου δεῖν πρὸς ἐμὲ παίζειν, μηδ' ὅ τι ἂν τύχης παρὰ τὰ δοκοῦντα ἀποκρίνου.

τοῦτο . . . ὅπερ ἄρτι ] Cp. supra D ἔφαμεν . . . μέμνησαι;

ἴνα καὶ έξης . . . αδικίαν] Cp. Politicus 281 D ποιητέον δ λέγομεν, Ε΄ τ΄ έφεξης ήμιν δ λόγος ἴη.

Republic I. 350 E

 $ν \hat{v} \hat{v} \hat{v} \hat{v}, \tilde{\epsilon} \hat{\phi} \eta v$ ] Par. A reads  $\tilde{\epsilon} \hat{\phi} \eta$ . But  $\tilde{\epsilon} \hat{\phi} \eta v$  is obviously the right reading; v has been dropped from the compendium  $\tilde{\epsilon} \hat{\phi} \eta \hat{v}$ .

351 A

ἀλλ' οὖ τι οὖτως ἁπλῶς . . . σκέψασθαι] 'I do not wish to consider the argument in this simple and abstract manner' (i. e. that injustice is folly and therefore weakness), but to show, by the example of states and individuals, how it actually works.

В

πόλιν φαίης ἃν . . . δουλωσαμένην] 'You would not deny that a state may be unjust and may be unjustly attempting to enslave, or may have utterly enslaved other states, while already holding many in subjection under her.' Three stages are supposed:—(I) states attacked with a view to subjection; (2) states utterly subdued in recent struggles (καταδεδουλῶσθαι); (3) states held in subjection, (πολλὰς . . . ἔχειν δουλωσαμένην). As elsewhere, the complexity of the thing imagined makes the language harsh.

С

εἰ μὲν . . . ἀδικίας] 'If the case is as you were saying, and justice is wisdom, then, with justice; but if as I was saying, with injustice.' The MS. authority is strongly in favour of ἔχει, the other reading, ἐστί, being an obvious correction which is meant to remedy the anacoluthon. The repetition of εἰ before ἡ δικαιοσύνη (a conjecture of Baiter's) is unnecessary, and also objectionable on the ground of the hiatus. The irregular construction may be defended by other passages of Plato, in which one of two clauses is an explanation of the other. Cp. Theaet. 203 Ε Ἐχέτω δή, ὡς νῦν φαμέν, μία ἰδέα . . . ἐξ ἐκάστων τῶν συναρμοττόντων στοιχείων γιγνομένη ἡ συλλαβή, where the reading has been questioned equally without reason.

μετὰ δικαιοσύνης SC. τὴν δύναμιν ταύτην ἀνάγκη ἔχειν.

πάνυ ἄγαμαι] Cp. a similar mode of practising on Meletus in the Apology 27 c ως ἄνησας, ὅτι μόγις ἀπεκρίνω ὑπὸ τουτωνὶ ἀναγκαζόμενος. See also Gorgias 449 c, p.

οὐκ ἐπινεύεις . . . ἀνανεύεις ] Cp. supra 350 E.

σοὶ γάρ, ἔφη, χαρίζομαι] Thrasymachus wishes to intimate that the defeat which he sustains is to be attributed to his own good nature. The imperative moods which follow, ἔστω, ἐχέτω, ἔστωσαν, imply that he is ready to admit anything which Socrates likes: 'let

Republic I. 351

us say so,' 'agreed,' 'if you will,' 'we won't quarrel about that.' And he is encouraged in his self-conceit by Socrates' words—Ev ye σὺ ποιῶν, ὦ ἄριστε, &c., of which he fails to see the irony. Callicles in the Gorgias (516 B) in the same temper says—Πάνυ γε, ίνα σοι χαρίσωμαι. This is an ingenious device by which Plato is enabled to carry on the argument to the end, without requiring his adversary to undergo a process of sudden conversion.

D η γάρ; This formula used interrogatively expects an affirmative answer. 'Surely that is so?'

έν έλευθέροις τε καὶ δούλοις] 'alike in freemen and in slaves.'

E έὰν δὲ δή] For the conflict with self cp. Laws i. 626 D αὐτῷ δὲ πρὸς αὐτὸν πότερον ὡς πολεμίω πρὸς πολέμιον διανοητέον, ἡ πῶς ἔτι λέγομεν; also viii. 560; Soph. 223 B.

& θαυμάσιε marks the intense interest of Socrates as the conclusion he has been preparing rises in full proportions before his mind (ἀναπέφανται supra 350 c).

μων μή] like other interrogative particles, used with some uncertainty of meaning, which has to be defined by the context; for instance, in this passage, it seems to require a negative answer, but in Phaedo 84 c it merely suggests a doubt (τὰ λεχθέντα μῶν μη δοκεί ενδεώς λελέχθαι; πολλάς γάρ δη έτι έχει υποψίας). It is a pleonastic expression which intensifies the interrogation. Either  $\mu \hat{\omega} \nu$  or  $\mu \hat{\eta}$  might be omitted without any perceptible difference, except a slight weakening of the sense. μων, having lost its etymological sense of  $\mu\dot{\gamma}$  οὖν, allows the  $\mu\dot{\gamma}$  to be repeated.

αὐτό Sc. πόλις, γένος ΟΓ στρατόπεδον.

καὶ τῷ ἐναντίω παντὶ καὶ τῶ δικαίω] ' with all that opposes, and 352 A therefore (inclusively) with the just.'

καὶ θεοῖς ἄρα] θεοῖς ἐχθρός was a common form of abuse (and therefore a term to be deprecated beyond others). See Soph. Phil. 1031 πωs, ω θεοις έχθιστε, κ.τ.λ.: Demosth. de Cor. p. 241 Bekk., § 46 νῦν κόλακες καὶ θεοῖς ἐχθροὶ καὶ τἄλλ' â προσήκει πάντ' ἀκούουσιν.

Compare with this whole passage the description of the tyrannical man in Book ix. (577 ff).

εὐωχοῦ τοῦ λόγου . . . ἀπέχθωμαι] Socrates takes up the word εὐωχοῦ with έστίασις, which is again echoed by Thrasymachus at the end of the book, 354 A ταῦτα δή σοι . . . εἰστιάσθω εν τοῖς Βενδιδείοις.

Thrasymachus is seeking to cover his defeat by casting upon his

В

adversaries the reproach of intolerance. 'I shall make enemies here if I oppose you.' Compare the discomfiture of Gorgias and Polus through their fear of incurring odium: Gorgias 487 Λ, Β τὼ δὲ ξένω τώδε, Γοργίας τε καὶ Πῶλυς, σοφὼ μὲν καὶ φίλω ἐστὸν ἐμώ, ἐγδεεστέρω δὲ παρρησίας καὶ αἰσχυντηροτέρω μᾶλλον τοῦ δέοντος.

Republie 1. 352 B

Once more, are just men happier than the unjust, as well as wiser, 352 B better and stronger?

Every creature has a work or function. And everything does its own work best, when it has its proper excellence. For example, the eye sees best when it is possessed of perfect vision, which is the opposite of blindness. Now life is the function of the soul, and justice (as we have seen) is the virtue or excellence of the soul. Therefore the soul lives best when it has justice. And to live well is to be happy.

Justice, then, is more profitable than injustice, if to be happy is profitable.

ὅτι μὲν γὰρ . . . τὸ πρῶτον ἐτίθεσο After a somewhat long digression (οὐ γὰρ ẫν . . . πράττειν ἀδύνατοι) the sentence is resumed in the words—ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ὅτι οῦτως ἔχει μανθάνω. The first part, as far as λέγομεν, is governed by ὅτι, and τοῦτο οὐ παντάπασιν ἀληθὲς λέγομεν proceeds as if ούς φαμεν had been όταν φωμέν τινας. άλλ' ούχ . . . ἐτίθεσο which is opposed to οὖτως ἔχει, repeats and emphasizes the antithesis. There is also a slight inexactness either of expression or of citation here, which is worth noticing as a point of style. The phrases ώς σὺ τὸ πρῶτον ἐτίθεσο and ὅπερ τὸ ὕστερον προδθέμεθα σκέψασθαι do not strictly agree. τὸ πρῶτον refers vaguely to the past discussion and suggests Socrates' subsequent criticism of the theory: 'which you maintained at first, but which I have since shown to be false.' The theory in question is that injustice is stronger than justice; and this, like the assertion next discussed —that injustice is happier than justice, is one aspect of Thrasymachus' second contention—that injustice is generally superior to justice. τὸ ὕστερον therefore contains a more exact reference than τὸ πρῶτον, alluding, not indefinitely to the past discussion, but to a definite point in it—the 'second contention,' as opposed to the first, that justice is the interest of the stronger (see above, 347 D, E). There is a slight inaccuracy in substituting a particular form of superiority—superior happiness—for superiority in general; and the introduction of to votepow obscures the fact that the second

352 B Republic contention of Thrasymachus involves superior strength quite as much as superior happiness.

352 οἱ δὲ ἄδικοι οὐδὲ[ν] πράττειν] The various reading οὐδέ (M), though inferior in manuscript authority, is not to be disregarded.

E ἀκούσαις] ἄν is to be continued from ἴδοις. The omission of ἄν in the following sentence, μαχαίρα... ἀποτέμοις, where however it is inserted in some MSS. of inferior note, may be defended on similar grounds.

αν . . . φαῖμεν Schneider defended the manuscript reading ἀν φαμέν by comparing Laws iv. 712 ε ἐγὰ δὲ οὕτω νῦν ἐξαίφνης ἄν ἐρωτηθεὶς ὅντως, ὅπερ εἶπον, οὖκ ἔχω διορισάμενος εἶπεῖν τίς τούτων ἐστὶ τῶν πολιτειῶν, and infra x. 610 Α ὀρθότατα ἄν, ἔφη, λέγεις (so MSS.). But the latter passage is easily corrected,—see note in loco,—and in the former ἔχω εἶπεῖν = ἄν εἴποιμι. There is no sufficient ground for refusing to admit so slight an alteration as the addition of an iota here any more than in vi. 494 Β ἐν \*παισὶν . . . ἐν ἄπασιν, where Schneider vainly defends the manuscript reading ἐν πᾶσιν.

μαχαίρα [αν] ἀμπέλου] αν is omitted in Par. A, but may have dropped out between α and αμ.

τί δέ; ἄτων ἢν τι ἔργον;] 'Did we speak of any function of ears?' The imperfect refers to what has preceded, 352 Ε τί δέ; ἀκούσαις ἄλλφ ἢ ἀσίν; οὐδαμῶς, as in Cratylus 410 c τί οὖν ἡμῶν ἢν τὸ μετὰ τοῦτο, referring to 408 p, and Soph. 263 c ὅτι τῶν ἀδυνάτων ἢν λόγον ἄντα μηδενὸς εἶναι λόγον. ἢν = 'was admitted by us.'

οὐκοῦν καὶ ἀρετή; ] Cp. Gorg. 468 B, 499 E, where the notion of an end appears in a still more rudimentary form. The conception of an ἔργον and an ἀρετὴ πρὸς τὸ ἔργον is derived from the analogy of art, the province of which has not yet been thoroughly distinguished from the sphere of nature and of morals. The conception exercised a great influence on Logic and Ethics in the ancient world, leading to the ἀγαθόν of Aristotle, the opposition of means and ends, and the division of moral and intellectual virtue. Modern philosophy has moulded Ethics into another form. The favourite notion of a τἀγαθόν or 'summum bonum,' of which the conception of an ἔργον is the germ, has been replaced by modes of speech such as duty, law, the will of a superior being, or resolved into the more concrete abstractions of utility and pleasure.

 $\check\epsilon\chi\varepsilon~\delta\acute\eta\,]$  'Well then,' is used with various degrees of force for 'hold,' 'stay,' passing also into a mere invitation to attend or con-

353 A

C

В

sider. Cp. Laws i. 639 D έχε δή των πολλων κοινωνιών ξυμπότας και Republic Ι. ξυμπόσια θείμεν αν μίαν τινα ξυνουσίαν είναι; 353

αρ' αν . . . καλως ἀπεργάσαιντο Heindorf conj. ἀπεργάσαιτο, perhaps with reason. The use of the plural verb with the neuter plural nominative has been explained as a remnant of Epic usage, as a personification, or as due to the substitution in thought of a masculine plural substantive for a neuter plural having the same meaning, or to some other natural association. Cp. Thucyd. iv. 88 τὰ τέλη (the magistrates) . . . αὐτὸν ἐξέπεμψαν.

The construction in any of these cases follows the sense rather than the grammatical form. A doubt however is thrown on the passage by various readings, ἀπεργάσονται, ἀπεργάζωνται, ἀπεργάσασθαι, and by the use of ωτα with the singular ἀπεργάσεται in the next sentence. The reading of the MSS, has however been retained in the text; because Greek usage is not absolutely uniform in requiring the neuter plural to be joined to a verb singular.

ητις . . . ἐρωτῶ] 'Say rather, whatever their virtue is, for I have not come to that question yet.' He means that he would rather affirm a general proposition (εί τῆ οἰκεία μεν ἀρετῆ . . . εὖ ἐργάσεται τὰ ἐργαζόμενα), and not anticipate the particular. Every step is to follow regularly in the dialectical process.

τίθεμεν . . . λόγον; ] 'Do we include all other things under the D same statement?'

τὸ ... ἄρχειν, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Phaedo 94 B. The pronoun αὐτά resumes τὸ ἐπιμελεῖσθαι . . . πάντα.

ἐκείνης] The gender follows ψυχή, and not ὅτω ἄλλω.

εὐδαίμονα δέ Cp. supra 349 c, D τοῦ δὲ ἀδίκου, and note.

354 A Thrasymachus is silenced, but Socrates is not satisfied. For he 354 Afeels that he has passed on too quickly to consider certain attributes 354 C of justice, before he has defined what justice is.

άλλ' ωσπερ οἱ λίχνοι, κ.τ.λ.] This is imitated by Polybius, B. P. iii. 57, 7 εἰ δέ τινες πάντως ἐπιζητοῦσι κατὰ τόπον καὶ κατὰ μέρος τῶν τοιούτων ἀκούειν, ἴσως ἀγνοοῦσι παραπλήσιόν τι πάσχοντες τοῖς λίχνοις τῶν δειπνητῶν. καὶ γὰρ ἐκείνοι, πάντων ἀπογευόμενοι τῶν παρακειμένων, οὔτε κατὰ τὸ παρὸν οὐδενὸς ἀληθινῶς ἀπολαύουσι τῶν βρωμάτων, οὕτ' εἰς τὸ μέλλον, ὡφέλιμον έξ τὐτῶν τὴν ἀνάδοσιν καὶ τροφὴν κομίζονται. The passage is a good example of the manner in which later writers amplified the ideas of Plato. See also Julian, Orat. ii. p. 69 c and Themist., Orat. xviii. p. 220 B.

Republic I. . 354

A similar image occurs in the Sophist 251 Β ὅθεν γε, οἶμαι, τοῖς τε νέοις καὶ τῶν γερόντων τοῖς ὀψιμαθέσι θοίνην παρεσκευάκαμεν: and in the Lysis 211 C, D τί ὑμεῖς, ἔφη ὁ Κτήσιππος, αὐτὰ μόνω ἐστιᾶσθον, ἡμῖν δὲ οὐ μεταδίδοτον τῶν λόγων; Compare also the opening words of the Timaeus.

πρὶν δ τὸ πρῶτον, κ.τ.λ.] Plato is loose in recapitulating here. The question—'What is justice?' was immediately followed by the question which Thrasymachus raised, whether justice or injustice was the more expedient, and the question whether justice is wisdom or folly was subordinate to this. But in glancing backwards from the conclusion that the just man has the better life, Socrates recalls the argument about the wise and good (349), as if it had arisen independently. The order (1, 2, 3) is not that in which the questions were raised by Thrasymachus, but that in which they were discussed. Such slight inconsistencies are very natural to the freedom of discourse. See above, 352 B.

C

ώστε μοι . . εὐδαίμων | Socrates ends the discussion with the truly Socratic thought, that the result of a long inquiry is ignorance. The First Book of the Republic, and the first half of the Second Book, though here and there (335 A-E, 352 A) containing true and deep thoughts, are in general destructive only. The controversy with the Sophists which has been carried on in the Protagoras, Meno, Gorgias, and other dialogues, is now concluded, or takes another direction (cp. Sophist and Politicus). In the Republic, as elsewhere in Plato, they are the representatives of the popular morality in a better or worse form; their theory accords with the practice of the world, which is the great Sophist (vi. 492 A): this is contrasted by Socrates with the deeper truths and higher aspirations of philosophy. The thought that he who is ignorant of the nature of anything cannot know its qualities or attributes is very characteristic of Plato, and is the germ of a distinction which has exercised la lasting influence on philosophy. Compare Laches 190 A, B el γαρ μηδ' αὐτὸ τοῦτο εἰδείημεν ὅ τί ποτ' ἔστιν ὄψις ἡ ὅ τι ἔστιν ἀκοή, σχολή αν σύμβουλοί γε άξιοι λόγου γενοίμεθα καὶ ἰατροὶ ή περὶ ὀφθαλμῶν ή περὶ ώτων, δυτινα τρόπου ακοήν ή όψιν κάλλιστ' αν κτήσαιτό τις: Protag. 361 C: Meno 71 Β συμπένομαι τοις πολίταις τούτου του πράγματος, καὶ έμαυτον καταμέμφομαι ώς οὐκ είδως περί άρετης το παράπαν ο δε μη οίδα τί έστι, πως αν όποιόν γέ τι είδείην;

## BOOK II.

Glaucon is determined to continue the argument. The theory Republic which Thrasymachus has ineffectually maintained is one which passes current in various forms, and although it has no practical influence on ingenuous youths, yet their minds are confused by incessantly hearing it preached on every side.

II. 357 A-358 D

τὸ δ' ἦν ἄρα, ὡς ἔοικε, προοίμιον As a parallel of style we may compare Laws iv. 722 D νόμους δὲ ἄρτι μοι δοκοῦμεν λέγειν ἄρχεσθαι, τὰ δ' ἔμπροσθεν ἢν πάντα ἡμῖν προοίμια νόμων, τό in τὸ δέ resumes ταῦτα εἰπών: 'What I had said, I thought was the end, but it turned out to be (ἄρα) only the beginning.'

357 A

ό γὰρ Γλαύκων . . . πρὸς ἄπαντα] Another example of this 'intrepidity of talk' in Glaucon occurs in Xen. Mem. iii. 6, where he is described as dragged from the Bema, and with difficulty persuaded by Socrates that at twenty years of age he does not possess the qualifications of a statesman. In viii. 548 p he is compared to the representative of timocracy for his φιλουεικία. Glaucon is also the 'juvenis qui gaudet canibus avibusque' (v. 459 A), who breeds animals and birds; and the man of pleasure who is acquainted with the mysteries of love (v. 474 D). He is an interlocutor in the introduction to the Parmenides and Symposium. For ἀνδρειότατος cp. Polit. 263 p, where the young Socrates is called ω πάντων ἀνδρειότατε after a similar exhibition of boldness: also Theaet. 204 Ε ανδρικώς γε, & Θεαίτητε, μάχει.

ἀεί τε before ἀνδρειότατος is closely connected with καὶ δη καί, which, as frequently, introduces an instance illustrating the general statement. The Greek expresses by a co-ordinate clause what in English would be introduced by a relative: 'For Glaucon, zwho is always,' &c.

την απόρρησιν 'Renunciation of the argument' (cp. supra i. 350 D, E, 354 A). Cp. the use of ἀπειπείν, Phaedo 85 c: ἀπαγορεύειν, infra 368 c, viii. 568 c: Theaet. 200 D: ἀπερείν, ibid. See also Phileb. ΙΙ C Φίληβος γὰρ ἡμῖν ὁ καλὸς ἀπείρηκεν.

παντί τρόπω 'in every way,' cp. infra 368 c ο τε οὖν Γλαύκων καὶ οί ἄλλοι ἐδέοντο παντὶ τρόπω βοηθησαι—i.e. 'to do all that he could to assist.' The expression is passing into an adverb, and may be compared with πάντως, παντάπασι, πανταχή, πάση μηχανή, πάση τέχνη.

Republic II. \

οὐ τοίνον . . . (p) ἀπ' αὐτῶν | With the threefold division of goods which is given in the text may be compared the Aristotelian distinction (Eth. Nic. i. 6, 9) of goods which are pursued for their own sake, and goods which are means to other goods; also the statement (Eth. Nic. i. 7, 5) that the highest good (εὐδαιμονία) is the end of other goods, and not pursued for the sake of anything else: which implies a slightly different point of view from that of Plato in this passage. Yet afterwards (vi. 508) a higher good which gives reality even to virtue and knowledge and reaches beyond them, is also admitted. In the Philebus (65, 66) Good is measured by three tests—beauty, symmetry and truth,—and arranged in five degrees or stages: (1) measure; (2) symmetry; (3) reason and wisdom; (4) science, art, and true opinion; (5) unmixed pleasures.

οὐ τοίνυν . . . δ βούλει] Socrates in his refutation of Thrasymachus has been led to dwell on the superior profitableness of Justice. He seems to acknowledge himself that this is an unsatisfactory way of treating the subject. For (i. 354 c) he cannot know whether the just man is happy until he knows what justice is, any more than in the Meno (100 B) he can tell how virtue is acquired until he knows the nature of virtue. The question which Socrates had left unexamined is raised again by Glaucon, who, proceeding from another point of view, asks 'What is Justice stripped of its externals?'

καὶ μηδὲν . . . γίγνεται] The reading of the text is that of the best MSS. καὶ μηδέν has been altered by Stephanus and some of the later editors into κᾶν μηδέν, and γίγνεται into γίγνηται, on slight external authority, from an objection to the use of μηδέν in an independent clause. But the indefinite force of the relative (ὅσαι) is continued, and therefore the use of μηδέν is justified: διὰ ταύτας is added because the subject is changed and the Greek idiom does not allow of the repetition of the relative (διὰ ὅσας). διὰ ταύτας γίγνεται = αὶ ποιοῦσιν. Cp. i. 337 Ε ἀπειρημένον αὐτῷ εἴη, which is used as though εἰ μὴ εἰδείη or ο̂s μὴ εἰδείη had preceded.—Glaucon's eager logic separates in idea what cannot be separated in fact. He forgets that harmless pleasures may be loved both for their own sake and for their effects.

 $<sup>\</sup>ddot{\eta}$  χαίρειν ἔχοντα] (I) ἔχοντα, sc. αὐτάs, or (2) 'to go on rejoicing,' L. and S. s. v. ἔχω B iv. 2.

τὸ κάμνοντα ἰατρεύεσθαι] Corresponding to the mixed or contrasted pleasures of the Philebus (44 ff.).

Republic II. 357 C

358

ἐάτρευσίς τε καὶ ὁ ἄλλος χρηματισμός] (1) 'The practice of healing and other modes of money-making,'—the practice of medicine being included under money-making. The thought of laτρεύεσθαι has suggested láτρευσις, and hence this is given as the most obvious example of χρηματισμός. This is better than (2) understanding the words to mean—healing and also money-making,' according to the well-known idiom. Cf. infra 371 A τῶν ἄλλων δημιουργῶν and τῶν ἄλλων διακόνων. Gorgias 473 C πολιτῶν καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ξένων.

έαυτῶν] the reflexive pronoun here does not refer to the subject of the verb.

ἔστι γὰρ οὖν . . . τί δή;] 'There is, I said, certainly this third D class also. But what then?'

εν τῷ καλλίστῳ] This 'fairest' intermediate class may be compared with the 'mixed' or concrete essence of the Philebus. See especially Phileb. 26 c οἶον μεθ' ὑγιείας κάλλος καὶ ἰσχύν, καὶ ἐν ψυχαῖς αὖ πάμπολλα ἔτερα καὶ πάγκαλα: ibid. 27 D νικῶντα μὲν ἔθεμέν που τὸν μικτὸν βίον ἡδονῆς τε καὶ φρονήσεως.

άλλὰ τοῦ ἐπιπόνου εἴδους ] SC. εἶναι.

άδικία δ' ἐπαινεῖται] The omission of these words in Par. Λ may be due to the likeness of terminations (ψέγεται, ἐπαινεῖται). See Essay on Text, p. 103. The statement of the other side of an alternative where one only is in point is frequent in Plato.

άλλ' ἐγώ τις . . . δυσμαθής] 'But I, you see, am a slow sort of person.'

ἐάν σοι ταὐτὰ δοκῆ] A shortened or elliptical form of expression—'and then we shall see whether or no you and I agree.' ἐάν gives a softened and colloquial turn to the hypothesis. Cp. Theaet. 156 C ἄθρει, ἐάν πως ἀποτελεσθῆ, ib. 192 E: Xen. Cyr. ii. 4, 16 ἄκουε τοίνυν . . . ἄν τί σοι δόξω λέγειν.

In order to elicit from Socrates a convincing argument in favour of absolute Justice, Glaucon restates the Sophistic theory in a more abstract and more developed form.

διὸ... ἐπαινῶν] 'And so I will do my utmost to declare the praises of the unrighteous life.' For κατατείνω cp. 367 B ως δύναμαι μάλιστα κατατείνας λέγω. So διατείνειν, συντείνειν, ἐντείνειν, ἔντονος

358 D, E

В

358 D Republic II. 358 occur in a metaphorical sense, implying a high degree of effort or tension: v. 474 A θείν διατεταμένους: vii. 536 c μάλλον ἐντεινάμενος εἶπον: Soph. 239 Β ὅ τι μάλιστα δύνασαι συντείνας πειράθητι.

εἴ σοι βουλομένω ἃ λέγω] The suppressed word is probably ἐστίν, or possibly λέγω, echoed from the relative clause.

E oδόν τε] sc. ἐστίν. This reading, though not of much authority, seems probable, the reading of Ven. II, τί οδόν τε being perhaps an emendation of τί ὄν τε, the reading of Par. A MΞ, &c., which is also possible, notwithstanding the harshness of the construction ('being what, and whence, it arises'), and has far higher manuscript authority. τί οδονται q β΄ is derived from τί οδόν τε. [τί ὅντε may be a corruption of τί ἐστί, L. C.] The nature of Justice is distinguished from its origin, although in the following argument the two are discussed together. Cp. infra 359 B αῦτη τε καὶ τοιαύτη, καὶ ἐξ ὧν πέψυκε τοιαῦτα.

358 E-359 B In the nature of things to do wrong is a great good, but to suffer wrong is a still greater evil. Whence those who have not power to escape the evil and secure the good make an agreement with their fellows, by which they try to get rid of both. This is the origin of law and right, and the neutrality so brought about is Justice.

358 E πεφυκέναι . . . (359 B) ώς ὁ λόγος] Cp. the words of Thrasymachus in i. 344 c οὐ γὰρ τὸ ποιεῖν . . . τὴν ἀδικίαν. The same theory is otherwise stated in the Gorgias, where the favourite opposition of νόμος and φύσις also occurs: see especially Gorg. 483 B ἀλλ', οἶμαι, οἱ τιθέμενοι τοὺς νόμους οἱ ἀσθενεῖς ἄνθρωποί εἰσι καὶ οἱ πολλοί, κ.τ.λ. (Callicles is the speaker), 'The makers of laws are the many and the weak; so that legislation and praise and blame have all a view to them and to their interest. They terrify the mightier sort of men who are able to get the better of them, in order that they may not get the better of them; and they say that to take advantage of others is base and unjust and that injustice is the attempt to take advantage. Their reason is, as I believe, that being inferior they are well pleased to share alike.'

359 A δοκεῖ) Ast conj. δοκεῖν, in keeping with the *oratio obliqua* which precedes and follows. But the number of consecutive infinitives, which is supposed to have led the copyist to try his hand at emendation, may rather be said to account for the return to the indicative here, although the infinitive construction is resumed immediately afterwards.

ξυνθήκας αὐτῶν] (1) 'Agreements with one another -aὑτῶν for ἀλλήλων as elsewhere: Laws x. 889 Ε ὅπη ἔκαστοι ἑαυτοῖσι συνωμολόγησαν νομοθετούμενοι. Or (2), reading αὐτῶν: 'And this they say is the beginning of the imposition of laws and covenants among them.' αὐτῶν is best; the objective genitive is equivalent to πρὸς αὐτούς, sc. ἀλλήλους. So in Thucyd. i. 140 τὸ Μεγαρέων ψήφισμα <math> = τὸ πρὸς Μεγαρέας ψηφισθέν: infra iii. 391 c ὑπερηφανίαν θεῶν, i.e. πρὸς θεούς.

Republic II. 359 A

ἀγαπᾶσθαι] implies acquiescence rather than decided preference. Cp. ἀγαπητός.

ἀρρωστία τοῦ ἀδικεῖν] 'through want of confidence in their power to do wrong.'

В

If men had power to be unjust with impunity they would agree to no such compact. This is illustrated by the legend of Gyges' ring, which changed him from an innocent shepherd into a guilty usurper, simply by enabling him to become invisible. Let the just man and the unjust each have such a power, and they will both act alike.

359 B-

εἰ τοιόνδε . . . ἄξει] The clause δόντες ἐξουσίαν . . . ἐπακολουθήσαιμεν is an explanation of τοιόνδε.

359

δ πᾶσα . . . πέφυκεν] ὅ, sc. πλεονεξίαν, as elsewhere in Plato, the neuter referring to the feminine. Theaet. 146 Ε γνῶναι ἐπιστήμην αὐτὸ ὅ τί ποτ' ἐστίν: infra x. 612 Β, where αὐτὸ δικαιοσύνην (or αὐτοδικαιοσύνην) is the reading of most MSS.: Laws ii. 653 Β τί ποτε λέγομεν ἡμῖν εἶναι τὴν ὀρθὴν παιδείαν. τούτου γάρ, κ.τ.λ.

νόμω δὲ βία] Cp. the words of Hippias in Protag. 337 D ὁ δὲ νόμος, τύραννος ὧν τῶν ἀνθρώπων, πολλὰ παρὰ τὴν φύσιν βιάζεται. For the adverbial βία with the other dative cp. viii. 552 Ε οὖς ἐπιμελεία βία κατέχουσιν αἱ ἀρχαί. The active verbal use of τιμήν, as in the words which follow, is rare.

τοιάδε ... φασι ... γενέσθαι] τοιάδε is grammatically connected with οΐαν: the construction is hardly interrupted by the addition of εἰ αὐτοῖς γένοιτο, which adds liveliness to the expression. 'The liberty of which I speak would be realized by their obtaining such a power as this,' &c. The repetition of δύναμιν after ἐξουσίαν is occasioned by the additional words. This is the earliest mention, according to Mr. A. Lang, of the invisible-making ring.

τῷ [Γύγου] . . . προγότῳ] It is Gyges himself, not the ancestor of Gyges, of whom Herodotus tells nearly the same story (without

D

Republic II.

the marvel), and Gyges himself, who is intended by Plato, as appears from x. 612 B  $\dot{\epsilon}\dot{a}\nu$   $\dot{\tau}$   $\ddot{\epsilon}\chi\eta$   $\dot{\tau}\dot{\delta}\nu$   $\Gamma\dot{\nu}\gamma o\nu$   $\delta a\kappa \tau \dot{\nu}\lambda \iota o\nu$ ,  $\dot{\epsilon}\dot{a}\nu$   $\tau \epsilon$   $\mu\dot{\eta}$ . Hence there is reason to suspect a miswriting of the text. Stallbaum reads, on slender manuscript authority,  $\tau\hat{\varphi}$   $\Gamma\dot{\nu}\gamma\eta$ , and, without authority, encloses  $\tau o\hat{\nu}$   $\Lambda \nu \delta o\hat{\nu}$   $\pi \rho o\gamma \delta \nu \varphi$  in brackets. But as Gyges was not the ancestor of Lydus, who is the eponym of the race, it is difficult to see how these words can have found their way into the text even as a gloss. A more satisfactory alteration would be the substitution of  $\kappa \rho o i \sigma o \nu$  for  $\kappa \nu e \nu e \nu e \nu e$   $\kappa \nu e \nu e$   $\kappa \nu e \nu e$   $\kappa \nu e$   $\kappa$ 

ποιμένα θητεύοντα] 'Serving as a shepherd.' The phrase marks the contrast between his present and future condition. Cp. Eur. Alc., line 6.

öμβρου δέ, κ.τ.λ.] Translated by Cicero, de Off. iii. 9 cum terra discessisset magnis quibusdam imbribus, in illum hiatum descendit aeneumque equum, ut ferunt fabulae, animadvertit, cuius in lateribus fores essent, &c.

ἄλλα τε δὴ [å] μυθολογοῦσι]  $\hat{a}$  μυθολογοῦσι is the reading of the greater number of MSS., but not of Par. A. If  $\ddot{a}$  is omitted, μυθολογοῦσι is a repetition of  $\phi a \sigma i$ , 'they tell,' resumed by 'they say in the tale.'

Ε τοῦτον δὲ ἄλλο μὲν [ἔχειν] οὐδέν] The insertion of ἔχειν has not the authority of Par. A, but appears to be required in order to avoid a harsh ellipsis. Ξ omitting ἔχειν reads δακτύλιον φέρειν.

τν ἐξαγγέλλοιεν] The present is the true reading (not ἐξαγγέλοιεν with some MSS., a second agrist which is rarely, if ever, found; or the future ἐξαγγελοῖεν, which is ungrammatical). The tense expresses the general habit of making the report and is suggested by εἰωθότος. It is further confirmed by κατὰ μῆνα.

τὴν σφενδόνην] the collet of the ring, in which the stone was placed as in a sling. καὶ διαλέγεσθαι changes the subject: 'he became invisible to the company, and they began to speak of him as though he were not there.'

360 A καὶ αὐτῷ οὕτω ξυμβαίνειν] 'and he found this to be the case,' referring partly to εἰ ταύτην ἔχοι τὴν δύναμιν: also to the words which follow, στρέφοντι μὲν εἴσω, κ.τ.λ., which are a further explanation of ταύτην τὴν δύναμιν.

ώς δόξειεν] The optatives may be accounted for by assimilation (Goodwin, M. and T. 558, cp. 531). But Glaucon speaks throughout as putting the case for another who is the objector. See the Essay on Syntax, vol. ii. p. 175.

Republic 11. 360 B

οὔτω δὲ δρῶν . . . ἀμφότεροι] For a similar piece of sophistry at an earlier stage compare Hdt. iii. 72. 6, 7 τοῦ γὰρ αὐτοῦ γλιχόμεθα, οἴ τε ψευδόμενοι καὶ οἱ τῷ ἀληθητη διαχρεώμενοι. οῦ μέν γε ψεύδονται τότε, ἐπεάν τι μέλλωσι τοῖσι ψεύδεσι πείσαντες κερδήσεσθαι οῦ δ' ἀληθίζονται, ἵνα τι τῷ ἀληθητη ἐπισπάσωνται κέρδος, καί τι μᾶλλόν σφισι ἐπιτράπηται. Α more refined form of the same doubt occurs in Aristotle, Eth. Nic. V. 9, 9 ἐπέρου γὰρ ἀγαθοῦ, εἰ ἔτυχεν, πλεονεκτεῖ, οἷον δόξης ἡ τοῦ ἀπλῶς καλοῦ.

С

ώς οὐκ ἀγαθοῦ ἰδίᾳ ὄντος] gives the reason of ἀναγκαζόμενος: 'under compulsion, because justice is not a good to him individually'; τοῦτο refers to ἐπὶ ταὐτὸν ἴοιεν and is further explained in the clause ἐπεὶ ὅπου γ' ἀν . . . ἀδικεῖν.

D

ό περὶ τοῦ τοιούτου λόγου λέγων] Either (1) 'he who makes this argument his theme'; or (2) in the Homeric sense of  $\pi$ ερί, like ἀμυνόμενος  $\pi$ ερὶ πάτρης, 'who argues in defence of this thesis.' Cp. infra 362 D ἱκανῶς εἰρῆσθαι  $\pi$ ερὶ τοῦ λόγου.

τοιαύτης έξουσίας ἐπιλαβόμενος] 'Having got such an opportunity into his hands,' a more graphic expression for ἐξουσίαν λαβών. Cp. προφάσιος ἐπιλαβέσθαι in Hdt. iii. 36. 5; vi. 13. 3; 49. 3.

Which is the happier, the just life or the unjust?

360 E-362 C

Before we can answer this question, we must view them as they are in their perfection, the one entirely just, the other entirely unjust. The unjust man, seeming just, shall receive the rewards of justice in addition to the gains of injustice: the just man, seeming unjust, shall sacrifice his own advantage and also suffer the penalties of injustice.

360 E

τὴν δὲ κρίσιν αὐτήν] 'But the decision itself,' or 'the actual decision.' The judgement, as of supreme importance, is distinguished from the preliminary description.

πέρι] Either πέρι or περί: on such a point the authority of MSS. is of no value. It is best to read πέρι and make the genitive antecedent to ὧν depend on κρίσιν. 'The decision, in the case of the persons in question, as regards their life.' The accusative κρίσιν is first placed out of construction, and then resumed as a cognate accusative with κρίναι.

τίς οὖν δὴ ἡ διάστασις; For the sudden question compare infra 376 Ε τίς οὖν ἡ παιδεία;

Republic II.
360
E

В

C

Ideas of justice and injustice cannot really be isolated from their consequences. (Compare the attempt which is made in Phileb. 20 E to divide pleasure and knowledge: μήτε ἐν τῷ τῆς ἡδονῆς ἐνέστω φρόνησις, μήτε ἐν τῷ τῆς φρονήσεως ἡδονή.) Truths which have any meaning or interest for man cannot be wholly withdrawn from the conditions of human life. Aristotle remarks on the absurdity of such paradoxes, Eth. Nic. vii. 13, 3 οί δὲ τὸν τροχιζόμενον καὶ τὸν δυστυχίαις μεγάλαις περιπίπτοντα εὐδαίμονα φάσκοντες εἶναι, ἐὰν ἢ ἀγαθός, ἡ ἐκόντες ἡ ἄκοντες οὐδὲν λέγουσιν. And Socrates brings his hearers back to a more natural point of view when he requires that the meaning of justice should be sought for not in the individual, but in some relation of men to one another (infra 372 λ).

The construction of the sentence is noticeable. First  $\delta i o \nu$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ . is added in explanation of  $\omega \sigma \pi \epsilon \rho$  of  $\delta \epsilon \nu o i$   $\delta \eta \mu \iota o \nu \rho \gamma o i$ , then the whole clause,  $\omega \sigma \pi \epsilon \rho$ . . .  $\pi \sigma \iota \epsilon i \tau \omega$ , is resumed in  $\sigma i \tau \omega$ .

361 τὴν τελεωτάτην ἀδικίαν] Glaucon again recalls the phraseology of Thrasymachus, i. 344 A.

τῷ λόγῳ] 'In our description.' So infra  $\mathbf{D}$  ἐπεξελθεῖν τῷ λόγῳ. Cp. infra  $\mathbf{3}$ 63  $\mathbf{C}$  εἰς "Αιδου γὰρ ἀγαγόντες τῷ λόγῳ, said of Musaeus and his son taking their heroes down to the world below in their descriptions:  $\mathbf{3}$ 69  $\mathbf{A}$  εἰ γιγνομένην πόλιν θεασαίμεθα λόγῳ:  $\mathbf{C}$  τῷ λόγῳ ἐξ ἀρχῆς ποιῶμεν πόλιν—' let us create the state': vii.  $\mathbf{5}$ 34  $\mathbf{D}$  οὖς τῷ λόγῳ τρέφεις . . . εἴ ποτε ἔργῳ τρέφοις. So Tim. 27  $\mathbf{A}$  ἀνθρώπους τῷ λόγῳ γεγονότας might be translated 'the men whom we have created.' The word ἱστῶμεν suggests the image, ὅσπερ ἀνδριάντα, &c., in what follows, infra  $\mathbf{D}$ .

οὐ δοκεῖν] Aesch., S. c. Th. 592 (said of Amphiaraus) οὐ γὰρ δοκεῖν ἄριστος, ἀλλ' εἶναι θέλει, βαθεῖαν ἄλοκα διὰ φρενὸς καρπούμενος, ἐξ ἦς τὰ κεδνὰ βλαστάνει βουλεύματα.

ἄδηλον οὖν . . . τοιοῦτος εἴη] ἄδηλον, sc. ἀν εἴη: 'In that case it would be uncertain whether he were such (i. e. just) for justice' sake, or for the sake of the gifts and rewards.' εἴη is the true reading, not ἀν εἴη, which has slight manuscript authority (Vind. E, Flor. x). The optative accords with the conditional nature of the case in an imagined future. See note on ὡς δόξειεν 360 в supra.

τέγγεσθαι] lit. to be 'softened by moisture,' like a stiff piece of leather. Cp. Aesch. Prom. 1008 τέγγει γὰρ οὐδὲν οὐδὲ μαλθάσσει κέαρ | λιταῖς: Soph. O. T. 336 ἀλλ' ὧδ' ἄτεγκτος κἀτελεύτητος φανεῖ;

τῶν ἀπ' αὐτῆς] ἀπό is not found in any of the MSS., which all read ὑπό. It is adopted from citations of the passage in Eusebius and Theodoret, and is better adapted to the context. The confusion of ὑπό and ἀπό is frequent in MSS. For ὑπό here, however, cp. Theaet. 200 Ε τὰ ὑπ' αὐτοῦ (sc. τοῦ δοξάζειν ἀληθῆ) γιγνόμενα.

Republic II. 361 C

ἀλλὰ ἴτω] The reading of the best MSS. ήτω is a late form, which has probably crept in by mistake. Better ἴτω (cp. vii. 534 c διαπορεύηται). The  $\eta$  of ήτω in Par. A appears to have been made from  $\iota$ . ἔστω is probably a conjectural emendation for ήτω.

D

βαβαί] is an exclamation of wonder, parallel in form to πόποι, παπαί. 'Wonderful, said I, dear Glaucon. In what a spirited manner you polish up your two heroes for the decision, as if each were a statue.' Cp. the reversal of the two portraits in the true state, in which the King and the Tyrant (ix. 577) and the just and the unjust (x. 613) receive their final reward.

E

ἐκκαυθήσεται] (A II), and not ἐκκοπήσεται (q) or ἐκκοφθήσεται (M), is the reading of the best MSS., and is confirmed by a further reference to this passage in x. 613 Ε καὶ ἃ ἄγροικα ἔφησθα σὰ εἶναι ἀληθῆ λέγων,—εἶτα στρεβλώσονται καὶ ἐκκαυθήσονται. The Gorgias contains a germ of the second book of the Republic; we find there (473 c) the parallel words, ἐὰν ἀδικῶν ἄνθρωπος ληφθῆ τυραννίδι ἐπιβουλεύων, καὶ ληφθεὶς στρεβλῶται καὶ ἐκτέμνηται καὶ τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς ἐκκάηται, which also confirms the reading in this passage. The corruption in M is due to the later pronunciation of av.

£

Using a bold inversion, Glaucon says that the life of the unjust is more real than that of the just. For the reality of justice, when without the appearance of justice, is annihilated by suffering. But the hypocrisy of the unjust man is a part of his business, which is unmistakably real. The discourse of Adeimantus which follows is a further development of this paradox: cp. 362 E "v" η σαφέστερον ο μοι δοκεί βούλεσθαι Γλαύκων. Adeimantus however represents the μ worldly or prudential, rather than the sophistical point of view.

362

ἄρα] 'As may be inferred from this.'

ἀληθείας ἐχόμενον] 'which has to do with truth,' a favourite Platonic usage of ἔχομαι, e.g. Theaet. 145 Λ ὅσα παιδείας ἔχεται: ἀλήθεια was a favourite word, not only with Plato and Socrates, but with the Sophists, meaning with them, not reality, but appearance, which they asserted to be reality. Cp. Theaet. 167 Λ, c and the title of the book of Protagoras (ἡ ᾿Αλήθεια—Theaet. 161 c); also Sophist 246 Β τὴν λεγομένην ὑπ᾽ αὐτῶν ἀλήθειαν.

Republic II. 362 A

В

βαθείαν ἄλοκα . . . βουλεύματα] Glaucon resumes the quotation, which he applies to the unjust man. In what follows the 'counsels' and their results are confused.

πρῶτον μὲν . . . δικαίω εἶναι] The words δοκοῦντι δικαίω εἶναι are governed by βλαστάνει, with the subject of which ἄρχειν agrees. The accusative takes the place of the dative in κερδαίνοντα, and with the words εἰς ἀγῶνας τοίνυν ἰόντα the construction reverts to ψήσουσι (supra A). For the former change cp. iv. 422 Β οὐδ΄ εἶ ἐξείη . . . . ὑποφεύγοντι τὸν πρότερον ἀεὶ προσφερόμενον ἀναστρέφοντα κρούειν . . .;

ξυμβάλλειν] 'to have dealings with:' cp. iv. 425 c ξυμβολαίων τε πέρι . . . â πρὸς ἀλλήλους ξυμβάλλουσιν. With the juxtaposition of ξυμβάλλειν and κοινωνείν cp. i. 333 Λ ξυμβόλαια δὲ λέγεις κοινωνήματα, ἤ τι ἄλλο;

παρὰ ταῦτα πάντα] 'in all this:' cp. iv. 424 Β ὅπως αν . . . παρὰ πάντα αὐτὸ φυλάττωσι.

τούς τε φίλους εὖ ποιεῖν... βλάπτειν] A link of reminiscence connecting this with the previous discussion: supra i. 334 B.

C θεραπεύειν..: τοὺς θεούς] This also contains an allusion to what precedes, supra i. 331 B, where Cephalus gave his simple definition.

θεοφιλέστερον . . . μαλλον προσήκειν] For the redundant comparative compare Laws vi. 781 A λαθραιότερον μάλλον and the redundant superlative in i. 331 B οὐκ ἐλάχιστον . . . χρησιμώτατον.

D οὖκοῦν... ἐπάμυνε] 'Well then, let brother help brother, as the proverb says.' The proverb is a natural one and appears to be remembered in the lines of Homer:—

Iliad xxi. 308:

φίλε κασίγνητε, σθένος ἀνέρος ἀμφότεροί περ σχώμεν.

Od. xvi. 97:

E

η τι κασιγνήτοις επιμεμφεαι, οδοί περ ανηρ μαρναμένοισι πέποιθε, καὶ εἰ μέγα νεδκος ὅρηται.

τὸ λεγόμενον, as elsewhere, is an accusative in apposition to the sentence. For the optative παρείη, expressive of a wish or gentle command, see Monro's *Homeric Grammar*, § 299 b.

οί] sc. λόγοι, which, as elsewhere, are personified.

Glaucon had endeavoured to isolate justice and injustice from Republic their consequences: 'let the just suffer and the unjust be rewarded.' 'But what are justice and injustice in their nature?' Adeimantus would wish also to make them independent of the opinion of men, who maintain, not that the just will suffer, but (1) that he will be rewarded (τοὺς ἐναντίους λόγους) in this world and also in another (these are the sort of motives that they inculcate): (2) that injustice is only condemned by opinion and custom, and may be readily expiated. Here then is another reason for having a clear account of the nature of justice and injustice.

Adeimantus, whose character is contrasted with that of Glaucon throughout, as the more solid and practical is opposed to the eager and impulsive nature,—(two contraries, which, as Plato remarks in vi. 503 C, are seldom to be found in the same person)—now urges on Socrates a different set of considerations. Glaucon has shown how the opponents of justice declare that seeming is better than reality, and that the praise of justice arises from the fear of injustice. According to Adeimantus, the world is always repeating that virtue is honourable, but toilsome and difficult, vice easy and profitable. although disreputable. The young are told to pursue justice, not for its own sake, but for the sake of reputation and reward, and to avoid injustice only from the fear of punishment. Poets and prosewriters alike tell of temporal prosperity attending on justice here, and sensual delights awaiting the just hereafter, and in speaking of the penalties of injustice they bury souls in mud or make them carry water in a sieve; their imagination reaches no further (cp. Theaet. 177 A).

λέγουσι resumes λόγους supra.

αὐτὸ δικαιοσύνην For this apposition of neuter and feminine, which has led some of the copyists to write aυτοδικαιοσύνην in one word on the supposed analogy of αὐτοαγαθόν, cp. infra v. 472 c έζητουμεν αὐτό τε δικαιοσύνην οδόν έστι, καὶ ἄνδρα τὸν τελέως δίκαιον: also x. 612 B.

γίγνηται not γίγνωνται, is the true reading. The singular has a collective force which is assisted by the neuter ὅσαπερ. Cp. infra ν. 463 Λ έστι . . . . . . . . . . καὶ δημος: Euthyd. 302 C έστι . . . καὶ βωμοί καὶ ίερά, κ.τ.λ.

τῷ ἀδίκῳ] is read in x q v and is probably right, though perhaps only a manuscript conjecture : - τῷ δικαίφ, which is the reading of 362 E-363 E

362

362 E

363 A

Republic 363

most MSS., including AIIM, may have arisen out of a logical confusion. Madvig would delete the words, which are omitted in one MS. (Par. K). It is hardly conceivable that Plato should have written δικαίω = δοκοῦντι δικαίω.

ἐπὶ πλέον . . . ἄ φασι θεοὺς διδόναι] 'Now these make still more of reputation; for throwing in the good opinion of Heaven, they have numberless benefits to relate, which the Gods, as they say, confer on the pious.' That is to say, they add the favour of Heaven to the good opinion of men.

ωσπερ . . . (c) παρέχη ἰχθῶς The first quotation is from Hesiod, Opera et Dies, 230:--

> τοίσι φέρει μεν γαία πολύν βίον, ούρεσι δε δρύς άκρη μέν τε φέρει βαλάνους, μέσση δέ, κ.τ.λ.

as in the text. There is no reason to suppose any variation in this passage in the text of Hesiod. Plato has adapted the words to suit the construction of his own sentence. The second passage is quoted from the Odyssey, xix. 109-113, where ωστε τευ is the beginning of the verse, τευ depending on «λέος in the previous line, and  $\eta$  is correlative to another  $\eta$ , which would have followed if the sentence had been completed.

Μουσαίος δε . . . τοίς δικαίοις 'And the blessings which Musaeus ( and his son (Eumolpus? cp. Suidas s.v.) represent the Gods as giving to the just are still more glorious.' In the lively language of Plato the poet is the maker of what he relates; he takes his heroes down into the world below, and lays them on couches, and puts them into a state of intoxication, while others extend the heavenly rewards yet further to their descendants (D μακροτέρους ἀποτείνουσι μισθούς παρὰ  $\theta$ εῶν). μακροτέρους is to be taken with ἀποτείνουσι. The jingle in συμπόσιον τῶν ὁσίων is perhaps intentional: cp. Symp. 185 c Παυσανίου δέ παυσαμένου, διδάσκουσι γάρ με ίσα λέγειν ούτωσὶ οί σοφοί.

D είς πηλόν τινα . . . ἀναγκάζουσι φέρειν Phaedo 69 C κινδυνεύουσι καὶ οἱ τὰς τελετὰς ἡμῖν οὖτοι καταστήσαντες οὐ φαῦλοί τινες εἶναι, ἀλλὰ τῷ οντι πάλαι αινίττεσθαι, ότι δς αν αμύητος και ατέλεστος είς Αιδου αφίκηται, έν βορβόρω κείσεται, κ.τ.λ.: Gorg. 493 Β ώς των έν "Αιδου . . . οὖτοι ἀθλιώτατοι αν είεν οι αμύητοι, και φοροίεν είς τον τετρημένον πίθον ύδωρ έτέρω τοιούτω τετρημένω κοσκίνω.

αλλα δε οὐκ ἔχουσιν sc. λέγειν. Plato has in his mind the only E real punishment of injustice, which such reasoners cannot see. Cp. Theaet. 176 D ἀγνοοῦσι γὰρ ζημίαν ἀδικίας, ὁ δεῖ ἥκιστα ἀγνοεῖν. οὐ γάρ ἐστιν ἡν δοκοῦσι, πληγαί τε καὶ θάνατοι, ὧν ἐνίστε πάσχουσιν οὐδὲν ἀδικοῦντες, ἀλλὰ ἡν ἀδύνατον ἐκφυγεῖν, viz. that by their wicked acts they become like the pattern of evil.

Republic 11. 363 E

έκατέρων ί. ε. των δικαίων καὶ των άδίκων.

inexorable.

Again, they tell us that the way of virtue, though honourable, is grievous and toilsome, whereas vice is easy and pleasant, although disreputable. And while dwelling on the rewards of virtue, they speak also in the same breath of the prosperity of the wicked, and of the misfortunes of the just, attributing both to the action of the Gods. There are prophets, too, and mendicant priests, who profess to have the means of reconciling the Gods to sinners, and these declarations of theirs are confirmed by poets, who represent the Gods as not

363 E 366 B

What conclusion will a youth of lively parts gather from all this? Will he not avoid the hard road which leads to possible disaster and follow the smooth pathway of appearances, holding up to the world a show of virtue, while in secret he pursues his own interest? If a doubt is suggested whether he can elude exposure, he is ready with an answer. Is there not rhetoric, the science of persuasion, and the power of combination into clubs for mutual security? May we not hope even to circumvent the Gods? And perhaps there are no Gods. But if there are, those who have told us of them tell us also that they may be propitiated by sacrifice. Then let us share our gains with them. You speak of the punishments of the world below. But are there not mighty deities who will give us absolution?

363 E

πρὸς δὲ τούτοις . . . καὶ ὑπὸ ποιητῶν] 'Further, Socrates, consider yet another way of speaking about justice and injustice to which utterance is given, not only by the poets, but also in prose writing.' Cp. infra 366 Ε αὐτὸ δ' ἐκάτερον . . . οὐδεὶς πώποτε οὕτ' ἐν ποιήσει οὕτ' ἐν ἰδίοις λόγοις ἐπεξῆλθεν ἰκανῶς τῷ λόγῳ. ἰδίᾳ is opposed to ὑπὸ ποιητῶν in the same way that ἰδιώτης is opposed to a skilled person. Cp. Phaedr. 258 p ἐν μέτροφ ὡς ποιητῆς, ἢ ἄνεν μέτρον ὡς ἰδιώτης.

364 A

ώς ἐπὶ τὸ πληθος] 'in general.' Cp. Phaedr. 275 B ἀγνώμονες ὡς ἐπὶ τὸ πληθος ὄντες.

καὶ πονηρούς πλουσίους . . . ἔχοντας] 'wicked men who are rich or have any power besides riches.' ἄλλας, sc. ἡ πλούτον, understood from πλουσίους.

Republic II. 364 A B  $\epsilon$ ὐχ $\epsilon$ ρῶς] 'lightly,' is a word of blame here and in vii. 535 E ἀλλ'  $\epsilon$ ὐχ $\epsilon$ ρῶς ὧσ $\pi$  $\epsilon$ ρ θηρίον ὕειον ἐν ἀμαθία μολύνηται.

τούτων δέ... ἐναντίαν μοῦραν] Compare infra 379 p, where the Homeric sentiment of the two vessels of Zeus, the one full of good, the other of evil destinies, is condemned; also the words of Psalm xxxvii. 35 'I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree,' which are in like manner followed by a justification of the ways of God to man.

θαυμασιώτατοι λέγονται] θαυμασιώτατοι is the predicate of λέγονται, in which the notion of λόγοι is repeated. 'The tales which are told about the Gods and Virtue are the most wonderful of all.' The following words show the connexion implied in τε καί. 'How the Gods are disposed towards virtue.'

ἀγύρται] 'begging priests.' Cp. infra 381 D Ήραν ἠλλοιωμένην ώς ίέρειαν ἀγείρουσαν.

Cβλάψει 'A man shall hurt.' sc. πείθουσιν ώς ὁ ἐθέλων βλάψει. The passage may be taken in two different ways according as the prophet or the person who consults him is supposed to be the subject of ἀκεῖσθαι supra. In the latter case there is no difficulty in supplying the subject of βλάψει. The regularity of construction is interrupted by the sudden introduction of the direct form of speech, which adds vividness to the passage. And the main thread of the sentence is taken up again in ἐπαγωγαίς . . . ὑπηρετείν. If the prophets are the subject throughout, the reading βλάψειν is more convenient though still not necessary. But the man who has recourse to the prophet or priest is clearly the nominative to ἐθέλη, and is referred to in του supra. Cp. 365 A μή θύσαντας. βλάψει is found in almost all the MSS, and is a reading which the scribes were unlikely to invent. βλάψαι is an emendation of Muretus.

οί μὲν...διδόντες] 'Those of them (i.e. of the persons mentioned in 364 A) who offer facilities for vice' (calling Hesiod to witness that, &c.). The conjecture of Muretus, approved by Cobet, οἱ μὲν... ἄδοντες, 'Some of them singing about the facility of vice' was needlessly adopted in Baiter's edition of 1881. For διδόντες = δίδοσθαι λέγοντες cp. supra 363 c, D διδόασι, 'represent as being given,' κατακλίναντες, κατορύττουσιν.

D λείη μὲν ὁδός | The reading in the text of Hesiod (Opera et Dies, 286) is ὀλίγη, not λείη, which is found here and in Laws iv. 718 Ε,

Republic

364 D

E

where the quotation occurs again, and three other lines are added, the two last of which are quoted also in Prot. 340 D:—

ἀθάνατοι, μακρὸς δὲ καὶ ὄρθιος οἶμος ἐς αὐτήν, καὶ τρηχὺς τὸ πρῶτον ἐπὴν δ' εἰς ἄκρον ἵκηαι, ρηϊδίη δὴ ἔπειτα πέλει, χαλεπή περ ἐοῦσα.

The substitution of λείη for δλίγη in Plato and also in Xenophon (Mem. ii. 1, 20) and Plutarch (Mor. 77 d) is supposed to have been intended to avoid tautology of the two ideas, δλίγη όδός and μάλα ἐγγύθι ναίει, but such a tautology is frequent in Epic poetry: δλίγη, of which μάλα δ' ἐγγύθι ναίει is an explanation, is probably the true reading, and is opposed to μακρός following.

στρεπτοί δέ τε καὶ θεοὶ αὐτοί] The MSS. point to an early variety of reading between λιστοί, and στρεπτοί which is the reading of the original passage, Il. ix. 497. The word λιστός does not occur elsewhere, though ἄλλιστος is found in Empedocles (frag. 50), and τρίλλιστος in Homer (Iliad viii. 488).

βίβλων δὲ ὅμαδον παρέχονται Μουσαίου καὶ ᾿Ορφέως] For the 'host' of books cp. Eurip. Hippol. 953:—

'Ορφέα τ' ἄνακτ' ἔχων βάκχευε, πολλῶν γραμμάτων τιμῶν καπνούς,

also Alcestis, 967:—

Θρήσσαις ἐν σανίσιν, τὰς 'Ορφεία κατέγραψεν γῆρυς:

and for the general thought in what follows, Soph. Fragm. 719 Dindorf (753 Nauck):—

ώς τρισόλβιοι

κείνοι βροτών, οἱ ταῦτα δερχθέντες τέλη μόλωσ' ἐς "Λιδου" τοῦσδε γὰρ μόνοις ἐκεῖ ζῆν ἐστι, τοῖς δ' ἄλλοισι πάντ' ἐκεῖ κακά.

Homer, Hymn to Demeter, 480-482:-

ὄλβιος, δε τάδ' ὅπωπεν ἐπιχθονίων ἀνθρώπων δε δ' ἀτελὴς ἱερῶν, ὅς τ' ἔμμορος, οὔποθ' ὁμοίην αἶσαν ἔχει, φθίμενός περ, ὑπὸ ζόφω εὐρώεντι.

Suidas has given a list of twenty-one Orphic works, which he attributes to various authors; one class of them being called  $\tau \epsilon \lambda \epsilon \tau a i$  and ascribed to Onomacritus. This and other passages (Phaedo

Republic II. 364 E. 69 c; Orat. 402 B; Phileb. 66 c) show that a body of writings, older probably than any Orphica which have come down to us, existed under the name of Orpheus in the age of Plato.

καὶ παιδιᾶς ἡδονῶν] 'and sportive delights.' The pleonasm gives a scornful emphasis.

365 A τελετάς] Compare Laws x. 908, 909, where the enemies of religion are divided into two classes: (1) open unbelievers, who may be honest and good men; and (2) insidious priests and magicians, who practise upon the souls of the living and dead: 908 D γίγνονται δὲ ἐξ αὐτῶν (sc. μάντεων) ἔστιν ὅτε καὶ τύραννοι καὶ δημηγόροι καὶ στρατηγοί, καὶ τελεταῖς δὲ ἰδίαις ἐπιβεβουλευκότες σοφιστῶν τε ἐπικαλουμένων μηχαναί: 909 B ὅσοι δ᾽ ἄν . . . καταφρονοῦντες δὲ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ψυγαγωγῶσι μὲν πολλοὺς τῶν ζώντων, τοὺς δὲ τεθνεῶτας φάσκοντες ψυχαγωγεῖν καὶ θεοὺς ὑπισχνούμενοι πείθειν, κ.τ.λ. Both the open unbeliever and the religious impostor are to be punished, the former with a view to reformation, the latter more severely: both capitally, if they persist after a five years' imprisonment.

ταῦτα . . . λεγόμενα] The accusativus pendens receives a construction from ἀκουούσας, as the sentence proceeds.

ώς . . . τιμῆς τιμή is here used in the active verbal sense—'regard'—cp. supra 359 c ἐπὶ τὴν τοῦ ἴσου τιμήν.

τί...  $\pi$ οιεῖν] 'How will they behave' or 'be affected?' Essay on Diction, vol. ii. p. 282.

ὥσπερ ἐπιπτόμενοι συλλογίσασθαι] The words suggest the image of a wandering bee, gathering honey from each flower in passing. Cp. Ion 534 Β ἐκ Μουσῶν κήπων τινῶν καὶ ναπῶν δρεπόμενοι τὰ μέλη ἡμῦν φέρουσιν, ὥσπερ αἱ μέλιτται.

В

λέγοι γὰρ ἄν . . . λέγεται] φασίν, like λέγεται, at the end of the sentence, is a resumption of  $\tau \grave{a}$   $\mu \grave{e} \nu$  . . . λεγόμενα, which is out of construction or rather in suspense. For the anacoluthon cp. Polit. 295 D  $\mathring{\eta}$  πῶν τὸ τοιοῦτον . . . ξυμβαῖνον . . . γέλως ἄν ὁ μέγιστος γίγνοιτο τῶν τοιούτων νομοθετημάτων;

πότερον δίκα τεῖχος ὕψιον, κ.τ.λ.] The same passage is cited by Cicero ad Attic. xiii. 38, 41; Maxim. Tyr. xviii. init.; Atticus Platonic. apud Euseb. Praep. Ev. xv. 798 d; and Dionys. Halic. de Comp. verb. c. 21. From these sources Bergk gives the fragment thus:—Πότερον δίκα τεῖχος ὕψιον | ἢ σκολιαῖς ἀπάταις ἀναβαίνει | ἐπιχθόνιον γένος ἀνδρῶν, | δίχα μοι νόος ἀτρέκειαν εἶπεῖν. Bergk observes

that  $\theta \epsilon \sigma \pi \epsilon \sigma \cos \beta \cos \alpha \cot \kappa \psi \rho \omega \nu \epsilon \psi \delta \alpha \mu \omega \nu \delta \alpha \sin \alpha \delta \alpha \cos \alpha$  a poetical ring.

Republic II. 365 B

 $\epsilon$ αν καὶ μὴ δοκω] 'If at the same time I have the opposite reputation.' This, and not  $\epsilon$ αν μὴ καὶ δοκω, is the reading of a majority of MSS., and is more idiomatic.

άδίκω δϵ] sc. οντι.

τὸ δοκείν . . . καὶ τὰν ἀλάθειαν βιᾶται] The words of Simonides, quoted by the Scholiast on Eur. Or. 782.

καὶ κύριον εὐδαιμονίας | SC. ἐστί.

πρόθυρα μὲν καὶ σχῆμα] 'As a vestibule and exterior.' πρόθυρα, κ.τ.λ., are accusatives in apposition to σκιαγραφίαν . . . περιγραπτέον, and the whole sentence is explanatory of ἐπὶ τοῦτο δὴ τρεπτέον ὅλως and therefore in asyndeton.—σκιαγραφία in its simple meaning is painting in light and shade. In Plato the word is metaphorically used to imply illusion or unreality of any kind: cp. ix. 583 β οὐδὲ παναληθής ἐστιν ἡ τῶν ἄλλων ἡδονὴ . . . ἀλλ' ἐσκιαγραφημένη: Phaedo 69 β μὴ σκιαγραφία τις ἢ ἡ τοιαύτη ἀρετή, κ.τ.λ. ἀλώπεκα, 'the fox,' is a more lively reading and better suited to the epithets κερδαλέαν and ποικίλην, 'cunning and versatile,' which are quoted from Archilochus, than ἀλωπεκῆν, the fox's skin, which is quoted in the Lexicon of Timaeus. The fox—as the emblem of cunning—is to be trailed behind. Cp. Themist. Orat. xxii. 279 Λ ἀνθρωπία σμικρὰ καὶ ἀνελεύθερα τὰς ἀλώπεκας ὅπισθεν ἐφελκόμενα: and Solon, Fr. 10. 7 ἀλώπεκος ἔχνεσι βαίνει.

οὐ ράδιον ἀεὶ λανθάνειν κακὸν ὅντα For the failure of the wicked in later life cp. x. 613 B οἱ μὲν δεινοί τε καὶ ἄδικοι δρῶσιν ὅπερ οἱ δρομῆς, ὅσοι ἀν θέωσιν εὖ ἀπὸ τῶν κάτω, ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν ἄνω μή.

ταύτη ἰτέον, ὡς ... φέρει] ταύτη, 'in this path' (i. e. the path of dissimulation and appearance) 'we must proceed, following in the track of the argument.'

ểπὶ γὰρ τὸ λανθάνειν] 'For' (as to what you say of the difficulty of escaping detection) 'with a view of escaping it,' &c.—referring to the previous words οὐ ῥάδιον ἀεὶ λανθάνειν κακὸν ὅντα.

έξ ὧν] 'So drawing from these resources.' The antecedent to ὧν is the whole sentence from ξυνωμοσίας to διδόντες. The clubs supply force; the rhetors give the means of persuasion.

ουδ' ήμεν μελητέον του λανθάνειν και ήμεν μελητέον is the reading of

D

Republic II. 365 D AΠΜ. But a wrong sense is thus given to the clause καὶ ἡμῖν μελητέον τοῦ λανθάνειν: 'We must take care to conceal our crimes.' Various ways of removing the difficulty have been suggested. (1) Stallbaum, in his later edition (1858), reads τί καὶ ἡμῖν . . . : and this is supported by slight manuscript authority (Flor. x); but the new interrogative beginning is too abrupt after οὐκοῦν. (2) For μελητέου the Zurich editions substitute ἀμελητέον, the conj. of Baiter. But the meaning is not 'We ought not to attend to concealment,' but 'we need not attend to concealment.' The difficulty in the passage is clearly the omission of the negative, which is a very common kind of corruption. It may be supplied either by reading with q οὐδ' instead of καί (as in the text), or with a still smaller alteration, adopted by Schneider, of inserting οὐ before μελητέου καὶ ἡμῖν οὐ μελητέον: or by throwing back the accent on οὔκουν (sic), a suggestion of Hermann's, who thus obtains the required negative. But in that case the force of ourour cannot be supposed to extend equally to both members of the sentence, which are distributed by  $\mu \dot{\epsilon} \nu$  and  $\delta \dot{\epsilon}$ ; in the second clause  $\epsilon i \delta \dot{\epsilon}$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ ., it must be assumed that the negative is forgotten and the construction changed.

E εὐχωλαῖς ἀγανῆσι] The reading ἀγανῆσι here, as well as in 364 d, where some MSS. also read εὐχωλῆς, may possibly be a correction of ἀγαναῖσι taken from the ordinary text of Homer.

 $\epsilon i \ \delta' \ o \tilde{o} \nu ]$  'Now if we are to believe.' The alternative consequence which follows from the supposition 'if we believe neither' is too obvious to be expressed.

ἀπὸ τῶν ἀδικημάτων] 'From the results of wrong-doing.' For the sense compare Shakespeare, *Hamlet* iii. 3. 59 'And oft 'tis seen the wicked prize itself Buys out the law: but 'tis not so above.'

366 A δίκαιοι...ἀζήμιοι \*μέν, κ.τ.λ.] The various reading μόνον, which is found in  $\Pi$ M and several other MSS, but not in Par. A, after the first ἀζήμιοι, helps somewhat clumsily to point the sense: 'If we are just, all that we gain is,' &c.  $\mu$ έν, the conjecture of Muretus, gives a possible account of both the manuscript readings.

άδικοι δέ] sc. οντες.

λισσόμενοι . . . άμαρτάνοντες] The line of Homer already quoted — 364 ε λισσόμενοι, ὅτε κέν τις ὑπερβήη καὶ άμάρτη — is ingeniously turned so as to suggest the notion of sinning and praying at once.

ἢ παίδες παίδων ] Cp. supra 363 p.

Republic II.366

A

αὖ μέγα δύνανται These words happen to be omitted in Par. A, showing that the best MSS, not unfrequently err. It is quite unnecessary with Hermann to spoil the effect of a very spirited passage by the introduction of a very tame emendation — αλλ' ώφελήσουσιν άγνιζομένους αἱ τελεταὶ καὶ οἱ λύσιοι θεοί—in order to vindicate the accidental omission of αὖ μέγα δύνανται in Par. A.

αί μέγισται πόλεις Meaning Athens, where the Eleusinian mysteries had become part of the state religion.

В

καὶ οἱ θεῶν παίδες ποιηταί ] Either (1) ' and the poets, who are the children of the Gods': sc. οντες, absorbed in γενόμενοι, ' and have become their interpreters': or (2) 'the children of the Gods who have become poets and the interpreters of the Gods.' The authority of states is contrasted with the genius of individuals. Cp. infra των πολλών τε καὶ ἄκρων.

τίς μηχανή This phrase from the more precise — 'What contrivance is there?' has passed into the more general sense— 'What possibility is there?' Cp. Phaedo 72 D τίς μηχανή μη οὐχὶ πάντα καταναλωθήναι; 'How can it be but that all things would be consumed?'

ώς δή τοι . . . (D) αὐτὸ δρᾶν For a like humanity of feeling cp. V. 476 Ε ἐπικρυπτόμενοι ὅτι οὐχ ὑγιαίνει: vi. 492 Λ foll., 499 Ε; Phaedr. 268 E; Laws x. 888, 903. The conviction that vice is at any rate in some degree involuntary leads men to regard it in a more tolerant spirit.

C

πλην εί τις θεία φύσει Cp. again vi. 492 Ε οὔτε γαρ γίγνεται ούτε γέγονεν οὐδε οὖν μὴ γένηται ἀλλοῖον ἦθος πρὸς ἀρετὴν παρὰ τὴν τούτων παιδείαν πεπαιδευμένον,—ανθρώπειον, ω έταιρε θείον μέντοι κατά τὴν παροιμίαν έξαιρωμεν λόγου. See also the question raised in the Meno and in Aristot. Eth. Nic. i. 9, whether virtue is not a divine gift.

ψέγει supply έκαστος from οὐδείς, as in Symp. 192 Ε ταῦτα ἀκούσας . . . οὐδ' ἄν εἶς ἐξαρνηθείη . . . ἀλλ' ἀτεχνῶς οἴοιτ' ἄν ἀκηκοέναι.

D

ώς δέ, δηλον 'And that this is so, is plain.' Cp. Dem. c. Tim. 730, 25 ώς δέ, έγω φράσω.

των τοιούτων SC. των ψεγόντων την άδικίαν.

Republic II. 366 D-367 E For these unworthy thoughts the friends of justice must be held responsible, if they continue to dwell mainly on the consequences of wirtue and do not rather employ their eloquence to show that justice is in its own nature the highest good and injustice the greatest evil. Let Socrates apply himself to the task of showing this.

366 D ωρμησε... εἰπεῖν] 'And all this arises from one thing, which was the beginning of our whole argument with you. My brother here and I were impelled to say to you,' &c. εἰπεῖν is an explanation of λόγος and receives a subject from τῷδε καὶ ἐμοί—ὥστε τόνδε καὶ ἐμὲ εἰπεῖν. For the expression cp. Hdt. vi. 86, 16 τοῦ δὲ εἴνεκα ὁ λόγος ὅδε, ὧ ᾿Αθηναῖοι, ὡρμήθη λέγεσθαι ἐς ὑμέας, εἰρήσεται.

& θαυμάσιε] 'What surprises me in all of you who praise justice is that...' The mode of address, & θαυμάσιε, identifies Socrates with the ordinary panegyrists of justice, with whom Adeimantus is expostulating. Cp. Phaedr. 260 p τί ποτ', & θαυμάσιοι, ληρείτε;

E

ἀπὸ τῶν ἐξ ἀρχῆς...λελειμμένοι] Plato is referring to well-known tales and maxims, which the poets and logographers had put into the mouths of ancient heroes, such as the choice of Heracles, or the advice of Erechtheus to his son in Euripides (Fragm. 364, ll. 1400):—

ἀδίκως μὴ κτῶ χρήμω, ἡν βούλη πολὺν χρόνον μελάθροις ἐμμένειν τὰ γὰρ κακῶς οἴκους ἐσελθόντ οὐκ ἔχει σωτηρίαν. ἔχειν δὲ πειρῶ τοῦτο γὰρ τό τ εὐγενὲς καὶ τοὺς γάμους δίδωσι τοὺς πρώτους ἔχειν. ἐν τῷ πένεσθαι δ' ἐστὶν ἢ τ' ἀδοξία, καν ἢ σοφός τις, ἢ τ' ἀτιμία βίου.

δόξας, κ.τ.λ.] Sc. ἐπαινῶν καὶ ψέγων.

èν ἰδίοις λόγοις] 'in ordinary speech,' i.e. in prose. The poet is a professional person. Cp. ιδία supra 363 ε, Phaedrus 258 p.

367 A αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ ... φύλαξ] After ἔκαστος some MSS. (Π η) introduce ἄριστος, which Bekker approved. The weight of authority seems to be against it.

ύπέρ] 'Concerning.' Cp. Apol. 39 Ε ήδέως αν διαλεχθείην ύπερ τοῦ γεγονότος τουτουί πράγματος.

φορτικῶς] 'grossly,' 'unworthily.' The word has an associa-

tion of vulgarity or bad taste: infra vii. 528 Ε ώς φορτικώς ἐπαινοῦντι: Theaet. 183 Ε μὴ φορτικῶς σκοπῶμεν—'lest we consider the subject in an unworthy manner.'

Republic II. 367 A

B

σοῦ ἐπιθυμῶν ἀκοῦσαι τἀναντία] is emphatic: 'it is because I wish to hear from you the opposite side, that I speak with so much earnestness, for I may as well be open with you.'

ώς δύναμαι μάλιστα] Cp. supra 358 d, where Glaucon says—διὸ κατατείνας έρῶ, κ.τ.λ.

εὶ γὰρ... ψέγειν ἀλλὰ τὸ δοκεῖν] 'For unless you subtract from both of them their true reputation, and unless you add on the false one (μή is to be repeated with  $\pi \rho o \sigma \theta \dot{\eta} \sigma \epsilon \iota s$ ), we shall say that you do not praise justice, but the appearance of justice, nor blame the being unjust, but the seeming to be.'

While the essences of justice and injustice remain the same, their consequences are supposed to be interchanged. The second ἀλλὰ τὸ δοκεῦν is omitted in the text of A, but has been added in the margin by the second hand.

τὸ μὲν δίκαιον ἀλλότριον ἀγαθόν, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. i. 343 c.

C

τὸ δὲ ἄδικον αὐτῷ μέν, κ.τ.λ.] The unjust is expedient to a man's self, as above i. 344 c τὸ δ' ἄδικον ἐαυτῷ λυσιτελοῦν τε καὶ ξυμφέρον.

ἐπειδὴ οὖν ώμολόγησας...μᾶλλον αὖτὰ αὖτῶν] See above 357 B foll. Plato is fond of 'looping up' the argument by allusions to what has preceded. At the beginning of the Book, justice was placed in the second or 'fairest' class of goods, that is to say, goods desirable in themselves and for their consequences. Adeimantus in the words—πολὺ δὲ μᾶλλον αὐτὰ αὐτῶν—has slightly altered this statement of Socrates, making justice belong to that class of goods which are desired much more for their own sakes than for their results.

We may observe τε followed by δέ as οὔτε by οὖδέ when a clause is emphasized, as below vi. 499 B οὔτε πόλις οὕτε πολιτεία οὖδέ γ' ἀνήρ.

καὶ ὑγιαίνειν δή] δή calls special attention to ὑγιαίνειν. Cp. Theaet. 156 Β καὶ ἡδοναί γε δὴ καὶ λῦπαι: Μεπο 87 Ε ἰσχὺς καὶ κάλλος καὶ πλοῦτος δή, infra vi. 503 Ε.

γόνιμα] 'genuine,' 'real.' Cp. γόνιμον ποιητήν in Aristophanes (Ran. 96).

D

Republic II. 367 D τοῦτ' οὖν αὐτὸ... βλάπτει] δ αὐτή, κ.τ.λ. is an explanation of τοῦτ' αὐτό, which also refers to the previous context. 'She by herself'—setting aside the consequences which flow from her. καὶ ἀδικία βλάπτει is an instance of an unnecessary (and here ungrammatical) addition of a correlative clause.

ἀνασχοίμην ἄν] The MSS. vary between ἀποσχοίμην, ἀποδεχοίμην, and ἀνασχοίμην, the reading of  $\Xi$ , which has also the authority of the Scholiast and is represented in the version of Ficinus. The construction of the genitive with ἀνέχομαι occurs again in viii. 564 D καὶ οὐκ ἀνέχεται τοῦ ἄλλα λέγοντος, Protag. 323 A εἶκότως ἄπαντος ἀνδρὸς ἀνέχονται.

εἰ μὴ σὺ κελεύεις] κελεύοις is the reading of Par. A (with the iota over an erasure) and should perhaps be preferred to κελεύεις.

E ἐἀν τε λανθάνη, κ.τ.λ.] These words are repeated almost verbatim in two other places, iv. 427 p, ix. 580 c,—where Socrates claims to have fulfilled the present demand. See note on 367 c ἐπειδὴ οὖν ὑμολόγησας, κ.τ.λ.

367 E-369 A Socrates is greatly struck by the divine instinct which has kept in the paths of virtue two young men who are able to plead so cloquently for the opposite of virtue.—He is discouraged at not having satisfied them, but in the sacred cause of Justice he may not falter. He suggests an expedient by which the discussion may be facilitated. Justice is an attribute of States as well as of individuals, and in the state it must surely be present on a larger scale. Justice in the state may be compared to a writing in large letters, and in the individual to a writing in small letters. Having failed in our attempt to decipher the small characters, let us now begin with the larger, and afterwards return to the smaller letters.

367 E καὶ ἐγὼ . . . εἶπον] For the form of the sentence cp. Protag. 335 Ε ἀεὶ μὲν ἔγωγέ σου τὴν φιλοσοφίαν ἄγαμαι, ἀτὰρ καὶ νῦν ἐπαινῶ καὶ φιλῶ.

368 A ἐκείνου τοῦ ἀνδρός] Not Thrasymachus, as Stallbaum ridiculously supposes (quoting in proof of his opinion Phileb. 36 dd, where Protarchus, who supports the doctrines of Philebus, is jestingly addressed as ὧ παῖ ἐκείνου τἀνδρός), but Ariston, whose name immediately follows, and is connected with the phrase by the repetition of the word παῖδες. What the passage of the Philebus really proves is that this was a familiar mode of address amongst

intimate friends. As in other passages (Theaet. 207 p aiτá: Sophist 263 ε aὐτό), the demonstrative waits for the correlative word, which is supplied by the verse. The 'pronominal phrase' ἐκείνου τοῦ ἀνδρός, 'of that man,' prepares for the quotation from the Elegiac Poem and avoids the repetition of the name of Ariston.

Republic II. 368 A

περὶ τὴν Μεγαροῦ μάχην The battle of Megara here referred to may be one of those mentioned by Diodorus (xiii. 65, 72) as having taken place in 409 or 405. As the Athenians were constantly at war with the Megarians, it may also be some minor engagement which is unrecorded. It certainly could not have been the battle in 424, because Plato, who was the eldest of the family, was only born in 430 or 428. We may be certain of so much:—(1) that Glaucon and Adeimantus were Plato's brothers; (2) that they did distinguish themselves at a battle of Megara; (3) that this battle was not the famous one in 424. Cp. Böckh 439, 440.

εὖ δοκεῖ ἔχειν] 'seems to be very appropriate.' Cp. i. 329 E.

δοκεῖτε δή μοι . . . ἠπίστουν ἂν ὑμῖν] 'I do believe that you are really not convinced; and I gather this from your general character, for if I judged by your words only, I should not trust you.'

В

čκ τοῦ ἄλλου] ἄλλου here, as frequently in Plato, and occasionally in other writers, is used adverbially; not 'I judge from the rest of your character,' but 'I judge from something else [than your speech] which is your character.' Cp. supra 357 c. The antithesis is further pointed by αὐτούς in αὐτούς τοὺς λόγους.

ὅ τι χρήσωμαι] used absolutely, as in Protag. 321 c ἢπόρει ὅ τι χρήσαιτο: Gorg. 465 Ε ἐὰν . . . σοῦ ἀποκριναμένου μὴ ἔχω ὅ τι χρήσωμαι.

μη βοηθείν] SC. τη δικαιοσύνη.

C

ἐπειδὴ οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] For οὐ δεινοί cp. Theaet. 154 p οὐκοῦν εἰ μὲν δεινοὶ καὶ σοφοὶ ἐγώ τε καὶ σὺ ἦμεν, κ.τ.λ., and, for the favourite illustration from letters, Polit. 277 E foll., where the argument is from the simpler to the more complex, as here from the greater to the smaller. οἴανπερ ἄν εἰ may be compared with the elliptical formula ὅσπερ ἄν εἰ. The sentence is complicated. It would naturally have run thus: 'We should make such an enquiry as near-sighted people would make, if they were bidden to read small letters at a distance, and some one discovered that the same letters existed elsewhere larger and on a larger ground. It would be thought a gain to read the larger letters first, and then proceed to

145

Republic II. 368

ούτως | Sc. πρώτον αναγνόντας.

εὶ τὰ αὐτὰ ὄντα τυγχάνει] 'To discover if they are really the same.' See the transition from the state to the individual, which is made with a reference to this passage in iv.  $434 \, D$ .

τί τοιοῦτον . . . καθορậs] 'What do you see like this in the inquiry respecting justice?' i. e. how is the inquiry facilitated by the simile of the large and small letters?

E ἴσως τοίνυν . . . ἐνείη] There is a touch of Socratic irony here.

369 την τοῦ μείζονος . . . ἐπισκοποῦντες] 'Looking for the likeness of the greater in the form of the less.'

γενομένου αὐτοῦ] ' When we have done as we propose.' Sc. τοῦ γίγνεσθαι τὴν πόλιν λόγφ.

B δοκεῖ οὖν χρῆναι, κ.τ.λ.] The apparent backwardness of Socrates has the effect of stimulating his hearers. The crowning instance of this is in v. 472 Λ.

369 B-371 E The state is the offspring of mutual need. No individual can supply a tithe of his own wants. Each therefore invites the co-operation of others, and the resulting association constitutes the state.

Primary wants are those of food, shelter, raiment and shoes, and these are supplied by the husbandman, the builder, the weaver and the cobbler.

Their labours must be divided, and each must produce enough of his commodity, and that of the right quality, to supply the rest.

This division of labour is approved upon the following grounds:—
1. Natural aptitudes differ. 2. A man who has one calling only is more likely to excel in it. 3. Work must be done at the right time, and therefore there should be no risk of the workmen being otherwise engaged. A market must also be provided; and a medium of exchange.

And the principle must be carried further. The manufacture of

tools and implements must be committed to the carpenter and smith, and there must be a class of herdsmen and shepherds to rear the animals required for husbandry and for use in building, and for the supply of wool and leather to the weaver and the shoe-maker.

Republic 11. 369 B-371 E

Our city is growing in size and can hardly be self-supporting. This deficiency leads to importation, and this to the creation of a mercantile class, and then, as imports necessitate exports, there is an increase of the number of persons in the city who are engaged in production. There must also be ships and sailors, and as exchange within the city grows more complex, barter becomes purchase, a currency is established, and a class of retail merchants is created. Lastly, the bulk of the commodities now carried to and fro necessitates a class of hired porters, who complete our simple state.

369

C

γίγνεται τοίνυν... πόλις] The real origin of society is beyond the horizon of human history. We reconstruct the fabric on some modern basis of contract, divine right, division of labour, mutual necessity, or obligation, which is ascribed by us to the earliest ages. But the society which we put together is only that which we have a previously taken to pieces. We mistake the scientific exposition of a subject for its historical growth and development. The principles which we suppose to have been known and recognized by all mankind from the beginning, are really working in them, but unconsciously. They grew like children according to certain laws, but they did not understand these laws.

ἢ τίν οἴει...πόλιν οἰκίζειν] 'Or to what other origin would you attribute the foundation of the state?' (Literally, 'What other beginning, think you, founds the state?') Necessity is the  $\pi \rho \hat{\omega} \tau \sigma s$  οἰκιστήs. For the liveliness of the expression, cp. infra c ποιήσει δὲ αὐτὴν...ἡ ἡμετέρα χρεία.

οὕτω δὴ ἄρα . . . ἐθέμεθα πόλιν ὄνομα] The plural is the main subject: this is subdivided by παραλαμβάνων, which is attracted by ἄλλος into the singular: cp. ἡμῶν ἔκαστος in the last sentence.

αλλος άλλον... ἐπ' άλλου χρεία] 'One taking to himself one person for one purpose, another taking another for a different purpose, and yet another for another purpose still.' The complex expression reflects the mutual interlacing of various needs,

μεταδίδωσι δη . . . ἄμεινον εἶναι] 'And so one gives to another VOL. III.

Republic or receives from another, because he believes it to be better for II. him' (to do so).

ἴθι δή . . . ἡμετέρα χρεία] 'Well then, said I, let us in idea create a city from the beginning; although our need will be the real creator.'

1) καὶ τῶν τοιούτων preparing for σκυτοτόμος infra.

φέρε δή, κ.τ.λ. Aristotle, misunderstanding the imaginative and artistic treatment of the subject, which he takes as matter of fact, makes a superficial criticism on this passage in Pol. iv. 4, § 12, which is as follows: 'Socrates says that a state is made up of four sorts of people who are absolutely necessary; these are a weaver, a husbandman, a shoemaker, and a builder; afterwards, finding that they are not enough, he adds a smith, and again a herdsman, to look after the necessary animals; then a merchant, and then a retail trader. All these together form the complement of the first state, as if a state were established merely to supply the necessaries of life, rather than for the sake of the good, or stood equally in need of shoemakers and husbandmen.' Stallbaum (note on 369 B) says: 'Aristoteles causam (die Veranlassung) et finem (den Zweck) non distinxit, licet alibi discrimen eorum non neglexerit.' It is quite true that Plato is not here speaking of the final cause of the state, but of the immediate cause of its origin. It is Aristotle who substitutes one for the other and thereby introduces confusion.

ểπὶ τοσαύτην παρασκευήν] 'To provide all this.' Socrates playfully exaggerates the wants of his primitive state. Cp. the serious use in vii. 535 c τοσαύτην μάθησιν.

γεωργός μεν είς sc. έσται, implied in the previous verb.

σκυτοτόμον] This word, like 'cobbler' among ourselves, appears to have had ludicrous associations. Cp. infra 374 B; v. 466 B κατὰ τὸν τῶν σκυτοτόμων . . . βίον.

αὖτόσε] 'thereto,' i. e. to those already mentioned.

τῶν περὶ τὸ σῶμα Either (1) neuter, or better (2) masculine: 'another of those who minister to the body.'

η γε ἀναγκαιοτάτη πόλις] Either 'the barest idea of a state,' or 'a state which provides for the barest necessities.' Probably a slight play is intended on both senses of the word ἀναγκαῖος. There appears to be a similar double meaning in vii. 527 A λέγουσι μέν που μάλα γελοίως τε καὶ ἀναγκαίως, 'they speak very ludicrously and

meagrely,' i.e. with a view to mere necessities; but not without an allusion to geometrical necessity. Also in ix. 574 Β ενεκα . . . οὐκ ἀναγκαίαν έταίρας . . . τὴν . . . ἀναγκαίαν μητέρα. The geometrical meaning is also played upon in v. 458 D οὐ γεωμετρικαῖς γε, . . . ἀλλ' ἐρωτικαῖς ἀνάγκαις.

Republic II. 369 D

**ἀμελήσαντα**] SC. τῶν ἄλλων.

E

τὰ αὐτοῦ πράττειν] Compare Charm. 161 E, where this simple notion of doing one's own business, which has been suggested as a definition of σωφροσύνη, is humorously set aside: δοκεῖ ἄν σοι πόλις εὖ οἰκεῖσθαι ὑπὸ τούτου τοῦ νόμου τοῦ κελεύοντος τὸ ἐαυτοῦ ἱμάτιον ἔκαστον ὑφαίνειν καὶ πλύνειν, καὶ ὑποδήματα σκυτοτομεῖν, καὶ λήκυθον καὶ στλεγγίδα καὶ τἄλλα πάντα κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον, τῶν μὲν ἀλλοτρίων μὴ ἄπτεσθαι, τὰ δὲ ἐαυτοῦ ἔκαστον ἐργάζεσθαί τε καὶ πράττειν; Οὐκ ἔμοιγε δοκεῖ, ἦ δ' ὅς.

370 A

ἀλλ' ἴσως . . . ἡῷον ἢ 'κείνως] 'But surely, Socrates, the former way (οὖτω, sc. by co-operation) is easier than the second way' (ἐκείνως, by isolation). ἡάδιον, which is the reading of Par. Λ and of the great majority of MSS., is supported by Meno 94 Ε ἡάδιον ἐστι κακῶς ποιεῖν ἀνθρώπους ἡ εὖ. The manuscript emendation, ἡῷον, may be right (see v. rr. on i. 348 Ε), but is not absolutely necessary. The confusion, if so be, arises from dittographia and the similarity of Λ to Δ (ῥαιον, ῥαιαιον, ῥαιδιον). οὖτω refers to the more familiar of the two alternatives, which is nearer in the speaker's mind.

έννοω γὰρ... εἰπόντος σοῦ] 'It comes into my mind now you speak.' Socrates has been leading Adeimantus to this result, which he now characteristically pretends to gather from him. The genitive absolute indicates the occasion rather than the cause: cp. infra 383 A οῦτως, ἔφη, ἔμοιγε καὶ αὐτῷ φαίνεται σοῦ λέγοντος.

φύστι. This word has the chief emphasis, and is resumed in φύστι. The first point is that all have not the same natural aptitudes.

πράξιν] The reading  $\pi \rho \acute{a} \xi \epsilon \iota$  (M r) is not impossible.

В

όταν μίαν είς ] sc. ἐργάζηται.

οὐ γάρ, οἶμαι . . . ἐν παρέργου μέρει] 'For the business, I conceive, will not wait for the leisure of the doer of the business, but the doer must keep at the work, making it his first object.' For the metaphorical application of ἐθέλειν to things without life, cp. infra iv. 436 Β ταὐτὸν τάναντία ποιεῖν ἡ πάσχειν . . . οὐκ ἐθελήσει. So Hdt. i. 74 συμβάσιες ἰσχυραὶ οὐκ ἐθέλουσι συμμένειν.

Republic II. 370 C

D

E

ἐπακολουθεῖν] Cp. iii. 406 Β παρακολουθῶν γὰρ τῷ νοσήματι.

ἐκ δὴ τούτων . . . πράττη] The order is inverted, πλείω referring to καιρόν, κάλλιον to ὅταν μίαν εἷε, ῥᾶον to φύεται, in what precedes.

τέκτονες δή]  $\delta$ ή, not δέ, is the true reading. 'And so,' &c.

άλλ' οὐκ ἄν πω] οὔπω, like οὖκέτι (373 A, 468 B), is used to imply stages in the argument. Cp. supra i. 353 C οὖ γάρ πω τοῦτο ἐρωτῶ—' I have not yet come to that question.'

τνα οἴ τε γεωργοὶ... χρῆσθαι ὑποζυγίοις] 'That the husbandmen may have oxen to plough with, and builders, as well as husbandmen, the use of cattle for draught.' ἔχοιεν is used in a double sense and construction—ἔχοιεν ('possess') βοῦς and ἔχοιεν ('be able') χρῆσθαι: ἔχοιεν follows the mood of προσθεῖμεν: 'if we were to give them shepherds and other herdsmen that the husbandmen might have oxen for the plough.' Every possible use of the animals is enumerated except that of eating them. This is reserved for the luxurious state. Cp. infra 373 c δεήσει δὲ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων βοσκημάτων παμπόλλων, εἴ τις αὐτὰ ἔδεται. [ὑποζυγίοις, which should have been accusative after ἔχοιεν, is attracted into construction with χρῆσθαι.—L. C.]

αὐτὴν τὴν πόλιν] 'To place the city itself' (not to speak further of the things contained in the city) 'where no imports are required, is well-nigh impossible.' αὐτήν opposes the state to the previously mentioned individuals who are included in it. Cp. especially Thuc. ii. 60, § 4 ὁπότε οὖν πόλις μὲν τὰς ἰδίας ξυμφορὰς οἵα τε φέρειν, εἶς δ' ἔκαστος τὰς ἐκείνης ἀδύνατος, πῶς οὐ χρὴ πάντας ἀμύνειν αὐτῆ;

κενὸς ἃν τη είη is found in all the manuscripts with the exception of q β'. But the meaning of the words κενὸς ἃν είη is poor and feeble, and the asyndeton at κενὸς ἄπεισιν indefensible. The reading κενὸς ἃν τη, though probably a manuscript conjecture, is most likely to be the true one. 'But if the minister come empty-handed, and bring nothing which the other people want, whoever they may be from whom they obtain the supply of their needs, he will depart empty-handed.' The position of κενός before ἃν τη is emphatic, and prepares for the repetition of the word.

37 I A δεῖ δή] 'And, therefore, what they produce at home must be not only enough for themselves, but also enough and of the right kind to accommodate (subaud. i κανά ϵ στω) those of whom (i.e. of whose commodities) they stand in need.' The slight difficulty of explaining the last words of this sentence has probably led to the insertion of

ἄξουσιν οι μεταδώσουσιν before ων αν δέωνται in q. Either (1) ων may Republic be taken as masculine: in this case the construction is peculiar and different from ων ἐκεῖνοι δέονται in the preceding sentence: 'Those of whom they stand in need': i.e. of whose commodities they stand in need; or (2), placing a comma after ἐκείνοις, the clause ὧν αν δέωνται may be taken as epexegetic—οἷα καὶ ὅσα ἐκείνοις, sc. ἱκανά, 'but in quality and measure suited to them (viz. those of whom they buy, παρ' ὧν ἃν κομίζωνται)—whatever the things are which they require.' The former interpretation (1) is the more probable.

II.37 I

τῶν ἄλλων διακόνων] 'And we shall also want the ministerial class of whom we spoke before, who will have to import and export the various products.' ἄλλων is adverbial. The article recalls the previous mention of them in 370 E. It is implied, but not expressed, that this class also must be increased.

В

έν αὐτῆ τῆ πόλει] 'In the city itself.' The pronoun here distinguishes the internal from the external commerce of the city.

ων δη ένεκα Sc. τοῦ μεταδιδόναι, κ.τ.λ., supra 369 C.

άγορὰ . . . ἐκ τούτου] 'The next step will be to have a marketplace, and a money-token for purposes of exchange.'

C

την διακονίαν . . . ταύτην 'this service'—of selling, as infra E την τιμην ταύτην. The antecedent has to be collected from the previous words έν άγορα καθησθαι.

D

αῦτη . . . τῆ πόλει 'This want, then (i.e. of ministers of exchange), calls retail-traders into existence in the state.'

E

τούς δὲ πλάνητας ἐπὶ τὰς πόλεις] He recalls the ἔμποροι mentioned in 371 A in order to distinguish them from the κάπηλοι.

την τιμην ταύτην μισθον καλούντες 'Who, selling the use of their strength, because they call the pay thereby obtained hire are called hirelings.' ταύτην refers to πωλοῦντες: cp. Theaet. 168 Β ἀντὶ φιλοσόφων μισούντας τούτο τὸ πράγμα (=φιλοσοφίαν) and supra c τὴν διακονίαν . . . ταύτην.

A.B.

Plato is not a bad political economist; he saw the advantage of a division of labour (cp. Laws viii. 846 D, E) in saving the time and improving the skill of the labourers, and the accordance of such a division with the natural differences of mankind. The distinctions of manufacturers and dealers, and of soldiers and citizens, are based by him on the same principle, of which he also makes a fanciful

Republic 11. 371 E application in his objections to the drama (iii. 395 A, B 'One man cannot in his life play many parts'). He further saw the necessity of foreign trade or 'territorial division of labour,' in speaking of which Plato almost uses the formula of modern economical writers.

πλήρωμα ... μισθωτοί] 'Then hirelings also go to make up a state.'

372 A-373 C Where in the state are Justice and Injustice and at what point in the growth of the state do they come in? Adeimantus thinks that Justice somehow springs out of the mutual intercourse of the different classes with each other. Socrates then proceeds to describe the way of living in the primitive state.

But the rudeness of this Arcadian simplicity is distasteful to Glaucon, who, as a man of pleasure, demands that their citizens should have the comforts of civilized life.

And Socrates does not object. For the contrast between Justice and Injustice is likely to be more apparent when luxury has set in.

The first consequence is a further enlargement of the city by the addition of classes devoted to the supply of artificial wants; animals will be reared for food; more servants too, amongst others the class of swine-herds, as well as cooks and confectioners, will be required. The sphere of medicine also will be greatly extended.

372 A χρείq] Here used in the sense of 'intercourse' or 'dealings with one another.' Cp. Aristot. Rhet. i. 15, 22.

В

θρέψονται . . . πόλεμον] The main verb θρέψονται is forgotten in the accumulation of participles: and when the sentence is resumed with greater emphasis in the words  $\mu$ άζας, κ.τ.λ., a word more suitable to the context (εὖωχήσονται) takes its place. Hence an asyndeton.

τῶν κριθῶν . . . τῶν πυρῶν] The article refers to σῖτον supra.

τὰ μέν] sc. τὰ ἄλευρα.

τὰ δέ] sc. τὰ ἄλφιτα—a simple chiasm. See vol. ii. p. 160, l. 48. μάζας γενταίας] 'Noble bannocks,' see note on i. 348 c.

· ἐπὶ στιβάδων ἐστρωμένων μίλακί τε καὶ μυρρίναις] 'On pallets spread of yew and myrtle boughs.'

τοῦ οἴνου] the article referring to σῖτόν τε ποιοῦντες καὶ οἶνον.

οὐχ ὑπὲρ τὴν οὐσίαν ποιούμενοι τοὺς παίδας] cp. iv. 421 E-423 C, Republic where the question of population recurs.

εὐλαβούμενοι . . . πόλεμον] cp. infra 373 p, where war is seen to be occasioned by the excess of population over territory.

372 C

D

ἄνευ ὄψου . . . έστιωμένους] έστιωμένους conveys a sarcastic allusion to εὐωχήσονται. 'You call it feasting when they have nothing but dry bread!'

καὶ βολβοὺς καὶ λάχανα . . . εψήσονται] 'And they will boil truffles and cabbages—such vegetables for boiling as, you know, are to be had in the country.' Xen. Cyr. i. 2, § 8 asserts that cress (κάρδαμον) was the only ὄψον allowed to the Persian youth when under training.

Socrates assumes a charming unconsciousness of Glaucon's meaning when he asks for  $\delta\psi o\nu$ , and, like Grumio, 'feeds him with the name of meat.'

μετρίως ὑποπίνοντες] 'Drinking moderately the while.' ὑποimplies that the wine was an accompaniment of the 'dessert.' Cp.
Anacreon f. 63 (quoted by L. and S. s. v.) καλοῖς ὑποπίνοντες ἐν
ῦμνοις.

εἶ δὲ ὑῶν πόλιν, κ.τ.λ.] This picture of paradisiacal simplicity and vegetable diet has no attractions for Glaucon, who abruptly exclaims: 'And if, Socrates, you were establishing a commonwealth of pigs, how else would you be feeding the beasts?' (χορτάζειν is used properly of animals). 'But what ought I to do, Glaucon? said I. Let them have the usages of civilized life: people who are to be comfortable should lie on sofas and dine off tables, and have dainties and dessert after the modern fashion.' In this easy, humorous style Plato makes the transition from the first simple notion of a state to the more complex. With ἀλλὰ πῶς χρή and ἄπερ νομίζεται, some general words like ποῖειν and διδόναι have to be supplied from ἐχόρταζες.

ἐπί τε κλινῶν κατακεῖσθαι] in apposition with ἄπερ νομίζεται. κλίνη, 'a couch,' is opposed to στιβάς, 'a pallet,' supra B.

ὄψα] sc. ἔχειν, absorbed in ἔχουσι.

E

σκοποῦντες γὰρ... ἐμφύονται] Socrates ironically dissembles his real meaning, which is that without taking into account the evils attributable to luxury, and amongst other evils war, any real inquiry into the origin and growth of justice and injustice would be

Republic 11. 372 E

> 373 A

impossible. Plato does not seek for justice in the simple state, because his idea of it and his anxiety to elaborate a parallel between the virtues of the individual and the state requires a more complex and highly organized form of society. There must be three classes in the state (as there are three parts of the soul)—each having its appropriate virtue of temperance, wisdom, courage,—before there can be justice, which is the harmonious blending of three virtues or cooperation of the three classes in the state. These three virtues and classes have no sufficient raison d' être in the city of pigs.

ή μὲν οὖν . . . ὑγιής τις] The word ὑγιής, which is softened by ὅσπερ, prepares the way for the stronger metaphor of φλεγμαίνουσαν πόλιν, which follows. Cp. Laws iii. 691 Ε φύσις τις . . . κατιδοῦσα ὑμῶν τὴν ἀρχὴν φλεγμαίνουσαν ἔτι.

εὶ δ' αὖ βούλεσθε...θεωρήσωμεν] The subjunctive in phrases of this kind was originally interrogative, but the exact relation of the words was forgotten in the course of time. Goodwin, M. and T. §§ 287, 288.

ταῦτα γὰρ δή τισιν] Socrates thus playfully alludes to the displeasure which Glaucon expresses at the simple state.

κλίναι, κ.τ.λ.] κλίναι are to supersede the yew and myrtle boughs, τράπεζαι to take the place of the clean leaves.

έταιραι] are introduced παρὰ προσδοκίαν among cakes and ointments, as below ἔτι δὲ καὶ συβωτῶν προσδοησόμεθα, in contrast with the more refined ministers of luxury. A link of association is supplied by the mention of the rich perfumes and other sensual delights. A similar juxtaposition occurs in the Theaetetus, 175 Ε μηδὲ ὄψον ἡδῦναι ἡ θῶπας λόγους. So infra iii. 404 D ψέγεις ἄρα καὶ Κορινθίαν κόρην φίλην εἶναι, where the Κορινθία κόρη is mentioned along with the luxuries of the table.

καὶ ὄψα δή] the particle δή calls attention to the special demand of Glaucon for ὄψον in 372 c, which Socrates now satisfies.

έκαστα τούτων παντοδαπά] The asyndeton adds to the effect, as in iv. 434 Α πάντα τἄλλα μεταλλαττόμενα.

καὶ δὴ καὶ . . . θετέον] The antecedent to ä is repeated with a limitation in τὰ ἀναγκαῖα. 'In providing what we first spoke of (shelter and covering) we must no longer ordain mere necessaries, as houses, garments, shoes, but set-a-going the arts of decoration.'

καὶ τὴν ποικιλίαν] These words are omitted in Par. A and

several other MSS., but their presence in  $\Pi$  shows the reading to be an early one, and as decoration is required for houses in the luxurious state, so embroidery is required for clothing.

Republic 11. 373 A

В

μείζονά τε αὖ] The correlative sentence is deferred; it is probably to be found in καὶ ἡ χώρα που, κ.τ.λ. (infra D).

ο̈γκου . . . καὶ πλήθους] 'It is to be increased in bulk and number.' The words have a depreciatory tone, and are suggestive of a huge unwieldy multitude.

οἷον... μιμηταί] (1) It is not certain whether in this passage θηρευταί simply means 'huntsmen,' who may be supposed to supply the wants of the luxurious citizens, or whether it includes the association of 'hunters of men,' 'birds of prey,' who live by their wits at the expense of others (observe the addition of πάντες suggesting a multifarious class). The love of fanciful language in Plato, and also the tendency to fanciful comparisons and generalizations, which is apt to prevail in the infancy of dialectic (see especially the Sophist and Politicus, in both of which θηρευτική and μιμητική occur together, as θηρευταί and μιμηταί in this passage,— Soph. 265 A, Polit. 299 D), makes it likely that this mischievous second intention of the word has not been forgotten by Plato. So the Sophist is termed νέων καὶ πλουσίων ἔμμισθος θηρευτής (Soph. 231 D), and the art of the Sophist (Euthyd. 200 B), θηρευτική . . . τέχνη ἀνθρώ- $\pi\omega\nu$ : in Laws vii. 823 B, the term θήρα is extended to men as well as to beasts and birds, so as to include thieves, pirates, &c.,-as also in the Sophist and Politicus, where the θήρα των ημέρων has many subdivisions, including piracy, kidnapping, law, rhetoric, and sophistry (Soph. 222 B foll.)—and στρατηγική is included under θηρευτική (Polit. 299 D στρατηγικής καὶ ξυμπάσης ήστινοσοῦν θηρευτικής καὶ γραφικής ή ξυμπάσης μέρος ότιοῦν μιμητικής). Cp. also Xen. Mem. ii. 6. 29. (2) On the other hand, although the metaphorical use of θηρευτής is common, it may seem that the word could hardly be applied in this way without some preparation or explanation.

οί περὶ τὰ σχήματά τε καὶ χρώματα] Simply 'forms and colours,' a general expression, including probably sculptors, painters, architects, as well as inferior decorative artists—not dancers, who are referred to under the next head (χορευταί).

ποιηταί] The poets are allowed to enter with other μιμηταί, but most of them in Book iii are afterwards driven out. And by this

Republic reform of μουσική Socrates professes to have done something to II.

373
Β εἶπον, λελήθαμέν γε διακαθαίροντες πάλιν ῆν ἄρτι τρυφῶν ἔφαμεν πόλιν.

The purgation is made more complete in Book x. ῥαψωδοί, ὑποκριταί, χορευταί, ἐργολάβοι are the ministers of the poets.

C παιδαγωγῶν] Fathers will no longer look after their sons themselves. Mothers will not suckle their own children. All sorts of persons will be required to minister to the extravagances of fashion and the luxuries of the table.

ểτι δὲ καὶ συβωτῶν] This is humorously added. Swine are fed only for eating; they were not wanted in a state that dispensed with animal food.

τοῦτο . . . τούτου]. The vagueness of the reference renders the transition easy to 'the other animals,' as if swine, and not their keepers, had been mentioned at first. In what follows the emphasis is on  $\pi \alpha \mu \pi \delta \lambda \delta \omega \nu$ . The other animals (that were included in the former state) will be needed in far greater numbers than before, i.e. not only enough for ploughing, draught, &c. (supra 370 E), but also for the table.

ιατρων έν χρείαις] The plural in χρείαις is occasioned by ιατρων.

373 I)-376 C

> 373 D

D

A further consequence of luxury is that we shall be no longer content with the boundaries of our original territory, nor our neighbours with theirs: each will covet a portion of the other's land. And so we shall go to war:—which to states is the source of so many evils. For self-protection we must now have a soldier-class, which, like the other classes, will devote itself exclusively to its own pursuits.

In appointing the guardians, we must first of all select suitable natures. But what natures are suitable? The example of the watch-dog may instruct us here. For he, too, is a guardian. And we observe that courage and gentleness are united in him. Is such a combination possible in man? The difficulty seems at first sight insuperable; yet our illustration of the watch-dog shows a way out of it; for dogs are fierce to strangers, but gentle to those whom they know. May we not then infer that the love of knowledge in a spirited nature is the combination for which we are seeking.

ἀφῶσιν αὐτούς | It is this prevalence of the lower nature (σιδηροῦν, χρηματιστικόν) which occasions the degeneracy of the state in Book

viii. (pp. 547, 550 ff.). Cp. also the downfall of Atlantis in the Republic Critias (120 p ff.).

πολεμήσομεν . . . . ὅταν γίγνηται] Without enlarging on the precise effects of war, Socrates is content to argue that war arises from the same cause (i. e. luxury), as most of the other evils of mankind.

373 E

όλφ στρατοπέδφ] follows the construction of σμικρφ which is a dative of measure or excess.

ὑπὲρ ὧν νῦν δὴ ἐλέγομεν] perhaps with an ironical reference to τίτθαι κομμωτρίαι κουρείς, &c.

374 A

aὐτοὶ οὐχ ἰκανοί] 'Are they not enough to take care of themselves without adding to them?' The answer is: 'Not enough; for if we are to carry out our principle of a division of labour, the soldier's must be a separate calling.'

Plato separates the profession of the soldier on much the same grounds as standing armies would be defended in our own day. Yet, as he himself allows afterwards, the soldier may also be a philosopher, nor is the utmost military training inconsistent with other employments in modern times. Large standing armies may be required by the exceptional circumstances of politics, and are not necessarily attended by political dangers. Yet the division between the calling of the citizen and the soldier is probably injurious to both, as tending to separate elements of character which should rather be united—in Plato's language, as dividing courage from gentleness, and also as superseding a patriotic by a merely professional feeling.

В

ἀλλ' ἄρα] applies, not only to the first, but also to the second member of the sentence  $(\tau \dot{a} \delta \dot{\epsilon} \delta \dot{\gamma} \dots \epsilon \dot{v} \dot{a} \pi \epsilon \rho \gamma a \sigma \theta \dot{\epsilon} \nu \tau a)$ , which latter is the emphatic part of it: 'But are we to infer then that while we make one rule for the cobbler and for the husbandman with a view to their attaining a special excellence, the attainment of special excellence in the military art is not of the greatest importance?'

ἐφ' ῷ ἔμελλε . . . ἐργαζόμενος] (1) 'With a view to which keeping himself free from all other pursuits'—or better (2) 'attending

Republic to which, 'in which,' i.e. 'leaving other things and doing this.'

II.

ἐφ' ῷ belongs either (τ) to σχολην ἄγων, or (2) to the whole sentence,
being resumed emphatically in διὰ βίου αὐτὸ, ἐργαζόμενος.—ἔμελλε, i. e.

'if he was to do his work well,' as supra 372 D τοὺς μέλλουτας μὴ
ταλαιπωρεῖσθαι,

C ἢ οὖτω ῥάδιον . . . (D) ἱκανὴν παρασχομένω] For the complex form of sentence, where two clauses, which cannot be true together, are included in one interrogation or negation, cp. especially supra i. 336 Ε μὴ γὰρ δὴ οἴου, εἰ μὲν χρυσίον ἐζητοῦντας, κ.τ.λ., and note. The implied disjunctive argument, If war is to be left to citizen soldiers it is either less important or easier than other pursuits, is characteristic of Plato, as also is the introduction of fresh examples, πεττεία καὶ κυβεία, when those already adduced were sufficient.

αὐτὸ τοῦτο] sc. πεττείαν  $\hat{\eta}$  κυβείαν, understood from πεττευτικὸς  $\hat{\eta}$  κυβευτικός.

D  $\lambda \alpha \beta \omega \nu \dots \lambda \eta \phi \theta \epsilon \nu$  The momentary tense is significant: 'the instant he takes it' or 'it is taken in hand.'

ὅπλων τε καὶ ὀργάνων] The addition of ὀργάνων points the analogy. The weapons of the warrior are his tools.

πολλοῦ γὰρ ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] SC. εἰ οὕτω ταῦτα ἦν.

τῶν ἄλλων] Το be joined with σχολῆς: 'Leisure from other pursuits,' sc. ἐπιτηδευμάτων. Cp. supra 370 c σχολῆν τῶν ἄλλων ἄγων, 374 B.

Ε ἀρ' οὖν . . . ἐπιτήδευμα] 'Will he not also require a natural aptitude for the particular occupation?' ἐπιτήδευμα (cp. ἐπιτηδές, ἐπιτηδεύω) has a wide range of meaning,—what a man practises, makes an object or profession: hence also the customs and institutions of a state.

ήμέτερον μέντοι] μέντοι gives a deliberative assent to the new and somewhat disturbing suggestion.

δσον γ' ἂν δύναμις παρείκη] 'as far as our power allows.' Theaet. 150 D οἶσπερ ἂν ὁ θεὸς παρείκη: more often impersonal—Sympos. 187 Ε καθ' ὅσον παρείκει, φυλακτέον.

375 α οἴει ... διαμάχεσθαι] Compare with what follows the conclusion of the Politicus 306-311, where courage and gentleness are to be

interwoven in a state. Also infra iv. 441 E: vi. 503 B, c: Laws Republic vi. 773.

11.

375

618 Φυλακήν is to be taken closely with διαφέρειν αἰσθανόμενον Α

εἰς φυλακήν] is to be taken closely with διαφέρειν. αἰσθανόμενον is masculine: 'When he has the game in view.' αἴσθησις has a special use in hunting, cp. Xen. Cyn. 3. 5.

ώς ἄμαχόν τε καὶ ἀνίκητον θυμός] Cp. the saying of Heracleitus B (fr. cv Bywater) θυμῷ μάχεσθαι χαλεπόν ὅ τι γὰρ ἀν χρηίζη γίνεσθαι, ψυχῆς ἀνἔεται.

ταῦτα δὲ ἀδυνάτοις ἔοικε] 'Now this seems an impossible requirement'—viz. that a nature should be found, having both these opposite qualities. For a similar affectation of despair on the part of Socrates cp. Theaet. 203 D προγιγνώσκειν τὰ στοιχεῖα ἄπασα ἀνάγκη τῷ μέλλοντί ποτε γνώσεσθαι συλλαβήν, καὶ οὕτως ἡμῖν ὁ καλὸς λόγος ἀποδεδρακὼς οἰχήσεται.

δικαίως . . . ἀπελείφθημεν] ' My friend, said I, we deserve to be in a puzzle, for we have lost sight of our own illustration.' Theaet. 189 C δικαίως ἃν καλοῖτο ψευδη δοξάζων. So δίκαιος vi. 504 A μη γὰρ μνημονεύων . . . τὰ λοιπὰ ἃν εἴην δίκαιος μὴ ἀκούειν.

οὖκ ἐνενοήσαμεν...ταὖτα] The greatest characters are those in which opposite qualities, instead of extinguishing one another, exist side by side, and are developed by the occasions which require them. Besides the strength or goodness, the range or play of a character has also to be considered. ἄρα, 'then,' as this example shows.

οἶσθα γάρ που . . . τοὖναντίον] τῶν γενναίων κυνῶν has a double construction: (1) after οἶσθα, as a poetical genitive, which may be defended by such passages as Laws i. 646  $\mathbf{D}$  τῆς περὶ τὸν οἶνον ἄρα διατριβῆς ὡσαύτως διανοητέον. (2) The use of the genitive is further supported by the resumption of κυνῶν in αὐτῶν, which is governed by ἦθος. Cp. infra iv. 439  $\mathbf{B}$  τοῦ τοξότου οὐ καλῶς ἔχει λέγειν, ὅτι αὐτοῦ, κ.τ.λ.

οίδα μέντοι] 'Certainly.' μέντοι marks Glaucon's assent to the new point to which attention is called.

καὶ τοῦτο, ἦν δ' ἐγώ . . . προπεπονθώς] Compare the fragment of Heracleitus (cxv Bywater) κύνες καὶ βαΰζουσι δν ἃν μὴ γινώσκωσι. This double character of friendliness to acquaintances and savageness to strangers—τὸ φιλητικοὺς μὲν εἶναι τῶν γνωρίμων, πρὸς δὲ τοὺς ἀγνῶτας ἀγρίους—is attributed by Aristotle to θυμός, which he makes

E

D

376 A Republic II. 376 A the principle of friendship, instancing in support of his statement the fact that we are more liable to be excited against friends when we are slighted by them than against enemies (Pol. vii. 7, § 5). Sý after oð δέν is well supported by manuscript authority, although Par. A has δέ, and the particle is omitted by Stobaeus. Sý is more forcible than δέ. 'He has manifestly received no injury from one whom he has never seen.'

οὐ πάνυ . . . προσέσχον τὸν νοῦν] 'I never before gave any attention to the point.' οὐ πάνν, 'not at all' or 'certainly not,' the absoluteness of the negative being used to intensify the statement, as also in οὐ πάντως, with which the expression may be compared.

' ἀλλὰ μὴν . . . φιλόσοφον] 'But surely this instinct of canine nature is charming, and quite like a philosopher.' κομψός is one of the facetious words in Plato. Compare the following: viii. 558 A ἡ πραότης ἐνίων τῶν δικασθέντων οὐ κομψή; 'charming,' as in this passage: iii. 405 D τοὺς κομψοὺς 'Ασκληπιάδας, 'clever sons of Aesculapius': v. 460 A κλῆροι κομψού, 'clever,' 'cunningly devised lots': vi. 489 c ὁ τοῦτο κομψευσάμενος ἐψεύσατο, 'the ingenious inventor of this told a fib:' Phaedr. 230 c πάντων δὲ κομψότατον τὸ τῆς πόας, 'most charming of all is the grass.' In all these passages there is an idea (1) of fineness or subtlety: (2) of amusement.

B πη̂ δή; ... καὶ τὸ ἀλλότριον] Socrates works the illustration with ironical gravity. 'Your dog,' as he would say, 'is a philosopher; for he loves those whom he knows, and what is the love of knowledge but philosophy?'

For the use of  $\pi \hat{\eta}$  and  $\hat{\eta}$ —'Interesting in what way? In this way'—cp. vi. 510 B σκόπει δὴ αὖ καὶ τὴν τοῦ νοητοῦ τομὴν  $\hat{\eta}$  τμητέον. Πỹ; Ἡι τὸ μὲν αὐτοῦ τοῖς τότε τμηθεῖσιν ὡς εἰκόσι χρωμένη ψυχὴ ζητεῖν ἀναγκάζεται ἐξ ὑποθέσεων: Theaet. 172 D, where  $\hat{\eta}$  in like manner introduces a sentence:  $\pi \hat{\eta}$  δή;  $\hat{\eta}$  τοῖς μὲν . . . ἀεὶ πάρεστι σχολή, κ.τ.λ.

οὖκοῦν... δεῖν εἶναι] 'And may we not say confidently of man also that he who is to be gentle to his friends and acquaintances must by nature be a lover of wisdom and knowledge?' The following sentence shows that φύσει is construed with φιλόσοφον and not with πρᾶος.

C οὖτος μὲν...οὖτοι] The abrupt change of number is again noticeable. Cp. supra 373 E.

αὐτό The antecedent is to be gathered from παιδευθήσονται.

σκοποῦσι] = ἐὰν σκοπῶμεν.

Republic II. 376 D

ἴνα μὴ . . . διεξίωμεν] For the use of ἐκανός see Gorg. 512 c ἐκανὸς γὰρ αὐτῷ ὁ λόγος: and for συχνός, implying tediousness, cp. Theaet. 185 Ε μάλα συχνοῦ λόγου: Soph. 217 D ἐκτείναντα ἀπομηκύνειν λόγου συχνὸν κατ' ἐμαυτόν: Phil. 23 Β βαβαί . . . συχνοῦ μὲν λόγου τοῦ λοιποῦ. 'For we do not want to be tedious, and we do not want to leave unsaid what is required for completeness;' i. e. 'For we want enough, and not too much.' Cp. x. 601 c μὴ τοίνυν ἡμίσεως αὐτὸ καταλίπωμεν ἡηθέν, ἀλλ' ἐκανῶς ἔδωμεν. ἑκανὸν λόγον, like πλήρωμα supra 371 E, is a collective word used partitively. This clause is omitted in the text of Par. A, but has been added in the margin by an early hand.

καὶ ὁ τοῦ Γλαύκωνος ἀδελφός] Glaucon, who was provoked by 'the city of pigs,' has been the interlocutor in the lively discussion of the luxurious commonwealth and of the nature of the guardians. Adeimantus now interposes on the question of method and continues the serious discussion about education, till on the question of music Glaucon is again too much interested to keep silence.

How are these select natures to be reared?

376 E-383 C

In youth they are to be educated, according to the dictates of long experience, in gymnastic and the liberal arts (μουσική).

The liberal arts come first, beginning in the nursery with fables, in which truth is to be conveyed through fiction.

Considering the extreme importance of early impressions it is right to legislate even for these first beginnings of education.

The rules to be laid down may be exemplified by considering those great fables which the poets have embodied.

Their account of Gods and heroes is apt to insinuate wrong notions, which are injurious to the young and tender mind. Our poets must not tell of wrong done by Gods, nor of wars in heaven. Such tales are false and of bad example. Nor can they be defended as allegorical, for the child cannot distinguish allegory from fact.

God must be represented as He really is: (1) good, and (2) true.

τίς οὖν ἡ παιδεία;] Education in modern as well as in ancient times hangs to the past: the study of the poets who were committed to memory by the Athenian youth in the age of Plato (Protag. 325 E foll.: 'And when the boy has learned his letters, and

376 E Republic II. 376 E is beginning to understand what is written, as before he understood only what was spoken, they put into his hands the works of great poets, which he reads sitting on a bench at school; in these are contained many admonitions, and many tales, and praises and encomia of famous men, which he is required to learn by heart, in order that he may imitate or emulate them and desire to become like them,'—Laws vii. 810 foll.) may be compared with the study of the classics in our own day.

ύπὸ . . . χρόνου εύρημένης] Cp. Aristot. Eth. Nic. i. 7, § 17 καὶ ὁ χρόνος τῶν τοιούτων εύρετὴς ἡ συνεργὸς ἀγαθὸς εἶναι.

ή μὲν ἐπὶ σώμασι γυμναστική] This, the commonplace point of view (που), is stated here, but corrected afterwards (iii. 411 E).

μουσικής δ' εἰπὼν . . . ἢ οὖ;] 'In speaking thus, do you include literature under music, or not?' The genitive depends on λόγους. For εἰπών without an object (sc. οὕτως οr μουσικήν) cp. supra 370 Λ εἰπόντος σοῦ.

The manuscript authority is divided between  $\epsilon l \pi \omega \nu$  and  $\epsilon \tilde{l} \pi \omega \nu$ : the latter reading would mean, 'And do you include literature,' I said, 'under music?'  $\epsilon l \pi \omega \nu$  is to be preferred as having better authority.

παιδευτέον δ' . . . ψευδέσιν Truth of feeling rather than of fact or reasoning is the form of truth which the mind is most willing to receive during the first years of life. The child has to go through a stage which is not unlike that of the infancy of mankind, and is only partially corrected by the experience of older persons. That the pupil may have as little as possible to unlearn (παρήσομεν . . . τοὺς παίδας καὶ λαμβάνειν . . . έναντίας δόξας έκείναις, ας, έπειδὰν τελεωθῶσιν, έχειν οἰησόμεθα δείν αὐτούς; infra 377 B: cp. also iii. 411 E, Laws ii. 653 B), whether in religion or in anything else, considering especially the shortness of life, is what Plato would have termed a 'point of firstrate importance' in education. Compare again Laws vii. 792 A έστι δὲ ὁ χρόνος οὖτος τριῶν οὐκ ἐλάττων ἐτῶν, μόριον οὐ σμικρὸν τοῦ βίου διαγαγείν χείρον ή μη χείρον. Nor has the power of the love of truth, regarded only as an instrument of enlarging and deepening the faculties, ever been sufficiently considered either in ancient or in modern education. For the falsehood of the poets cp. the familiar quotation from Hesiod—Theog. 27 ἴδμεν ψεύδεα πολλὰ λέγειν ἐτύμοισιν ὁμοῖα. Also Pindar, Olymp. i. 28 foll.:

377

В

η θαύματα πολλά, καί πού τι καὶ βροτῶν φάτιν ὑπὲρ τὸν ἀλαθη Republic

ΙΙ.

δέδαιδαλμένοι ψεύδεσι ποικίλοις ἐξαπατῶντι μῦθοι.

Ε

and Arist. Met. i. 2, 13 κατά την παροιμίαν πολλά ψεύδονται ἀοιδοί.

τοῦτο δέ που ... ἀληθη̂] 'These, I conceive, speaking generally, are fictions, but they contain some elements of truth.' Mythology, taken as a whole, is false, but may contain elements of historical or moral truth.

τοῦτο δὴ ἔλεγον... γυμναστικῆς] 'That was my meaning in saying that (1) they (the young), or (2) that we (the teachers) must take in hand music before gymnastics.'

άπτέον] (1) sc. τοῖς νέοις (infra νέφ καὶ ἀπαλφ̂). Cp. infra iii. 389 B τό γε τοιοῦτον ἰατροῖς δοτέον, ἰδιώταις δὲ οὐχ ἀπτέον. Or (2) sc. τοῖς παιδεύουσιν ἡμῖν.

πλάττεται] sc. δ τρεφόμενος. The word occurs presently in a different connexion (μύθους πλασθέντας): but cp. infra c πλάττειν τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν.

Compare the saying— $d\rho\chi\dot{\eta}$  ήμισυ παντός—or, as Plato, altering the well-known line of Hesiod, says in the Laws vi. 753  $\,\mathrm{E}\,d\rho\chi\dot{\eta}\,\ldots$  πλέον  $\dot{\eta}$  τὸ ήμισυ παντός: an adaptation which is repeated by Aristotle, Eth. Nic. i. 7, § 23. See also infra iii. 401  $\,\mathrm{E}\,$  τὰ μὲν καλὰ ἐπαινοῖ, . . . τὰ δ' αἰσχρὰ ψέγοι τ' ἃν ὀρθῶς καὶ μισοῖ ἔτι νέος ὤν, πρὶν λόγον δυνατὸς εἶναι λαβεῖν, ἐλθόντος δὲ τοῦ λόγου ἀσπάζοιτ' ἃν αὐτὸν γνωρίζων δι' οἰκειότητα μάλιστα ὁ οὕτω τραφείς; and Laws ii. 653  $\,\mathrm{B}\,$ .

ράδίως οὕτω] (1) 'Thus lightly,' i. e. as we should be doing if we went no further; like ἀπλῶς οὕτως i. 331 c and elsewhere, and νῦν οὕτως: or, rather (2) 'lightly, as is now commonly done' (with the customary indifference). Cp. infra iii. 403 Ε ἡ τῶνδε τῶν ἀσκητῶν ἔξις; viii. 544 c ἡ Κρητικὴ . . . αὕτη, sc. πολιτεία. The same difficulty arises infra 378 A.

VOL. III.

Republic II. 377 δν μὲν ἄν καλὸν . . . ἀποκριτέον] καλόν, sc. μῦθον, understood from μυθοποιοῖς, in the same way as infra iii. 399 D τί δέ; αὐλοποιοὺς ἢ αὐλητὰς παραδέξει εἰς τὴν πόλιν; ἢ οὐ τοῦτο (sc. αὐλός, understood from αὐλοποιούς) πολυχορδότατον; this 'word understood' is added in the text of Ven. II.

καὶ πλάττειν . . . ταῖς χερσίν A good commentary on these words is afforded by Plutarch, De Educatione Puerorum, ed. Reiske, 3. 26 ὥσπερ γὰρ τὰ μέλη τοῦ σώματος εὐθὺς ἀπὸ γενέσεως πλάττειν τῶν τέκνων ἀναγκαῖόν ἐστιν, ἵνα ταῦτα ὀρθὰ καὶ ἀστραβῆ φύηται, τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον ἐξ ἀρχῆς τὰ τῶν τέκνων ἤθη ῥυθμίζειν προσήκει. A similar use of πλάττειν with reference to the adult body occurs in Plut., De Sanitate, ed. Reiske, 4. 93, where the editor vainly conjectures παλασσύμενα.

τον αὐτον τύπον εἶναι] sc. των μειζόνων καὶ ἐλαττόνων μύθων, which is easily supplied either from the previous or the following clause.

D καὶ ταὐτὸν δύνασθαι] 'And should have the same effect,' i. e. embody the same principles.

καὶ λέγουσιν] This is said either (1) of Homer and Hesiod, whose poems still live and are recited, or (2) of contemporary poets, who are included in οἱ ἄλλοι ποιηταί. Probably the latter.

ὅπερ, ἦν δ' ἐγώ . . . μέμφεσθαι] i.e. τὸ ψεύδεσθαι περὶ θεῶν. Plato means (1) that any falsehood about the Gods is blameworthy, but (2), above all, when it has an immoral tendency.

άλλως τε κοὶ... ψεύδηται] 'Especially when the fiction is bad as well as false.' The meaning of μὴ καλῶς may be illustrated by the repetition of the expression (οὐ καλῶς) in describing what Socrates terms the 'immoral fable of Uranus and Cronus.'

E ő τε αὖ Κρόνος ὡς] ὡς here is not a mere resumption of the previous ὡς, but is emphatic and means 'in what way.'

378 απορον] The meaning is that the difficulty of procuring the victim was to make the representation nearly impossible.

καὶ γὰρ . . . χαλεποί] 'Why yes, he said, these stories are certainly indefensible.'

β οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀληθῆ] i. e. 'for they are false, as well as bad.'

C  $\epsilon$ ί γε δεὶ ἡμῖν, κ.τ.λ.] 'if we are to have them think.' ἡμῖν, here

99

as elsewhere, is the dative of the person interested. See on Republic i. 343 A δε γε αὐτῆ, κ.τ.λ.

378

πολλοῦ δεί . . . καὶ ποικιλτέον 'Far be it from us to tell them of the wars of the giants and (1) make them the subject of decorative work,' or (2) 'embroider them on garments.' To the same stories Euthyphro appeals in justification of his own conduct in bringing an action against his father. See Euthyphr. 6 B, C Kull πόλεμον ἄρα ήγει σὰ είναι τῷ ὄντι ἐν τοις θεοις πρὸς ἀλλήλους, καὶ έχθρας γε δεινάς καὶ μάχας καὶ ἄλλα τοιαῦτα πολλά, οἶα λέγεταί τε ύπὸ τῶν ποιητῶν, καὶ ὑπὸ τῶν ἀγαθῶν γραφέων τά τε ἄλλα ἱερὰ ἡμῖν καταπεποίκιλται, και δή και τοις μεγάλοις Παναθηναίοις δ πέπλος μεστός τῶν τοιούτων ποικιλμάτων ἀνάγεται εἰς τὴν ἀκρόπολιν: and the previous passage, 5 E, in which Euthyphro defends his impiety by the example of Zeus binding his father.

The sentence is an emphatic repetition of what has preceded: the emphasis justifies the asyndeton. πολλοῦ δεῖ has passed into an adverb = ηκιστα.

τοιαῦτα λεκτέα . . . λογοποιεῖν 'Such, rather, must be the stories told to them in earliest childhood by old men and old women alike, and as they grow up, we must compel the poets also to compose for them in a similar spirit '(cp. infra 380 B, c). This punctuation, with a comma after years, was first adopted in Baiter's edition of 1881. Previous editors, including K. F. Hermann, made the pause at πρεσβυτέροις γιγνομένοις. The passage, when so punctuated, was variously understood: (1) by old men and old women, and all elderly persons' (Davis and Vaughan): (2) 'this is what old men and old women should begin by telling children, and the same when they grow up' (Jowett's Plato, first edition). These ways are unsatisfactory, although the change from πρὸς τὰ παιδία to the dative in (2) may be defended by examples (Soph. 248 A). The omission of λεκτέα in Par. A may be accidental, or the insertion of the word in other MSS., although necessary, may be only conjectural.

υίέος] is proved by the antithesis of πατρός to be the true reading; the old correction Diós ( m), which is mentioned by Suidas and Photius, appears to have arisen from a reference to another story, which is told in Iliad xv. 18 ff. The legend of the golden throne containing hidden chains, which was presented by Hephaestus to his mother out of revenge for her rejection of him at his birth, is given by Pausanias i. 20. 3. It is to this legend that Plato refers.

D

Republic 11. 378

έν ὑπονοίαις πεποιημένας] · Composed with a hidden meaning. Cp. ἐν φαρμάκου εἴδει (iii. 389 B) and similar expressions. ὑπόνοια was looked upon as an old-fashioned word in Plutarch's day. Cp. Plut. de aud. Poet. ii. 19 Ε ταῖς πάλαι μὲν ὑπονοίαις ἀλληγορίαις δὲ νῦν λεγομέναις.

Ε πρὸς ἀρετήν] 'In regard to fitness for producing virtue.' Cp. Phaedo 69 A ἡ ὀρθὴ πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἀλλαγή, and see Riddell's Digest, p. 128.

ἔχει γὰρ... φαῖμεν] 'Yes, said he, there is reason in that; but suppose a person were to ask us with regard to this what these noblest kinds of fiction (sc. τὰ κάλλιστα μεμυθολογημένα πρὸς ἀρετήν) are and what the tales in which they are found, what answer should we give?' The first ταῦτα refers vaguely to what precedes, the second more precisely to κάλλιστα μεμυθολογημένα πρὸς ἀρετήν.

Compare Laws vii. 811, where the question is asked, what literary pattern the guardian of the law shall use in the education of youth, and is answered (not without a certain degree of egotism) that Plato's own book of the Laws affords the best pattern.

αὐτὸ δὴ τοῦτο] in apposition with the sentence. 'But as to this very point—the forms of theology, what shall they be?'

οίος ... τραγωδία] 'God should ever be rendered to us as he in truth is, whether the form of verse which the poet chooses for the description of him be Epic, Lyric, or Tragic.'

ἐάν τε ἐν μέλεσιν] though omitted in Par. A, is found in Eusebius
(p. 376) and is probably genuine. The insertion seems to be
required by the sense, and agrees with the divisions of poetry, infra
iii. 392–394.

379 B-380 C 1. God is good, He can never be the author of evil. He is not the cause of all things, but only of the good.

How many poems will be cancelled by this simple rule!

If human calamities are referred to God, it must be added that they were inflicted for the good of those on whom they fell.

379 B οὐκ ἄρα...ἀγαθόν] Cp. x. 617 Ε αἰτία ἐλομένου ε εὸς ἀναίτιος: Tim. 42 D διαθεσμοθετήσας . . . ταῦτα, ἵνα τῆς ἔπειτα εἴη κακίας ἐκάστων ἀναίτιος. Some of the inferences in the preceding Sorites are verbal only. The unnecessary multiplication of the steps is a characteristic feature of the Platonic dialectic.

δλίγων μὲν ... τῶν κακῶν ἡμῖν] Such pessimism seems more in harmony with the spirit of the Timaeus or the Laws than of the Republic. Cp. however infra v. 473 p. It is a strain of reflection always apt to recur in Greek literature: Iliad xvii. 446: Hdt. vii. 46, 3.

Republic II. 379 C

ταύτην τὴν άμαρτίαν] sc. the error of making God the author of evil, as is further explained in what follows.

κηρῶν] 'lots,' not Κηρῶν, 'fates.' Cp. Iliad xxii. 210: ἐν δ' ἐτίθει δύο κῆρε τανηλεγέος θανάτοιο.

The lines are not found in our text of Homer exactly as they are quoted; the passage referred to is Iliad xxiv. 527-532:—

δοιοί γάρ τε πίθοι κατακείαται ἐν Διὸς οὕδει, δώρων, οἶα δίδωσι, κακῶν, ἔτερος δὲ ἐάων' 
ἤ μέν κ' ἀμμίξας δώη Ζεὺς τερπικέραυνος, 
ἄλλοτε μέν τε κακῷ ὅ γε κύρεται, ἄλλοτε δὶ ἐσθλῷ' 
ἤ δὲ κε τῶν λυγρῶν δώη, λωβητὸν ἔθηκε, 
καί ἐ κακἡ βούβρωστις ἐπὶ χθόνα δίαν ἐλαύνει.

The quotations from Homer in Plato often show slight variations—which are sometimes intentional departures (see infra iii. 388 A) from the old manuscript text which has come down to us. The changes, however, are far from being sufficient to justify Wolf's assumption of the unsettled state of the Homeric text before the times of the Alexandrian Grammarians.

ώς ταμίας] ώς follows λέγοντος, in the same construction as ώς δοιοὶ πίθοι supra. The words which follow are not found in Homer; they probably arise out of a confusion of the preceding quotation with Iliad iv. 84:—

Ζεύς, ὅστ' ἀνθρώπων ταμίης πολέμοιο τέτυκται.

ην] cognate accusative.

θεῶν ἔριν . . . καὶ Διός] (1) The strife and combat in the θεομαχία in Iliad xx takes place after an assembly of the Gods, convened by Zeus, whose command is carried to them by Themis,—in Plato's view a most inappropriate person for such a message. κρίσις is here 'dispute,' 'altercation,' from κρίνεσθαι. (2) Others suppose an allusion to the judgement of Paris, and the contention which led to it: θεῶν is then from θεά. This explanation, however, rests on a con-

E

Republic II. 379 E jectural emendation of Proclus' abstract of the Cypria (viz. Θέμιτος for Θέτιδος—Heyne). See W. R. Hardie in the Classical Review, vol. iv. p. 182. And the strife of the goddesses is only the first of a chain of incidents leading to the events which the Cypria spoke of as planned between Zeus and Themis (or Thetis).

380 A ἀλλ' ἐάν τις, κ.τ.λ.] τὰ τῆς Νιόβης πάθη is used in two senses: (1) 'the sufferings of Niobe,' which is the object of ποιῆ, 'if any one shall make a poem on this theme:' (2) as the description of the play, which is the antecedent to οίς. Plato is quoting from the Niobe of Aeschylus.

autoîs] probably refers to the poets, the singular being exchanged for the plural, as ποιητήν in the next sentence is followed by λέγοιεν.  $\theta \epsilon \delta s$  in this passage is used in a generic sense, and  $\delta \theta \epsilon \delta s$  is relative to the  $\theta \epsilon \delta s$  which has preceded. But the abstract term is already tending to pass into a proper name—a philological transition which in some degree assisted and also veiled the change in the Greek mind from many gods to one. Cp. infra 381 c θεώ... εκαστος αὐτῶν, and note: x. 597 B, c. For the sentiment cp. Butler's Analogy, part I. c. ii On the government of God by rewards and punishments. 'Perhaps there may be some impossibilities in the nature of things, which we are unacquainted with (i.e. which prevent God from making men's happiness independent of their actions). Or less happiness, it may be, would upon the whole be produced by such a method of conduct, than is by the present.' Again c. vii 'Though the actual permission of evil may be beneficial (οί δὲ ἀνίναντο κολαζόμενοι) . . . yet notwithstanding it might have been much better for the world if this very evil had never been done.' The difficulty which Plato and Butler thus attempt to solve is, perhaps, reduced to the smallest proportions by regarding the whole of human existence as a course of education in which evil is ever lessening in the advance towards a higher good.

The amount of evil, rather than the permission of evil, seems to be the real difficulty. For what is called the permission of evil is only another way of describing the mixed nature of man. And no one can seriously complain that he does not belong to another order of beings, or that, having the power of doing right, he was not made incapable of doing wrong. And even in reference to the amount of evil there is no limit to the power which a man has of improving his own state and that of his fellow-creatures.

See on Book i. 352. In a solitary passage of the Laws (x. 897),

which is imitated in the Epinomis (988 E) Plato seems to explain the origin of evil as in the Zoroastrian system, by supposing a power of evil as well as of good. No trace of this double principle of good and evil is to be found in Plato except in these two passages.

Republio 11. 380 A

ώς ἄθλιοι οἱ κακοί] Cp. infra ix. 591 A πῆ δ' ἀδικοῦντα λανθάνειν καὶ μὴ διδόναι δίκην λυσιτελεῖν; ἡ οὐχὶ ὁ μὲν λανθάνων ἔτι πονηρότερος γίγνεται, κ.τ.λ., and Gorg. 472 foll.

В

**ἐατέον . . . διαμαχητέον**] sc. ἡμίν : cp. ξύμφορα ἡμίν infra.

ἐν τῆ αύτοῦ πόλει] is added with solemnity; it does not imply that he might do so in another country.

μυθολογοῦντα] agrees with the subject of λέγειν, although νεώτερον is probably suggested by μήτε τινὰ ἀκούειν which is inserted διὰ μέσου. Cp. for the general meaning supra 378 c.

C

ώς οὖτε ὅσια ἃν λεγόμενα] Cp. Goodwin M. and T. §§ 214, 479.

οὖτος μὲν τοίνυν... μὴ πάντων] 'This then will be one of our laws and patterns relating to Theology, which will have to be observed in speaking and writing,—that God is not the author of all things, but of good only.' That morality in the highest and purest sense must be at the foundation of religion and especially of our conception of the nature of God, is a truth the repetition of which is rendered necessary by the corruption of the human intellect in Christian as well as in heathen times.

x

2. God is true. He changes not, nor does he deceive.

380 D-

(a). He is not changed by another, for that other would be stronger than he; nor by himself, for that which is perfect can only change for the worse.

(b). He never deceives mankind. He is capable, neither of true falsehood, nor of falsehood in word;—neither of false-thinking (which all beings hate), nor of false-speaking, which men sometimes find necessary, when they want to elude an enemy, to humour an insane friend, or when they do not know the truth about ancient times, to make mythology as much like truth as they can. But God knows all things and is all powerful, and no madman is the friend of God. In this particular, as in the former, Homer and Aeschylus have committed grievous errors.

380

τί δὲ δή, κ.τ.λ.] The connexion of these paragraphs is as follows:

Republic II. 380 (1) God is good; (2) God is true, and this (a) in himself (i. e. unchangeable either from without or from within), and ( $\beta$ ) in relation to us—i. e. he cannot lie or appear other than he is.

αὐτὸν γιγνόμενον] sc. ἀλλοῖον τὴν ἰδέαν, i.e. 'actually in his own person becoming different,' as opposed to 'merely appearing to become so.' The predicate is to be gathered from what precedes (φαντάζεσθαι . . . ἰδέαις), and any ambiguity which might have been felt is cleared up by the addition of the words καὶ ἀλλάττοντα τὸ αὐτοῦ εἶδος, κ.τ.λ. God is described, first as really taking some other form; in the second part of the sentence (τότε δὲ . . . δοκεῖν) the metamorphosis is only an illusion.

η άπλοῦν τε είναι . . . της έαυτοῦ ίδέας ἐκβαίνειν; ' Or is he of a simple nature, and least of all going out of his own proper form?' What is this form? The true answer to this question can only be gathered from the context, viz. that God is good, and God is true. The highest idea of beauty is described in the Symposium (211) as 'that final cause of all our toils, which in the first place is everlasting, not growing or decaying, or waxing and waning; secondly, not fair in one point of view and foul in another, or at one time and in one relation, or at one place fair, at another time or in another relation or at another place foul, as if fair to some or foul to others, or in the likeness of a face or hands or any other part of the bodily frame, or in any form of speech or knowledge, or existing in any other being, as for example, in an animal, or in heaven, or in earth, or in any other place; but beauty only, simple, absolute, separate, and everlasting, which without diminution and without increase or any change, is imparted to the ever-growing and perishing beauties of all other things.' Cp. also infra vi. 508 E, in which is described what Plato there terms the idea of good: this is that nature 'which imparts truth to the known and the power of knowing to the knower, which is the author of science and truth, and yet surpasses them in beauty, and which is not only the author of knowledge, but of being and essence,—which is to the intellectual world what the sun is to the visible.' See also Tim. 29 E.

E ὑπὸ μὲν ἄλλου] μέν takes up one of the two cases which are supposed in the previous sentence. The second case is omitted, or rather deferred to infra 381 Β ἀλλ' ἆρα αὐτὸς αὑτὸν, κ.τ.λ.

σῶμα . . . καὶ πᾶν φυτόν φυτόν, in the most general sense, would

Α

B

D

be inclusive of the human body. Cp. vi. 491 D παντὸς . . . φυτοῦ, Republic είτε έγγείων, είτε των ζώων.

οὐ τήν This is the reading of Par. A and several other MSS. 38 I Bekker read with Stephanus and some of the old editions autipo ou  $\tau \dot{\eta} \nu$ . Aldus and Eusebius give  $a \dot{v} \tau \dot{\eta} \nu$ . One MS. (β') has  $a \dot{v} \tau \dot{\eta} \nu$ . If αὐτήν is read it must mean 'the soul herself' as opposed to the body mentioned in the previous sentence.

καὶ μήν που . . . ἀλλοιοῦται For the meaning of σκεῦος compare Soph. 219 Λ τό τε αὖ περὶ τὸ ξύνθετον καὶ πλαστόν, ὁ δὴ σκεῦος ἀνομάκαμεν. The words καὶ ἀμφιέσματα are omitted in Par. A.

ό θεός γε δ θεός τε, Par. A, may perhaps be right.

έκων αυτόν, κ.τ.λ. These words contain a fresh application of ]  $\in$ the Socratic principle of the involuntariness of Evil.

εκαστος αὐτῶν sc. τῶν θεῶν, referring to θεῶ. See note on 380 A.

μένει . . . μορφή Cp. the impressive language of the Timaeus, 42 Ε καὶ ὁ μὲν δὴ ἄπαντα ταῦτα διατάξας ἔμενεν ἐν τῷ ἐαυτοῦ κατὰ τρόπον ήθει.

θεοὶ ξείνοισιν, κ.τ.λ.] Odyssey xvii. 485, 486. Plato has somewhat unfairly omitted the following line, which expresses a higher feeling, and is therefore unsuited to his purpose:—

ανθρώπων ύβριν τε καὶ εὐνομίην έφορῶντες.

In Soph. 216 c he alludes to the whole passage, and applies it to the philosophers, whom Socrates compares to unknown mysterious visitants, καθορώντες ύψόθεν τὸν τῶν κάτω βίον.

Θέτιδος Thetis, according to Sophocles (Troilus fr. 556 Nauck: cp. Schol. in Pindar, Nem. iii. 60) and other writers, took various forms in order to escape from her nuptials with Peleus.

μηδ' ἐν τραγωδίαις . . . βιοδώροις 'Nor let any one, either in tragedy or in other poetry, introduce Herè disguised, in the form of a priestess, collecting alms for the life-giving sons of the Argive river Inachus.' For the significance of ayeipourav see the noun αγύρτης with the feminine αγύρτρια and the compound μητραγύρτης, 'a begging priest of Cybele.'

'Ινάχου, κ.τ.λ. It is uncertain from what poet this quotation is taken. The children of Inachus are the other rivers of Argolis on whose waters the fruitfulness of the plain depended.

Republic II. 381

E

λέγουσαι τοὺς μύθους κακῶς] 'not telling their stories as they ought to be told.' Cp. οὐ καλῶς supra 377 Ε.

Such charges may be illustrated by the tales which are alluded to in the Laws, ii. 672, of Dionysus losing his reason through the devices of his step-mother Herè, and revenging himself by infusing madness into the rest of the world. Plato with a feeling like that of Herodotus is afraid to repeat the story (ἐγὼ δὲ τὰ μὲν τοιαῦτα τοῖς ἀσφαλὲς ἡγουμένοις εἶναι λέγειν περὶ θεῶν ἀφίημι λέγειν): he appears, however, in the spirit of Pindar, to explain the madness innocently, as meaning the excess of youthful life.

ἐνδαλλόμενοι The poetic word recalls the spirit of the mythology.

ἀλλ' ἀρα] 'But are we to suppose then . . . ?' Åρα (as above 381 B) expresses doubt or wonder about the alternative which remains. The emphasis is on the latter part of the sentence ἡμῖν δὲ ποιοῦσι, κ.τ.λ.

382 A  $\dot{\epsilon}\theta\dot{\epsilon}\lambda$ οι  $\ddot{\alpha}\nu$ ] 'Can we imagine that God would lie or be willing to lie?'  $\dot{\epsilon}\theta\dot{\epsilon}\lambda\omega$  here, as in 375 A, is nearly equivalent to  $\mu\dot{\epsilon}\lambda\lambda\omega$ . 'Is God likely to do so?' 'Is it in His nature?'

τό γε ώς ἀληθῶς ψεῦδος] Plato is fond of this and similar οχυμοτα. Cp. Theaet. 189 c οὐκ ἄν, οἶμαι, σοὶ δοκῶ τοῦ ἀληθῶς ψεύδους ἀντιλαβέσθαι: Soph. 263 p: Phil. 23 B ἆρ' ὅτι τὸ ἀδύνατον εἶπον, λυπεῖν ἡδονήν;

τῷ κυριωτάτῳ . . . ξαυτῶν] For this as an expression for the soul, cp. Phaedo 94 B-E-

έκει Sc. έν τῷ κυριωτάτῳ.

αὐτό ] sc. τὸ ψεῦδος.

B ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω] Here, as often in antithesis, the pronoun, although not emphatic, partakes of the emphasis which belongs to the whole clause. 'What I really mean is this.'

ψεύδεσθαί τε καὶ ἐψεῦσθαι] 'Το be and remain deceived.' ἐψεῦσθαι is added to explain or correct ψεύδεσθαι, 'the lie in the soul' being a thing infixed or permanent, and the whole phrase answers to ἔχειν τε καὶ κεκτῆσθαι in the following clause. Cp. supra i. 351 Β δουλοῦσθαι . . . καὶ καταδεδουλῶσθαι.

έν τῷ τοιούτῳ] 'in such a case'; when the lie is in the soul and about real being. Cp. Laws v. 731 c τῶν γὰρ μεγίστων κακῶν οὐδεὶς οὐδαμοῦ οὐδεὶν έκὼν κεκτῆτο ἄν ποτε' πολὺ δὲ ῆκιστα ἐν τοῖς τῶν έαυτοῦ τιμιωτάτοις. Cp. for ἐνταῦθα (=ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ) vi. 505 D ἀλλὰ τὰ ὄντα ζητοῦσι, τὴν δὴ δόξαν ἐνταῦθα ἤδη πᾶς ἀτιμάζει.

Republic II. 382 B

άλλὰ μὴν . . . ἄκρατον ψεῦδος] The lie in the soul is unconscious falsehood respecting the highest matters. To regard God as false or immoral, or, according to Plato, as deluding men with appearances, or to deny the existence of God would be a lie of this hateful sort, which may be compared with Aristotle's ἄγνοια καθόλου (Eth. Nic. iii. 1, § 15), and is a contradiction of the essential nature of the soul, which, according to Plato, lives on truth, Soph. 228 c ἀλλὰ μὴν ψυχήν γε ἴσμεν ἄκουσαν πᾶσαν πᾶν ἀγνοοῦσαν. Plato considers this unconscious falsehood to be much more disastrous spiritually than the mere conscious or verbal falsehood.

**ἐψευσμένου**] is masculine, referring to a person (as supra ἐψεῦσθαι) 'on the part of him who is in error'; and the genitive depends on the whole phrase, ἡ ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ ἄγνοια, resumed with ἡ.

τῶν καλουμένων φίλων] is a suspended genitive which finally gains construction from ἀποτροπῆς ἔνεκα. The emendation οἱ ἄν for ὅταν is unnecessary; ὅταν is correlative to τότε. This is perhaps said with a glance at the discussion in Book i, as to who are our friends (i. 334: cp. supra 362 B, c).

С

διὰ τὸ μὴ εἰδέναι ὅπη τὰληθὲς ἔχει, κ.τ.λ.] Compare Timaeus 40 D ἀδύνατον οὖν θεῷν παισὶν ἀπιστεῖν, καίπερ ἄνευ τε εἰκότων καὶ ἀναγκαίων ἀποδείξεων λέγουσιν, sc. περὶ δαιμόνων γενέσεως. This notion of the functions of mythology may be illustrated from the Politicus, Timaeus, Critias, and Laws (Book iii), in which Plato gives the imaginary history of a 'world before the flood.'

D

κατὰ τί δὴ ... ἀν ψεύδοιτο;] 'Then on which of these grounds is lying useful to God? Will he lie in imitating the truth, because he is ignorant of the events of other days?'

ποιητής ... οὐκ ἔνι] 'Then in God there is nothing of a lying poet.' For the personification of a quality compare Phaedo 77 ε ἀλλ' ἴσως ἔνι τις καὶ ἐν ἡμῶν παῖς, ὅστις τὰ τοιαῦτα φοβεῖται: also Phil. 39 A, B, where the faculty of memory is personified as a scribe, ὁ ... παρ' ἡμῶν γραμματεύς, and imagination as a painter, and some

Republic ludicrous lines of Diphilus, quoted by Harpocration, s. v. δευσοII. ποιός:—

382 D

αγαθὸς βαφεὺς ἔνεστιν ἐν τῷ παιδίῳ: ταυτὶ γὰρ ἡμῖν δευσοποιὰ παντελῶς τὰ σπάργαν ἀποδέδειχεν.

- E ἀλλὰ... ψεύδοιτο;] 'But shall we suppose him to speak falsely, for fear of his enemies?'—"Αν is to be supplied from ἀφομοιῶν ἃν ψεύδοιτο above. Cp. supra i. 352 Ε ἀκούσαις, and note.
  - δ θεδς δπλοῦν καὶ δληθές] The neuter is continued from the preceding sentence.

οὖτε κατὰ φαντασίας] These words are omitted in Par. Λ, probably from the repetition of οὖτε.

383
A συγχωρεῖς ... ἐαυτούς] 'You agree then that here is a second principle, according to which the Gods are not enchanters who transform themselves?' τοῦτον refers to what has preceded, and is further explained by ὡς μήτε, κ.τ.λ.

παράγειν] The construction is changed from ώς . . . ὄντας, probably in consequence of the clause τῷ μεταβάλλειν, κ.τ.λ., coming between.

- οὐδὲ Αἰσχύλου] sc. τοῦτο ἐπαινεσύμεθα. ἐάς is changed from ἐμάς to suit the former part of the sentence, and the less usual form is chosen to preserve the rhythm of the verse.
- Β ξύμπαντά τ' εἰπών, κ.τ.λ.] (1) 'And in saying all, he raised a note of triumph over the blessedness of my lot.' τύχας is governed by παιῶν' ἐπευφήμησεν in one phrase. Or (2) joining εἰπῶν . . . τύχας, 'Having spoken of my lot as in all things blest of heaven.'
- C ὅταν τις τοιαῦτα λέγη] This sentence begins with a resumption from ὅταν  $φ_n$ , κ.τ.λ. supra: hence the asyndeton.

χαλεπανοῦμεν] 'We will frown,' says Socrates, speaking with the imaginary authority of the ruler and lawgiver.

οὐδὲ τοὺς διδασκάλους ἐάσομεν . . . εἰ μέλλουσιν, κ.τ.λ.] There is a confusion or combination of two constructions. 'We will not, because' and 'we must not, if.' For this condensation see Riddell's Digest, § 256: and cp. Thucyd. i. 40, 2 ὅστις μὴ τοῖς δεξαμένοις, εἰ σωφρονοῦσι, πόλεμον ἀντὶ εἰρήνης ποιήσει.

## BOÔK III.

Besides their false representations of the Divine nature, the poets Republic and mythologers are guilty of other falsehoods, which must likewise be forbidden in the interests of morality. The tales about the 386 Aworld below are such as cannot fail to inspire cowardice in all that hear them. But our guardians must be brave and have no fear of death. And our poets must tell the truth concerning Death, and rob him of imaginary terrors.

III.

They will therefore be forbidden to represent their heroes as lamenting for the death of friends, since to die is not an evil, and the hero is sufficient for himself, and the loss of money and friends does not affect him greatly. Achilles must not mourn inordinately for Patroclus, nor Priam for Hector;—still less the chief of the Gods for his son Sarpedon.

Not only excessive grief, but excessive laughter must be discouraged. For every extreme brings on a reaction to the opposite extreme. The 'inextinguishable laughter' of the Gods must be erased from Homer.

Then our guardians must be taught veracity in their youth. For even 'the lie in word' has been reserved as a medicine for exceptional cases. And such a remedy must be solely entrusted to the physician, that is, to the ruler. No other in the state may ever dissemble what he knows.

In some things we may praise Homer—as where Diomed enforces obedience, or the good discipline of the Achaeans is described. But not the passage in which Achilles reviles his chief, nor where Odysseus rejoices over the banquet. For temperance, orderliness, and chastity are to be enforced, and such fortitude and self-control as Odysseus shows when he 'strikes upon his breast and chides his heart?

Liberality is another virtue to be fostered by us. Our poets must not sing that gifts prevail with kings, or tell how Achilles took a ransom for the body of Hector.

Nor must we listen to those passages in which the same hero is represented on the other hand as proud and impious. To hear of one so born and so brought up as being possessed with the opposite vices of meanness and insolence cannot but be ruinous to the morals of the young. The preceding rules, then, must restrict the choice of subjects in mythologizing about Gods and Heroes and the world unseen.

Republic III. 386

A

τοιαῦτ' ἄττα] viz. that God is good and true.

καὶ γονέας . . . ποιησομένοις] This is added in allusion to the stories of Zeus and Cronos, and of quarrelling among the Gods. The words form a transition to the human virtues and duties which follow. The effect of such stories on the conduct of children towards their parents is again referred to in Laws x. 886 c ff.

Β τοῖς ἐπιχειροῦσι λέγειν] ' who essay to speak.' ἐπιχειρεῖν is often used in Plato as an amplification of the word which is attached to it. Cp. Phaedr. 265 Ε τὸ πάλιν κατ' εἴδη δύνασθαι τέμνειν, κατ' ἄρθρα, ἢ πέφυκε, καὶ μὴ ἐπιχειρεῖν καταγνύναι μέρος μηδέν, κακοῦ μαγείρου τρόπω χρώμενον—' and not go about to break any part,' &c. Here the periphrasis is more significant. περὶ τούτων τῶν μύθων is (1) governed by ἐπιστατεῖν: (2) repeated with λέγειν: cp. ii. 360 D ὁ περὶ τοῦ τοιούτου λόγου λέγων.

δεῖσθαι] sc. αἰτῶν. The construction is again changed at λέγοντας, which refers back to λοιδορεῖν: 'since, in reviling the world below, they do not say what is either true or expedient.' In some MSS. (Ven.  $\Xi$  p. m., Vind. E, &c.) ἄν is inserted after λέγοντες which implies a suppressed condition: not 'since what they say is not true,' but (sc. εὶ λοιδοροῖεν), 'since if they did so they would not speak truly.' Compare ii. 380 c ὡς οὕτε ὅσια ἀν λεγόμενα, εὶ λέγοιτο.

C ἀπὸ τοῦδε τοῦ ἔπους] 'beginning with this verse 'of the speech of Achilles to Odysseus: Od. xi. 489. For ἔπος in the sense of an Epic line cp. infra 393 Λ οἶσθ' οὖν ὅτι μέχρι μὲν τούτων τῶν ἐπῶν, κ.τ.λ.

 $[\tilde{\psi}$  μὴ βίστος πολὺς εἴη]] These words are omitted in Par. A and may possibly have been inserted by some scribe from recollection of Homer.

D οἰκία δὲ...θεοί περ] Il. xx. 64, 65. The lines occur in the description of Poseidon striking the earth with his trident:—

δείσας δ' ἐκ θρόνου ἆλτο (sc. Hades) καὶ ἴαχε, μή οἱ ὕπερθεν γαῖαν ἀναρρήξειε Ποσειδάων ἐνοσίχθων, οἰκία δέ, κ.τ.λ.

τω πόποι...οὐκ ἔνι πάμπαν] Il. xxiii. 103, 104: the words of Achilles on awaking from the dream in which the ghost of Patroclus appears to him.

καὶ τό, κ.τ.λ.] And the verse about Tiresias:—'To him alone [after death did the goddess Persephone grant] to have under-

standing, but other souls flit as shadows' (Odyss. x. 495). The feminine ταί is due to the attraction of σκιαί;—the verse is quoted also in the Meno (100 A) ὅτι οἶος πέπνυται τῶν ἐν Ἦδου, αἱ δὲ σκιαὶ ἀἰσσουσι. Plato seems to presuppose the construction and context to be in the memory of his hearers. Though he sometimes quotes inaccurately, both he and they must have been intimately familiar with the Iliad and Odyssey.

Republic III. 386 D

ψυχὴ δ' ἐκ ῥεθέων] Il. xvi. 856. On the form ἀνδροτῆτα see Monro and Leaf in loco.

ψυχὴ δὲ κατὰ χθονός ] ΙΙ. ΧΧίϊί. 100.

387 A

&s δ' ὅτε... ἄμ' ἤεσαν] Odyss. xxiv. 6-9, 'As bats in hollow of a mysterious cave, whenever any of them falls off out of the string from the rock, fly squeaking and cling to one another, so did they move together with gibbering cry.'

τρίζω is here used of a shrill treble sound—the squeak of a bat. The thin treble cry of the bat (inaudible to some persons) has been the recognized similitude in many lands for the voice of a ghost.

διαγράφωμεν] διαγράφειν is here to 'cancel' or 'strike out,' as elsewhere (vi. 500 E) to 'describe' or 'draw a plan of.'

В

ἀκουστέον] sc. ὄν, in construction with ώς supra.

τὰ περὶ ταῦτα... φοβερά] The order is τὰ δεινά τε καὶ φοβερὰ ὀνόματα πάντα τὰ περὶ ταῦτα: ' We must cast aside all the terrible and dreadful names which are used in describing this subject, Cocytus, Styx,' &c.

ἀποβλητέα] though plural, takes the accusative after it, like ἀκουστέον supra.

καὶ ἄλλα . . . ὀνομαζόμενα] i.e. τἄλλα ὀνόματα τούτου τοῦ τύπου ὅντα, ἄ, κ,τ,λ.

С

φρίττειν δὴ ποιεῖ, κ.τ.λ.] 'At the mention of which names a shudder passes through the soul of him that hears them.'

The words  $\omega_s$  of  $\delta \nu \tau_s$  are probably genuine, though resting on slender manuscript authority, which is chiefly that of q. The reading which is found in almost all the MSS. is  $\omega_s$  of  $\varepsilon_{\tau}$  au, i. e. 'as the poet thinks' or 'imagines, he produces a fine effect; whereas we fear that this effect of terror will spoil the courage of our soldiers.' This is forced; and the emendation of  $\omega_{\sigma}$  a  $\varepsilon_{\tau}$ , which is supposed to be an allusion to annual recitations of the rhapsodists, is worse.

Republic III. 387 Another conjectural reading is  $\omega_s$  èteá, 'believing them to be true.' The reading oĭeτaι may have easily sprung out of οἶον τε through οἴονται: compare the converse confusion, i. 336 Ε οἴον γε σύ,  $\delta$  φίλε, where for οἴον γε σύ Ven.  $\Xi$  reads οἶον γε ἐστίν. The meaning of  $\omega_s$  οἶον τε may be supported by the frequent recurrence of  $\delta_s$  οἷον τε μάλιστα, μέγιστα, elsewhere in Plato. Protag. 349 Ε δλον που καλὸν  $\omega_s$  οἶον τε μάλιστα.

καὶ ἴσως . . . ἄλλο τι] (1) 'And this sort of thing (sc. ὅσα ἄλλα, κ.τ.λ.) may be well enough for some other object,' i. e. to excite-interest, or to teach not courage but something else. Cp. supra Β οὐχ ὡς οὐ ποιητικά, κ.τ.λ: infra 390 A εἰ δέ τινα ἄλλην ἡδονὴν παρέχεται, θανμαστὸν οὐδέν. (2) Or does Plato mean—' this effect of fear may be well enough for another purpose,' viz., to discourage vice (cp. the judgement of the dead in x. sub fin.)? Cp. infra 394 p where, under a similar vague expression, a very important matter seems to be concealed, viz. the expulsion of Homer.

θερμότεροι] 'Too heated,' i. e. 'nervous,' or 'excitable,' not cool enough. Θερμότεροι suggests μαλακώτεροι, 'softer,' the ordinary effect of heat being to soften. Plato is fond of the conjunction of Θερμός, and similar words with μαλακός. The effect of heat on wax is probably present to his mind. Cp. infra 411 B; Cratyl. 432 B; Laws ii. 671 B τὰς ψυχὰς τῶν πινόντων διαπύρους γιγνομένας μαλθακωτέρας γίγνεσθαι: οτ 666 B μαλακώτερον ἐκ σκληροτέρου τὸ τῆς ψυχῆς ἦθος, καθάπερ εἰς πῦρ σίδηρον ἐντεθέντα, γιγνόμενον.

Ast conjectured  $\partial \theta \nu \mu \delta \tau \epsilon \rho \omega$ , and this reading was subsequently found by Bekker in MS. v (Angelicus).

D καὶ τοὺς ὁδυρμοὺς . . . ἀνδρῶν;] 'And shall we also get rid of the weepings and wailings of famous men?' The genitive ἐλλογίμων ἀνδρῶν is the subject, not the object, of οἴκτους; otherwise the argument from 'Αλλὰ μὴν . . . καταλάβη infra would be irrelevant. Cp. infra ε τοὺς θρήνους τῶν ὀνομαστῶν ἀνδρῶν: also 390 D: Soph. O. C. 1636 ὁ δ', ὡς ἀνὴρ γενναῖος, οὐκ οἴκτου μέτα, κ.τ.λ.

διαφερόντως . . . προσδείται] 'He is distinguished above his fellows by standing least of all in need of another.'

Ε ἥκιστα ἄρ'... καταλάβη] 'And therefore will be least likely to lament, but will bear with the greatest equanimity any misfortune of this sort which may befall him.' The infinitive is dependent on λέγομεν (supra d), to which the construction returns.

388 Α ἄλλοτ' ἐπὶ πλευρᾶς . . . άλὸς ἀτρυγέτοιο] Iliad xxiv. 10–12,

slightly altered. Plato has dropped the metre (in the words τότε... Republic αναστάντα) to save the construction. It is probable that he has further altered δινεύεσκε (Il. xxiv. 12) into πλωίζοντα, which does not occur in Homer, for the same reason, and also to increase the mock-heroic effect: the word ἀτρυγέτοιο does not occur in Homer. but is added to round off the line. πλωίζειν is found in Hesiod (Op. et Dies 632), and seems to be introduced here in a humorous sense ('sailing along'), in order to throw ridicule on the description. Cp. vii. 529 C καν έξ ὑπτίας νέων έν γη. Heyne's conjecture, πρωίζοντα, a word not found, but formed on the analogy of δψίζοντα, 'taking a morning walk,' is ingenious, cp. the words οὐδέ μιν 'Hως | φαινομένη λήθεσκεν, which follow in the text of Homer; but no change is necessary.

έκεινος SC. δ "Ομηρος.

В

388

Α

κυλινδόμενον The unmetrical κυλινδούμενον is read in ME, where the copyists have probably substituted the later prose form κυλινδείν for κυλίνδειν, which is the only form in Homer. The same may or may not be true of αμφοτέραισι (αμφοτέραισι Par. A).

ἄμοι ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] The words of Thetis in Iliad xviii. 54.

C

ανομοίως] = 'in a manner unlike him,' recalls ii. 379 A οδος τυγχάνει δ θεὸς ών, ἀεὶ δήπου ἀποδοτέον.

ω πόποι . . . δαμήναι ] Il. xxii. 168, 169; xvi. 433, 434. αναξίως SC. των θεών.

D

εὶ καὶ ἐπίοι αὐτῷ] 'Should it even come into his mind.' Compare Phaedr. 264 Β τὸ ἐπιόν, 'what came into his head': infra viii. 563 C οὐκοῦν κατ' Αἰσχύλον, ἔφη, ἐροῦμεν ὅ τι νῦν ἦλθ' ἐπὶ στόμα; Eurip. Med. 1051, 1052 άλλα της έμης κάκης, το και προέσθαι μαλθακούς λόγους φρενί. The very inclination to such words and actions is to be rebuked and suppressed. So in the Theaet. 173 D σπουδαὶ δέ, κ.τ.λ. . . οὐδὲ ὄναρ πράττειν προσίσταται αὐτοῖς.

ἄλλω καλλίονι 'Another and a fairer one: 'sc. λόγω. E the term καλός applied to an argument cp. i. 334 p, where Pole-

όταν τις εφή ισχυρώ γέλωτι] 'when a man gives way to violent laughter.' Cp. Tim. 50 D (Bekker's reading)  $\tau a \dot{\nu} \tau \eta \delta \dot{\eta}$  (sc.  $\tau \hat{\eta} \dot{\eta} \delta o \nu \hat{\eta}$ ) καὶ τὰ νῦν ἐφέντες (ἀφέντες, Par. A), and Protagoras 338 A οὐρία ἐφέντα, 'running before the wind.'

marchus says—οδτος έκείνου καλλίων φαίνεται: Theaet. 203 D, 200 E.

The same thought occurs in viii. 563 Ε τὸ ἄγαν τι ποιείν μεγάλην VOL. III.

Republic III. 388 E

φιλεῖ εἰς τοὐναντίον μεταβολὴν ἀνταποδιδόναι. For the personification of the neuter with ζητεῖ ('requires,' 'demands'), compare ii. 370 Β οὐ γάρ, οἶμαι, ἐθέλει τὸ πραττόμενον τὴν τοῦ πράττοντος σχολὴν περιμένειν, and note: Symp. 189 Λ εἰ τὸ κόσμιον τοῦ σώματος ἐπιθυμεῖ τοιούτων ψόφων, κ.τ.λ.: cp. x. 595 c τί βούλεται (sc. ἡ μίμησις) εἶναι.

389 A πολὺ δὲ ἣττον, ἐὰν θεούς] The particle δέ after  $\tau \epsilon$  (in οὔτε) is emphatic: 'but surely much less so if they are Gods.'

οὐκ ἀποδεκτέον . . . οὐ γὰρ οὖν δὴ ἀποδεκτέον] 'On your views we must not admit them.' 'On my views, if you like to call them mine: that we must not admit them is certain.' For a similar piece of raillery compare v. 475 Λ εἶ βούλει, ἔφη, ἐπ' ἐμοῦ λέγειν . . . συγχωρῶ τοῦ λόγου χάριν.

 $_{\rm B}^{+}$ 

άλλὰ μήν, κ.τ.λ.] How far does Plato sanction falsehood? Only in the governors, who are allowed to use the 'lie remedial' in the management of their subjects; the subject is not allowed to have the privilege of lying in return. The higher sense of the inexpediency and immorality of all falsehood seems to be wanting here, as above in ii. 382 c. Yet falsehood is denied to the Gods, and only admitted as a necessary imperfection among men. Possibly some thread of irony is here interwoven (see especially εἴπερ τισὶν ἄλλοις). Plato seeing that falsehood plays a great part in the government of the world, is willing to sanction it for certain purposes: so for example in the marriage lots (v. 459 d), and in the noble lie—Φοινικικόν τι—about the origin of classes in society (infra 414 c).

εὶ γὰρ ὀρθῶς ἐλέγομεν ἄρτι] sc. at the end of Book ii. 382.

ώς ἐν φαρμάκου εἴδει] Cp. v. 459 D ἔφαμεν δέ που ἐν φαρμάκου εἴδει πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα χρήσιμα εἶναι.

ίδιώταις δὲ οὐχ άπτέον] SC. τοῦ τοιούτου.

τοῖς ἄρχουσι δὴ ... ἢ πολιτῶν ἔνεκα] The disjunctive form of sentence is occasioned by the negative implied in εἴπερ τισὶν ἄλλοις. 'None but the ruler is to do so, either for warlike or peaceful purposes.' For the meaning of πολεμίων ἔνεκα, cp. ii. 382 c τὸ ἐν τοῖς λόγοις ψεῦδος ... χρήσιμον ... πρός τε τοὺς πολεμίους, κ.τ.λ.

С

πρός γε δη τους τοιούτους ἄρχοντας] 'To our rulers, being what they are.' Plato does not acknowledge the same obligation towards unskilled rulers such as the demagogue or tyrant. Here, as supra i. 346 E Plato without distinctly anticipating the great

revolution of making philosopher-kings already hints at a better sort of government than any at present existing among mankind.

In Par. A τοιούτουs is written only in the margin, but by the first hand. It is omitted in Stobaeus and in υ. It may therefore possibly be a repetition of τοιούτου.

λέγοντι] agrees with ίδιώτη supra, the construction being slightly changed from λέγειν.

αν ἄρ' ἄλλον... ἐν τῆ πόλει] 'If then a ruler catches any one besides himself lying in the state.' ἄρχων is understood from τοῦς ἄρχουσι,—ἄρχοντας supra.

τῶν οἳ . . . τέκτονα δούρων] Od. xvii. 383, 384.

έάν γε . . . ἔργα τελῆται] 'Yes, said he, that is, if our theory is carried out.' 'If over and above the word there should ever be the fact' (ἔργου τέλος). For the use of ἐπί cp. Odyss. xvii. 308 εἰ δὴ καὶ ταχὺς ἔσκε θέειν ἐπὶ εἴδεϊ τῷδε.

Plato has opposite ways of enlivening his language. The first creation of the state is confessedly theoretical (ii. 369 A, c), but it soon appears that 'we are the legislators or oekists' (ii. 379 A, v. 458 c), 'and do what we describe; or rather not we, but necessity is the founder of the state' (ii. 369 c). Then again we are reminded that this is a mere argument or similitude, and the fact quite another thing, which is to be added over and above  $(\frac{2}{3}\pi\lambda \ \lambda )$ , as in this passage. Elsewhere the two modes of speech alternate with one another.

ώς πλήθει] 'for a body of men,' such as the army of guardians whom we are training. The qualifying phrase is probably added to prepare for the definition of σωφροσύνη in the individual in Book iv. For a similar qualifying addition, cp. iv. 430 c πολιτικήν γε. (The phrase is so understood by Van Heusde, Spec. Crit. in Plat. p. 52 and by Matthiae, Greek Grammar, § 388.)

τέττα . . . μύθω ] Il. iv. 412.

τὰ τούτων ἐχόμενα] either (1) 'other lines which are of the same order with these,' as expressing a similar feeling, or (2) 'which go along with these.' Plato, who is quoting from memory, supposes that all which he quotes occurs in the same passage.

ἴσαν... Ἦχαιοί,—σιγῆ δειδιότες σημάντορας] The first line is found in Iliad iii. 8: the second in Iliad iv. 431. It is improbable that we have a trace here of a Pre-Alexandrian Homer, nor is there

Republic III. 389

D College of

Е

Republic III. 389 E any reason for supposing that the second verse is interpolated in the text. Some Homeric illustration of obedience to chiefs is needed, and Plato has taken the liberty of bringing together two half-lines out of different passages, perhaps by a slip of memory, perhaps not intending that they should be connected. Cp. supra 388 B.

390 A

В

νεανιεύματα] 'impertinences.' So the verb, Phaedr. 235 A έφαίνετο δή μοι νεανιεύεσθαι ἐνδεικνύμενος: Gorg. 482 c: and the adjective νεανικός, Gorg. 508 D τὸ νεανικόν δὴ τοῦτο τοῦ σοῦ λόγου. νεανικεύματα is the form in Par. A. In other MSS, there are traces of νεανισκεύματα. Xenophon, Cyr. I. 2. 15, appears to have used νεανισκεύεσθαι:—Pollux, 2. 20; see Stephanus' Thesaurus, ed. Dindorf.

εἰ δέ τινα ἄλλην ἡδονήν] 'If however, apart from this, it gives any pleasure,'—ἄλλην being 'adverbial.'

παραπλεΐαι ὧσι τράπεζαι, κ.τ.λ.] altered from Odyss. ix. 8 παρὰ δὲ πλήθωσι τράπεζαι. Plato has somewhat unfairly left out the minstrel, who, in the same passage, is placed foremost among the delights of the banquet.

λιμῷ δ' οἴκτιστον . . . ἐπισπεῖν] Odyss. xii. 342.

 $\mathring{\eta}$  Δία . . . ἐπιλανθανόμενον] 'Or to hear that Zeus, while the other Gods and mankind were sleeping, lightly forgot all that he had planned while he alone was awake.' The construction is ἀκούειν Δία ὡς ἐπιλανθανόμενον = ὡς Ζεὺς ἐπελανθάνετο (cp. ii. 383 A ὡς . . . γόητας ὅντας). The nominatives, μόνος ἐγρηγορώς, agree with the subject of ἐβουλεύσατο, the relative being transposed as supra ii. 363 A τοῖς ὁσίοις ἃ φασι τοὺς θεοὺς διδύναι. καθευδόντων . . . â ἐβουλεύσατο is a paraphrase of Iliad ii. 1, 2 ff.

ἄλλοι μέν ρα θεοί τε καὶ ἀνέρες ἱπποκορυσταὶ εὖδον παννύχιοι. Δία δ' οὐκ ἔχε νήδυμος ὕπνος κ.τ.λ.

And the chief allusion is to Iliad xiv. 294–351. The words  $\phi i\lambda_0 v s$   $\lambda \dot{\eta} \theta_0 v \tau \epsilon \tau_0 \kappa \hat{\eta} a s$ , which occur in the poet's narrative (l.c. l. 296), are inaccurately ascribed by Plato to Zeus in person.

C

τὸ δωμάτιον] The diminutive is comically substituted for the θάλαμος of Iliad xiv. 338, and is perhaps meant to burlesque the αἰθέρα Διὸς δωμάτιον which Aristophanes (Ranae 100) ascribes to Euripides.

δι' ἔτερα τοιαῦτα] 'for something else of the same kind,' 'for the same sort of thing.' These words are euphemistic and contemptuous. Plato does not care to give the second tale in full: Odyss. viii. 266 foll. The sentence passes out of the interrogative form. οὐδέ, sc. ἐπιτήδειόν ἐστιν ἀκούειν.

Republic III. 390 C

ἀλλὶ εἴ πού τινες . . . ἀκουστέον] 'But any extreme deeds of endurance which are either performed by famous men or told concerning them, our youth should see (represented at the theatre) and hear.' λέγονται, sc.  $\pi \epsilon \rho i$  ἐλλογίμων ἀνδρῶν: ὑπό, κ.τ.λ., is in construction only with πράττονται. For πρὸς ἄπαντα cp. Thuc. iii. 82, 4 τὸ πρὸς ἄπαν ξυνετόν.

D

τοὺς ἄνδρας] is used pronominally,—'the men before us,' 'our pupils.' Compare infra 391 c τοὺς ἡμετέρους. This familiar way of speaking adds a touch of reality to the conversation. Cp. Theaet. 144 p, where Socrates says in reply to Theodorus' description of his pupil—γεννικὸν λέγεις τὸν ἄνδρα.

δῶρα... βασιλῆας] This verse is said by Suidas (i. p. 623) to E be taken from Hesiod.

Φοίνικα, κ.τ.λ.] Il. ix. 432, 515 sqq.

τῆς μήνιος] The Epic word recalls the theme of the Iliad.

παρὰ τοῦ ᾿Αγαμέμνονος δῶρα λαβεῖν] Il. xix. 278. Plato does injustice to the character of Achilles, who is indifferent to the gifts. It is a misconception of the Homeric idea to charge him with ἀνελευθερία οτ φιλοχρηματία, as infra 391 c. See especially Il. xix. 147, 148 Δῶρα μέν, αἴ κ' ἐθελησθα, παρασχέμεν, ὡς ἐπιεικές, | ἔττ' ἐχέμεν, πάρα σοί.

δι' "Ομηρον] Compare x. 595 Β καίτοι φιλία γε τίς με καὶ αἰδὼς εκ παιδὸς έχουσα περὶ 'Ομήρου ἀποκωλύει λέγειν.

391 A

ἔβλαψάς μ' ἐκάεργε . . . παρείη ] Il. xxii. 15, 20.

καὶ ώς πρὸς τὸν ποταμόν . . . ἀπειθώς εἶχε ] Il. xxi. 130 ff.

καὶ αὖ...οὐ πειστέον] Il. xxiii. 151. 'Or that he said "Let me offer to Patroclus," who was a lifeless corpse, "to take with him the locks," which had been consecrated to the other river Spercheius, or that he did so, we should not believe.' ὡς is to be repeated with ἔφη. The accusative, τὰς...τρίχας, is in a loose construction, which becomes more precise when the phrase is resumed in κόμην. The genitive τοῦ...Σπερχειοῦ is to be taken closely with ἱεράς in the usual construction.

Republic III. 391

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

τάς τε αὖ "Εκτορος . . . Πατρόκλου] ΙΙ. xxiv. 14 ff.: cp. xxii. 395 ff.

τὰς τῶν ζωγρηθέντων σφαγὰς εἰς τὴν πυράν] Il. xxiii. 175, 176. The plurals ἔλξεις and σφαγάς refer to a succession of distinct acts. The body of Hector was dragged day after day, and twelve human victims, not one only, had been offered on the funeral pyre.

C θεῶν τε καὶ ἀνθρώπων] For the genitive of the object after ὑπερηφανίαν cp. supra ii. 359 A ξυνθήκας αὐτῶν, and note.

μὴ τοίνυν . . . ἀρπαγάς] 'Then let us equally refuse to believe, or allow to be repeated the tale of Theseus, son of Poseidon, and Pirithous, son of Zeus, going forth to perpetrate such horrid acts of rape.' Pirithous aided Theseus in carrying off Helen, and Theseus joined Pirithous in his attempt to steal Persephone away from Pluto (Isocrates, Ἑλένης ἐγκώμιον, 20–22). The plural ἀρπαγάς includes both actions. δεινάς marks not the danger of the descent to Hades, but the heinousness of the offence. ὥρμησαν is read in Par. A after all, and not ὧρμησεν, as stated by all the Editors from Bekker downwards. This determines the balance in favour of the plural verb. οὕτως is to be joined with δεινάς. Cp. Symp. 192 c οὕτως ἐπὶ μεγάλης σπουδῆς.

 μηδέ τιν' ἄλλον is clearly preferable to ἄλλου, although ἄλλου (sic) is the reading of Par. A.

ώς οἱ θεοὶ κακὰ γεννῶσι] 'That the Gods are progenitors of evil.' The doers of evil cannot be sons of God. Else evil would proceed from God. Cp. ii. 379 c.

ως ἄρα] ἄρα, 'then '—if these stories are true.

οἱ θεῶν ἀγχίσποροι, κ.τ.λ.] These lines are taken, like the quotation in ii. 380 Λ, from the Niobe of Aeschylus. The lines are also quoted by Strabo (xii. 870), as they occur here, with the exception that οἶs ἐν Ἰδαίω πάγω is read for ὧν κατ Ἰδαῖον πάγον. The reason of the resolution (καὶ οῦ πω), which occurs in all the MSS. but not in Strabo, may be either that Socrates is putting together lines from different places, as at pp. 386, 387, or that the copyists supposed him to have done so.

Aeschylus seems to imagine a sort of heavenly Ida, like Olympus in Homer, where the demigods sacrifice to their father in the sky.

It is the mountain whose top reaches to Heaven in the imagination of the poet. Cp. the similar consecration of Mount Oeta in Soph. Trach. 1191.

Republic III. 391 E

What principles are to regulate the representation of human things? The point is reserved until after the decision of the main question, concerning the nature of Justice, and whether it is profitable or not to him who has it,—and this whether it be known or unknown to Gods and men.

392 A-C

 $[\hat{η}μ\hat{ι}ν]$  before  $\hat{η}ν$  δ'  $\hat{ε}γω$  is omitted in Par. A, probably owing to  $\hat{η}ν$  following.

392 A

λοιπὸν εἶδος λόγων πέρι 'What department still remains that has to do with the subjects of discourse.' The reading λόγων πέρι is confirmed by τὰ μὲν δὴ λόγων πέρι infra c, and by the expression εἶδος νόμων πέρι, infra iv. 427 λ. The periphrasis is nearly equivalent to a simple genitive. The reading of  $\Xi$ , which was also the reading of the text before Bekker, is περιορίζομένοις, a word the existence of which could not be allowed on the authority of this passage only, even if the other reading had not the authority of  $\Pi$  M. The scribe who wrote περιορίζομεν οἶς as in A must have understood the relative clause to mean 'what is to be told to whom.' For the meaning of λόγοι cp. supra ii. 376  $\Xi$  μουσικῆς δ' εἶπὼν τίθης λόγους, ἢ οὕ; where the subject was first started.

ώς ἄρα] 'to infer from what we admitted,' 'according to our view,' viz. in Book ii.

Plato remembers that the poets (as Adeimantus pointed out, ii. 364 A) err equally in their ideas about men, as about the Gods. But how can we determine the truth about human virtue till we define justice? This is an ironical or fanciful excuse for varying the order of the subject. Cp. iv. 430 p.

άλλότριον μεν άγαθόν, κ.τ.λ.] i. 343 c, ii. 367 c.

В

å πάλαι \* ζητοῦμεν] 'which we have been seeking all this while.' The manuscript reading is ἐζητοῦμεν, 'which we were seeking for long ago': sc. in the inquiry about justice, before we began to construct the state. But the conjectural reading ζητοῦμεν, which is confirmed by the version of Ficinus, is more probable. Cp. iv. 420 C κατιδόντες δὲ κρῦναι ἀν ὁ πάλαι ζητοῦμεν. For the use of such a pronominal phrase in recapitulating, to avoid tautology, cp. Phileb. 50 C τὰ νῦν πολλάκις λεγόμενα.

Republic III. 392 C-397 E

So much is said with regard to the substance of the new literature. Next, as to the form. Shall it be (1) narrative, or (2) dramatic, or (3) a mixture of both?

The speeches in Homer are dramatic, but they are linked together with bits of narration. Tragic poetry is dramatic throughout. Homer, again, would be entirely narrative, if the speeches were reported indirectly. And this is the mode actually adopted in the

Dithyramb.

The purely dramatic form is to be excluded from our state. For we have long since decided that simplicity is to be our rule; and the imitation of various characters is fatal to simplicity. Our youth may be allowed to impersonate the virtuous and good, but nothing that is vicious or mean, nor a female in any condition, nor a slave; still less, as happens in comedy, a drunkard or a coward. They must indeed know such characters from without, but never for a moment must they be identified with them. Nor may they mimic menial arts, of which they are to know nothing, nor unmeaning noises, such as the neighing of horses or the sound of thunder.

In narrating the fortunes of some hero, if they are carried away into impersonating him when he is about some noble deed, well and good. Or if they scornfully throw in a dramatic touch in characterizing some bad man, there is no great harm, provided that such points in their discourse are few and momentary. But the main tenour of the recital will be pure narration, and the manner of the recitation in the pitch and cadence of the voice will be simple and uniform.

392 D

διήγησις οὖσα The participle is attracted to the noun instead of agreeing with πάντα supra.

 $\tilde{a}\rho'$   $\tilde{o}\tilde{u}\nu$  ...  $\pi\epsilon\rho\tilde{a}\tilde{u}\nu\tilde{o}\tilde{u}\sigma\tilde{u}$  There are three kinds of poetry:—(1) the simple narrative, of which the dithyramb is given as an example (304 c): (2) the opposite kind, which has only action and no narrative, as is the case in tragedy and comedy: (3) the union of the two, as in Epic poetry, which, if you leave the speeches only, becomes a drama, or if you omit the speeches or report them in oratio obliqua, takes the form of simple narration.

Compare Aristotle's Poetics, c. iii. § 2 καὶ γὰρ ἐν τοῖς αὐτοῖς καὶ τὰ αὐτὰ μιμείσθαι έστιν ότε μεν απαγγελλοντα ή ετερόν τι γιγνόμενον, ωσπερ "Ομηρος ποιεί, ή ώς τὸν αὐτὸν καὶ μή μεταβάλλοντα, ή πάντας ώς πράττοντας καὶ ἐνεργούντας τους μιμουμένους.—λέξις, as a separate element, is overlooked in Gorg. 502 C φέρε δή, εί τις περιέλοιτο της ποιήσεως πάσης τό τε μέλος καὶ τὸν ρυθμὸν καὶ τὸ μέτρον, ἄλλο τι η λόγοι γίγνονται τὸ λειπό-Republic μενυν; 392 Plato's test of the moral character of poetry, while including D dithyrambics, would exclude the tragedies of Sophocles and Aeschylus. On the relation of Plato to the poets, see further notes in Book x. περαίνουσιν 'proceed.' For this absolute use cp. Laws iv. 715  $\mathbf{E}$   $\delta$   $\mu \hat{\epsilon} \nu$   $\delta \hat{\eta}$   $\theta \hat{\epsilon} \delta s$  . . .  $\hat{\epsilon} \hat{\upsilon} \theta \hat{\epsilon} \hat{\iota} \alpha$   $\pi \hat{\epsilon} \rho \alpha \hat{\iota} \nu \hat{\epsilon} \iota$  ('fulfils his course'). ἀπολαβων μέρος τι 'breaking off a part.' i. e. making use of an E example. Cp. Gorg. 495 Ε περί ὅτου βούλει τοῦ σώματος ἀπολαβων σκόπει, and Theaet. 182 A οὐ μανθάνεις ἀθρόον λεγόμενον κατὰ μέρη  $o\tilde{v}$   $\tilde{a}$ κου $\epsilon$ . οὐκ ἐτύγχανε The imperfect as in οὐκ ἔπειθε. καὶ ἐλίσσετο . . . λαῶν ] Il. i. 15, 16. 393 A τῶν ἐν Ἰθάκη καὶ ὅλη Ὀδυσσεία παθημάτων 'the things which В happened at Ithaca and in the Odyssey generally,' i. e. not only in Ithaca, but at Sparta, Phaeacia, and elsewhere. Observe that  $\epsilon \nu$  is not again repeated, but is implied in a somewhat different meaning with 'Odvooeia. οὐκοῦν διήγησις . . . τῶν ῥήσεων Εpic poetry is narrative throughout; but the *simple narrative*, i.e. the descriptive part is to be distinguished from narrative through imitation, i. e. the speeches άπλη διήγησις άνευ μιμήσεως from διήγησις δια μιμήσεως. ω αν τις όμοιοί sc. έαυτόν, to be supplied from όμοιοῦν ξαυτόν C at the beginning of the sentence. ίνα δὲ μὴ εἴπης, ὅτι οὐκ αὖ μανθάνεις 'But that you may not D say "Once more I do not understand you." The order of the words appears to be euphonic. Cp. Theaet. 161 Λ ώς οὐκ αὖ ἔχει ούτω ταύτα. αὐτούς emphatic—' themselves,' opposed to την θυγατέρα οί. E depends on the general notion of urging implied in λῦσαι εὔχετο. μη . . . οὐκ ἐπαρκέσοι This is the oratio obliqua of μη . . . οὐκ έπαρκέσει, Plato's prose version of μη . . . οὐ χραίσμη in Homer. The future indicative after a verb of fearing is rare, but occurs in Aesch., Soph., and Xen. See Goodwin, M. and T., § 367. Cp. V. 451 A μη σφαλείς . . . κείσομαι, and for the optative Euthyphro.

Republic III. 393 E. 15 D ἀλλὰ καὶ τοὺς θεοὺς ἀν ἔδεισας . . . μὴ οὐκ ὀρθῶς αὐτὸ ποιήσοις. The future indicative after μή in a final clause, although rare, is not unknown (Ar. Eccl. 495 εἰκὸς . . . μὴ βραδύνειν . . . μὴ καί τις ὄψεται), so that, as Goodwin remarks, M. and T., § 132, there is no objection to μὴ . . . ἐπαρκέσοι being so taken here. In places of this kind the notions of purpose ('lest') and fearing ('for fear that') are nearly coincident.

ἀπιέναι δ' ἐκέλευε... οἴκαδε ἔλθοι] 'He told him to be off, and not to provoke him, if he wished to get home safely.' Plato omits the accusative case after ἐρεθίζειν (ἀλλ' ἴθι, μή  $\underline{\underline{\mu}}$  ἐρέθιζε), which has been unnecessarily restored by Valckenaer ( $\mu\dot{\dot{\eta}}$  έ) without manuscript authority.

394 A ἀποχωρήσας δὲ ἐκ τοῦ στρατοπέδου] This is prose for ἀπάνευθε κιών II. i. 35.

τάς τε ἐπωνυμίας . . . ναῶν οἰκοδομήσεσιν] ΙΙ. i. 37-9:-

κλῦθί μευ, ἀργυρότοξ', ὁς Χρύσην ἀμφιβέβηκας Κίλλαν τε ζαθέην, Τενέδοιό τε ἶφι ἀνάσσεις, Σμινθεῦ, εἴ ποτέ τοι χαρίεντ' ἐπὶ νηὸν ἔρεψα,

which last seems to have been understood by Plato, not of crowning shrines of the God with garlands, but of roofing them (ἐν ναῶν αἰκοδομήσεσιν), as Eustathius explains the word ἔρεψα by ἀρόφωσα, which is probably the true meaning. 'ἔρεψα seems to indicate the most primitive form of temple—a mere roof to protect the image of a God standing in a grove.' Leaf's note on Il. i. 39. Cp. Paus. x. 5, § 9.

τὰ ἃ δάκρυα] ἄ is an archaism or Homericism, into the use of which Plato is probably led by his subject. Cp. supra ii. 383 Β τὰς ἐὰς εὐπαιδίας, and note. There is a similar use of a poetical form in the Phaedrus, where Socrates 'plays' at dithyrambics: 237 Λ ξύμ μοι λάβεσθε τοῦ μύθου.

В

ταύτης αὖ ἐναντία] sc. διήγησις, i. e. ή διὰ μιμήσεως.

καὶ τοῦτο . . . τοιοῦτον] 'That again I understand; and I perceive that your remark applies to tragedy.'

ορθότατα . . . οὐχ οἷός τ' η̂] 'You perfectly catch my meaning, and now I think I make you see what before I could not.'

ἔμπροσθεν . . . (c) τότε supra 392 d καὶ τοῦτο (the first statement about διήγησις) . . . ἔτι δέομαι σαφέστερον μαθείν.

ώσπερ σὺ λέγεις] supra μανθάνω . . . τοιοῦτον. The respondent gets full credit for his contribution. The reference to this definition is repeated infra 395 A.

Republic III. 394

εἴ μοι μανθάνεις 'If I make you understand.' The dative μοι, which is the reading of the MSS., has been altered into you by Heindorf. This is unnecessary, although εί μου μανθάνεις occurs in Phileb. 51 c. Compare Laws i. 644 c καί μοι δι' εἰκόνος ἀποδέξασθε.

τὸ πρὸ τούτου] 392 C. 1 lit " was las

τοῦτο τοίνυν . . . ἔλεγον 'That was just what I meant.' τοῦτο αὐτό refers to what follows, ὅτι χρείη . . . μιμεῖσθαι, as well as to the words ws de lektéor in what precedes.

D

ούδε μιμεισθαι] SC. εάσομεν.

ἴσως δὲ καὶ πλείω] 'And there may be more than this in question,'—an anticipation of the condemnation of epic poetry in Book x.

πολλων έφαπτόμενος | · attempting many things, he will altogether fail to be eminent in any (που).' ωστε depends on some positive idea, which is gathered from ἀποτυγχάνοι: 'he will not succeed (οὐ τυγχάνοι ἄν) in any so as to be eminent.' Cp. Protag. 314 B, where έτι νέοι ώστε = ούπω ήλικίαν έχομεν, ώστε,

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

οἷον κωμωδίαν, κ.τ.λ.] Yet Socrates at the end of the Symposium (223 D) maintains that comedy and tragedy belong to the same artist: τὸ μέντοι κεφάλαιον, ἔφη, προσαναγκάζειν τὸν Σωκράτη ομολογείν αὐτούς τοῦ αὐτοῦ ἀνδρὸς εἶναι κωμωδίαν καὶ τραγωδίαν ἐπίστασθαι ποιείν, και τὸν τέχνη τραγωδιοποιὸν οντα κωμωδιοποιὸν είναι.

395

For a judgement on tragedy compare Gorg. 502 B τί δὲ δὴ ἡ σεμνή αυτη καὶ θαυμαστή ή της τραγωδίας ποίησις, έφ' ώ έσπουδακε; where he proceeds to say: 'Is the vocation of tragedy to please the spectators only? Or does she refuse to speak of pleasant vices and proclaim only what is wholesome but unpleasant? We must say Yes to the former; and if so, all the pretensions of tragedy will not hinder our classing her creations under the head of flattery.' The same test is applied to other kinds of poetry.

Plato's enmity to the drama seems to rest on grounds which are partly fanciful and partly real. The mimetic sympathetic power of the actor is unfavourable to strength and unity of purpose: the genius of imitation is certainly akin to weakness. But a man will not be induced to become a murderer by acting the Republic III. 395 part of a murderer; nor is the inference sound that the same individual cannot act many parts because he cannot succeed in many serious pursuits. The evil of the drama does not consist in the imitation of evil any more than of good, but in the effect of continued emotion and excitement on the character of the actor and spectators.

арті] 394 в, с.

ραψωδοί γε SC. δύνανται είναι.

οὐδέ τοι ὑποκριταὶ . . . οἱ αὐτοί] 'And you know that the same actors do not perform in tragedy and comedy.' Cp. τραγφδοῖς νικᾶν, and similar expressions.

B πάντα δὲ ταῦτα μιμήματα] i.e. the rhapsode and the tragic or comic actor are 'imitators,' as well as the poets whose works they produce; or, in modern language, there is a sense in which the actor, too, 'creates' his part. Plato, however, fails to realize that true art is not mere imitation, but the embodiment of an ideal; although he comes near the expression of this truth in 401 B (infra).

ἄστε ἀδύνατος εἶναι . . . ἀφομοιώματα] (1) If η̈ is unemphatic, 'And becomes unable to imitate many things well or to do the things themselves well, if they are many '; [(2) or taking η̆ emphatically—' Or else' (if able to imitate) ' is not able to do the things themselves.' For the latter (which resumes σχολη̄ ἄρα ἐπιτηδεύσει, κ.τ.λ.) cp. vi. 503 A η̈ τὸν ἀδυνατοῦντα ἀποκριτέον : vii. 525 B τῆς οὐσίας ἀπτέον εἶναι γενέσεως ἐξαναδύντι, ηρ μηδέποτε λογιστικρρ γενέσθαι.

C τὰ τούτοις προσήκοντα] τούτοις is probably masculine = φύλαξι καὶ δημιουργοῖς ἐλευθερίας τῆς πόλεως. Cp. infra Ε ὅσα δούλων: 396 Λ κελεύοντας τούτοις.

ἴνα μὴ . . . ἀπολαύσωσιν] 'Lest by imitation they should become imbued with the reality of that which they imitate.' Cp. infra 401  $\overline{B}$ ,  $\overline{C}$  ἴνα μὴ ἐν κακίας εἰκόσι τρεφόμενοι . . . ἕν τι ξυνιστάντες λανθάνωσι κακὸν μέγα ἐν τῆ αὐτῶν ψυχῆ.

I) ἐἀν ἐκ νέων πόρρω διατελέσωσιν] 'If, beginning in youth, they continue far into life.'

εἰς ἔθη τε καὶ φύσιν καθίστανται] 'Acquire the fixedness of habit and nature.'

B

D

ανδρὶ λοιδορουμένην] 'Reviling' (1) 'a man,' opposed to πρὸς Republic θεούς following, or (2) 'her husband.'

πολλοῦ καὶ δεήσομεν] καί adds to the emphasis: 'We shall be get indeed from that.'

μεθύοντας ἢ καὶ νήφοντας] These words qualify the preceding participles. 'Abusing and reviling one another whether drunk or sober.'

άμαρτάνουσιν εἰς αὐτούς τε καὶ εἰς ἄλλους] 'Sin against others and against themselves,' i. e. degrading themselves as well as injuring others.

γνωστέον μεν γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. infra 409 D ἀρετὴ δε φύσεως παιδευομένης χρόνω ἄμα αὐτῆς τε καὶ πονηρίας ἐπιστήμην λήψεται.

κελεύοντας τούτοις] sc. τοῖς ἐλαύνουσιν: 'giving the time to the rowers,' i. e. doing the work of the κελευστής on board ship.

οὐδὲ προσέχειν τὸν νοῦν τούτων οὐδενί] supra ii. 374 D, E.

 $\hat{\eta}$  μιμήσονται]  $\hat{\eta}$ , which is emphasized by its position in the sentence, asks the question with a tone of indignation. Cp. v. 469 C τί δέ; σκυλεύειν . . . τοὺς τελευτήσαντας πλὴν ὅπλων, ἐπειδὰν νικήσωσιν,  $\hat{\eta}$  καλῶς ἔχει;

ἀπείρηται αὐτοῖς, κ.τ.λ.] supra A.

εί...μανθάνω ἃ σὺ λέγεις] Socrates again ascribes his own reflections to the respondent.

οὖ ἃν ἔχοιτο] 'In which he will persist.' Cp. Soph. 264 Ε C ἐχόμενοι τῆς τοῦ σοφιστοῦ κοινωνίας: Thuc. i. 140 τῆς μὲν γνώμης ...τῆς αὐτῆς ἔχομαι.

ό μέν μοι . . . μέτριος ἀνήρ] ό is the definite article before μέτριος ἀνήρ. The words which intervene give an additional emphasis to μέτριος.

σπουδη 'in earnest,' is opposed to παιδιᾶς χάριν.

οὖκ ἐθελήσειν like ἐθελήσειν supra, dependent on δοκεί.

αὐτὸν ἐκμάττειν τε καὶ ἐνιστάναι, κ.τ.λ.] 'To mould and adapt himself to the baser shapes,' like the clay of the statuary which would be said ἐνίστασθαι τῷ τύπῳ, 'to settle into the shape of the mould.' But in Tim. 50 D ἐν ῷ ἐκτυπούμενον ἐνίσταται, the same word is used conversely of the form being impressed on the matter.

Refublic III. 396 E καὶ ἔσται ... τῆς μιμήσεως] 'And his style will partake of both kinds, of imitation and also of narrative ' (τῆς ἄλλης διηγήσεως : see on ii. 357 c: it may be remembered however that διήγησις alone, when not distinguished by the epithet άπλῆ, may include the imitative, as well as other kinds, as in the beginning of this passage, supra 392 d): 'only there will be a few grains of the former in a long recital.' Bekker alters the text into σμικρὸν δέ τι μέρος μιμήσεως ἐν πολλῷ λόγῳ τῆς διηγήσεως, for which there is some faint manuscript authority; but the alteration is unnecessary; the text is neater and gives an equally good sense.

397 A

όσω αν φαυλότερος ή...διηγήσεται It seems necessary to adopt Madvig's emendation here. Of the two manuscript readings, that of q, although probably conjectural, is the more plausible: 'The more vulgar he is, the more constantly will he employ imitation.' The reading of Par. A, &c., πάντα τε μᾶλλον διηγήσεται, could only mean: 'the more ready will he be to tell about anything and everything '—laying a strong emphasis on πάντα, and implying that there are some things which a good man will not even narrate. If Plato had meant this, he would have said it more clearly. And the form of the sentence  $(\tau \epsilon \ldots \kappa \alpha \hat{\iota} \ o \hat{\iota} \delta \hat{\epsilon} \hat{\nu} \ldots \tilde{\omega} \sigma \tau \epsilon, \kappa.\tau.\lambda.)$  is much better adapted to bring out the additional point—that not only does the bad man always prefer imitation, but there is nothing which he is ashamed to imitate. The expression πάντα διηγήσεται is also too obviously out of keeping with the concluding words, σμικρόν τι διηγήσεως έχουσα. [The avoidance of a mere awkwardness does not justify an emendation which has no real manuscript authority. B. J.]

τροχιλίων] 'pulleys.' Perhaps, as Ast suggested, τροχιλιών should be read, τροχιλία, not τροχίλιον, being the usual form.

В

σχήμασιν] 'gestures': cp. Soph. 267 A ὅταν . . . τὸ σὸν σχῆμά τις τῷ ἐαυτοῦ χρώμενος σώματι προσόμοιον ἡ φωνὴν φωνῆ φαίνεσθαι ποιῆ, μίμησις τοῦτο τῆς φανταστικῆς μάλιστα κέκληταί που. The word is differently used supra ii. 373 B.

ολίγου πρὸς τὴν αὐτὴν . . . καὶ ἐν μιᾳ ἀρμονίᾳ] (1) πρὸς τὴν αὐτήν, sc. λέξω ('ferme ad eandem orationis formam,' Fic.). 'The result is that he speaks nearly in the same style and with a uniform cadence.' [(2) ὀλίγου πρὸς τὴν αὐτήν, sc. χορδήν. πρὸς λέξω τωὰ λέγεω is hardly a natural expression, and the question here is not that of the style itself, but of the cadence and tone adapted to it. The cadence is uniform and approaches monotone. Cp. πρόσχορδος

Republic

397 B

(Laws vii. 812 p) and the ellipsis of χορδή with νεάτη, ὑπάτη, μέση (infra iv. 443 D): also Lucian, de Salt., c. 80 άλογα κινούμενοι καὶ μηδέν, ως φασι, πρὸς τὴν χορδήν. The narrative style, as it has less alteration of meaning or feeling (σμικραί γάρ αἱ μεταβολαί), has fewer and slighter variations of tone than the dramatic.—As there is no authority, however, for this elliptical phrase, this interpretation, though suited to the context, is only conjectural. L.C. For the use of δρθώς compare 403 Β οὐδέ κοινωνητέον αὐτης έραστη τε καὶ παιδικοίς ορθώς έρωσί τε καὶ έρωμένοις. The words τῷ ορθώς λέγοντι (' when one recites properly') are balanced by εὶ μέλλει αὖ οἰκείως λέγεσθαι (infra c), i. e. 'when the enunciation is appropriate to the style.' It is clear that άρμονία here is not used in the strictly musical sense, but is applied to the changes of pitch and tone which occur in speaking and reciting. Cp. Ar. Rhet. iii. 1, where Aristotle says that the three elements of utterance are μέγεθος, άρμονία and ρυθμός, and identifies άρμονία with τόνος.

С

τί δὲ τὸ τοῦ ἐτέρου εἶδος;...τῶν μεταβολῶν ἔχειν;] 'But what about the character of the other style? Will it not require the opposite? Will it not require all harmonies and all rhythms, if it is to be appropriately expressed, because it has every variety of change?' The μεταβολαί here referred to are changes in the style.

ᾶρ' οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] The words λόγος, λέξις, ᾶρμονία, ῥυθμός, βάσις, may be distinguished as follows:—

λόγος, the subject, which is true or false, moral or immoral.

 $\lambda i \xi \iota s$ , the style, which is dramatic or narrative, or a composition of the two.

γ άρμονία is a musical term: it was applied (a) to the Enharmonic genus (this is the only sense it has in Aristoxenus), (β) to the modes, which according to some differed in the arrangement of the intervals, according to others in pitch. The word really means 'scale,' as defined in Laws ii. 664 Ε εἴπομεν ... ώς ... τῆ δὴ τῆς κινήσεως τάξει ῥυθμὸς ὄνομα εἴη, τῆ δὲ αὖ τῆς φωνῆς, τοῦ τε ὀξέος ἄμα καὶ βαρέος συγκεραννυμένων, άρμονία ὄνομα προσαγορεύοιτο: (γ) Plato also applies the term in a still wider sense, as in the preceding sentence, to cadence or variation of tone in speaking and recitation—infra 398 D τοῦ μὴ ἀδομένου λόγου.

γριθμός is a term which applies equally to the music and to the

Republic III. 397 words: the division of time in metre (e.g. Paeonic, Dactylic, Trochaic, proceeding respectively in a ratio of  $\frac{3}{2}$ ,  $\frac{2}{2}$ ,  $\frac{2}{1}$ ) and the corresponding accentuation of the music.

βάσιε is the movement considered as a system of times or quantities,  $\frac{3}{2}$ ,  $\frac{2}{2}$ ,  $\frac{2}{1}$ . In 400 Λ τρί' ἄττα ἐστὶν εἴδη ἐξ ὧν αἱ βάσεις πλέκονται Plato implies that the term βάσιε applies to the whole of each of the three systems of which the Paeon, Dactyl, or Trochee is the characteristic element.

ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων τινὶ ξυγκεραννύντες] τινὶ sc. τύπ $\varphi$ : i.e. ἤ τινι ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων, ξυγκεραννύντες τι εἶδος ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων. ξυγκεκραμέν $\varphi$  would have been more natural. But the preference for the active is characteristic of Greek.

1) παισί τε καὶ παιδαγωγοῖς, κ.τ.λ.] καὶ παιδαγωγοῖς is humorously added. He knows that his regulations will be unpopular, not with the children only, but with their attendants, who are 'children of a larger growth.' Cp. Gorg. 502 d (speaking of tragedy)—νῦν ἄρα ἡμεῖς εὐρήκαμεν ἡητορικήν τινα πρὸς δῆμον τοιοῦτον, οἶον παίδων τε ὁμοῦ καὶ γυναικῶν καὶ ἀνδρῶν, καὶ δούλων καὶ ἐλευθέρων. The expression recurs in Laws iii. 700 c with reference to the earlier custom of the theatre: παισὶ δὲ καὶ παιδαγωγοῖς καὶ τῷ πλείστῳ ὅχλῳ ῥάβδον κοσμούσης ἡ νουθέτησις ἐγίγνετο.

καὶ οὐ χρηματιστήν] See Thuc. vi. 31, § 5: vii. 13, § 2.

398 The genial versatile poet shall be sent into honourable exile: his severe didactic brother shall be alone retained.

αὐτός τε καὶ τὰ ποιήματα, κ.τ.λ.] (1) 'himself, and wanting to show his poems.' Cp. iv. 427 D αὐτός τε καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν παρακάλει, and Phaedr. 253 B μιμούμενοι αὐτοί τε καὶ τὰ παιδικὰ πείθοντες: Or perhaps (2), 'himself and his poems which he wishes to display'; τὰ ποιήματα being taken first as nominative to ἀφίκοιτο and then also as accusative after ἐπιδείξασθαι.

προσκυνοῖμεν ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] The words that follow are an ironical glorification of the dramatic poet: He is a holy and marvellous being—a delightful creature (cp. Ion 534 Β κοῦφον γὰρ χρῆμα ποιητής ἐστι καὶ πτηνὸν καὶ ἱερόν). But as the like of him is not allowed among us, let us fall down before him and crown him with wool, and anoint his head with myrrh,—and show him the way out.

A similar, though more serious strain is addressed to the tragic poets in the Laws, vii. 817 A.D., where they are told that they will

E

398 A not be allowed to perform their plays until they have been submitted to the censorship of the magistrates, and this severity is humorously attributed by Plato to professional jealousy. The law-giver who is a tragic poet in that 'his whole state is an imitation of the best and noblest life' cannot be expected to allow his rival and antagonist 'to erect his stage in the agora and introduce the fair voices of actors, speaking above his own,—very often in contradiction.' Cp. also Phileb. 50 Β τη του βίου ξυμπάση τραγωδία και κωμωδία.

έρίω στέψαντες] (1) 'Crowning him with wool': or (2) 'providing him with a woollen fillet'  $(\sigma \tau \epsilon \mu \mu a)$ , which he is to carry on a wand in token of the sacredness of his person.

κατ' ἀρχάς ii. 379 A ff.

В

Republic III.

398

εὶ ἐφ' ἡμῖν εἴη] 'If we really had the power.' For a similar reference to the possibility of the Republic being realized in fact cp. supra 389 D έάν γε . . . έπί γε λόγω έργα τεληται, and note.

So much for the subjects and the style of spoken discourse. And 398 Bwith regard to song the principles will be the same.

399 E

The difference lies in the addition of tune and metre. As we have forbidden our poets to use lamentation, we shall forbid our musical composers to employ pathetic melodies, or any kind of music which tends to relax the moral fibre. No 'soft Lydian airs' for us, nor the 'linked sweetness' of Ionian strains! But only the manly Dorian and the martial Phrygian mood. Or, to speak more exactly, we must have one sort of music which expresses warlike resolution and patient fortitude, and one which breathes the serene temper of philosophic aspiration and wise counsel and calm rejoicing in the triumph of good.

For this we shall need no elaborate instrument, least of all the infinitely variable tones of the flute—nothing but the lyre and simple reed. We renounce Marsyas and hold to Apollo.

The passage which follows has been fully discussed by Westphal, Griechische Harmonik, ed. 1886, c. 5, §§ 25-31, pp. 187-240.

περὶ ϣδης τρόπου καὶ μελῶν 'About the character of songs and the tunes.'

398

ἐκτὸς τῶν πάντων is a play upon the word πῶς (ὧρ' οὖν οὖ πῶς ἤδη αν εύροι). Socrates argues that the application to song of the principles which have been already laid down will be evident to all. Glaucon answers with a smile: 'I do not seem to be included in the comprehensive word "all," and am therefore at a loss to con-

VOL. III.

E

Republic jecture at present (though I have a suspicion) what sort of things we ought to say.' Cp. Soph. 233 Ε λέγω τοίνυν σὲ καὶ ἐμὲ τῶν πάντων: infra vii. 529 Λ παντὶ . . . δῆλον . . . ἴσως, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, παντὶ δῆλον πλὴν ἐμοί.

1) λόγου . . . ρύθμοῦ] See note on supra 397 c.
 καὶ ὡσαύτως] Ι. e. ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ λέξει, viz. τῷ ἀπλῷ διηγήσει.

καὶ μήν, κ.τ.λ.] This general truth has been admitted above, 397  $B \dot{\epsilon} \dot{a} \nu \tau \iota s \dot{a} \pi o \delta \iota \delta \dot{\varphi} \pi \rho \dot{\epsilon} \pi o \nu \sigma a \nu \dot{a} \rho \mu o \nu \dot{\iota} a \nu \kappa a \dot{\rho} \dot{\nu} \theta \mu \dot{\sigma} \nu \tau \dot{\eta} \lambda \dot{\epsilon} \xi \epsilon \iota$ , although this is there said of speaking and recitation only.

μιξολυδιστί] 'That famous mode which Sappho invented, and which Aristoxenus declares to be perfectly adapted to tragedy' (Westphal, Griechische Harmonik, ed. 1886, p. 198). The authority for this is Plutarch, De Mus., c. 16 καὶ ἡ μιξολύδιος δὲ παθητική τις ἐστι, τραγφδίαις ἀρμόζουσα. 'Αριστόξενος δέ φησι Σαπφὼ πρώτην εὔρασθαι τὴν μιξολυδιστί, παρ' ἦς τοὺς τραγφδοποιοὺς μαθεῖν' λαβόντας γοῦν αὐτοὺς συζεῦξαι τῆ δωριστί, ἐπεὶ ἡ μὲν τὸ μεγαλοπρεπὲς καὶ ἀξιωματικὸν ἀποδίδωσιν, ἡ δὲ τὸ παθητικόν, μέμικται δὲ διὰ τούτων τραγφδία. But Plutarch, in the same passage, attributes to Aristoxenus other statements at variance with this.

åς δεὶ ἐπιεικεῖς εἶναι] Cp. supra 387 Ε καὶ οὐδὲ ταύταις σπουδαίαις. The suggestion that some women are to aim high is one of the preparations for the surprise in Book v.

αἴτινες χαλαραὶ καλοῦνται] 'The sort of melodies called lax.' The indefinite relative suits with Plato's affected ignorance (cp. infra 400 c), and the antecedent is in apposition to 'laoti' and λυδιστί taken together. The 'relaxed harmonies' include Ionian as well as a species of Lydian (ὑπολυδιστί), but there appears to be no distinction among Ionian melodies; although Westphal (§28, p. 200), assumes it. xalapai is probably a technical term of music, implying a lower pitch, and opposed to σύντονος, but is used by Plato with an ethical association, for which cp. ix. 590 Β τρυφή δέ καὶ μαλθακία οὐκ ἐπὶ τῆ αὐτοῦ τούτου (τοῦ θυμοῦ) χαλάσει τε καὶ ἀνέσει ψέγεται. Aristotle, Pol. viii. 5, § 22 says: 'Some of the modes make men sad and grave, like the so-called Mixolydian, others enfeeble the mind, like the relaxed harmonies, others again produce a moderate and settled temper, which appears to be the peculiar effect of the Dorian;—the Phrygian inspires enthusiasm.' Aristotle's word for 'relaxed' is ἀνειμέναι, and in this he is followed by Aristoxenus and later writers. It is generally assumed that xalapai in Plato means

the same thing. Aristotle in Pol. viii. 7, § 14, censures Plato for rejecting the 'relaxed' harmonies: he would keep them because less difficult for aged persons to sing.

Republic III. 398 E

399

φρυγιστί] Why should Plato choose the Phrygian mode to suit the 'modest stillness and sobriety' becoming men in peace? Aristotle's criticism of this passage in Pol. viii. 7, §§ 9–11, seems only natural: 'The Socrates of the Republic is wrong in retaining only the Phrygian mode along with the Dorian, and the more so because he rejects the flute; for the Phrygian is to the modes what the flute is to musical instruments—both of them are exciting and emotional. Poetry proves this, for Bacchic frenzy, and all similar emotions are most suitably expressed by the flute, and are better set to the Phrygian than to any other harmony. The dithyramb, for example, is acknowledged to be Phrygian.' Either Phrygian melodies had other than orgiastic uses, or Plato is proceeding on some abstract ground, as that the Phrygian was in the mean between excess and defect in pitch.

 $\epsilon \nu$  πασι τούτοις] is a resumption of  $\epsilon \nu$  πολεμικ $\hat{\eta}$  πράξει and what follows: 'In all these cases repelling the attacks of fortune with a firm front.'

В

έαυτὸν ἐπέχοντα] 'giving his attention to.' Cp. Laws xi. 926 Β ἐπὶ μείζοσι γάμοις τὴν διάνοιαν ἐπέχων. After δεομένου the construction is changed and the accusatives ἐπέχοντα . . . πράξαντα, κ.τ.λ., are governed directly by μιμήσαιτο. The correction ὑπέχοντα, 'resigning' or 'submitting himself,' which is found in a single manuscript (Ξ), is unnecessary.

C

ταύτας δύο άρμονίας, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Laws vii. 814 E, where it is said of dancing τοῦ δὴ σπουδαίου [εἶναι κίνησιν] τὴν μὲν κατὰ πόλεμον καὶ ἐν βιαίοις ἐμπλακέντων πόνοις σωμάτων μὲν καλῶν, ψυχῆς δ' ἀνδρικῆς, τὴν δ' ἐν εὐπραγίαις τε οὔσης ψυχῆς σώφρονος ἐν ἡδοναῖς τε ἐμμέτροις εἰρηνικὴν ἄν τις λέγων κατὰ φύσιν τὴν τοιαύτην ὅρχησιν λέγοι.

δυστυχούντων . . . ἀνδρείων ] The genitives depend on φθόγγους. The second άρμονίας, here bracketed, should probably be omitted.

οὖκ ἄρα ... φαίνεται] 'Then we shall certainly not want in our songs and tunes a multitude of strings or notes, or an instrument which has all the harmonies.' 'Clearly not.'

The Panharmonic instruments were those which were adapted for the performance of all the modes and musical genera; in other words, which admitted the greatest possible variety in the intervals and arrangement of the scale. Republic III. 399 τριγώνων ἄρα καὶ πηκτίδων, κ.τ.λ.] 'Then we shall not maintain the artificers of lyres with three corners and composite scales, nor of any of the many-stringed curiously harmonized instruments.' 'Manifestly not.' Cp. Arist. Pol. viii. 6, §§ 12, 13, who says that these and other elaborate instruments were gradually disused, as men learned to distinguish what conduced to virtue. The  $\pi\eta\kappa\tau$ is, like the  $\mu$ άγαδις, was of Lydian origin (Herod. i. 17), and was played with the fingers without a plectrum. See Susemihl's note on Arist., l. c.

D τί δέ; ... μίμημα;] 'Next, will you admit makers and players of flutes into the state? Has not this' (τοῦτο, sc. αὐλός understood from αὐλητής and αὐλοποιός) 'more strings than all of them? And are not panharmonic instruments themselves an imitation of the flute?'

Plato says playfully that the flute, which has no strings, is 'the most many-stringed of instruments': that is to say, the flute has those qualities in the greatest degree which he has just been denouncing in stringed instruments. According to Proclus, in Alcib. p. 197, each aperture of the flute gave three or more sounds: this variety was obtained by the use of shifts and slides. It was natural that the panharmonic principle should be first applied to an instrument of which the notes could be easily modified. (Paus. ix. 12, § 5.)

In the Laws iii. 700 d, Plato describes the degenerate musicians as κεραννύντες δὲ θρήνους τε ὕμνοις καὶ παιῶνας διθυράμβοις, καὶ αὐλφδίας δὴ ταῖς κιθαρφδίαις μιμούμενοι. Cp. Pind. Ol. vii. 21 παμφώνοισί τ' ἐν ἔντεσιν αὐλῶν: Isthm. iv. 35 ἐν αὐλῶν τε παμφώνοις ὁμοκλαῖς.

κιθάρα] The Dorian mood includes the 'Υποδωριστί (otherwise called the Aeolian), of which Arist. Probl. xix. 48, § 1, says that it is κιθαρφδικωτάτη τῶν άρμονιῶν.

Ε

νὴ τὸν κύνα] may be regarded as a jest παρὰ προσδοκίαν (cp. Phaedr. 236 Ε ὅμνυμι . . . τὴν πλάτανον ταυτηνί). It occurs in a lengthened form, which perhaps explains the allusion, in the Gorgias 482 Β μὰ τὸν κύνα, τὸν Αἰγυπτίων θεόν—' By the Dog, the God of Egypt.' It is observable that another oath of the same kind, μὰ τὸν χῆνα (which is likewise attributed to the followers of Socrates see Schol. on Ar. Birds 521), refers to an Egyptian deity.

399 E-400 E By thus simplifying music we have purged our luxurious state. And we must also simplify rhythm and metre. Not to enter into technicalities of dactylic, spondaic, iambic, trochaic metre, and the merits of the corresponding rhythms, we observe once for all that the rhythm must be noble and appropriate to the style, as the style is to the subject, and all must harmonize with the mental character which we desire to create.

Republic III. 399 E-400 E

See Westphal's Metrik (1885), pp. 237-239.

τὰ λοιπὰ καθαίρωμεν] 'Let us finish the purgation.' In other words—'Let us do with the metres what we have done with the modes.'

μὴ ποικίλους . . . βάσεις] 'not to aim at having complex rhythms or varied systems of metre.'

άλλὰ μὰ  $\Delta l'$ , ἔφη, κ.τ.λ.] 'But in good faith I cannot tell. That there are three kinds of feet out of which metrical systems of feet are formed, as in sounds there are four notes whence spring all the modes,—so much I have observed and can say: but of what sort of life they are severally the expressions, I am unable to affirm.'

400

(1) The elements of metrical systems are simple, like the elements of musical systems:—since all systems of metre are based on three proportions of time,  $\frac{3}{2}$ ;  $\frac{2}{2}$ ,  $\frac{2}{1}$ , and all the musical genera and modes, are produced by different intervals, or a different order of intervals, in the four sounds of the tetrachord. This is the simplest explanation of the words,  $\hat{\epsilon}\nu$  τοῖς φθόγγοις τέτταρα, sc.  $\epsilon$ ἴδη. Cp. Theaet. 206  $\Lambda$  ἐν δὲ κιθαριστοῦ τελέως μεμαθηκέναι μῶν ἄλλο τι ἢν ἢ τὸ τῷ φθόγγῳ ἑκάστῳ δύνασθαι ἐπακολουθεῖν, ποίας χορδῆς εἴη, â δὴ στοιχεῖα πᾶς ἂν ὁμολογήσειε μουσικῆς λέγεσθαι; (2) Westphal, who interprets the words ἐν τοῖς φθόγγοις τέτταρα as = εἴδη άρμονιῶν τέτταρα (εἴδη corresponding to the γένη of later writers), is compelled to assume that Plato here includes the Locrian mode, to which he has nowhere alluded: Griechische Harmonik (1886), § 31, p. 234. (3) Mr. Monro believes that τὰ ἐν τοῖς φθόγγοις τέτταρα are the Pythagorean ratios  $\frac{2}{1}$ ,  $\frac{3}{2}$ ,  $\frac{4}{3}$ , .

καὶ μετὰ Δάμωνος It is Damon in the Laches who is supposed to have imparted to Nicias his ideas about education (Laches 180 c, d: 200 A). Compare p. 200, where Laches ironically says to him: πάνν δὴ μεγάλην ἐλπίδα εἶχον ὡς τῆ παρὰ τοῦ Δάμωνος σοφία αὐτὴν (sc. ἀνδρείαν) ἀνενρήσεις. Damon is said by Plutarch, de Mus. 16, to have invented 'the relaxed Lydian mode' (see above). καί, as in καὶ εἰσαῦθις. We are not limited to our own wisdom in this, but may confer with Damon too.

B

Republic III. 400 B τοις ἐναντίοις ] SC. τοις ἐλευθερίοις καὶ σώφροσιν, &C.

οίμαι δέ με . . . προσήπτε] The masculine accusatives in this sentence belong not to the rhythms as such, but only to the feet, which have been spoken of above as the είδη έξ ων αί βάσεις πλέκονται. [B. J. questioned this, pointing to the words τους ρυθμούς αὐτούς below as well as to ρυθμούς in the sentence itself. But can the words δάκτυλου, ιαμβον, τροχαίον be used for the corresponding rhythms (δακτυλικόν, &c.)? L. C.] The cretic (ἐνόπλιος) is composite (ξύνθετος), being made up of a trochee and a long syllable --- -, in fact a ditrochaeus catalecticus. ήρφος, which is elsewhere an epithet of the dactylic hexameter rhythm, seems here (sc. πούς) to stand for the spondee, and the following words are an obscure way of saying that the spondee is equivalent to the dactyl, which is only a resolved spondee: 'a dactylic and also an heroic foot, which he somehow arranged so that arsis and thesis were equal, and long syllables and short were inter-changeable.' By expressing himself in this awkward way, Socrates parades his affected ignorance of the subject. His use of the terms ἄνω, κάτω, however, is quite accurate. See Westphal's Metrik (1885), pp. 103, 104, and Aristoxenus, § 16, p. 20. (The inversion of the terms  $d\rho\sigma s$  and  $\theta\epsilon\sigma s$  need not detain us here.)

ἐνόπλιον τέ τινα, κ.τ.λ.] That ἐνόπλιον is the Cretic we learn amid some variety of statement from the Scholiast on Arist. Nubes 651: οἱ δὲ ἐνόπλιον, τὸν ἀμφίμακρον, ὁς καὶ Κρητικὸς καλεῖται. The view in question is confirmed by this passage in which the mention of the Cretic or Paeon in illustrating the three kinds of metres (τρία ἄττα εἴδη) could hardly have been omitted. Plato takes no account of epitrite and Ionic metres. He probably discarded them as too composite and irregular. For Damon cp. Isocrates περὶ ἀντιδόσεως 251 where he is described as one of the wisest of the citizens and the teacher of Pericles.

C καὶ τούτων . . . ξυναμφότερόν τι] 'And in respect of some of these he appeared to praise and blame the movement of the foot quite as much as the rhythms themselves;—or perhaps the combined effect of both.' The meaning of τὰs ἀγωγὰs τοῦ ποδός is the comparative speed or slowness of singing or reciting (tempo). The

foot has clearly different effects in different times.

This agrees with the definition of Aristides, quoted by Westphal, Metrik (1885), p. 336: ᾿Αγωγὴ δέ ἐστι ῥυθμικὴ χρόνων τάχος ἡ βραδυτής, οἷον ὅταν τῶν λόγων σωζομένων οὖς αἱ θέσεις ποιοῦνται πρὸς τὰς ἄρσεις

διαφόρως έκάστου χρόνου τὰ μεγέθη προφερώμεθα. And it is confirmed by Aristoxenus, quoted by Porphyr. ad Ptolem. p. 255 (Westphal, op. cit. p. 78) εἴπερ εἰσὶν έκάστου τῶν ῥυθμῶν ἀγωγαὶ ἄπειροι, ἄπειροι ἔπονται καὶ οἱ πρῶτοι (sc. χρόνοι) . . . ο̂s ἃν ληφθῆ τῶν ῥυθμῶν, ὅμοιον εἰπεῖν ὁ τροχαῖος, ἐπὶ τῆς δή τινος ἀγωγῆς τεθεὶς ἀπείρων ἐκείνων πρώτων ἔνα τινὰ λήψεται εἰς αὐτόν: i.e. the time depends on the metrical unit o, and conversely the length of the metrical unit differs according to the time.

Republic III. 400 C

άλλὰ ταῦτα μέν, κ.τ.λ.] Is Plato serious or affected in his ignorance of music and metres? He probably knew all that was known of music and mathematics in his own day. The feigning of ignorance seems therefore to be an artistic excuse for touching lightly on a subject, of which the lengthened discussion would have been out of place.

η συ οίει ; ] sc. σμικροῦ λόγου είναι.

ταῦτά γε λόγω ἀκολουθητέον] = δεῖ ταῦτα ἀκολουθεῖν.

1)

εὐλογία ἄρα . . . διάνοιαν] Subject, style, metre, music, make up a fourfold harmony which in modern times has become dislocated and discordant, the style not being perfectly expressive of the subject, nor even lyric poetry always intended for song, and the time of the music being generally divorced from the metre of the words. Whether such an ideal as Plato imagines can be attained may be doubtful, as music can rarely express ideas, and the principles of articulate and inarticulate sound are necessarily different.

This musical harmony Plato partly confuses with a well-balanced life, and partly regards as the great instrument of attaining moral harmony. He is right in supposing that simplicity is a first principle both of art and life. Compare the defence of the ordinary education in μουσική which he puts in the mouth of Protagoras—Protag. 326 Β καὶ τοὺς ἡυθμούς τε καὶ τὰς ἀρμονίας ἀναγκά-ζουσιν οἰκειοῦσθαι ταῖς ψυχαῖς τῶν παίδων, ἵνα ἡμερώτεροί τε ὧσι, καὶ εὐρυθμότεροι καὶ εὐαρμοστότεροι γιγνόμενοι χρήσιμοι ὧσιν εἰς τὸ λέγειν τε καὶ πράττειν πᾶς γὰρ ὁ βίος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου εὐρυθμίας τε καὶ εὐαρμοστίας δεῖται.

τὸ αὐτῶν πράττειν] 'To do their duty as guardians.'

E

αὐτῶν] sc. of the principles of rhythm and order implied in ταῦτα supra. For the expression cp. Phil. 56 λ μεστὴ μέν που μουσικὴ πρῶτον, κ.τ.λ.

401 A Republic III. 401 B-403 C The rules which have been laid down for poetry and literature must now be extended to the other arts—building, painting, &c. For in these likewise there is the expression of mind and character. And when the true harmony and rhythm, inspired by nobleness of heart, is observed by all of them, our youth will be able to feast eye and ear on fair sights and sounds; they will dwell in a land of health where refreshing breezes blow and will gather good from all things.

But of all the arts music, taken in the larger sense, is the most potent for good or for evil. And he who has been rightly trained in this will take less harm from outward things and will grow into natural conformity with reason, so that rational ideas when they are presented to him in due time will be recognized by him and find their way into his soul—just as one who has learnt the alphabet will attain to the power of reading the most complex writing, and will recognize the faintest trace of the familiar characters, even when reflected in water.

The fairest of all sights is the incarnation of these principles—as when a fair soul finds habitation in a body as fair, or even not so fair. The liberal education of our youth will culminate in having such a friend, not as the object of passionate longings, but of affectionate and well-attempered intercourse.

401 B

ΐνα μὴ ἐν κακίας εἰκόσι, κ.τ.λ.] In what relation does good taste stand to morals, or beauty to truth, or character to virtue, or strength to right, or in general, what is external to what is within us? About these and similar questions there is in Plato a degree of ambiguity arising partly out of the Greek nature and education, partly out of the imperfect modes of conception which prevailed in the beginning of philosophy. To us the difference between art and morality is almost as permanent and settled as the distinction of intellect and will, and hardly less important. The dexterity or skill of hand of the mechanic is at once seen to be perfectly distinct from his moral character: though of course the hand is only the executor of the mind. In the fine arts, as we call them, here again making a distinction unknown to the ancients in the time of Plato, there is more danger of confusion, because a moral, or rather, perhaps, a sentimental, element enters into them. That is to say, the poet, painter, &c., must, at the time of executing his work, feel the thought to which he gives expression. But this temporary sentiment is really distinguished from the permanent basis of his

character. Ancient philosophy was little concerned with criticisms Republic on art, and failed to make this analysis. Aristotle does indeed discuss the question whether the good citizen may be also a good man: but he never asks the parallel question, whether the good poet or good artist must be also a good man. In Plato, art has a large share in early education, but seems in later life to be superseded by speculative intelligence, which becomes the centre of truth and goodness. The discussion of such questions realizes to us the difficulty of reproducing a mental world which is different from our own. Compare the speech of Pericles in Thucydides (ii. 39-41).

ὁπόθεν . . . προσβάλη] 'From whatever source some influence of fair works stirs the sense of sight or hearing,' πρὸς ὄψω not exactly =  $\pi \rho \delta s \delta \mu \mu a$  but includes the notion of  $\pi \rho \delta s \tau \delta \delta \rho \hat{a} \nu$ . Cp. Theaet. 152 E-157 A.

C

ωσπερ αυρα 'like a breeze which wafts health from wholesome places.' αὔρα, not λύρα, as in the critical note, is the reading of Par. A.

D

φέροντα For the neuter plural, referring to two words (ρυθμός and άρμονία) which are not in the same gender, cp. Herod. iii. 57 ην τότε ή ἀγορή καὶ τὸ πρυτανήϊον Παρίω λίθω ήσκημένα.

E.

καὶ ὅτι αὖ . . . ὁ οὕτω τραφείς | Education may be truly regarded as a process in which instincts, feelings, impressions, words, rules, are gradually ennobled and lighted up by reasoning and reflection. The results of reasoning and reflection may again become instincts and feelings; no conscious effort of thought is required to recall the first principles of morality. But this practical intuition of morals which is gained by use must not be confounded with that narrower and feebler perception of right and wrong which is given in childhood; or with the simple abstractions of right and wrong which are gained by later reflection.

Plato is conscious of the importance of educating the sense of beauty in childhood. The standard of taste, as of manners and morals, may be indefinitely raised by the atmosphere of early life\_

έκει Sc. έν μουσική: cp. infra 404 Ε οὐκοῦν έκει μέν ἀκολασίαν ή ποικιλία ένέτικτεν.

καὶ ὀρθῶς δὴ \*χαίρων . . . καταδεχόμενος Baiter, in the Zurich edition of 1881, adopted this very plausible conjecture of Maur. Republic 111. 401 E. Vermehren. Cp. Arist., Eth. Nic. ii. 3, § 2 δεῖ ἦχθαί πως ἐκ νέων, ὡς δ Πλάτων ψησίν, ὡστε χαίρειν τε καὶ λυπεῖσθαι οἶς δεῖ. [B. J. would have retained the manuscript reading χαίρων καὶ καταδεχόμενος = 'rejoicing in them and receiving them into his soul.']

402 A

ἄσπερ ἄρα, κ.τ.λ.] The image of letters, helped by the ambiguous use of the word στοιχείον, had a considerable influence on Plato's mind. At the end of the Theaetetus (201) an attempt is made to explain knowledge as a combination of elements, στοιχεία, which, like the letters of a word, have a meaning only in combination; and the same image occurs in the Sophist, 252 E. Cp. Polit. 278 p ταὐτὸν τοῦτο ἡμῶν ἡ ψυχὴ φύσει περὶ τὰ τῶν πάντων στοιχεία πεπονθυῖα, κ.τ.λ.: Phil. 17 Λ: Tim. 48 B.

ὅτε τὰ στοιχεῖα . . . μὴ λανθάνοι] 'Whenever the letters, though few, were detected by us.'

oîs] sc.  $\vec{\epsilon} \nu$  oîs.

В

ώς οὐ δέοι] oratio obliqua, depending on the thought implied in ἢτιμάζομεν = 'under the idea that we need not notice them.' So below, πρὶν . . . ἔχοιμεν is indirect in past time for  $\pi \rho$ ὶν  $\mathring{a}\nu$  . . . ἔχωμεν.

ἀληθῆ] The sentence from ωσπερ ἄρα is an anacoluthon; the thought is interrupted by the eager assent of Glaucon to the illustrative statement (ἀληθῆ), and after being expanded with οὐκοῦν, κ.τ.λ., is resumed and completed in the words, ἆρ' οὖν, δ λέγω, πρὸς θεῶν, οὖτως οὐδὲ μουσικοί, κ.τ.λ. For a similar interruption of a comparison softened in the same way by a reference to what precedes, cp. Theaet. 197 C, D ἀλλ' ωσπερ εἴ τις, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ εἰκόνας γραμμάτων] Plato remembers that the highest forms of virtue to be found in human life are but shadows of the ideas, reflected on a fleeting stream.

αὖτά] the letters themselves—opposed to their shadows.

C

καὶ ἐλευθεριότητος καὶ μεγαλοπρεπείας] Cp. vi. 486 A. The list of four 'cardinal' virtues is not here regarded as exhaustive. And in the present enumeration Justice is held in reserve.

πανταχοῦ περιφερόμενα γνωρίζωμεν] Cp. Theaet. 197 D ένίας δὲ μόνας διὰ πασῶν, ὅπη ἄν τύχωσι, πετομένας: Polit. 278 D μετατιθέμενα δ' εἰς τὰς τῶν πραγμάτων μακρὰς καὶ μὴ ῥαδίους συλλαβὰς . . . ἀγνοεῖ;

**ἀτιμάζωμεν**] Compare Parmen. 130 Ε οἴπω σου ἀντείληπται φιλοσοφία ὡς ἔτι ἀντιλήψεται κατ' ἐμὴν δύξαν, ὅτε οὐδὲν αὐτῶν ἀτιμάσεις.

ἐκείνοις] SC. τοῖς ἤθεσι.

Republic

τῶν δὴ ὅ τι μάλιστα...οἰκ ἄν ἐρῷη] 'The man who has the spirit of harmony will be enamoured, then, of those who have most of this character; but of one who is inharmonical he will not be enamoured.'

402 D

Compare Symp. 209 Β τά τε οὖν σώματα τὰ καλὰ μᾶλλον ἡ τὰ αἰσχρὰ ἀσπάζεται ἄτε κυῶν, καὶ ἐὰν ἐντύχη ψυχῆ καλῆ καὶ γενναία καὶ εὐφυεῖ, πάνυ δὴ ἀσπάζεται τὸ ξυναμφότερον: ibid. 210 Β, C μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα τὸ ἐν ταῖς ψυχαῖς κάλλος τιμιώτερον ἡγήσασθαι τοῦ ἐν τῷ σώματι, ὥστε καὶ ἐὰν ἐπιεικὴς ὧν τὴν ψυχήν τις καὶ ἐὰν σμικρὸν ἄνθος ἔχῃ, ἐξαρκεῖν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐρῷν καὶ κήδεσθαι, κ.τ.λ.

E

. μανθάνω . . . καὶ συγχωρῶ] A similar allusion to Glaucon's character occurs in v. 474 D ἄλλω, εἶπον, ἔπρεπεν, ὧ Γλαύκων, λέγειν ἃ λέγεις ἀνδρὶ δ' ἐρωτικῷ οὐ πρέπει ἀμνημονεῖν, κ.τ.λ. The σιμότης of Theaetetus is a case in point (Theaet. 185 E).

ης εκφρονα ποιεί] Cp. the description of the marvellous effects of pleasure in Phileb. 47 A.

τη ἄλλη ἀρετή] ες, καὶ ήδονη ὑπερβαλλούση ἔστι τις κοινωνία;

403 B

τὰ δ' ἄλλα . . . ὑφέξοντα] 'But for the rest he should so associate with him for whom he may care as never to be found to pass beyond this limit; and if he does, he is to be censured for coarseness and bad taste:' i. e. if he goes beyond what is implied in the words φιλεῖν, ξυνεῖναι, ἄπτεσθαι ὥσπερ νίέος. σπουδάζοι—the optative (for ἀν σπουδάζη), because the legislation applies to an imagined future, or as Riddell would say, Digest § 74 β, is intended to belong to all time. δόξει is not to be taken emphatically; not 'even appear to' but simply 'be thought to.' A fact is spoken of, not as unreal or uncertain, but with reference to the impression which it creates. Cp. Thuc. iii. 10, § 1 εἰ μὴ μετ' ἀρετῆς δοκούσης ἐς ἀλλήλους γίγνοιντο: Soph. O. T. 402 εἰ δὲ μὴ 'δόκεις γέρων | εἶναι.

ύφέξοντα] is dependent on νομοθετήσεις, the construction changing from the infinitive to the participle. Cp. supra 389 c λέγοντι.

Aristotle in the Politics (ii. 4, § 3) refers to this passage: ἄτοπον δὲ κοινοὺς . . . διαφέρειν καὶ τὸ τὴν συνουσίαν ἀφελεῖν δι' ἄλλην μὲν αἰτίαν μηδεμίαν, ὡς λίαν δ' ἰσχυρᾶς τῆς ἡδονῆς γινομένης ὅτι δ' ὁ μὲν πατὴρ ἢ υἰός, οἱ δ' ἀδελφοὶ ἀλλήλων, μηθὲν οἴεσθαι διαφέρειν. There seems to be some misunderstanding here. Plato has said that love is not to go beyond the innocent sort of familiarity which

Republic III. 403 subsists between members of a family. This is only an illustration of what is to be permitted. But Aristotle seems either to assume that Plato allows of improper intimacy between near relations, or to think that he ought to have distinguished different cases on some other ground than the mere violence of the pleasure. As he is evidently referring to this place, he has probably been misled by a confused recollection of the words,  $\tilde{a}\pi\tau\epsilon\sigma\theta a\iota$   $\tilde{\omega}\sigma\pi\epsilon\rho$   $vi\epsilon\sigma$ , or is drawing a strained inference by connecting this passage with the regulations in Bk. v.

403 C-405 D Meanwhile their physical education will not have been neglected. We may observe that a good mind makes a good body, not a good body a good mind; and so if the mind be well trained, it will be enough for us to lay down general rules about gymnastics, leaving the more particular care of the body to the mind herself. The first rule will be that of temperance, and it must follow that our system of training must be different from that of the Hellenic athlete, which is both dangerous to health and inconsistent with mental activity. Our youth must be always on the alert, and their training must be suited to their warlike duties.

In gymnastics as in music simplicity will be the guiding principle. And in this we shall follow Homer, whose warriors are no fish nor stewed meats, but simple roast, and that without sauce. Far be from our youth the luxury of Sicily and the lasciviousness of Corinth, or even the niceties of Athenian confectionery.

Living in this simple fashion they will have no need of the lawcourts and the doctor's shop.

403 D èμοὶ μὲν γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] The excellence of the mind is not dependent on the body, but the excellence of the body on the mind. Plato does not mean to say that greatness of soul will give the strength of Milo, or that an effort of the will is able to raise men above their bodily condition. But the mind has the initiative; it trains the body when duly trained itself; beginning in youth and considered with reference to the whole of life, the power of reason is really very great, if not supreme, over health and strength. Every man is either a fool or a physician in some degree: he is his own best watchman, and has the power of observing and controlling his bodily habit.

Plato also regards the subject from another point of view: the mind is prior to the body as ideas are prior to sensible objects. There is something doubtful and ambiguous in such a notion, but

there is also the crude form of a truth which in modern times has Republic been greatly neglected. Compare the fragment of Democritus, Frag. Mor. 128 (Mullach): ἀνθρώποισι άρμόδιον ψυχής μᾶλλον ή σώματος ποιέεσθαι λόγον ψυχή μεν γάρ τελεωτάτη σκήνεος μοχθηρίην όρθοί, σκήνεος δε ίσχυς άνευ λογισμού ψυχήν οὐδέν τι άμείνω τίθησι. Also Charmides 156 Ε πάντα γὰρ ἔφη ἐκ τῆς ψυχῆς ὡρμῆσθαι καὶ τὰ κακὰ καὶ τὰ ἀγαθὰ τῷ σώματι καὶ παντὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, καὶ ἐκείθεν ἐπιρρείν ὥσπερ ἐκ τῆς κεφαλής έπὶ τὰ ὄμματα δείν οὖν έκείνο καὶ πρῶτον καὶ μάλιστα θεραπεύειν. See also Laws x. 891 ff. for the priority of mind. That the object of Gymnastic is mental and not bodily training (εὶ μὴ εἰ πάρεργον) is a truth which is more fully brought out infra, 410 B, ff., 411 E.

μέθης . . . ἀφεκτέον αὐτοῖς | supra 390 A, B: 395 E.

E

403

τί δὲ δη ... ἀγῶνος 'But next what shall we say of their food? For the men are in training for the greatest of contests.' Compare Laws viii. 829 E, where the legislator is supposed to ask himself: φέρε, τίνας ποτε τρέφω την πόλιν όλην παρασκευάσας; ἄρ' οὐκ ἀθλητὰς τῶν μεγίστων αγώνων, οίς ανταγωνισταί μυρίοι υπάρχουσι;

αρ' οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] Training is of use as the preliminary of any extraordinary bodily exertion, yet dangerous to health generally because inducing an artificial state, and increasing the muscular, while often impairing the constitutional powers.

ή τῶνδε τῶν ἀσκητῶν ἔξις] 'The condition of our ordinary athletes.' Cp. Symp. 211 C ἀρχόμενον ἀπὸ τῶνδε τῶν καλῶν.

ούς γε ώσπερ κύνας . . . υγίειαν ] Cp. ii. 375 A δξύν τέ που δεί αὐτοῖν εκάτερον εἶναι πρὸς αἴσθησιν καὶ ελαφρὸν πρὸς τὸ αἰσθανόμενον διωκάθειν, καὶ Ισχυρον αὖ, ἐὰν δέη ἐλόντα διαμάχεσθαι.

404

καὶ τῶν ἄλλων σίτων 'And of food also.' ἄλλων adverbial. ἀκροσφαλεῖς] 'Easily upset.' Cp. ἀκρόχολος.

В

άπλη που καὶ ἐπιεικὴς γυμναστική, καὶ μάλιστα ή τῶν περὶ τὸν πόλεμον The subject of the first part of this sentence is ή βελτίστη γυμναστική and the predicate of the second part μάλιστα άπλη καὶ έπιεικής. The verb in both cases—αν είη—is supplied from the preceding words. The force of τις (ἀδελφή τις) must be continued with άπλη καὶ ἐπιεικής. The whole would be: ή βελτίστη γυμναστική άπλη που καὶ ἐπιεικὴς τις γυμναστικὴ ἂν εἴη, καὶ ἡ τῶν περὶ τὸν πόλεμον μάλιστα άπλη καὶ ἐπιεικής αν είη.

καὶ παρ' Όμήρου . . . μάθοι ἄν τις 'Even from Homer,' whom in other cases we blame, 'one may learn such simple matters as Republic this.' Cp. supra ii. 383 B: Crat. 391 C άλλ' εἰ μὴ αὖ σε ταῦτα ἀρέσκει,

III. παρ' 'Ομήρου χρὴ μανθάνειν καὶ παρὰ τῶν ἄλλων ποιητῶν.

404 B

 $\epsilon \nu$  'Ελλησπόντω] 'at the Hellespont.' The name is here given not to the straits merely, but to the country near them.

- C καὶ ὀρθῶς γε . . . ἀπέχονται] ὀρθῶς applies mainly to ἀπέχονται. 'They know it, and rightly abstain.'
- D ψέγεις ἄρα . . . εὖπαθείας] 'You would not have men keep a mistress, who mean to preserve their constitution?' 'Certainly not.' 'And you disapprove also of the delights, as they are termed, of Athenian confectionery?' For a similar association cp. ii. 373 Λ ἐταῖραι καὶ πέμματα. See also in the Laws, viii. 840 Λ, the account of Iccus of Tarentum and other athletes who διὰ τὸν 'Ολυμπίασί τε ἀγῶνα καὶ τούς τε ἄλλους . . . οὕτε τινὸς πώποτε γυναικὸς ηψατο, κ.τ.λ.

όλην γὰρ... ἀπεικάζοιμεν] 'We should not be far from the truth in comparing generally this way of feeding and living to the composition of melody and song in the panharmonic style and in all the rhythms.'

παναρμόνιον here means 'panharmonic style,' the style in which all the modes were combined and there were frequent transitions from one to another: above, 399 c, it was used of the instrument adapted to this style.

Ε ἐκεῖ ἐν τῆ μελοποιία καὶ ἀδῆ.

405 δικανική] Cobet would read δικαστική as in 409 ε: unnecessarily and against the MSS.

ὅταν δὴ ... σπουδάζωσιν] 'when even free-men concern themselves about such matters in great numbers and with much eagerness.' For καὶ ἐλεύθεροι cp. infra μὴ μόνον τοὺς φαύλους, κ.τ.λ.

- B [καὶ] ἀπορία οἰκείων] καί is found in all the MSS., and, though somewhat difficult, is defensible. There is a double evidence of the want of education: (1) that like a slave you receive a justice that is imposed on you from without, and (2) because you have none of your own. The last clause not only adds emphasis but gives a new point.
  - $\hat{\eta}$  δοκεῖ σοι . . . (c) ἐκείνου ἔτι αἴσχιον] The difficulty of this sentence arises chiefly from its length, and from the ambiguous use of τούτου, τοῦτο in the first clause. The mind has to be carried on

from πάντων μὲν οὖν, ἔφη, αἴσχιστον, to οἴκ, ἀλλὰ τοῦτ, ἔφη, ἐκείνον ἔτι αἴσχιον. 'Is it not a most disgraceful thing to send out for justice because you have no supply at home' (ἀπορία οἰκείων)?—such is the general meaning of the previous sentence. To which the answer is that 'nothing can be more disgraceful.' The argument proceeds: 'Do you think this importation of justice (τοῦτο) is more disgraceful than the further stage (τούτου) of the same evil, in which a man takes a pride in litigation?' &c. 'No,' is the reply, 'that is more disgraceful still.' For the play on words in αἴσχιστον and ἔτι αἴσχιον cp. infra iv. 423 c καὶ φαῦλόν γ', ἔφη . . . φαυλότερον τόδε.

Republic III. 405 B

C

ώς δεινὸς ὢν . . . λυγιζόμενος] ' under the idea that he is a master of crime, who is able to wriggle into and out of every corner and hole, bending like a withy (λυγιζόμενος) and getting away.' The reading λογιζόμενος, which is that of the majority of MSS. (but not of Par. A or the Scholiast), is feeble: it affords an instance of the substitution common in MSS., of a well-known word for a less known one. Another various reading—αὖ (or αὐ) λογιζόμενος (Vind. F. Flor. X. Aug. v) is an indirect testimony to the reading of the text, as it has probably arisen from a confusion of the two, λογιζόμενος becoming Λογιζόμενος. For the imagery cp. Arist. Nub. 449, 450:—

μάσθλης, εἴρων, γλοιός, ἀλαζών, κέντρων, μιαρός, στρόφις, ἀργαλέος, κ.τ.λ.

νυστάζοντος δικαστοῦ] 'of a nodding justice.' The epithet is intended to cast a slur upon the law-courts.

τὸ δὲ ἰατρικῆς] The words φύσας τε καὶ κατάρρους correspond to ρευμάτων τε καὶ πνευμάτων in the words immediately preceding. For φῦσα cp. especially Xen. Cyr. i. 2, 16 αἰσχρὸν . . . ἔτι καὶ νῦν ἐστι Πέρσαις . . . τὸ φύσης μεστοὺς φαίνεσθαι.

άλλά] is adversative to the negative idea contained in ο τι μή.

δίαιταν οΐαν διήλθομεν viz. in 403 p ff., although the errors in diet have been rather hinted at than described. But see especially 404 p.

405 D-408 C

D

How simple were the prescriptions of the sons of Asclepius, for the wounded heroes who had lived as Homer describes! Very different is the practice nowadays, since Herodicus, himself a valetudinarian, has taught men to prolong their sickly lives by regimen.

The common workman has no time to be ill. Neither has the

Republic 111. 405 D- rich man, if, as Phocylides says, he ought to practise virtue. For to this or any other serious pursuit valetudinarianism is a great obstacle.

And Pindar and the tragic poets offended against principle when they said that Asclepius, who was a son of Zeus, was bribed to bring a man back to life, who in the course of Nature ought to have died.

405 E Εὐρυπύλω It is Machaon (the Asclepiad), not Eurypylus, who receives the potion at the hands of Hecamede (Il. xi. 624). The name Eurypylus is repeated below, 408 Λ. It is observable that the same circumstance is rightly narrated of Machaon in the Ion (538 c). The mistake is natural (as the wound of Eurypylus occurs only a few lines earlier Il. xi. 575 ff.), and ought not to be adduced as a proof that the text of Homer was different in Plato's time.

406

å δη δοκεί] 'which, as you know, are considered to be rather inflammatory.'

τῆ παιδαγωγικῆ τῶν νοσημάτων] 'That watches over the course of a disease,'—as a tutor (παιδαγωγός) over a growing boy. Cp. infra παρακολουθῶν . . . τῷ νοσήματι. The word παιδαγωγεῖν recurs in the same sense in Tim. 89 p, but the passage in which it is found has a very different spirit, for Plato has changed his mind:—διὸ παιδαγωγεῖν δεῖ διαίταις πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα, καθ' ὅσον τῶν ἢ τῷ σχολή, ἀλλ' οὐ φαρμακεύοντα κακὸν δύσκολον ἐρεθιστέον.

'Ηρόδικος δὲ παιδοτρίβης ὤν, κ.τ.λ.] Little is known of Herodicus (ὁ Σηλνμβριανός, τὸ δὲ ἀρχαῖον Μεγαρεύς Protag. 316 E). From Plato's account we infer that he substituted regimen for medicine; in so doing he was probably in advance of his age. Two other notices of him in Plato agree with this passage: (1) Protag. 316 E, where he is called, with some degree of depreciation, 'a first-rate Sophist'—but this we may observe to be only said of him in the same sense in which Plato speaks of the poets as Sophists: (2) there is a pleasant mention of him at the commencement of the Phaedrus, where he is supposed to recommend walks in the open air, as far as the walls of Megara and back again (Phaedr. 227 D). According to Aristotle, Rhet. i. 5, § 10, Herodicus himself expressed an opinion not far removed from Plato's here: πολλοὶ... ὑγιαίνουσιν ὥσπερ Ἡρόδικος λέγεται, οῦς οὐδεὶς ἂν εὐδαιμονίσειε τῆς ὑγιείας δὶὰ τὸ πάντων ἀπέχεσθαι τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων ἢ τῶν πλείστων.

νοσώδης γενόμενος] 'having fallen into bad health.' Cp. Plato's own opinion that the physician should not be in robust health— 408 D, E.

Republic 406

В

δυσθανατών . . . ἀφίκετο] 'So struggling against death by his cleverness he reached old age.' His sickly life, prolonged by care, was in fact a lingering and painful death. Cp. Tim. 75 B τοῖς περί την ημετέραν γένεσιν δημιουργοίς, αναλογιζομένοις πότερον πολυχρονιώτερον χείρον ή βραχυχρονιώτερον βέλτιον απεργάσαιντο γένος, ξυνέδοξε τοῦ πλείονος βίου φαυλοτέρου δε τον ελάττονα αμείνονα όντα παντί πάντως αίρετέον.

καλόν For the ironical use of καλόν cp. Theaet. 183 Α καλόν αν ήμιν συμβαίνοι τὸ ἐπανόρθωμα τῆς ἀποκρίσεως, κ.τ.λ.

οὐκ ἀγνοία, κ.τ.λ.] It is assumed that Asclepius, as Apollo's son, must have had a Divine knowledge of the art of healing, and Plato implies that the innovation in question is not merely erroneous, but impious.

πασι τοις εὐνομουμένοις is a dative of the persons interested: 'for the behoof of any well-governed community.'

δ ήμεις . . . οὐκ αἰσθανόμεθα] ' This we observe in the case of the artisan, and ludicrously enough fail to make the application to people of the richer sort.' The adverb γελοίως has a predicative force (=γελοία δρῶντες). Cp. supra i. 332 A όπότε τις μὴ σωφρόνως άπαιτοι ; Thuc. i. 21, § 1 ἀπίστως ἐπὶ τὸ μυθώδες ἐκνενικηκότα. δοκούντων is used with a slight contempt.

μακράν Some MSS. read μικράν, among them Par. A. But μακράν has sufficient manuscript authority and agrees better with the context, even if μικρά δίαιτα were a natural expression for 'low diet.'

εἶπεν . . . ἀπηλλάγη are gnomic aorists, used in general statements to give greater liveliness, as in the Homeric similes. has an association of boldness, 'embarking on his accustomed mode of life.'

ην τι αὐτώ ἔργον . . . ἐλυσιτέλει] The past tenses refer to the previous supposition, 406 c, D.

άβίωτον recalls οὐκ έλυσιτέλει ζην.

οὔκουν δὴ λέγεταί γε ς. ὁ πλούσιος ἔχειν τοιοῦτον ἔργον προκείμενον.

μηδέν, εἶπον . . . (B) οὐδὲν ἐμποδίζει 'Let us not quarrel with him on this head' (viz. at what time a man is to commence a life of VOL. III.

C

I)

E

407 A

Republic III. 407 A virtue), 'our object is rather to inform ourselves whether the rich are bound to practise virtue; he who fails to do so having no true life; or whether valetudinarianism is an impediment to the application of the mind in carpentering and other arts, but is no impediment to that which Phocylides enjoins.' The disjunctive sentence, which is complicated by the expansion of the second clause with  $\mu \dot{\epsilon} \nu$  and  $\delta \dot{\epsilon}$ , might be paraphrased as follows, 'if the rich man is allowed to be a valetudinarian, either he is not supposed to have any duties, or his duties must be of a kind with which the care of health does not interfere, as we found that it interfered with the work of the artisan.'

Plato is urging that the rich man, so far from having time to be an invalid, has the business of virtue always on hand, and that valetudinarianism is just as great a hindrance to the pursuit of this as it is to the occupation of the artisan. For the complex sentence cp. supra ii. 374 c and note: infra c, p.

В

Two MSS., q β', read  $\tau \hat{\varphi}$  . . . παρακελεύματι for  $\tau \hat{o}$  . . . παρακέλευμα, but the accusative, which is found in all the other MSS., is preferable. Cp. Phaedo 66 c έμποδίζουσιν . . . τὴν τοῦ ὅντος θήραν : Xen. Mem. i. 2, 4 ταύτην γὰρ τὴν ἔξιν ὑγιεινήν τε ἰκανῶς εἶναι καὶ τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς ἐπιμέλειαν οὐκ ἐμποδίζειν ἔφη: Aeschines 85, 35 ἐμποδίζειν τοὺς τῆς πόλεως καιρούς. 'But to the duty which Phocylides enjoins it (valetudinarianism) is no hindrance.' The datives, τεκτονικῆ μὲν καὶ ταῖς ἄλλαις τέχναις, depend in the first place on ἐμπόδιον, but also on τῆ προσέξει τοῦ νοῦ, which is added in further explanation.

έδραίους εν πόλει άρχάς] opposed to στρατείας.

τὸ δὲ δὴ μέγιστον] τὸ μέγιστον is a 'Noun-Phrase in apposition' (Riddell, Digest, § 13) to the notion of  $\epsilon \mu \pi o \delta i \zeta \epsilon_i$ , or  $\delta i \sigma \kappa \sigma \lambda o s$  ( $\epsilon \sigma \tau i \nu$ ) which is continued in thought.  $\mathring{\eta} \nu \delta$ '  $\epsilon \gamma \omega$  is omitted here, as above in 'O δὲ δὴ πλούσιος, κ.τ.λ.

C

μελέτας πρὸς έαυτόν] i.e. ὅταν μελετᾶ τίς τι πρὸς έαυτόν.

κεφαλης... διατάσεις] 'tensions' or 'fulnesses of the head,' i.e. headaches. This reading has the authority of Galen and Stephanus. Par. A and most other MSS. read διαστάσεις, 'distractions'—as we say, 'a splitting headache'—a violent use of the word.

ὅπη ταύτη] ταύτη sc. ἐν φιλοσοφία, including not only dialectic, but the preparatory studies of Bk. vii. For the two adverbs cp. Theaet. 194 A πάντη ταύτη ψεύδεται ἡ διάνοια: and for the general meaning Phaedo 66 Β μυρίας μὲν γὰρ ἡμῶν ἀσχολίας παρέχει τὸ σῶμα

Republic III. 407 C

τοὺς μὲν φύσει . . . τὰ δ' εἴσω, κ.τ.λ.] For the double form of the sentence (the two members of which may be joined by 'whereas') cp. supra b τεκτονικῆ μέν, κ.τ.λ.: iv. 445 A ἀλλ', ἔφη . . . βιωτὸν ἄρα ἔσται. The accusative in both parts of the sentence (τοὺς μὲν . . . ἔχοντας . . . ἴσχοντας) is a loose construction for which the dative τούτοις is afterwards substituted.

D

τὰ δ' εἴσω . . . λυσιτελῆ] (1) τὰ δ' εἴσω σώματα is accusative of reference. Both οὐκ ἐπιχειρεῖν and μὴ οἴεσθαι depend on φῶμεν in spite of the difference of negative, μή in indirect discourse being often used where we should expect οὐ. See Goodwin, M. and T., § 685. ἀπαντλοῦντα, sc. αὐτῶν: ἐπιχέοντα, sc. εἰς αὐτά. 'But as for bodies diseased to the core, shall we not say (φῶμεν) that he (sc. Asclepius) would not have attempted by regimen, that is by gradual processes of evacuation and effusion, to make a man's life long and evil, and to make men beget children probably as good for nothing as themselves,—he did not think that he ought to prescribe for any one who did not live in the accustomed round of life, under the idea that such an one was useless alike to himself and to the state.' [B. J.]

(2) τὰ...σώματα are in a pendent construction similar to τοὺς μέν, κ.τ.λ. above. Of the infinitives, προστάττειν and ἐπιχειρεῖν are in the construction with καταδείξαι: ποιεῖν is governed by ἐπιχειρεῖν, and φυτεύειν apparently by ποιεῖν: μὴ οἴεσθαι, however, would seem to depend on καταδείξαι ἰατρικήν supra, i.e. 'he taught his disciples so.' This seems required to justify the change from οὐ το μή, which helps to point the correspondence between τὸν μὴ δυνάμενον . . . ξῆν and what follows. [L. C.]

E

μὴ οἴεσθαι δεῖν θεραπεύειν] Cp. Laches 195 c ἢ οὐ πολλοῖς οἴει ἐκ τῆς νόσου ἄμεινων εἶναι μὴ ἀναστῆναι ἢ ἀναστῆναι; for the same thought.

πολιτικόν, ἔφη, λέγεις ᾿Ασκληπιόν] 'You make out Asclepius to have been a statesman.' Some of the commentators defend Plato against the charge of cruelty. But it is not necessary to view this half-ironical passage in so serious a light. His main conclusion, that the art of medicine should be made simple, is justified by the funcertainty of the subject and confirmed by modern science.

Republic III. 407 δῆλον, ἦν δ' ἐγώ' κ.τ.λ.] The reading of the inferior MSS, καὶ οἱ παίδες αὐτοῦ δεικνύοιεν ᾶν ὅτι τοιοῦτος ἦν ἢ οὐχ, κ.τ.λ. was due to a mistake as to the meaning of ὅτι. Sauppe would read δῆλοι . . . καὶ οἱ παίδες αὐτοῦ ὅτι τοιοῦτος ἦν, comparing Crito 4.4  $\,$ D δῆλα τὰ παρύντα . . . ὅτι, κ.τ.λ. But the text is right. 'That is manifest,' I said; 'and because of his statecraft, do you not see that his sons at Troy not only showed themselves brave in war, but practised medicine in the way I have described.'

408 A αΐμ' ἐκμυζήσαντ' ἐπί τ' ἤπια φάρμακ' ἔπασσον] Plato is quoting from memory, as is shown by the substitution of τε for ἄρα. ἐκμυζήσαντ' is dual. Asclepius had two sons, Podaleirius and Machaon. The words in Il. iv. 218 αἷμ' ἐκμυζήσας ἐπ' ἄρ' ἤπια φάρμακα εἰδὼς | πάσσε refer to Machaon only. Purves' rendering, 'He squeezed out the blood and sprinkled,' &c., is supported by the gloss in Suidas: ἐκμυζήσας, ἐκπιέσας, ἐκθλίψας. The notion seems to be that of pressing together the lips of the wound.

B Míδου] Plato probably has in mind the verses of Tyrt. Eleg. iii. (12 in Bergk) 5, 6:—

οὐδ' εἰ Τιθωνοῖο φυὴν χαριέστερος εἴη πλουτοίη δὲ Μίδεω καὶ Κινύρεω μάλιον.

The latter line is quoted with slight variation in the Laws ii. 660 e  $\hat{\epsilon}$   $\hat{a}\nu$   $\delta\hat{\epsilon}$   $\hat{a}\rho a$   $\pi \lambda o \nu \tau \hat{\eta}$   $\mu \hat{\epsilon}\nu$   $K \iota \nu \hat{\nu} \rho a$   $\tau \epsilon$   $\kappa a \lambda$   $M \delta a$   $\mu \hat{a} \lambda \lambda o \nu$ .

πάνυ κομψούς . . . παίδας] 'From what you say, the sons of Asclepius must have been very clever' (perhaps referring to 405 d τοὺς κομψοὺς 'Ασκληπιάδας).

καὶ Πίνδαρος] Pindar, Pyth. iii. 55:-

ἔτραπεν καὶ κείνον ἀγάνορι μισθῷ χρυσὸς ἐν χερσὶν φανεὶς ἄνδρ' ἐκ θανάτου κομίσαι ἤδη ἀλωκότα, κ.τ.λ.

Cp. Aesch. Agam. 1022, Eurip. Alc. 3, 4.

C κατὰ τὰ προειρημένα] sc. the principle laid down in 391 D—that no one can be at once a son of God and a bad man,—which is also alluded to in the words ἀπειθοῦντές γε ἡμῖν supra.

D καὶ μάλα . . . τοιούτους] 'Assuredly I mean good physicians, but do you know whom I consider to be such?' Socrates evades the point of Glaucon's question, viz. how the physician can see enough of disease in the 'healthy' commonwealth. Cp. supra 399 E. 405 E ff.

αν είπης] sc. είδείην αν. 'I should, if you would tell me.'

Republic III.

άλλὰ πειράσομαι . . . ἤρου] ('It is difficult,) but I will try, I said. Let me note, however, that in the same words you join two things which are dissimilar.'

408 D

ἐατροί, κ.τ.λ.] The most skilful doctors are those who combine experience of disease in their own persons as well as in those of others with the theoretical knowledge of their art. Plato is right in maintaining that the profession of a physician is one for which rude health is not in every respect a qualification. A delicate organization helps to give an intelligence of the bodily state of others.

αὐτά Sc. τὰ σώματα αὐτῶν.

Ε

γενομένην τε καὶ οὖσαν] 'which has been and is.' The periphrasis gives dignity to the expression. The phrase repeats κάμοιεν καὶ εἶεν... εἶναί ποτε καὶ γενέσθαι supra. It is implied that past evil leaves its trace in the soul.

δικαστής δέ γε, κ.τ.λ.] The case of the judge is different: his knowledge of evil ought not to be derived from the conversation of early companions, or the experience of his own 'wild oats.' 'The princely heart of innocence' is the foundation of a sound judgement in questions of right and wrong. The knowledge of evil and of the world had better wait until a man is older, and be obtained, not by introspection, but by study and observation of others.

On the other hand, that there may be in the best of men a narrowness of virtue and ignorance of human nature, which degenerates rapidly into a moral fault is not to be denied. And the tendency to believe that all the world are rogues is almost as characteristic of good men as of bad. There may also be in good men as well as bad, even without experience, a natural insight into the wickedness of mankind: this is a reflection which Plato stops short of making.

παραδείγματα όμοιοπαθή τοῖς πονηροῖς] 'Samples of experience shared in common with the wicked,' i. e. παραδείγματα παθῶν όμοίων τοῖς τῶν πονηρῶν.

409 B

C

καὶ ἀγαθός γε . . . σὸ ἠρώτας] 'Yes, and good too, which is what you were asking '—in the words above, 408 c ἆρ' οὐκ ἀγαθοὺς δεῖ ἐν τῆ πόλει κεκτῆσθαι ἰατρούς; κ.τ.λ. Socrates insists that the good judge must be a good man.

Refublic III. 409

D

σοφὸς οἰόμενος εἶναι | Cp. supra 395 D οἰομένην εὐδαίμονα εἶναι.

σοφώτερος . . . αὐτῷ τε καὶ ἄλλοις] 'He is more apt to be held wise than foolish, both in the opinion of others and in his own.'

ἀρετὴ δὲ φύσεως, κ.τ.λ.] 'But virtue, in a nature which is educated by time, will attain to a knowledge of herself and of vice likewise.'

χρόνω reads better if taken with παιδευομένης than with λήψεται. In the latter case there is a want of point, as the fact has been already stated that the knowledge of evil is obtained by time, above 409 Β ἐν πολλω χρόνω διαισθάνεσθαι οἶον πέφυκε κακόν. The principle that knowledge is of opposites is assumed.

ἐ ἀλλ' οὐχ ὁ κακός] sc. the rogue described above in the words—
 ὁ δὲ δεινὸς ἐκεῖνος καὶ καχύποπτος, κ.τ.λ.

A αὐτοὶ ἀποκτενοῦσιν] 'ultro occident.' αὐτοὶ refers to δικασταί and λατροί understood in δικαστικῆς and λατρικήν, which are the antecedents to αῖ: although strictly speaking only λατροί goes with ἐάσουσι and only δικασταί with ἀποκτενοῦσιν.

B åρ' οὖν ... ἀνάγκη;] 'And may not our student of music by following the same track—(i.e. aiming at simplicity) in his pursuit of gymnastic, gain an immunity from doctors, except in extreme cases?'

Simple training in music corrects the evil tendencies of law; simple gymnastic minimizes medicine. For the meaning of αἰρεῖν, 'to win' or 'gain,' cp. supra ii. 358 Ε τοῖς μὴ δυναμένοις τὸ μὲν ἐκφεύγειν τὸ δὲ αἰρεῖν.

αὐτὰ μὴν... μεταχειριεῖται] The 'muscular' philosophy of Plato aims at steadying the nerves,—πρὸς τὸ θυμοειδὲς... ἐκεῖνο,— at courage and endurance rather than at strength.

οί καθιστάντες . . . παιδεύειν] i. e. those who institute an education in music and gymnastic.

For the optative which follows see Riddell's Digest, § 75. Either, (1) as is there suggested, 'the dependent verb is intended to belong to all time'—καθιστᾶσιν being a generic present, 'who at any time appoint' (cp. viii. 566 Β ἐξευρίσκουσιν), or (2) the present tense may include a reference to the past as in Aristoph. Ran. 23:—

αὐτὸς βαδίζω καὶ πονῶ, τοῦτον δ' ὀχῶ, ἵνα μὴ ταλαιπωροῖτο μηδ' ἄχθος Φέροι—

i.e. 'I have been walking and toiling all this while.' Goodwin,

1 1 Y.

M. and T., § 323. The institutions of the legislator are present in R their operation, but the grounds for them were considered in past time. So οἱ καθιστάντες . . . παιδεύειν. 'Those who are the authors of the system of education which now prevails.'

Republic III. 410 B

αὐτὴν τὴν διάνοιαν] 'Even in their minds'—though you might on the expect the mind to be affected by their bodily training.

D

έγωγε, έφη] sc. έννοῶ, from οὐκ έννοείς above.

E

τὸ ἥμερον . . . φύσις] Cp. ii. 375 E.

**αὐτοῦ**] sc. τῆς φιλοσόφου φύσεως: the neuter for the feminine, as elsewhere. That ἀνεθέντος here means 'relaxed' rather than 'indulged' or 'set free' is proved not only by ἐπιταθέν supra, but by the use of ἀνιεῖσα in iv. 442 Λ τὸ δὲ ἀνιεῖσα παραμυθουμένη.

άμφοτέρα . . . τούτω τω φύσει] τήν τε θυμοειδή καὶ τὴν φιλόσοφον: cp. ii. 375 E.

411 A

δειλή καὶ ἄγροικος] The verbal parallelism is maintained without considering that the two vices are not necessarily combined. Cowardice arises from excess of music and deficiency of gymnastic—rudeness from deficiency of music and excess of gymnastic.

οὐκοῦν ὅταν . . ¿ποίησεν] 'Accordingly, when a man allows music to play upon him and to pour over his soul through his ears, as through a funnel, those sweet and soft and melancholy strains of which we were just now speaking, and when his whole life is passed in warbling and under the glamour of song, at first whatsoever passion there is in him he tempers like iron, and makes useful instead of brittle and useless.'

For the use of παρέχειν with the infinitive cp. Charm. 176 Β ην επάδειν παρέχης Σωκράτει, and for the fanciful meaning of καταυλείν viii. 561 C μεθύων καὶ καταυλούμενος: Laws vii. 790 Ε ἀτεχνῶς οἶον καταυλοῦσι τῶν παιδίων: Eurip. Η. F. 871 τάχα σ' εγὼ μᾶλλων χορεύσω καὶ καταυλήσω φόβω.

ας νῦν δη ήμεις ἐλέγομεν referring to supra 398 D, E.

τὸ μὲν πρῶτον...(Β) μαλθακὸν αἰχμητήν] 'At first he attempers what spirit he had in him, as steel is tempered, and makes it serviceable instead of stiff and useless. But when he perseveres to fascination-point, thenceforward he begins to waste his spirit away, till he have melted the spirit out of him, and as it were cut out the sinews from his soul, and made thereof a feeble warrior.' ἐμάλαξε, κηλῆ, τήκει, λείβει,—sc. τὸ θυμοειδές: ποιήση, sc. τὴν ψυχήν from τῆς ψυχῆς

Republic III. 411

В

preceding. Also in what follows, ψυχήν is to be supplied with ἄθυμον and θυμοειδη. For ἐπέχων μη ἀνίη, of one who keeps on doing anything unremittingly, cp. Theaet. 165 D ἥλεγχεν ᾶν ἐπέχων καὶ οὐκ ἀνιείς. For the Homericism μαλθακὸν αἰχμητήν see Il. xvii. 588, where Menelaus is so called.

C ἀντὶ θυμοειδοῦς] The use of the singular here seems to imply that the adjective in this and similar expressions is neuter. Cp. Theaet. 185 Ε καλὸς γὰρ εἶ, ὧ Θεαίτητε...πρὸς δὲ τῷ καλῷ εὖ ἐποίησάς με: Symp. 195 C νέος ... ἐστί, πρὸς δὲ τῷ νέῷ ὑπαλός.

καὶ εὖωχῆται εὖ μάλα] (1) 'and fare sumptuously'—with reference to the heavy feeding of Polydamas and his like (supra i. 338 c): or [rather, L. C.] (2) 'If he take his fill of it,' sc. τῆς γυμναστικῆς. Cp. i. 352 Β εὖωχοῦ τοῦ λόγου: Gorg. 518 Ε εὖωχοῦντες ὧν ἐπεθύμουν.

οὔτε λόγου μετίσχον οὔτε τῆς ἄλλης μουσικῆς] 'having no share in reason or in musical culture,' i. e. in those harmonies and rhythms, which are in accordance with reason. Cp. supra ii. 376 E, iii. 402 A.

αὐτοῦ] sc. τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, i. e. the indefinite subject of πον $\hat{\eta}$ , εὐωχ $\hat{\eta}$ ται, πράττ $\eta$ , κοινων $\hat{\eta}$ , &c.

E βία δὲ καὶ ἀγριότητι... ζη̂] 'And his only way of managing is by violence and fierceness, as if he were a wild beast, and he lives amid ignorance and perversity, with no sense of proportion or grace.'

πρὸς πάντα follows διαπράττεται, the genuineness of which there is no reason to doubt. For a similar use of διαπράττεσθαι as a neuter verb cp. Protag. 319 c περὶ μὲν οὖν ὧν οἴονται ἐν τέχνη εἶναι, οὕτω διαπράττονται.

ểπὶ δὴ δύ ὄντε τούτω, κ.τ.λ.] With Plato the effect of gymnastic on the body is of secondary importance compared with its effect

on the mind (cp. I Tim. iv. 8 ή γὰρ σωματική γυμνασία πρὸς ὀλίγον ἐστὶν ἀφέλιμος).

Republic III. 411 E

412

εἰ μὴ εἰ πάρεργον] The reading of the text, which is that of Ven. II, is partly confirmed by the first hand of Par. Λ, which reads εἰ μὴ εἶπερ εργον (sic). The omission of the second εἰ, or the substitution of εἴη in some MSS., are probably emendations, arising from the comparative singularity of the expression εἰ μὴ εἰ. But cp. ix. 581 D εἰ μὴ εἴ τι αὐτῶν ἀργύριον ποιεῦ: Gorg. 480 C εἰ μὴ εἴ τις ὑπολάβοι ἐπὶ τοὐναντίον.

τελέως μουσικώτατον] Compare a fine passage in the Laches 188 D καὶ κομιδη μοι δοκεῖ μουσικὸς ό τοιοῦτος εἶναι, άρμονίαν καλλίστην ήρμοσμένος, οὐ λύραν οὐδὲ παιδιᾶς ἄργανα, ἀλλὰ τῷ ἄντι ζην ἡρμοσμένος, and the definition of σωφροσύνη as a kind of harmony in iv. 430 E. Cp. also note on 400 D.

οὐκοῦν...σώζεσθαι;] 'And in our city, if the form of government is to last, shall we not have need of some one to preside over it, who is of the character now described?' τοῦ τοιούτου refers to the class which is definite, τινὸς to the individual who is undefined. It is obvious that this minister of education will be one of the chief magistrates, but this point is for the present left undetermined.

Our guardians have now been chosen, and the main lines of their training have been laid down. But which of them are to be placed in command? At present we must be contented with providing that the officers or rulers shall be of ripe age and appointed on the principle of merit. And by merit is to be understood a steady loyalty, which neither forgetfulness nor sophistry nor pain nor fear nor even pleasure is able to shake or undermine.

χορείας γὰρ... χαλεπὰ εὐρεῖν] As elsewhere, Plato avoids details: cp. his treatment of music (especially 399 Λ, 400 B), and his unwillingness to legislate about the smaller proprieties of life (iv. 425).

τούτοις] SC. τοῖς τύποις.

οτι μὲν πρεσβυτέρους, κ.τ.λ.] See Essay on Structure, vol. ii. C pp. 8, 9.

φρονίμους τε . . . δυνατούς] 'both wise and efficient for this object.' είς τοῦτο, sc. είς φυλακήν πόλεως.

When he first selects his rulers Plato is contented that they should

412 B-414 B

> 412 B

E

Republic be wise, capable and patriotic: they are not supposed to be philosophers. In Books v-vii he places his requirements far higher. He refers to this passage in vi. 502 D, Ε παραλιπόντι . . . την τῶν ἀρχύντων κατάστασιν, κ.τ.λ., vii. 536 C.

D καὶ [ὅταν μάλιστα] ] The MSS. read ὅταν μάλιστα, but ὅτι μάλιστα ('as far as is conceivable') is read in the quotation of Stobaeus. Hermann cancels both words, and Baiter (1881) plausibly suggests that they are due to the eye of the scribe having wandered back to τοῦτ |ὁ γ' ἄν μάλιστα. It is not probable that ὅταν is ever followed by the optative mood: either read ὅτι μάλιστα with Stobaeus, or follow Hermann and Baiter in the omission of the words. ἐκείνου, not οὖ, is written because the relative is not repeated in Greek: cp. ii. 357 B αἱ ἡδοναὶ ὅσαι ἀβλαβεῖς καὶ μηδὲν . . . διὰ ταύτας γίγνεται.

 $\mu \dot{\eta} \delta \dot{\epsilon}$ ] i. e.  $\mu \dot{\eta} \epsilon \dot{\tilde{v}} \delta \dot{\epsilon} \pi \rho \dot{\alpha} \tau \tau \sigma v \tau \sigma s \dot{\epsilon} \kappa \epsilon \dot{i} \nu \sigma v$ . The other reading,  $\epsilon \dot{\tilde{c}} \delta \dot{\epsilon} \mu \dot{\eta}$ , is probably conjectural.

φυλακικοί . . . τοῦ δόγματος] Plato is playing, as elsewhere, on the word φύλακες. They are guardians of the city, and guardians of the patriotic principle which is implanted in them by the laws.

φαίνεταί μοι δόξα, κ.τ.λ.] Plato takes occasion, in the description of the true guardian, to remind us that ignorance is involuntary, because no one can be supposed voluntarily to part with a good; and knowledge is a good. Compare Arist. Eth. Nic. vii. 2: supra ii. 382 A.

413

B

τραγικῶς . . . κινδυνεύω λέγειν] 'I seem, I said, to be speaking like a tragic poet,' i. e. obscurely: viii. 545 Ε φῶμεν αὐτὰς τραγικῶς, ώς πρὸς παίδας ἡμῶς παιζούσας καὶ ἐρεσχηλούσας. In the latter passage, however, there is an association of mock solemnity which is hardly present here. For κλέπτειν used in tragedy with a similar reference to memory cp. Soph. Ant. 681 εἰ μὴ τῷ χρόνφ κεκλέμμεθα.

νῦν γάρ που μανθάνεις] ['I say no more] for now, I suppose, you understand.'

C ὑπὸ φόβου τι δείσαντες] τι is a cognate accusative—not 'fearing something,' but 'having some fear.'

τοῦ παρ' αὐτοῖς δόγματος] παρ' αὐτοῖς is a little more emphatic than αὐτῶν—' which has been imparted to them.' Cp. Soph. O. T. 612 τὸν παρ' αὐτῷ βίστον.

 $\mathring{o}$   $\mathring{av}$  . . [ $\mathring{av}$ roîs  $\mathring{mole}$ îv]]  $\mathring{av}$ roîs is in the dative, because the interest of the state is also their own. 'That which they conceive

it best for their state that they should perform.' But the two words Reare better omitted.

Republic III. 413

τηρητέον] sc. ήμίν.

καὶ ἀγῶνας αὐτοῖς θετέον  $\theta$  is used with immediate reference to ἀγῶνας.

D

οὐκοῦν, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, . . . χρησιμώτατος εἴη] This passage is referred to in vi. 503 E, in the second education, where Socrates proceeds to speak of intellectual tests.

τρίτου εἴδους . . . ἄμιλλαν] 'A trial of a third sort, with regard to enchantments.' The genitive γοητείας adheres closely to ἄμιλλαν cp. ἀγὼν εὐψυχίας (Eur. Med. 402) and the like expressions.

Three dangers were mentioned above (A) in the words κλαπέντες η γοητευθέντες η βιασθέντες, and three tests are proposed of the capacity of the youths to meet them. Tasks are to be set them with a view to ascertain if they are proof against the two great thieves, Forgetfulness and Persuasion. They are to be subjected to hard toils and wearisome labours in order to show whether they can hold out against the violence of pain. A third and more subtle trial will test their powers to withstand the assaults of pleasure and fear. In the preceding sentence εξαπατώτο has no reference to ἀπατᾶ, but recalls κλαπέντας and μεταπεισθέντας supra. The accidental use of the same word in different connexions is slightly confusing.

καὶ εἰς ἡδονὰς αὖ μεταβλητέον] 'And again pass them into pleasures,' just as metal is passed through different processes of heating and cooling.

414

E

τάφων . . . λαγχάνοντα] 'having allotted to them the highest honours of sepulture and of the other memorials,' which the dead have, such as celebration on festival days, inscriptions on columns, sacrifices, and the ἄγραφος μνήμη spoken of by Pericles in Thucyd. ii. 43. λαγχάνοντα is made to agree with ἄρχοντα, the intervening clause τιμὰς δοτέον . . . τελευτήσαντι being neglected.

ως ἐν τύπω... εἰρῆσθαι] These words are inserted to prepare the way for Books v-vii.

В

ἄρ' οὖν ὡς ἀληθῶς . . . κακουργεῖν] φύλακες is used in two different senses with πολεμίων and φιλίων: 'to keep guard against the foe without and to watch\_over\_friends within.' ὅπως is dependent on οῦ φυλάξουσιν implied in φύλακας. The form φίλιος occurs here as elsewhere in Plato (Symp. 22  $\tau$  B) in connexion with πολέμιος,

Republic as φίλος goes with  $\epsilon \chi \theta \rho \dot{\omega}$ , perhaps from some affinity of rhythm.

III. οἱ μέν, i. e. οἱ ἐντὸς φίλιοι: οἱ δέ, i. e. οἱ ἔξωθεν πολέμιοι.

Now is the time for the founders of the state to invent a myth respecting its origin. 'Like the warriors of Cadmus, our citizens'—so the tale will run—'have sprung in full armour from the bosom of the land, who is their mother, so that they are brethren all. The rulers have Gold in their composition: the auxiliaries Silver, the artificers and husbandmen Brass and Iron. But, as they all spring from a common stock, these class-differences will not be absolutely hereditary. It will therefore be a task of the chief rulers to test the metal of the children of the citizens, and assign them to their proper classes, so that brass and iron may never take the place of gold and silver in the government of the state.

414

Τίς ἄν ... μηχανὴ ... τῶν ψευδῶν ... γενναῖόν τι ἕν ψευδομένους
πεῖσαι, κ.τ.λ.] The genitive τῶν ψευδῶν is to be taken partitively
with γενναῖόν τι ἔν: 'Would that by telling one of those necessary
falsehoods which we were mentioning,—just one noble lie—we
might find a way of persuading,' &c.

ων δη νου ελέγομεν] supra 389 B.

C μηδὲν καινόν] An implied imperative. 'I don't want anything new. It is an old story.'

Φοινικικόν τι, κ.τ.λ.] The mythical origin of the Cadmeans is again alluded to in Laws ii. 663 ε τὸ μὲν τοῦ Σιδωνίου μυθολόγημα ῥάδιον ἐγένετο πείθειν, οὕτως ἀπίθανον ὄν, καὶ ἄλλα μυρία. People have been readily persuaded of the tale of Cadmus. Why should not the legislator be able to persuade them of a similar tale?

γεγονὸς . . . γενόμενον ἄν] It is not clear whether γεγονός and γενόμενον ἄν refer to the acceptance of the story or to the occurrence of the facts mentioned in it. The ambiguity is perhaps intentional. Plato is half inclined for the moment 'to credit his own lie.' But cp. iv. 425 B οὔτε γάρ που γίγνεται, κ.τ.λ.

πείσαι δὲ συχνῆς πειθοῦς] sc. ὄν. 'But needing much persuasion' to persuade men of it.'

ώς ἔοικας, ἔφη, ὀκνοῦντι λέγειν] There is a similar hesitation on the part of Socrates in the Fifth Book, 450 D, 471 ff., where he is about to introduce his two great theses of communism and the philosopher-king. The fear is, of course, only pretended.

ώς ἄρ' ἃ ἡμεῖς, κ.τ.λ. ἄρα, 'according to our tale.'

Republic III.

έδόκουν ταῦτα πάντα πάσχειν, κ.τ.λ. εδόκουν is emphatic, opposed to ησαν—'they only thought.' ταῦτα πάντα is the object of πάσχειν and the subject of γίγνεσθαι—' they imagined that they suffered all these things and that they happened to them.'

414 D

E

καὶ ἡ γῆ αὐτούς, κ.τ.λ. καί helps to mark the correspondence of the clauses. They were being fashioned in the Earth, and when they were ready, even then the Earth sent them forth. driéval is rightly used of the offspring of the ground: cp. Soph. O. T. 270, 1405. For the creation of man in the bosom of the earth, compare Protag. 320 D τυποῦσιν αὐτὰ θεοὶ γῆς ἔνδον, κ.τ.λ. Plato has a special fondness for the fable of an earth-born race. Compare Symp. 190 B; Soph. 247 c, 248 B; Polit. 269 B; Tim. 23 E; Critias 109 C.

καὶ νῦν δεῖ ὡς περὶ μητρός, κ.τ.λ. Cp. Eteocles' appeal to the Cadmeans in Aesch. S. c. Th. 16-20 (πόλει τ' ἀρήγειν) . . .

> γη τε μητρί, φιλτάτη τροφώ: η γάρ νέους έρποντας εὐμενεί πέδω, απαντα πανδοκούσα παιδείας ὅτλον, έθρέψατ' οἰκιστήρας ἀσπιδηφόρους πιστούς, όπως γένοισθε πρός χρέος τόδε.

See also the description of Melanippus in the same play, 412-416:

σπαρτών δ' ἀπ' ἀνδρών, ὧν "Αρης ἐφείσατο, ρίζωμ' ἀνείται, κάρτα δ' ἔστ' ἐγχώριος, Μελάνιππος έργον δ' έν κύβοις "Αρης κρινεί" Δίκη δ' όμαίμων κάρτα νιν προστέλλεται είργειν τεκούση μητρί πολέμιον δόρυ.

οὖκ ἐτός . . . λέγειν 'You had good reason to be ashamed of the lie which you were going to tell.'

ίκανοὶ ἄρχειν ... ἐπίκουροι The distinction between the ἄρχοντες or φύλακες proper and the ἐπίκουροι has an important place in the analysis of the virtues (Book iv) and the development of philosophy in the state (Books vi and vii).

415 A

ατε οὖν ξυγγενεῖς ὄντες πάντες] These words refer to the second member of the sentence, ἔστι δ' ὅτε, κ.τ.λ., which has the chief emphasis. 'As you are all originally of one family,' specific differences will not always be maintained.

115 1)

be mingled in the souls of the young.' αὐτοῖς, sc. τοῖς ἄρχουσιν: Republic cp. i. 343 A ős γε αὐτῆ, κ.τ.λ., or (2) [B. J.] 'which of these metals is 415 mingled in their souls.' B

σφέτερος] 'belonging to their own (the rulers') class,' according to the familiar use of opeis.

ὑπόχαλκος 'having a proportion of brass.'

κατελεήσουσιν κατα- in composition here implies blame (as in Cκαταχαρίζομαι), 'improperly pity them.' 'felectile'

τὴν . . . τιμήν | τιμήν has here rather the meaning of 'office or occupation' than of 'rank.' Cp. Phileb. 61 c είθ' ὅστις θεῶν ταύτην την τιμην είληχε της συγκράσεως: Hdt. vii. 36 αύτη ή ἄχαρις τιμή.

ἐκ τούτων sc. τῶν δημιουργῶν ἡ γεωργῶν. It is observable that in our own day the industrial class still tends to divide into these two sections - artisans and husbandmen.

τιμήσαντες 'Having estimated their values.'

όταν ... φυλάξη The readings in this passage vary considerably. The principal variations are as follows: σιδηροῦς φύλαξ Α secunda manu and M; σίδηρος φύλαξ A prima manu and Π; σιδηρούς with the omission of φύλαξ Ξ. Either ὁ σίδηρος ή ὁ χαλκός, omitting φύλαξ, or ὁ σιδηροῦς φύλαξ ἢ ὁ χαλκοῦς give a good sense, the latter reading resting on the best authority.

οὐδαμῶς Plato means to intimate that almost any fable may be D rendered credible by time. The new account of the origin of man is not more improbable than the old one was at first, or the old one more true than the new.

σχεδον γάρ τι μανθάνω ο λέγεις 'I think that I understand what you mean:' viz. the difficulty of persuading the present generation. The first rulers must be taken into our confidence. Cp. supra 414 C μάλιστα μέν, κ.τ.λ.

Enough of the fiction, and now let the rulers lead them to their camping-ground. They will select a position commanding both 117 B friend and foe; and there they will build habitations for themselves, of a humble sort, such as are suitable for soldiers and will afford them no temptation to break the rules of their education. They will live together and call nothing absolutely their own; they will be fed on rations at the public expense, and share a common table. As for gold and silver, they will not tarnish the pure metal of Divine origin which is within them, by having anything to do with the Republic III.corrupted coinage which passes current amongst men. 415 D-Glaucon quite approves of this.

417 B

καὶ τοῦτο . . . ἀγάγη] 'And this will turn out as rumour directs it,' i. e. according to the success with which the fiction is rumoured abroad.

415 D

όπλίσαντες Here, as elsewhere, the distinction between the guardians and the lower classes appears to be lost sight of.

θύσαντες οις χρή The particulars of religious service are left undetermined: see iv. 427 B.

Е

ναί, ἦν δ' ἐγώ . . . χρηματιστικάς 'Yes, said I, lodgings for soldiers, not for traders.' Compare supra 397 Ε καὶ τὸν πολεμικὸν πολεμικόν καὶ οὐ χρηματιστήν πρὸς τῆ πολεμικῆ.

ποιμέσι The shepherds here are the lawgivers and the rulers who are to succeed them. The dative with allowing takes the place of the accusative before the infinitive τρέφειν. Cp. Soph. O. C. 1201, 1202 λιπαρείν γάρ οὐ καλὸν | δίκαια προσχρήζουσιν.

416

 $\epsilon \pi i \chi \epsilon i \rho \hat{\eta} \sigma \alpha i \ldots \kappa \alpha \kappa o u \rho \gamma \epsilon \hat{i} v$  (1) is a confusion between  $\epsilon \pi i \chi \epsilon i - \epsilon \gamma \epsilon i \gamma \epsilon i$ ρησαι κακουργείν τὰ πρόβατα and ἐπιχειρησαι τοῖς προβάτοι:. Cp. supra ii. 370 Ε χρησθαι ὑποζυγίοις and note; or (2) more simply 'so that they attack the sheep to do them harm': κακουργείν, epexegetic infinitive.

В

ἀφομοιωθώσιν As elsewhere, the asyndeton is allowed where the second clause is explanatory of the first. For a similar apposition compare Eurip. Heracl. 176:-

> μηδ', ὅπερ φιλεῖτε δράν, πάθης σὺ τοῦτο, τοὺς ἀμείνονας παρὸν φίλους έλέσθαι, τούς κακίονας λάβης.

οὐκοῦν . . . εἰσίν; 'Will they not, if they are really well educated, be provided with the best of safeguards?'

την μεγίστην της εὐλαβείας With this phrase cp. της γης ή άρίστη, τὸν πλείστον τοῦ βίου, τὴν πλείστην τῆς στρατιάς (Thue. vii. 3). The adjective takes by attraction the gender of the noun following. The accusative is used adverbially after παρεσκευασμένοι: cp. Riddell's Digest, § 7.

τοῦτο μέν . . . ήτις ποτέ ἐστιν We cannot be confident that they have the right education, but we may be confident that they Republic III. ought to have. This touch of unlooked for modesty prepares for the higher education of Book vii.

416 C καὶ ὀρθῶς γε ] SC. ἐλέγομεν.

πρὸς τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ. The perfect harmony of a society is an idea only, which can never be realized in practice. Yet class-differences, though unavoidable, are still an evil. The antagonism of different sections deducts from the total strength of the whole of a community. The differences of interest create jealousy and partyspirit; the exclusive opinions of a class, whether of the highest or lowest rank, are always more or less untrue, and require to be adjusted by those of other classes. The happiest condition of society seems to be that in which different ranks insensibly fade into one another, or in which the transition is easy from one to the other, and personal merit, as in the Republic of Plato, readily acquires the privileges and estimation of rank. And although the individual is always in danger of sinking into his own class or imitating the one above him, yet he may lay aside the impress of any class in the sense of a higher freedom. Compare Aristotle, Pol. ii. 5, § 26, who in his matter-of-fact way objects that the confinement of office to a single class will be a cause of faction in a warlike state, and adds— ὅτι δ' ἀναγκαίον αὐτῷ ποιείν τοὺς αὐτοὺς ἄρχοντας, φανερόν οὐ γὰρ ότε μεν ἄλλοις ότε δε ἄλλοις μεμικται ταις ψυχαις ὁ παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ χρυσός, ἀλλ' ἀεὶ τοις αὐτοις. But he does not seem to remember that Plato has already met this objection, in part at least, by allowing merit to rise in the social scale.

D ἄνδρες ἀθληταὶ πολέμου] 'Men in training for war:' cp. 403 Ε ἀθληταὶ . . . οἱ ἄνδρες τοῦ μεγίστου ἀγῶνος.

E χρυσίον δὲ καὶ ἀργύριον, κ.τ.λ.] 'But as for gold and silver coin, we must tell them that they have that (viz. gold and silver) of a divine quality in their souls.' That the words are used in the first instance of money appears from νόμισμα a few lines below.

τὴν ἐκείνου κτῆσιν | SC. τοῦ θείου χρυσίου.

17 δπὸ τὸν αὐτὸν ὄροφον ἰέναι] The slight exaggeration and comic formality of the language keeps up the humour of the passage.

έξ ἀργύρου ἢ χρυσοῦ] The inverted repetition has the effect of a sort of legal phraseology.

Β θέοντες . . . εγγύτατα ολέθρου] A metaphor from navigation.

πάνυ γε, ἢ δ' δς δ Γλαύκων] Glaucon, who began by protesting against the omission of the luxuries of life in the ἀναγκαιστάτη πόλις, has by the art of Socrates been insensibly brought round to deny his own position. Cp. supra ii. 372 c, p.

Republic III. 417 B

## BOOK IV.

Adeimantus here points out the apparent incongruity of making the highest class in the state the poorest. They have the city in their power, and yet they are to get no enjoyment out of it. Socrates will not ask at present whether plain living is or is not consistent with true happiness; he would rather insist that the law-giver is bound to consider the welfare of the whole community, and not of a part only, however important. Now the welfare of the community depends on the single-minded devotion of the guardians to their proper work, and the possession of private property would be subversive of this.

Republic IV. 419– 423 B

Indeed one of the chief duties of the guardian will be to prevent excessive inequalities of fortune from arising at all in the city. For the city in which there is wealth and poverty is no longer one. Two nations are already struggling within her. And so long as our state avoids this evil condition and remains really one, she will have nothing to fear from her neighbours, although in bulk and outward semblance they may be many times more powerful than she is.

419

καὶ ὁ ᾿Αδείμαντος, κ.τ.λ.] Happiness is the result, not the aim, of our Utopia. We do not separate the advantage of our ruling citizens from the well-being of all. Their life is not exactly a life of enjoyment, yet in the end a happiness incomparably beyond the lot of other men will fall to their share: cp. x. 612, 613.

τί οὖν . . . ἀπολογήσει] Cp. Phaedo 63 Β Δίκαια, ἔφη, λέγετε. οἶμαι γὰρ ὑμᾶς λέγειν ὅτι χρή με πρὸς ταῦτα ἀπολογήσασθαι ὥσπερ ἐν δικαστηρίφ. For δι ἐαυτούς, 'by their own act,' compare i. 354 Λ οὐ μέντοι καλῶς γε εἰστίαμαι, δι ἐμαυτόν, ἀλλ' οὐ διὰ σέ: and for the meaning, Gorgias 492 Β οἶς ἐξὸν ἀπολαύειν τῶν ἀγαθῶν καὶ μηδενὸς ἐμποδῶν ὅντος, αὐτοὶ ἐαυτοῖς δεσπότην ἐπαγάγοιντο τὸν τῶν πολλῶν ἀνθρώπων νόμον τε καὶ λόγον καὶ ψόγον. There is a reference to this passage in ν. 465 Ε Μέμνησαι οὖν, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, ὅτι ἐν τοῖς πρόσθεν οὐκ οἶδα ὅτου λόγος ἡμῖν ἐπέπληξεν, ὅτι τοὺς φύλακας οὐκ εὐδαίμονας ποιοῖμεν, οἶς ἐξὸν πάντα ἔχειν τὰ τῶν πολιτῶν οὐδὲν ἔχοιεν;

Republic IV. μη ... μηδίν] μη is used not unfrequently in oratio obliqua, especially when as here the main sentence is conditional, εάν τίς σε φ η, κ.τ.λ.

νῦν δή] supra iii. 416 D.

ἀλλ' ἀτεχνῶς . . . φρουροῦντες] 'they simply appear, he would say, like mercenaries to be stationed in the city doing nothing but mounting guard.' The infinitive is used after φαίνονται to avoid a confusion of participles.—Badham would cancel  $\mu$ ισθωτοί, but Socrates in saying οὐδὲ  $\mu$ ισθόν, κ.τ.λ., tacitly corrects the respondent.

φαίη ἄν] resumes ἐάν τίς σε φ $\hat{y}$  in an independent construction.

420 A ναί, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, . . . ἀναλίσκουσι] Socrates at first, instead of answering, reinforces the objection. Cp. vi. 487 ε ἀκούσις ἄν, ὅτι ἔμοιγε φαίνονται τὰληθῆ λέγειν. ἐπισίτιοι . . . λαμβάνοντες is a correction of ὅσπερ ἐπίκουροι μισθωτοί. 'Yes, said I, and this for their food only, and not even receiving pay in addition.'

οί ἄλλοι] SC. ἐπίκουροι.

οἱ εὐδαίμονες δοκοῦντες εἶναι] δοκοῦντες with a slight contempt, as in iii. 406 c τῶν πλουσίων τε καὶ εὐδαιμόνων δοκούντων εἶναι: cp. x. 612 A τῶν εὐδαιμόνων λεγομένων έστιάσεων.

When Adeimantus is exhausted Socrates carries on the charges against himself, and as a final stroke he adds—'they will have no money to spend on courtesans, or other objects, which, as the world goes, make happiness.'

τί...ἀπολογησόμεθα] 'What, then, shall be our defence, you ask?' Socrates, in repeating the question from supra 419, would have Adeimantus make common cause with him.

В

τον αὐτον οἶμον, κ.τ.λ.] refers to the division of labour, as appears from the words  $\epsilon$ πιστάμεθα γάρ, κ.τ.λ. infra Ε.

ἐροῦμεν . . . ὅλη ἡ πόλις] Aristotle (Pol. ii. 5, § 27) has the following remarks on this passage: 'Plato deprives the guardians of happiness, and says that the legislator ought to make the whole state happy. But the whole cannot be happy unless most, or all, or some of its parts enjoy happiness. In this respect happiness is not like the even principle in numbers, which may exist only in the whole, but in none of the parts; not so happiness. And if the guardians are not happy, who are? Surely not the artisans, or the common people.' It seems incredible that any one who has read

the beginning of Book iv should have so utterly misunderstood it. Plato, it is true, deprives the guardians of happiness, but <u>only</u> in the vulgar sense of the word: he believes that they will attain true happiness to the full in the performance of their proper function. So too of the other classes in the state.

Republic IV. 420 B

**ἐροῦμεν**] The future implies: 'The spirit of our previous remarks will lead us to say.' Cp. iii. 392 Λ οἶμαι ἡμᾶς ἐρεῖν, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ αὖ...ἀδικίαν] This was not clearly said at first, although the presence of evil was acknowledged as a condition of the search (ii. 368 E, 372 E), but is added in anticipation of the bad states (infra 445 c, viii, ix). Compare infra c αὐτίκα δὲ τὴν ἐναντίαν.

ἀπολαβόντες] Compare iii. 392 Ε ἀπολαβὼν μέρος τι πειράσομαί σοι ἐν τούτῳ δηλῶσαι: Gorg. 495 Ε οἶον περὶ ὅτου βούλει τοῦ σώματος ἀπολαβὼν σκόπει.

τιθέντες] is altered in some manuscripts ( $\Pi \equiv q$ ) into  $\theta$ έντες, apparently for the sake of symmetry with ἀπολαβόντες: but the present agrees better with the present πλάττομεν.

ωσπερ οὖν . . . (n) τὸ ὅλον καλὸν ποιοῦμεν] Why should the eyes of a statue be coloured black? The colouring of Greek statues was conventional, the design being, not to imitate life, but to bring out form. Perhaps the blackness of the eye was also conventional, or refers only to the pupil. Compare the Hippias Major 290 B ὅτι, ἐρεῖ, τῆς ᾿Αθηνᾶς τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς οὐ χρυσοῦς ἐποίησεν, οὐδὲ τὸ ἄλλο πρόσωπον, οὐδὲ τοὺς πόδας οὐδὲ τὰς χεῖρας, εἴπερ χρυσοῦν γε δὴ ὃν κάλλιστον ἔμελλε φαίνεσθαι, ἀλλὶ ἐλεφάντινον.

All true art proceeds in the artist's mind from the whole to the parts—from composition and proportion to ornament and detail. The power of the whole, however simple, is the highest excellence of art, as the weakness of the whole, however finished in detail, is the greatest fault. The Greeks, though not much given to art criticism, were quite sensible of this first principle of art. Compare Soph. 235, 236, where symmetry of form and harmony of colour are declared to be the first principles of 'image-making,' with the single exception that in large works a slight deviation is necessary from the true and symmetrical line in the upper part of a statue to make up for distance.

έπιστάμεθα] 'We know how to,' i.e. we could do so, if we chose.

E

Republic IV. 420 E ἐπιδέξια] This word may mean (1) 'from left to right,' cp. Homer, Odyss. xxi. 141, 142:

ὄρνυσθ' έξείης ἐπιδέξια πάντες έταῖροι, ἀρξάμενοι τοῦ χώρου, ὅθεν τέ περ οἰνοχοεύει,

or (2) 'dexterously,' 'cleverly.' If the former sense is preferred, it must be taken with  $\delta\iota\alpha\pi\acute{\iota}\nu\rho\nu\tau\alpha$ s: if the latter, with  $\kappa\alpha\tau\alpha\kappa\lambda\acute{\iota}\nu\alpha\nu\tau\epsilon$ s: 'having cleverly stretched them by the fireside challenging each other to drink.' [Against the former view it may be urged that it introduces a particular which is too minute and adds nothing telling to the description. B. J.] The manuscripts do not agree here, some reading  $\epsilon \pi\iota\delta\epsilon \xi\iota\alpha$  (Par. A), others  $\epsilon \pi\iota$   $\delta\epsilon \xi\iota\alpha$  (M): if the sense 'dexterously' is preferred  $\epsilon \pi\iota\delta\epsilon \xi\iota\alpha$  alone can be read: if the sense 'from right to left,' either reading is possible.

κεραμεύειν] sc. ἐπιστάμεθα κελεύειν.

421 A οὖτε ἄλλος οὐδεὶς . . . ἐξ ὧν πόλις γίγνεται] (1) 'Neither will any one else have any of the characteristics which go to make up a city'—or (2) 'Neither will any of the persons who make up the city have any distinct character.' The antecedent to ἐξ ὧν may be either a plural σχήματα implied in σχῆμα, or a masculine ἐκείνων dependent on ἄλλος οὐδείς.

νευρορράφοι] Plato, as his manner is, in recapitulation adds a new touch to the picture. The word is chosen as humbler even than σκυτοτόμος.

For other references to the lowest class of citizens in Book iv see infra d, e, 423 d, 425 c, d, 428 b, c, e, 431 c—432  $\Lambda$ , 434  $\Lambda$ , b; cp. also v. 456 d  $\mathring{\eta}$  toùs σκυτοτόμους,  $\mathring{\tau}\mathring{\eta}$  σκυτικ $\mathring{\eta}$  παιδευθέντας.

φύλακες δὲ . . . τὸν καιρὸν ἔχουσιν] The subject of ἔχουσιν is φύλακες, without the addition μη . . . δοκοῦντες. For ἄρδην cp. Laws iii. 677 c θῶμεν δὴ τὰς . . . πόλεις . . . ἄρδην ἐν τῷ τότε χρόνῳ διαφθείρεσθαι; And for οἰκεῖν, used in a neuter sense, cp. viii. 543 A τῆ μελλούση ἄκρως οἰκεῖν πόλει: also Thuc. ii. 37 διὰ τὸ μὴ ἐς ὀλίγους ἀλλὶ ἐς πλείονας οἰκεῖν.

εὶ μὲν οὖν . . . (Β) ἄλλο ἄν τι ἢ πόλιν λέγοι] 'Now if our way be to make guardians in the truest sense (ὡς ἀληθῶς opposed to δοκοῦντες), who are the reverse of harmers of the state (cp. πᾶσαν ἄρδην πόλιν ἀπολλύασι), but he who asserts the other view imagines (ποιεῖ understood from ποιοῦμεν, or λέγει from λέγων) a sort of ploughman, —a happy merry-maker, as we may fancy, at a high festival, not in a state,—he means something which is not a state.'

The sentence is a good deal involved, and is one of the few passages in the Republic which, like many in the Laws, seem to require the 'curae secundae' of the author. The perplexity in some degree arises from the antithesis to the previous sentence, which occasions the awkward apposition of  $\eta \kappa \iota \sigma \tau \alpha \ldots \pi \delta \lambda \epsilon \omega s$ : also from the omission of the verb in the second clause (which is  $\lambda \epsilon \gamma \epsilon \iota$  rather than  $\pi \iota \iota \iota \epsilon \iota$ ), and the tautology of  $\pi \delta \lambda \iota \iota$  and  $\epsilon \iota \iota$   $\pi \delta \lambda \epsilon \iota$ . The difficulty is increased by the complex 'paratactic' structure. More simply expressed, the sense is as follows: 'If the idea of a state requires the citizens to be guardians, he who converts them into rustic holiday-makers will mean something that is not a state.'  $\pi \delta \lambda \iota \iota$  (without the article) is used in the same general sense as  $\pi \delta \lambda \iota \iota$  in ii.  $369 \, B$ .  $\epsilon \kappa \epsilon \iota \iota \iota$ 0 refers to the objection of p. 419 as expanded in 420. Instead of finishing the sentence Socrates breaks off abruptly with a tone of impatience.

τοῦτο μέν Sc. ő, τι πλείστη εὐδαιμονία.

ἀναγκαστέον ποιεῖν] sc. ἡμῖν, 'you and I must compel.' Socrates persists in treating Adeimantus' imaginary objector as a real person who is certainly not Adeimantus. Cp. 420 A τί οὖν δὴ ἀπολογησόμεθα, ψής;

καὶ οὕτω . . . εὐδαιμονίας] ἐατέον anticipates the infinitive μεταλαμβάνειν εὐδαιμονίας, which, however, is drawn into construction with ἀποδίδωσι.

άδελφόν] For this metaphorical use of ἀδελφός cp. Soph. 224 Β ἀδελφός τινὶ τῆς πράξεως ὀνόματι: Crito 54 c, where the laws of the world above speak of the laws of the world below as οἱ ἡμέτεροι ἀδελφοί. Compare the use in Soph. Ant. 192 καὶ νῦν ἀδελφὰ τῶνδε κηρύξας ἔχω. μετρίως is modestly substituted by Socrates for καλῶς in Adeimantus' reply.

τοὺς ἄλλους αὖ δημιουργούς] The φύλακες have been called δημιουργοί in a secondary sense, supra c; Socrates now speaks of the artificers properly so called. That this, and not the adverbial use of ἄλλος is intended here, is shown by the use of αὖ to point the antithesis.

ωστε καὶ κακοὺς γίγνεσθαι] (1) 'To the extent of rendering them worthless.' Cp. for the meaning infra κακίων χυτρεὺς γίγνεται, κ.τ.λ.: and for the expression Thuc. ii. 51, § 6 ωστε καὶ κτείνειν, occurring in a negative sentence to which the interrogative (with εἰ) here corresponds; or (2) 'So that they become bad workmen.' καί is

Republic IV. 421

C

D

Republic IV. 421 D

E

used idiomatically to give emphasis and is equivalent to an attenuated 'even.' [B. J.]

παρέχεσθαι] 'To supply from his own resources.' It is not necessary to depart from this, the common use of  $\pi a \rho \epsilon \chi a \mu a u$ , though some here prefer the directly reflexive meaning, 'to provide for himself.'

διδάξεται] (r) It is usually said that in Attic διδάσκω means 'to teach,' διδάσκομαι 'to get some one taught by another.' (2) Hence Dr. W. H. Thompson (Journal of Philology, vol. xii. p. 184) and Cobet, Var. Lect. 310, would read διδάξει here. (3) But it is doubtful whether this distinction can be strictly maintained. See Riddell's Digest, § 87. (4) The middle seems to be used for the sake of variety without any difference of meaning from the active: 'others whom he may teach, he will teach to be inferior workmen.' [B. J.] (5) The rare use of the middle is justified by the personal relation subsisting between the χυτρεύς and his sons or apprentices. The same observation applies to διδαξαίμην in Ar. Nub. 783 οὐκ το διδαξαίμην σ' ἔτι, 'I won't have you any longer for my pupil.' [L. C.]

πλοῦτός τε, κ.τ.λ. That riches are the bane of a state was a favourite notion with the ancient world; nearly the opposite view is current among thinkers on these subjects in modern times. How is this difference to be accounted for? (1) The first impressions of men about riches and poverty are derived from poetry rather than philosophy, and this has led to a sort of inconsistency in our ideas of them (παλαιά μέν τις διαφορά φιλοσοφία τε καὶ ποιητική). (2) There is a real difference in the influence of wealth among the ancients and moderns. In the modern world, the possession of wealth is the cause and effect of industry and progress; accumulation implies distribution; and many moral qualities, justice, order, independence, energy, are the accompaniments of wealth. In the ancient world wealth was generally acquired by the labour of slaves, or by corruption and violence: in the early times of the Greek republics accumulation was really a disturbing agent in the relation of classes, and in the later days both of Greece and Rome implied an admixture with foreigners which sensibly impaired the force and intensity of the national character. (Compare the extreme opposition of rich and poor which Plato describes as prevailing in the last stage of oligarchy, Book viii. 551-556.) (3) It may be conceded that modern writers have erred in making wealth and security the

sole business of government, and that political economy, after every allowance for difference of circumstances, has something to learn from ancient philosophy on this subject. (4) Declamations against luxury in modern times have sometimes arisen insensibly from the application of the language of ancient writers, as in other instances, to an altered state of society. The same remark may be applied to the language of the New Testament about poverty, which presents an ideal only, not immediately applicable to other times and circumstances.

Republic IV. 421 E

πλοῦτος] The noun agrees with the subject of λήσει.

ώς οΐον τε ... παρεσκευασμένος] 'trained to perfection in the art of boxing.' ἐπὶ τοῦτο, i.e. ἐπὶ τὸ πυκτεύειν. For this use of παρασκευάζω cp. especially Gorg. 448 D καλῶς . . . παρεσκευάσθαι εἰς λόγους.

422 B

οδδ' εἰ... πνίγει] (1) 'Not, said I, if he were able to run away and then turn and strike at the one who first came up, and supposing he were to do this repeatedly (πολλάκις) in the heat of a suffocating sun?' πολλάκις, 'several times,' adds a point to the description. Or (2) according to the other meaning of the word, 'perhaps,' it may be,' adding an accidental particular ('possibly in stifling heat') which would be much in favour of a trained boxer.—The change of case ὑποφεύγοντι ... ἀναστρέφοντα is due to the affinity which the infinitive has for an active subject.

ἀμέλει . . . θαυμαστόν] 'Certainly, said he, there would be nothing wonderful in that.' ἀμέλει implies a full admission.

C

**εὐδαίμων εἶ . . . ὅτι οἴει**] 'I envy you your simplicity in fancying.' The word εὐδαίμων has a similar ironical sense in other places: v. 450 c οὐ ῥάδιον, ὧ εὕδαιμον . . . διελθεῖν—as here implying a simplicity in the previous question. So ὧ μακάριε Phaedr. 241 E, al.

τί

ἀλλὰ τί μήν; ἔφη] 'But what would you have? said he.' τί μήν, sc. ἄλλο. Cp. i. 348 c and note.

μειζόνως, κ.τ.λ.] 'You must give a grander name to other cities.'

τὸ τῶν παιζόντων] may either mean, (1) 'as people jestingly say' (cp. ix. 573 D τὸ τῶν παιζόντων, ἔφη, τοῦτο σὰ καὶ ἐμοὶ ἐρεῖs: and Laws vi. 780 c) in allusion to some saying οὐ πόλις ἀλλὰ πόλεις (or πολεῖs, the Epic plural of πολύς—' not a city but a many'), the exact application of which has not been preserved to us: or (2) 'as in the game' where there is more than one city, in reference to the

Republic

IV.
Scholiast, had passed into a proverb. Cp. Dict. of Ant. vol. ii.

p. 12. In this case there is an allusion to the game called πόλεις, for a description of which, see Pollux, iv. 98. It was a species of draughts, in which the pieces (κύνες) were ranged on opposite sides of the board (πόλεις), the game consisted in their taking one another.

δύο μέν . . . πλουσίων] καν ότιοῦν η, 'if it be anything at all': the καί is to be taken with ότιοῦν, according to a common use. For the meaning of ότιοῦν compare Polit. 308 c εἴ τίς που τῶν συνθετικῶν ἐπιστημῶν πρᾶγμα ότιοῦν τῶν αὐτῆς ἔργων, καν εἰ τὸ φαυλότατον . . . ξυνίστησιν : Apology 35 Β τοὺς δοκοῦντας καὶ ότιοῦν εἶναι.

423 παντὸς ἄν άμάρτοις] Cp. Phaedr. 235 Ε ως Λυσίας τοῦ παντὸς Α ημάρτηκε.

καὶ ἔως ἃν... τῶν προπολεμούντων] 'And as long as your city is governed wisely in the order just now prescribed, it will be the greatest of states, I do not mean in distinction or estimation, but in fact, though it number only a thousand fighting men.' εὐδοκιμεῖν has been altered into δοκεῖν in one manuscript (Par. K), which is followed by some editors.

B δοκούσας δὲ... τῆς τηλικαύτης] 'But many that appear even many times greater than one of such a size.'

423 B- The same rule must be applied to population and territory. In neither way must our city attain a size which is inconsistent with unity.

Another 'trifling' rule they have to keep is that already laid down about maintaining the purity of the several classes: that so each individual may do one work and be truly one.

But indeed all else is really trifting in comparison with the great principles of Education as we have laid them down. If this all-important point be observed, all else is sure to go on rightly. Above all, the regulations respecting musical harmonies must be most jealously watched and preserved. No other innovation creeps in so insidiously, or is so destructive in its consequences, as the alteration of taste in music.

The minor details of conduct, including rules of behaviour, are matters which men educated as our citizens have been may be left to discover for themselves. But how if the greater principles are not observed? They will tinker away at these minor matters of Republic legislation, like men who will not give up a life of debauchery, but wish to avert its consequences: instead of getting rid of the cause of disease, they will strive by petty legislation to minimize its evils. What is this but trying to cut off the head of Hydra?

423 B-427 A

οἷμαι μέν, κ.τ.λ.] The limit of the state was a natural idea to the Greeks, who had no experience of any organization which could give unity to a great empire. Aristotle (Pol. vii. cc. 4, 5) agrees with Plato respecting the necessity of having a limit to the state, which is to be large enough to contain the elements of political well-being, and small enough to have a form of constitution (πολιτεία) and enforcement of the laws, within sight of the government (εὐσύνοπτος), and within the hearing of the herald. Much of his reasoning on the subject, however, turns on the abstract principle of measure in men, animals, and works and instruments in general. He approaches most nearly to Plato in the passage where he says that the greatness of the city depends, not on the numbers of the citizens, but on fulfilling the end for which political society exists (c. 4, § 5).

423

μήτε μεγάλη δοκοῦσα 'Nor one that gives the idea of being large' (since none is really so). The qualifying word δοκοῦσα is added with reference to the preceding argument. Cp. supra B δοκούσας (SC. είναι μεγάλας) δὲ πολλάς.

C

καὶ φαῦλόν γ', ἔφη . . . προστάξομεν 'And surely,' said he, 'this is a light matter to impose upon them.' 'And this,' said I, 'a lighter still.' Adeimantus says ironically 'This, i.e. the preservation of the unity of the state, is a trivial matter,' meaning that it is grave and difficult. Socrates with a deeper irony says, 'And this (i, e. the assignment of the citizens to their several classes) is more trivial still.' Then, throwing off irony, he adds in sober earnest, 'All is light in comparison of the one great thing, i.e. education.' Cp. the ironical uses of γενναῖος, χαρίεις, καλός, εὐδαίμων, &c.

τοῦτο δ' ἐβούλετο . . . δεῖ κομίζειν 'And this meant that in the case of the other citizens also (as well as of the guardians) we must put each individual man to that one particular work for which nature designed him.'

He means that the transposition of ranks in individual cases is in accordance with our old principle of the division of labour, and Republic | that this is to be carried out in detail, not only as between the IV.guardians and the rest of the citizens, but as applied to the indus-423 D trial classes amongst themselves.

> άλλὰ είς γίγνηται, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. v. 462, where he insists that there must be unity in the state.

ούτοι ... ίκανόν The words μάλλον δ' αντί μεγάλου ίκανόν are added with characteristic moderation, because adequacy is better even than greatness. In using the familiar (τὸ λεγόμενον) expression έν μέγα φυλάττειν (cp. Polit. 207 Α μέχριπερ αν έν μέγα φυλάττωσι), Socrates reflects that the whole spirit of his previous remarks is against aiming at bigness in anything. Compare the curious passage in i. 349. The construction is slightly altered: μέγα is at first merely attributive to ev, but ikavóv is added as if méya were a supplementary predicate. 'So long as they observe one great thing, or rather, if they observe it, not to a great but to a sufficient extent.'

μέτριοι ἄνδρες 'Sensible men.' Cp. iii. 396 c.

γάμων καὶ παιδοποιίας These genitives depend upon some word of more general meaning supplied from κτησιν. 'The matter of marriage,' &c.

κοινά τὰ φίλων ] Cp. Lys. 207 C κοινά τά γε φίλων λέγεται: Arist. Eth. Nic. viii. 9, § 1.

ὀρθότατα . . . γίγνοιτ' ἄν Adeimantus is led on by the familiar ( γνώμη, κοινὰ τὰ φίλων, to assent easily to a proposition which he does not fully understand. Polemarchus calls his attention to this at the beginning of Book v, and brings into prominence the question which is here briefly indicated.

καὶ μήν . . . αὐξανομένη 'The truth is, said I, that a state, if once started well, goes on with accumulating force like a wheel.'

The efforts of ancient philosophers were directed to the attainment of permanence; they sought to preserve the type, which the legislator had fixed, by education. Their want of historical experience prevented them from perceiving that the institutions of one age are not adapted to another, or that in politics, as in the action of organic bodies, true permanence is also a progress. Nor had they the modern feeling that education has higher objects than merely political ones, and is degraded by serving the purpose of a governing body.

424

E

C

ἔρχεται ὥσπερ κύκλος The word αὐξανομένη is not to be pressed Republic into the comparison. A hoop or wheel, when once started well, goes on smoothly. This is true also of the growth of the state.

τοιαύτης παιδείας] τοιαίτης, εc. χρηστής.

ἀντιλαμβανόμεναι] Lit. 'getting a firm hold of,' i.e. being thoroughly imbued with it.

παρὰ πάντα] 'On all occasions.' Cp. Parmen. 144 Ε δῦ ὅντε Β ἀεὶ παρὰ πάντα: Protag. 325 D παρ' ἔκαστον καὶ ἔργον καὶ λόγον.

το μὴ νεωτερίζειν, κ.τ.λ.] τοῦ μὴ νεωτερίζειν, in agreement with τούτου ἀνθεκτέον, would have been the natural construction, but the proximity of αὐτό, which refers to τούτου, in the epexegetic clause, determines the structure of the sentence against what would be its more grammatical and logical form. Strictly only the words τὸ μὴ νεωτερίζειν... φυλάττειν are epexegetic of αὐτό: hence φοβούμενοι agreeing with the subject of φυλάττωσι would have been more correct than the accusative. But the nominative φοβούμενοι is attracted into agreement with the subject of the dependent clause τὸ μὴ νεωτερίζειν... φυλάττειν, sc. σφῶς. The notion of duty (δεῖ implied in ἀνθεκτέον) is also influential in favour of the accusative being used in place of the nominative in agreement with the subject of the main verb as required by the common rule.

For the use of  $\pi$ oλλάκις (= 'perhaps') cp. ix. 584  $\pi$   $\pi$ oλλάκις  $\pi$ oληθ $\pi$ s  $\pi$ οληθ $\pi$ 

δεί δ' οὖτ' ἐπαινείν . . . οὖτε ὑπολαμβάνειν] 'But this ought not to be praised or conceived to be the poet's meaning,' i. e. that he approves a new kind of song.

έδος γὰρ . . . κινδυνεύοντα] 'For we must beware of a change to a new kind of music, as endangering the whole.' For the use of μεταβάλλειν=to take in exchange, cp. Theaet. 181 c ὅταν τι χώραν εκ χώρας μεταβάλλη: or perhaps the adjective καινόν is used proleptically. μεταβάλλειν would then mean 'to change,' 'to alter,' not 'to take in exchange.' For ἐν in this connexion cp. Laches 187 Β μὴ οὐκ ἐν τῷ Καρὶ ὑμᾶν ὁ κίνδυνος κινδυνεύηται, ἀλλ' ἐν τοῖς νίέσι, κ.τ.λ.

οὐδαμοῦ . . . πείθομαι] Compare Laws vii. 800 Β παρὰ τὰ δημόσια μέλη τε καὶ ἱερὰ καὶ τὴν τῶν νέων ξύμπασαν χορείαν μηδεὶς μᾶλλον ἡ παρ' όντινοῦν ἄλλον τῶν νόμων φθεγγέσθω, μηδ' ἐν ὀρχήσει κινείσθω. The

Republic IV. 424 C same fanciful importance is attributed to music in the saying, 'Let me make the ballads of a people, I care not who makes their laws.' For Damon, cp. iii. 400 B and note. Modern Damons have been equally ready to prognosticate the ruin that would follow from trifling changes in education.

1) ἡ γοῦν παρανομία . . . παραδυομένη] 'Certainly, said he, this musical lawlessness easily creeps in unobserved.' αὕτη, sc. ἡ ἐν μουσικῆ, referring to κινοῦνται μουσικῆς τρόποι supra. παρά here and supra 421 Ε (παραδύντα) means 'sideways,' i. e. 'unawares.' Compare παρεμπίπτειν (Charm. 173 D).

οὐδὲ γὰρ ἐργάζεται, κ.τ.λ.] 'And it really does no harm, except that,' &c. The use of the negative is idiomatic, as in οὐδέν γ' . . . εἰ μὴ ἀγαθά γε Protag. 310 B.—'The only harm it does is this: it gradually ruins everything—that is all.'

Ε ώς . . . παίδων τοιούτων] τοιούτων, sc. παρανόμων. Cp. supra A τοιαύτης παιδείας and note.

A καλῶς ἀρξάμενοι παίδες παίζειν] The influence of the amusements of children upon their character is dwelt upon at length in the Laws vii. 797, 798.

πάλιν . . . αὔξει] sc.  $\mathring{\eta}$  μουσικ $\mathring{\eta}$ . 'Music does for them the opposite of what she did in the former case. She follows them into every part of life and makes them grow.'  $\mathring{\eta}$  'κείνοις, sc.  $\mathring{\eta}$  τοῖς τ $\mathring{\eta}$  παρανόμφ μουσικ $\mathring{\eta}$  χρησαμένοις ἐποίει.

ἔκειτο] Like 'jacere' in Latin.

Β κατακλίσεις] Either (1) 'when to sit down, and when to give place'; or [rather L. C.] (2), as κατακλίνειν the verb has an active meaning, the substantive may be taken actively, of 'making another sit down,' or 'assisting elders to a seat.' This appears to be the right way of explaining the word in Arist. Eth. Nic. ix. 2, § 9 παντὶ δὲ τῷ πρεσβυτέρῳ τιμὴν καθ' ἡλικίαν [sc. ἀποδοτέον], ὑπαναστάσει καὶ κατακλίσει, when it is similarly combined with ὑπανάστασις. For the sense compare Hdt. ii. 80 συμφέρονται δὲ καὶ τόδε ἄλλο Αἰγύπτιοι Ἑλλήνων μούνοισι Λακεδαιμονίοισι. οἱ νεώτεροι αὐτῶν τοῖσι πρεσβυτέροισι συντυγχάνοντες εἴκουσι τῆς ὁδοῦ καὶ ἐκτράπονται καὶ ἐπιοῦσι ἐξ ἔδρης ὑπανιστέαται.

οὖτε γάρ που γίγνεται οὖτ' ἀν μείνειεν] 'For express and written enactments on such points are ineffectual and could never endure.'

Cp. Polit. 294 Β αί γὰρ ἀνομοιότητες τῶν τε ἀνθρώπων καὶ τῶν πράξεων καὶ τὸ μηδέποτε μηδέν, ὡς ἔπος εἰπεῖν, ἡσυχίαν ἄγειν τῶν ἀνθρωπίνων οὐδὲν ἐῶσιν ἀπλοῦν ἐν οὐδενὶ περὶ ἀπάντων καὶ ἐπὶ πάντα τὸν χρόνον ἀποφαίνεσθαι τέχνην οὐδ' ἡντινοῦν. And for an attempt to meet the difficulty by 'exhortation' see Laws vii. 793, Soph. 230 Λ. For γίγνεται = 'take effect,' cp. supra iii. 414 c.

Republic IV. 425 B

It is difficult in legislation to attain a mean between too great generality and too much detail. Particulars are endless and cannot all be included; yet the attempt to limit legislation to general principles gives rise to an undergrowth of precedents and legal maxims, which has no plan and is apt to become a wilderness. The good of one man is limited by the good of all; and the greatest freedom of the greatest number is attained by rules which fall very far short of universality. It might seem as if the legislator, having power, could easily mould the laws of a nation according to his will. But human nature is a stubborn thing—not a sheet of blank paper on which we can inscribe anything at will. Neither in England, nor in India, nor in any other country, can legislation be much in advance of public opinion. The laws of nations always stand in a near relation to their customs and history. Considering the influence of habit and idea and the growth of interests, the danger even in democracies is not of good institutions being too susceptible of change, but of bad ones becoming ineradicable. In social and commercial matters the difficulty of modern times is not how to preserve laws, but how to alter them, because great interests have grown up under their protection.

καὶ τελευτῶν...ἢ καὶ τοὖναντίον] 'And in the end it (i.e. the start which education gives him) terminates in some one complete and grand result either good or the reverse.' αὐτό, sc. τὸ ὅποι ἄν τις ὁρμήση ἐκ τῆς παιδείας. νεανικόν, 'youthful: in the prime or pride of youth,' and so 'vehement.' The word is used in this sense by Hippocrates and the medical writers.

 $\mathbb{C}$ 

οὖκ ἄν ἔτι] 'I would not go on and try to legislate in these matters.'

[τάδε] τὰ ἀγοραῖα] τάδε is omitted in Par. A. Though not necessary to the sense, it is idiomatic: 'Those familiar regulations.' Cp. supra iii. 403  $\mathbf{E}$  τῶνδε τῶν ἀσκητῶν.

δικῶν λήξεως] 'obtaining by lot the turn for bringing on a suit:' the last step in the ἀνάκρισις, i.e. the examination before the Archon of the parties to a suit prior to its being sent into the public courts.

1)

Republic IV. 425 D

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

426 A The reading  $\lambda \hat{\eta} \xi \epsilon \omega s$  (MqK) is clearly right, though Par. A and Ven.  $\Pi \Xi$  agree in  $\lambda \hat{\eta} \xi \epsilon \iota s$ . Throughout this and the following passage Plato has Athenian legislation in his mind. In the Laws the legislator makes minute provisions on many of the points here left to his successors to determine.

[ τελῶν...ἢ πράξεις ἢ θέσεις] 'Rules for collection or assessment.' ὑπὸ ἀκολασίας] These words are added to explain οὐκ ἐθέλοντας.

καὶ ἀεὶ ἐλπίζοντες] The participle is resumed from ἐατρευόμενοι.

τί δέ; ἢν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] 'Well, said I, is not this charming in them?' &c. The irony in the word χαρίεν is seriously taken up in the next sentence: 'Not at all charming, he said: for there is no charm in going into a rage with a man who gives you good advice.' For the uses of the word χαρίεν first ironically and then seriously cp. the similar use of  $\phi$ αῦλον supra 423 c, d. For the change from plural to singular (αὐτῶν . . . μεθύων) cp. infra c ἀποθανουμένους δε ἄν and note.

The epigrammatic sentence of Tacitus, 'corruptissima civitate plurimae leges,' may be quoted as a Roman parallel of this passage of the Republic. The thought of both goes rather beyond the truth. For the complexity of law does not mainly arise from depravity of morals, or the ingenuity of legislators, or the love of novelty, but (1) from the complexity of the relations and dealings of mankind: (2) from the remnants of old laws and usages surviving side by side with new ones. Law, which must appeal to a written word, superseding the discretion of individuals, can never be perfectly simple. A popular system of law is impossible in a civilized country. Yet, on the other hand, the habit of mind which has been acquired in making necessary distinctions may go on to make unnecessary ones. The subtlety of law should fall short of the subtlety of the ordinary circumstances of mankind, instead of exceeding them. Compare the Politicus, 294 foll., in which the fixed character of law amid the variety of circumstances, and the necessity for this owing to the imperfection of human nature, are unfavourably contrasted with the living supervision of the perfect ruler.

ἀποθανουμένους] agrees in number with πολίταις: in what follows, δς ἄν, κ.τ.λ., is substituted for υ αν τοῦτο δρώσι. A few manuscripts ( $\Xi \Theta K$ ) have ἀποθανούμενος, corrected in  $\Xi$  to ἀποθανούμενον, which is the reading of q β.

C

ος δ' αν . . . τιμήσεται ὑπὸ σφῶν; Compare vi. 493 A, where the Republic Sophist is compared to one who studies how to manage a great brute.

426 C

σοφὸς τὰ μεγάλα 'Wise in great matters.'

ὑπ' αὐτῶν ] sc. τῶν πολιτῶν supplied from πόλεις supra.

D

πῶς λέγεις: κ.τ.λ. Socrates aggravates the satire by an ironical answer: 'What do you mean? Have you no mercy on the men? Do you think that one who does not know how to measure, when a number of others who are equally ignorant say that he is four cubits high, can help believing about himself what they say?' With a sort of half seriousness this impossibility is admitted in the words which follow.

E

οὐκ αὖ, ἔφη, τοῦτό γε The manuscripts vary between οὖκ ἄν and οὐκ αὖ. For the first we might compare supra 422 B οὖκ αν ἴσως,  $\xi \phi \eta$ ,  $\xi \mu a \gamma \epsilon$ , where, however, there is  $\xi \nu$  also in the preceding sentence. In this passage οὐκ ἄν might possibly mean οὖκ ἃν οἶόν τε εἴη μή τοῦτο ἡγεῖσθαι. But οὐκ αὖ which has the support of A Π M is more in point (sc. οἴομαι). 'Though I do not admire the men who are so deceived, yet on the other hand I do not think that they could help believing in such a case.' The form of expression is not uncommon: cp. Ion 541 A οὐκ αὖ μοι δοκεῖ τοῦτο: Soph. El. 1034 οὐδ' αὖ τοσοῦτον ἔχθος ἐχθαίρω σ' ἐγώ.

μη τοίνυν χαλέπαινε 'Don't be angry, then.' Look at them not under a serious but under a comic aspect. Cp. Phaedr. 269 B ου χρή χαλεπαίνειν, άλλα συγγιγνώσκειν, εί τινες μή επιστάμενοι διαλέγεσθαι αδύνατοι έγένοντο δρίσασθαι, τί ποτ' έστι ρητορική. χαριέστατοι recalls χαρίεν supra A.

νομοθετοῦντές τε ... ἐπανορθοῦντες ... οἰόμενοι (1) The first two participles may be dependent on the third: believing that by such legislation and reforms as we have just mentioned they will put an end to frauds in contracts.' Or (2) taken more simply the words may mean 'legislating and reforming as we have just described in the belief that they will put an end,' &c. Cp. supra 425 E.

τὸ τοιοῦτον είδος νόμων πέρι vóμων πέρι is an explanation of τοιοῦτον, which refers to legislation in matters of detail. Cp. vii. 530 C τὸ ὅλον φιλοσοφίας πέρι.

427 A

τὰ δὲ ὅτι] ὅτι is repeated pleonastically.

Republic IV. 127 B. C

It only now remains to legislate concerning Religion. Here again we shall insist on a single principle, that religious worship shall be national. All questions concerning it shall be referred to Apollo the God at Delphi, who is the hereditary authority on this subject for all Hellenes.

427 B

τί οὖν, ἔφη, κ.τ.λ.] Plato here, as in the Laws (vi. 759 c), is unwilling to depart from the traditionary ceremonial of Greece. For a discussion of religion in the higher sense cp. the tenth book of the Laws.

τελευτησάντων αὖ θῆκαι . . . ἴλεως αὖτοὺς ἔχειν 'Likewise the graves of the dead, and the ministrations which are necessary to propitiate the inhabitants of the under-world.'

The manuscripts, with the exception of Ven. Z, omit  $\tau \epsilon$  after τελευτησάντων. The insertion is unnecessary, asyndeton being not uncommon in enumerations. Cp. iii. 399 c βίαιον, έκούσιον, κ.τ.λ.

C

τώ πατρίω] sc. έξηγητη: 'our ancestral interpreter.' There is slight manuscript authority (Par. K, Ven. II, in q) for the reading πατρώω, which would mean 'the father of our race,' Apollo being reputed the father of Ion (cp. Euthyd. 302 p) and worshipped under this title at Athens. The reading of the text, however, is favoured by the sense as well as by the manuscripts. For Plato is not speaking in the person of an Ionian, but of a Greek who will have no other teacher of religion than the god of his ancestors. And the Apollo of whom he is thinking is not 'Απόλλων πατρώος, but 'the God who sits in the centre of the earth, and is the interpreter of religion to all mankind.'

Plato's profession of reverence for the gods of Hellas is repeatedly expressed in a manner which makes it impossible to doubt his seriousness. The only passage which appears ironical is Tim. 40 D-41 A. He probably felt (1) that religion was indispensable, and (2) that a new religion could not be established in a day. (Cp. Laws x. 909 Ε ίερα καὶ θεούς οὐ ράδιον ίδρύεσθαι, μεγάλης δέ διανοίας τινός όρθως δράν τὸ τοιοῦτον.)

427 D-

The foundation of our state would seem to be complete, but we 428 A still need a strong light to discern in it the nature and essential value of Justice.

> Assuming, however, that the new city has the four cardinal virtues, if we can find three of them—wisdom, courage, and temperance—the remaining virtue will be the one which we seek.

αὐτός τε καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν παρακάλει] Cp. iii. 398 Λ αὐτός τε καὶ τὰ ποιήματα βουλόμενος ἐπιδείξασθαι, and note: Phaedr. 253 Β αὐτοί τε καὶ τὰ παιδικὰ πείθοντες: Xen. Anab. iii. 1, § 44: Thuc. viii. 55 ὁ Πεδάριτος αὐτός τε καὶ τὸ περὶ αὐτὸν ἐπικουρικὸν ἔχων. This passage is peculiar in that the verb is in the imperative mood and not a participle.

Republic IV. 427

καὶ πότερον . . . καὶ ἀνθρώπους] Compare the closing words of Adeimantus' speech, ii.  $367 = \epsilon \acute{\alpha} \iota \tau \epsilon \lambda \alpha \nu \theta \acute{\alpha} \nu \eta$ , κ.τ.λ., and note.

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

ώς οὐχ ὅσιόν σοι ὄν] Another allusion to the words of Socrates in the passage just cited, ii. 368 Β δέδοικα γὰρ μὴ οὐδ' ὅσιον ἢ παραγενόμενον δικαιοσύνη κακηγορουμένη ἀπαγορεύειν.

μὴ οὖ] οὖ is added in good manuscripts, and is in accordance with the usual idiom after such negative expressions as ἄδικον, ἄλογον, οὖκ ὅσιον. Compare, both for the meaning and the form of the sentence, Laws x. 891 A διὰ ταῦτα λόγον οὐδαμῆ ἔχει οὐδὲ ὅσιον ἔμοιγε εἶναι φαίνεται τὸ μὴ οὖ βοηθεῖν τούτοις τοῖς λόγοις πάντα ἄνδρα κατὰ δύναμιν. In what follows the popular classification of the virtues which, although first explicitly recognized by Plato, was latent in the common consciousness of Hellas, is assumed as the basis of inquiry.

οὐκοῦν . . . εὑρημένον The use of this half-logical half-mathematical 'method of residues' marks the infancy of philosophy. Cp. Lys. 216 E. If we were sure that the subject of our inquiry was one of four terms, and could eliminate the other three, then, as Plato says, the remaining term would be the one for which we are seeking. Another condition must be remembered, viz. that the four terms have each a precise meaning. Otherwise the form will be illusory, and the disjunctive syllogism in which the error is expressed will only help the illusion. But no logical term has the precision of a mathematical quantity. For example, in the discussion which follows, the third term σωφροσύνη is not easily separated from the fourth, which seems also to comprehend the two previous ones. The formula of residues is true when applied to abstract quantity or to the laws of nature. But the further application of this or of any other abstract form to morals or metaphysics is interfered with by the imperfection, or rather by the nature of language, and the indefiniteness of the subject.

ωσπερ τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] For the form of sentence (ωσπερ with deferred apodosis) ep. iii. 402 A, B, and note. Plato intended to make ἄλλων

428 A Republic IV. 428 τινῶν τεττάρων dependent as a partitive genitive on  $\tilde{\epsilon}\nu$  τι: but the insertion of the resumptive αὐτῶν throws the words out of construction and they become a 'genitivus pendens.' Cp. infra 439 B ωσπερ γε, οἶμαι, τοῦ τοξότου οὐ καλῶς ἔχει λέγειν, ὅτι αὐτοῦ ἄμα αἱ χεῖρες τὸ τόξον ἀπωθοῦνταί τε καὶ προσέλκονται . . . ;

 $\epsilon \nu$  ότ $\omega$ οῦν] 'In any subject-matter,' as we are now looking for justice in the state.  $\delta \pi \delta \tau \epsilon$ , 'as soon as we had.'

οὐκ ἄλλο ἔτι ἦν] 'It could *noτυ* be no other.' ἦν = 'was all along,' i.e. 'proves to be.' Cp. vi. 497 c δηλώσει ὅτι τοῦτο μὲν τῷ ὄντι θεῖον ἦν. ἔτι = 'after the other three were found.'

428 1-

Wisdom is obviously present, but is possessed by one class only, and that the smallest, which gives this character to the whole. For statecraft is supreme wisdom, and this is vested in the rulers alone.

Courage or fortitude also has her seat in one class principally, that is to say, in those guardians who are not rulers but defenders and preservers of the peace of the state. On their holding fast the patriotic principle with which they have been imbued, and thus having the courage of citizens, depends the security of the whole commonwealth.

Temperance is the mutual concord of the different classes rather than the proper excellence of one. In individuals this is spoken of as self-control, which means the obedience of the lower nature to the higher. And in our community it is the willing obedience of the industrial classes, which are lower and have a lower order of desires, to the two higher classes, which gives to the whole state the character of temperate.

- $\epsilon \nu$  αὐτ $\hat{\varphi}$ ] not  $\epsilon \nu$  αὐτ $\hat{\eta}$ , is the true reading; the neuter, as in other places, referring to the masculine and feminine in abstract things, and here following the gender of ὁτφοῦν.
  - 13 πολλαὶ δέ γε, κ.τ.λ.] Political science is similarly distinguished from the arts in the Euthydemus (291), and, with curious elaboration, in the Politicus, 258–268 and elsewhere.
- C ως ἃν ἔχοι βέλτιστα] sc. τὰ ξύλινα σκεύη, 'how wooden implements may best be made.' It has been doubted whether βουλευομένη, which is the reading of all the manuscripts, should not be altered into βουλευομένην. But βουλευομένη, sc. ἡ πόλις ταύτη τῆ ἐπιστήμη, resumes διὰ . . . ἐπιστήμην. Cp. infra ἦ . . . βουλεύεται and note.

τί δέ; τὴν ὑπέρ, κ.τ.λ.] For the omission of διά compare Phaedo 64 D, where, however, as in this passage, the preposition is easily supplied: φαίνεταί σοι φιλοσόφου ἀνδρὸς εἶναι ἐσπουδακέναι περὶ τὰς ἡδονὰς καλουμένας τὰς τοιάσδε; ...τί δέ; τὰς τῶν ἀφροδισίων; see Riddell's Digest, § 190.

Republic IV. 428 C

D

δμιλοί] The MSS., with one exception (Flor. n) omit ἄν. The optative without ἄν in a relative clause expresses remote or ideal possibility, in a case that is perfectly general: 'what might be or may be conceived to be the best policy, internal or external.' Compare Phaedrus 239 Β ἀποβλέπων εἰς τὸν ἐραστήν, οἶος ὧν τῷ μὲν ἥδιστος, ἐαυτῷ δὲ βλαβερώτατος εἴη [ἄν εἴη solus Φ].

\_

οὖς νῦν δὴ ... ἀνομάζομεν] iii. 414 B. The reading τελέως was erroneously attributed in Bekker's collation to Par. A, which reads τελέους with all the other MSS, except Ven. Ξ. τελέους has therefore been restored in the text.

πότερον οὖν, ἦν δ' ἐγώ] οὖν after πότερον is omitted in the best MSS., perhaps rightly. Cp. Lys. 220  $\mathbf{E}$  πότερον, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.

Е

οὐκοῦν . . . γίγνεται γένος] Cp. Polit. 292 E—293 A, where Plato remarks that in a city of a thousand men there would not be 100 or even fifty good draught-players. How much smaller then would be the number of kings (i. e. scientific rulers)! The fewness of the wise is an often-recurring thought in Plato: cp. Theaet. 186 c, Polit. 297 c ἀλλὰ περὶ σμικρόν τι καὶ ὀλίγον καὶ τὸ ἔν ἐστι ζητητέον τὴν μίαν ἐκείνην πολιτείαν τὴν ὀρθήν.

429

οὐ γάρ...ἢ τοίαν αὐτὴν εἶναι ἢ τοίαν] 'For I do not imagine, said I, that the courage or the cowardice of the other citizens will have the power of giving such a city this or that character.' Infra 437 Ε τοῦ δὲ τοίου ἢ τοίου τὰ προσγιγνόμενα.

B

καὶ ἀνδρεία ἄρα, κ.τ.λ.] καί ('too') marks the correspondence between the courage and wisdom, both of which are virtues of a portion of the city and not of the whole.

Republic IV. 429 οὐ πάνυ... ἔμαθον] 'I do not quite understand.' The other meaning, 'not at all,' is unsuitable here. It would be absurd for Glaucon to say that he does not at all understand the meaning of Socrates about courage.

σωτηρίαν . . . λέγω τινά] Socrates still answers enigmatically, as in Gorg. 463 p, where he defines rhetoric to Polus as πολιτικής μορίου εἴδωλον.

διὰ παντὸς δὲ ἔλεγον αὐτὴν σωτηρίαν] 'and in speaking of courage as a never-failing preservation, I meant that a man preserves this principle when he is tried,' &c. διασώζεσθαι is in the middle voice and has a general subject  $(\tau\iota\nu\acute{a}, \tau\grave{o}\nu\ \emph{ανθρωπον})$ . αὐτήν, sc.  $\tau\grave{n}\nu\ \emph{δόξαν}$ . Hermann would cancel the words αὐτὴν σωτηρίαν. Another reading is  $τ\^{φ}$  ἔν τε λύπαις, κ.τ.λ., 'by reason of,' &c. For the right opinion concerning things terrible and not compare iii. 386 A, 387 B οὖς δεῖ ελευθέρους εἶναι, δουλείαν θανάτον μᾶλλον πεφοβημένους. See also Laches 190 ff., where the treatment of the subject is tentative, not dogmatic.

D ἐκ τοσούτων χρωμάτων] 'Out of so many.' The number of existing colours out of which the choice is made helps to show the amount of care that is required. The colour άλουργόν is described by Plato, Tim. 68 c, as ἐρυθρὸν δὲ δὴ μέλανι λευκῷ τε κραθέν.

E καὶ ὃ μὲν ἂν . . . βαφέν ΄ And whatever is dyed in this manner, that which is dyed becomes of a fast colour.'

δευσοποιόν] 'fast-dyed.' Cp. some ludicrous lines of Diphilus quoted by Harpocration,

ταυτὶ γὰρ ἡμῖν δευσοποιὰ παντελῶς τὰ σπάργαν' ἀποδέδειχεν,

where as here  $\delta \epsilon \nu \sigma \sigma \pi \sigma \iota \delta \nu$  is used not of the colour, but of the coloured material.

ἄνθος] i.e. the perfect brightness of the colour, which is like the bloom of a flower.

εάν τε καὶ ταῦτα] ταῦτα, sc. τὰ λευκά. The choice of the wool answers to the selection of the guardians, the preparation of the wool to their education and training, and the dyeing of the wool to the imposition of the laws.

τοιοῦτον τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] The words έξελεγόμεθα . . . ἐπαιδεύομεν recall ἐκλέγονται . . . προπαρασκευάζουσιν supra.

μηδὲν οἴου ἄλλο μηχανᾶσθαι, κ.τ.λ.] is a restatement of τοιοῦτον... ήμας. Hence the asyndeton.

Republic IV. 430

C

D

ἐκπλύναι] the optative is the right reading, to be construed with ὕνα μή. The form is less common than ἐκπλύνειε, but occurs elsewhere in Attic Greek. Par. A reads ἐκπλῦναι, the infinitive, an obvious mistake, for ῥύμματα, as ἡδονή shows, is in the nominative case.

χαλεστραίου] 'pearl-ash' is said by the Scholiast to be derived from Chalastra, a town or lake in Macedonia (Hdt. vii. 123).

την δη τοιαύτην δύναμιν και σωτηρίαν] Cp. supra 429 Β δύναμιν Β΄ τοιαύτην, η διά παντός σώσει.

άλλ' οὐδέν... λέγω] sc. ἄλλο. 'But I do not say anything else,' 'I agree.' As here, so in Laches (196 p, E) Socrates refuses to admit that the brutes possess courage.

καὶ γὰρ ἀποδέχου . . . ἀποδέξει] 'Why, yes, said I, accept it, but as the courage of a citizen, and you will be right.'

Plato is speaking of courage only as the virtue of citizens, not as based upon philosophical principle. Compare x. 619 c, where the unfortunate choice is made by one ἐν τεταγμένη πολιτεία ἐν τῷ προτέρῳ βίῳ βεβιωκότα, ἔθει ἄνευ φιλοσοφίας ἀρετῆς μετειληφότα: also Phaedo 68 p, where the courage of the philosopher is contrasted with the courage of ordinary men, which is only a fear of greater evils. There is nowhere in the Republic a discussion such as appears to be intimated in the words αὖθις δὲ περὶ αὐτοῦ (sc. τῆς ἀνδρείας) . . . ἔτι κάλλιον δίμεν, but cp. vi. 486 A, B οὐκοῦν καὶ θάνατον οὐ δεινόν τι ἡγήσεται ὁ τοιοῦτος; Compare Aristotle (Eth. Nic. iii. 7, 8), where he distinguishes true courage, which is for the sake of τὸ καλόν, from the spurious forms of courage, and speaks of political courage as making the nearest approach to the true.

πῶς οὖν ἄν... περὶ σωφροσύνης] 'How then can we discover justice, that we may trouble ourselves no more about temperance?' i.e. that we may be relieved from further discussion. πῶς ἄν expresses a wish, which Socrates affects to believe to be that of his hearers. εἴπερ expresses 'I do not want justice to appear first, at least, if that is to prevent us from proceeding to examine temperance.' For this mode of creating variety by playing with the order of the subject, compare the correction of the order of the sciences, vii. 528 A, B, and the similar artifice in Sympos. 185 c, p.

Republic IV. 430 D In the Charmides 160 ff., where σωφροσύνη is treated tentatively, as courage in the Laches, it is described (1) as ἡσυχία—but energy is excellence: (2) as αἰδώς—but Homer says αἰδώς οἰκ ἀγαθή: (3) as τὸ τὰ ἐαυτοῦ πράττειν—but if every one makes his own coat, this is inconsistent with a division of labour: (4) as γιγνώσκειν ἐαυτόν—but that would make σωφροσύνη an ἐπιστήμη ἐπιστήμης, and this is contrary to the analogy of other sciences and arts.

In accepting the recognized four virtues (supra 427 E) Plato has prepared for the threefold division of the soul into rational, irascible, concupiscent. To the rational and irascible elements correspond the first two virtues σοφία and ἀνδρεία. σωφροσύνη is not the virtue of a single part of the soul, but consists in the subjection of the lower elements to the higher. The remaining virtue δικαιοσύνη, which is the condition of all the rest, is the fulfilment by each part of its own proper function.

In Gorg. 507 A, B, Protag. 331 A, the virtue of ὁσιότης is also mentioned.

οὔτε οἶδα Sc. πῶς ἃν τὴν δικαιοσύνην εὔροιμεν.

Ε ἀλλὰ μέντοι . . . εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ] 'But that, said I, I do desire, or I am in the wrong.' There seems to be a slight ellipse: the full sense would be, 'I do desire, as I must, unless, &c.' The phrase occurs elsewhere, e.g. x. 608 p σὐ δὲ τοῦτ' ἔχεις λέγειν; Εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ γ', ἔφην: and Charm. 156 A καὶ τοὕνομά μου σὐ ἀκριβοῖς; Εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ γε, ἔφη.

 $ω_s$  γε ἐντεῦθεν ἰδεῖν] 'Looking from where I stand,' i. e. to judge from our present point of view. This graphic touch recalls the image of the search, supra 427 E, and prepares for the still more lively one of the hunt for justice, infra 432 B: cp. also 445 c δεῦρο . . . ἴνα καὶ ἴδης, κ.τ.λ.

ῶς φασι, κρείττω δὴ...λέγεται] The reading is doubtful. That in the text is confirmed by the margin of Par. A, and by Ma. also, according to Schneider, by two chief MSS. of Stobaeus. Schneider adopted this reading, but placed a full-stop at φασί, supposing in the latter part of the sentence the passive λέγεται to have taken the place of λέγουσιν, and comparing, amongst other passages, Apol. 21 C διασκοπῶν οὖν τοῦτον ... καὶ διαλεγόμενος αὐτῷ, ἔδοξέ μοι οὖτος ὁ ἀνὴρ δοκεῖν μὲν εἶναι σοφός .., εἶναι δ' οὔ. The reading of A Π Ξ, &c., κρείττω δὴ αὐτοῦ φαίνονται οὐκ οἶδ' ὅντινα τρόπον καὶ ἄλλα ἄττα τοιαῦτα ὥσπερ ἴχνη αὐτῆς λέγεται, can only be construed by

supplying λέγοντες from λέγεται, cp. supra 421 B ὁ δ' ἐκεῖνο λέγων, κ.τ.λ. One MS., q, reads φαίνονται . . . καλοῦντες, which Bekker adopted.

Republic IV. 43° E

οὐκοῦν . . . (431 Λ) προσαγορεύεται] In the Laws, i. 627 c, the same figure is applied to a family or state: cp. also 626  $\mathbf{E}$  ἐπειδή γὰρ εἶς ἕκαστος ἡμῶν ὁ μὲν κρείττων αὐτοῦ, ὁ δὲ ἤττων ἐστί: and Gorg. 491  $\mathbf{D}$  ἕνα ἕκαστον λέγω αὐτὸν ἑαυτοῦ ἄρχοντα.

καὶ ὅταν μὲν . . . τὸ κρείττω αὐτοῦ] φύσει is to be joined with βέλτιον, 'that which is by nature better.' τὸ κρείττω αὐτοῦ = ὁ λόγος supra, is the subject of λέγειν, which depends on φαίνεται and not on βούλεσθαι.

431 A

ἐπαινεῖ γοῦν] 'it is certainly a term of praise.' Cp. Crat. 419 Λ ὅπερ δὴ ἐπαινεῖ, and the use of νοεῖ with a neuter subject: i. 335 Ε τοῦτο δὲ δὴ νοεῖ αὐτῷ: also supra 423 D τοῦτο δ' ἐβούλετο δηλοῦν. The more general subject (sc. ὁ λόγος) is continued with ψέγειν, καλεῖν infra.

καὶ γὰρ ἔοικεν] (That is evidently the meaning) 'for it seems a natural way of speaking.'

В

οῦ] 'Seeing that a thing, the better part of which rules over the worse.' οῦ is governed by τὸ ἄμεινον τοῦ χείρονος.

\*παισί] This correction of the manuscript reading πασι is necessary here, and in vi. 494 B.

C

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

τῶν ἐλευθέρων λεγομένων] 'Those who are called freemen.' In this expression, as in τῶν εὐδαιμόνων δοκούντων (iii. 406 c) and the like, Plato implies that the philosopher alone is really free and happy.

τὰς δέ γε ἀπλᾶς] The accusative is unusual after ἐπιτεύξει, and therefore these words are best regarded as an anacoluthon, apparently occasioned by the parallel of the previous sentence, τάς γε πολλὰς . . . εὕροι. It may be rendered in English, 'But as to the simple and moderate pleasures, you will find them,' &c. αι δή, κ.τ.λ., 'which of course follow reason,' i. e. as being ἀπλαι and μέτριαι.

όταν οὖτως ἔχωσιν] SC. ὅταν ἡ αὐτὴ δόξα ἢ τοῖς τε ἄρχουσι καὶ ἀρχομένοις περὶ τοῦ οἶστινας δεῖ ἄρχειν.

ούχ ούχ ούπερ... (A) ότφοῦν τῶν τοιούτων] 'Because courage and wisdom reside each in a portion of the state, which the one makes wise and the other valiant, but that is not the way with temperance (οὐχ οὕτω ποιεῖ αὕτη is a resumption of οὐχ ώσπερ...

Republic IV.
431
E:

παρείχετο) which literally extends through all the notes of the scale, and produces a supreme harmony of the weakest, the strongest and the intermediate class, whether in wisdom or in force, or, if you will, in number, wealth and the like. δι' ὅλης (λύρας) and διὰ πασῶν (χορδῶν) are musical terms, carrying out the notion of ἀρμονία supra. The application of the figure is pointed with ἀτεχνῶς, 'literally through the whole,' i.e. the whole state as the whole lyre. A somewhat similar notion of the harmony of the various elements in a state occurs in Thuc. vi. 18 (the speech of Alcibiades) ὁμοῦ δὲ τό τε φαῦλον καὶ τὸ μέσον καὶ τὸ πάνν ἀκριβὲς ᾶν ξυγκραθὲν μάλιστ' ᾶν λοχύειν.

432 ταὐτόν] A cognate accusative emphasizing ξυνάδοντας: 'agreeing A in unison.'

εὶ μὲν βούλει, κ.τ.λ.] This may be expressed in the following tabular scheme:—

φρονήσει,  $\partial χ \' v \ddot i$ , πλ ' η θ ε i, &c.  $\partial χ v \rho \acute \sigma \tau a \tau o i$  rulers, soldiers, populace.  $\mu \acute e \sigma o i$  soldiers, populace, soldiers.  $\partial \sigma \theta \epsilon v \acute e \sigma \tau a \tau o i$  populace, rulers, rulers.

B ως γε οὐτωσὶ δόξαι] 'So far as for us to have formed the opinion we have expressed.' Each step in a Platonic argument is regarded as provisional, depending on the present consent of the interlocutors, who are free to modify their conclusions afterwards, should they see cause.

432 B-434 D We are on the track of Justice but have not yet found her. Ah! we have been looking too far off. Here she lies, quite near to us,—the ground of the other virtues, the very life of the machine! Why is there harmony amongst the classes in the state? Why are the soldiers brave, the rulers wise? Simply because each is doing his own proper work, not interfering with his neighbour.

That each should have his own and keep within his sphere is the popular notion of Justice. And by adhering to our first principle of the division of labour, we have secured that each of the three orders or classes shall perform its function well, and that our whole state shall be just, and escape from injustice which arises out of the interference of the three classes with one another.

οὐκοῦν, ὦ Γλαύκων . . . ἄδηλος γένηται] 'So now then, Glaucon,

B like huntsmen we should encircle the cover, taking heed that

 $\overline{IV}$ .

432

justice do not slip away and vanish out of sight.' For the metaphor compare Laches 194 Β Οὐκοῦν, ὧ φίλε, τὸν ἀγαθὸν κυνηγέτην μεταθείν χρή καὶ μὴ ἀνιέναι ; Παντάπασι μὲν οὖν. Βούλει οὖν καὶ Νικίαν τόνδε παρακαλῶμεν έπὶ τὸ κυνηγέσιον . . .; Justice is more general and abstract and has more of the nature of universal law, whereas temperance, courage and wisdom are particular applications of this law: it is the general idea underlying the other three; the virtue of the whole as contrasted with the virtues of the parts: it may also be viewed as the result of all the rest. The simplicity of this is the real difficulty in understanding the nature of Justice: we are looking into the distance for that which is tumbling out at our feet. Justice is neither more nor less than 'our old friend' the division of labour applied not merely to the artisan class but to all the classes in the state (cp. the anticipation of this, ii. 372 A έν αὐτῶν τούτων χρεία τινὶ τŷ πρὸς ἀλλήλους). Further, justice is the foundation or condition of the three other virtues, the quality which makes them possible (ὁ πᾶσιν ἐκείνοις τὴν δύναμιν παρέσχεν ωστε ἐγγενέσθαι 433 B). It is obvious (1) that the relation between the three first and fourth is at variance with the method of elimination or residues by which Plato has proceeded: the fourth is not separable from the other three. they are particularized forms of it: (2) that the four virtues, especially justice, do not hold the same place in the state as in the individual, because it is only in certain respects and to a very limited degree that the state and individual admit of comparison.

The four 'cardinal virtues' of Plato appear meagre when compared with the greater fulness and minuteness of the psychology of Aristotle. Aristotle seems to include other types of virtue, e.g. that of magnificence, which belong to particular characters and circumstances and are not parts of the common ideal of human nature. Yet this virtue as well as the kindred  $\epsilon \lambda \epsilon \nu \theta \epsilon \rho \iota \delta \tau \eta s$ , although not entering into Plato's system, are mentioned by him along with  $\sigma \omega \phi \rho \rho \sigma \delta \nu \eta$  and  $\delta \nu \delta \rho \epsilon l a$ , iii. 402 c.

The definition of justice in this passage is one of the definitions of temperance in the Charmides (162 A). So far is Plato from using language with the technical strictness of Aristotle. In general an ethical conception appears to lie at the foundation of temperance, a political one at the foundation of justice.

The ironical self-depreciation of Socrates and the humility of Glaucon are worthy of observation.

ἐάν πως . . . ἴδης] For the form of expression cp. infra 434 A
and Theaet. 156 c ἀλλ' ἄθρει, ἐάν πως ἀποτελεσθῆ.

 $(\dot{})$ 

Republic IV. 432 ἐἀν μοι ἐπομένῳ χρῆ ... χρήσει] The omission of ὡς is singular. πάνυ μοι μετρίως χρήσει, 'You will make a very fair use of me.' Compare a similar turn in the Sophist, 239 B, C ὅ τι μάλιστα δύνασαι συντείνας πειράθητι ... Πολλὴ μέντ' ἄν με καὶ ἄτοπος ἔχοι προθυμία τῆς ἐπιχειρήσεως, εἰ ... ἐπιχειροίην, and Cratyl. 398 Ε πόθεν, ὡ 'γαθέ, ἔχω; οὐδ' εἴ τι οἶός τ' ὰν εἴην εὐρεῖν, οὐ συντείνω διὰ τὸ ἡγεῖσθαι σὲ μᾶλλον εὐρήσειν ἡ ἐμαυτόν. Also infra v. 474 Λ, Β.

ἔστι γοῦν σκοτεινός] Compare the hunt for the Sophist in the 'dark cave' of negation, Soph. 254 A διὰ τὸ σκοτεινὸν τοῦ τόπου κατανοῆσαι χαλεπός.

I) καὶ ἐγὼ κατιδῶν . . . εἶπον] 'Here I got view, and cried Hurrah!'

ημεν καταγελαστότατοι... ἀπεσκοποῦμεν] The words from ὥσπερ are added in explanation. Hence the asyndeton.

- Ε ἄκουε, εἴ τι ἄρα λέγω] 'Listen and see whether there is anything in what I say.' Cp. infra 433 E εἰ οὕτω δόξει.
- A τοῦτό ἐστιν . . . ἡ δικαιοσύνη] 'This, or rather some form of this, is justice.' For the use of ἤτοι compare iii. 400 c τὰς ἀγωγὰς τοῦ ποδὸς αὐτὸν οὐχ ἦττον ψέγειν . . . ἡ τοὺς ῥυθμοὺς αὐτούς, ἤτοι ξυναμφότερόν τι. This (i.e. each doing his own proper work) as he says below, when done in a certain way or manner, may be suspected to be (κινδυνεύει εἶναι) justice.

τούτου τι είδος] It is the division of labour applied, not to the several industries, but to the three classes in the state and the three parts of the soul in the individual. The same thing is meant by  $\tau \rho \dot{\rho} \sigma \rho \nu \tau \nu \dot{\alpha}$  supra 432 E and infra B. See 434 A.

Τὸ ὑπόλοιπον... ὧν ἐσκέμμεθα] 'That which is the remainder of those we have considered;' i.e. which remains now that we have considered the other three. So τὸ ὑπολειφθὲν ἐκείνων infra. Cp. note on 432 B.

παρέχειν] depends immediately on δοκεῖ.

- C ἀλλὰ μέντοι . . (d) καὶ οὐκ ἐπολυπραγμόνει] The resumption ἢ τοῦτο, κ.τ.λ., helps to emphasize the alternative which is immediately in question. τοῦτο is explained by ὅτι τὸ αὐτοῦ, κ.τ.λ.
- D ἐνάμιλλον . . . δύναμις 'Then competing with wisdom, temperance, and courage in the promotion of political virtue we find

this power, that each individual in the state is doing his own work.' The genitive is descriptive or explanatory, 'the power that consists in this, that each individual in the state does his own work.'

Republic IV.

433 D

ἢ ἄλλου . . . τῶν αὐτῶν στέρωνται] The rule observed by courts of law in the administration of justice, that each shall have his own, is adduced in confirmation of the definition. Cp. infra 442 E.

Е

i λè δή ... βλάψαι πόλιν;] 'Look now: perhaps you will agree with me. Suppose a carpenter to undertake the work of a cobbler, or a cobbler of a carpenter—either exchanging implements or duties, or the same person to be attempting to do both—any change you please but one, do you imagine that such changes will be any great harm to the state?'

434 A

πάντα τἄλλα μεταλλαττόμενα] are followed in g by τά γε τοιαῦτα, which gives a true explanation, but is unnecessary as a correction of the passage. The words are in apposition with τέκτων . . . ἢ σκυτοτόμος, πάντα summing up, and τᾶλλα, as elsewhere in Plato, referring to what follows:— anything but what I am about to speak of. Compare Laws vii. 798 d τὰ μὲν οὖν ἄλλα ἐλάττω μεταβαλλόμενα κακὰ διεξεργάζοιτ ἄν, ὅσα περὶ σχήματα πάσχει τὸ τοιοῦτον ὅσα δὲ περὶ τὰ τῶν ἡθῶν ἐπαίνου τε καὶ ψόγου πέρι πυκνὰ μεταπίπτει, πάντων, οἴομαι, μέγιστά τε καὶ πλείστης εὐλαβείας δεόμενα ἃν εἴη. For the form of expression in summing up compare Polit. 299 ε περὶ ἄπαντα ταῦτα οὕτω πραττόμενα τί ποτ ἄν φανείη, κ.τ.λ. ἢ . . . μεταλαμβάνοντες and ἣ καὶ . . . πράττειν are opposed, ἢ τιμάς introducing a subordinate distinction between implements and industries.

D

εἰς τὸ τοῦ πολεμικοῦ εἶδος]  $\epsilon$ ἶδος here = ' mode of life or action,' i. e. ' function ' rather than ' class.'

οὖτοι] The pronoun emphatically sums up the three classes in opposition to the minor sub-divisions of the industrial class enumerated in supra  $\Lambda$ .

ή τριῶν ἄρα...(c) μάλιστα κακουργία] τριῶν γενῶν, sc. guardians, soldiers, traders.

της έαυτοῦ πόλεως] is added with the same solemn feeling as  $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$  τη αὐτοῦ πόλει, supra ii. 380 β.

[)

C

μηδέν . . . παγίως αὐτὸ λέγωμεν] 'We will not as yet say this quite positively.' For παγίως compare v. 479 c οὔτ εἶναι οὔτε μὴ εἶναι οὐδὲν αὐτῶν δυνατὸν παγίως νοῆσαι: and Theaet. 157 A ἐπεὶ καὶ τὸ ποιοῦν εἶναί τι καὶ τὸ πάσχον αὖ τι ἐπὶ ἐνὸς νοῆσαι, ὥς φασιν, οὐκ εἶναι παγίως.

Republic IV. 434 D άλλ' ἐὰν . . . ξυγχωρησόμεθα ἤδη] 'But if we apply this notion to the sphere of the individual, and it be admitted there also to be justice, we will concede the point without more ado.' Cp. infra 442 d. And for the liveliness of the expression compare Phaedr. 249 B δεῖ γὰρ ἄνθρωπον ξυνιέναι κατ' εἶδος λεγόμενον, ἐκ πολλῶν ἰὸν αἰσθήσεων εἰς ε̊ν λογισμῷ ξυναιρούμενον.

έκεῖ] sc. ἐν ένὶ ἐκάστῳ.

τί γὰρ καὶ ἐροῦμεν; ] sc. ἄλλο. 'For what else can we say?'

ην ψήθημεν, κ.τ.λ.] 'In regard to which we thought that we should more easily detect its nature in the case of the individual if,' &c. The accusative is in apposition to the sentence, and the difficulty of this construction is lessened by the attraction, which makes it unnecessary to ask for an account of the construction of ην. For similar accusatives cp. Hom. Il. xx. 83 ποῦ τοι ἀπειλαί, ας Τρώων βασιλεῦσιν ὑπίσχεο . . . ᾿Αχιλη̂υς ἐναντίβιον πολεμίζειν; Phaedr. 249 D τῆς τετάρτης μανίας, ην . . . αἰτίαν ἔχει ὡς μανικῶς διακείμενος. For the allusion see ii. 368 p ff.

ἐκεῖνο] SC. δικαιοσύνην.

τοῦτο εἶναι πόλις Sc. τὸ μεῖζον . . . τῶν ἐχόντων δικαιοσύνην.

E ἔν γε τη ἀγαθη This was not distinctly said, but has become apparent since the development of the ideal state.

**ἐκεῖ** Sc. ἐν τῆ πόλει,

ἐπαναφέρωμεν Compare the description of the argument from example in Polit. 278 A-C <sup>3</sup>Aρ' οὖν οὖχ ὧδε ῥᾶστον καὶ κάλλιστον ἐπάγειν αὐτοὺς ἐπὶ τὰ μήπω γιγνωσκόμενα; Πῶς; ᾿Ανάγειν πρῶτον ἐπ᾽ ἐκεῖνα ἐν οἶς ταὐτὰ ταῦτα ὀρθῶς ἐδόξαζον, ἀναγάγοντας δὲ τιθέναι παρὰ τὰ μήπω γιγνωσκόμενα, καὶ παραβάλλοντας ἐνδεικνύναι τὴν αὐτὴν ὁμοιότητα καὶ φύσιν ἐν ἀμφοτέραις οὖσαν ταῖς συμπλοκαῖς, μέχριπερ ἃν πᾶσι τοῖς ἀγνοουμένοις τὰ δοξαζόμενα ἀληθῶς παρατιθέμενα δειχθῆ, δειχθέντα δέ, παραδείγμαθ' οὕτω γιγνόμενα, ποιήση τῶν στοιχείων πάντων ἔκαστον ἐν πάσαις ταῖς συλλαβαῖς, τὸ μὲν ἔτερον ὡς τῶν ἄλλων ἔτερον ὄν, τὸ δὲ ταὐτὸν ὡς ταὐτὸν ἀεὶ κατὰ ταὐτὰ έαυτῷ προσαγορεύεσθαι. Παντάπασι μὲν οὖν. Οὐκοῦν τοῦτο μὲν ἱκανῶς συνειλήφαμεν, ὅτι παραδείγματός γ᾽ ἐστὶ τότε γένεσις, ὁπόταν ὃν ταὐτόν, ἐν ἐτέρῳ διεσπασμένῳ δοξαζόμενον ὀρθῶς καὶ συναχθέν, περὶ ἐκάτερον ὡς συν-άμφω μίαν ἀληθῆ δόξαν ἀποτελῆ; Φαίνεται.

καν μεν όμολογηται ] SC. τοῦτο καὶ εν ενὶ εκάστω δικαιοσύνη είναι.

ἐὰν δέ τι ἄλλο . . . ἐμφαίνηται] sc. ον τὸ δίκαιον. So also supra ἐφάνη: sc. ον.

βεβαιωσαίμεθ' ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] 'We will fix in our souls,' i. e. we will not only form a clear conception of justice, but will adopt it as our rule of life. There is here an anticipation of the tone assumed at the end of Book ix.

Republic IV. 435 A

καθ' δδόν] In this expression, as in  $\pi\rho$  δs  $\tau\rho$  δπου, &c., the notion of rightness is included in the noun. 'Your proposal is a right one.'

Let us turn now from the large letters to the small,—from the 435 A-D state to the individual,—and see whether this account of justice and of the other virtues is equally applicable in both cases,

The same words of praise and blame are applied to communities and to individuals. Whence we conclude that the same moral attributes belong equally to both.

But if this be so, and our account of the virtues is right, the soul must have three parts corresponding to the three classes in the state. (We must be content for the present with crude methods of psychological inquiry, only bearing in mind that there is a longer and more certain way.)

The imperfect apprehension of logical distinction in the Socratic age of Greek philosophy is seen in the following discussion, which may be summarized as follows: 'Quantitative difference leaves a quality unchanged. The difference between the state and the individual is only a difference of quantity: therefore the quality of justice in the state and the individual is the same.' It is hardly necessary to point out in our own day that the spheres of law or politics and of morality are only partially co-extensive; or in the language of ancient philosophy, that justice in the state is not the same with justice in the individual. The criticism with which Aristotle commences the Politics, on the erroneous conception of the state as a large family, appears trite to us; in his own age such a criticism afforded a valuable landmark against error. It seems to be directed against Plato.

άρ' οὖν ... ὅμοιον;] 'Is a nature which is called by the same name, whether it exists in a larger or smaller form, unlike or like in that respect in which it is called by the same name?' In other words, does quantity make any difference to quality? The translation in the English version is not strictly accurate: not two things, but two different forms of the same thing are spoken of.

435 A Republic IV. καὶ τὸν ἕνα ἄρα...(c) τῃ πόλει ] ἐκείνοις, sc. τοῖς ἐν τῃ πόλει εἴδεσιν. ἀξιοῦσθαι is passive.

435 C εἰς φαῦλόν γε ... χαλεπὰ τὰ καλά] The irony of Socrates in the use of the term φαῦλον is taken up seriously in what follows. Cp. supra 423 c φαῦλον ... φαυλότερον: 426 λ τόδε αὐτῶν οὐ χαρίεν ...; which is seriously answered by the words οὐ πάνυ χαρίεν. χαλεπὰ τὰ καλά is a maxim which later on is put into Socrates' mouth, infra vi. 497 p. For ἐμπεπτώκαμεν, 'we have tumbled into,' cp. the image in v. 453 p ἄν τέ τις εἰς κολυμβήθραν μικρὰν ἐμπέση ἄν τε εἰς τὸ μέγιστον πέλαγος μέσον, κ.τ.λ.

D

ἐκ τοιούτων μεθόδων, κ.τ.λ.] Plato seems to intimate some 'dialectic of the future,' of which he has himself laid the foundation in the Sixth and Seventh Books, where he distinguishes the kinds of knowledge and the faculties corresponding to them: in the present discussion, which does not aim at philosophical accuracy, he will argue from the common use of language. The nature of such a dialectic can only be conjectured: probably Plato would have desired to proceed by some method of ideas in the investigation of the soul: e.g. 'what idea is that which contains or knows other ideas?' He might have gone on to speculate on the identity of the 'Ego' and the universal. Cp. Theaet. 184 D δεινὸν γάρ που . . . εὶ πολλαί τινες ἐν ἡμῖν, ισπερ ἐν δουρείοις ἵπποις, αἰσθήσεις ἐγκάθηνται, ιὰλὰ μὴ εἰς μίαν τινὰ ἰδέαν, εἴτε ψυχὴν εἴτε ὅ τι δεῖ καλεῖν, πάντα ταῦτα ξυντείνει. In Book x. 611 B he hints that the soul is really one and not many.

In similar enigmatical language he appears in the Charmides (169 A) to describe dialectic: μεγάλου δή τινος, ὧ φίλε, ἀνδρὸς δεῖ, ὅστις τοῦτο κατὰ πάντων ἱκανῶς διαιρήσεται, πότερον οὐδὲν τῶν ὅντων τὴν αὐτοῦ δύναμιν αὐτὸ πρὸς ἑαυτὸ πέφυκεν ἔχειν . . . ἢ τὰ μέν, τὰ δ' οὔ. So Phaedrus, 246 A περὶ δὲ τῆς ἰδέας αὐτῆς (sc. τῆς ψυχῆς) ὧδε λεκτέον οἶον μέν ἐστι, πάντη πάντως θείας εἶναι καὶ μακρᾶς διηγήσεως, ῷ δὲ ἔοικεν, ἀνθρωπίνης τε καὶ ἐλάττονος. An application of the words ἀλλὰ . . . ἄγουσα, in a sense of which Socrates would doubtless have recognized the truth, may also be made to modern inductive philosophy.

οΐαις νῦν . . . χρώμεθα] So far as the expression is concerned, Plato might be referring generally to the methods in use in his own day: cp. vii. 516 Λ τῶν νῦν λεγομένων ἀληθῶν: but that he is referring rather to the methods which he has employed in the previous discussion, is shown by the words τῶν γε προειρημένων τε καὶ προεσκεμμένων ἀξίως, and also by the reference to this place in vi. 504 B

ελέγομεν που ότι ως μεν δυνατον ήν κάλλιστα αυτά κατιδείν άλλη μακροτέρα Republic είη περίοδος, κ.τ.λ. Galen read ἄλλη for ἀλλά here.

IV. 435 D

άξίως SC. λάβοιμεν ἄν. τῶν γε προειρημένων τε καὶ προεσκεμμένων refers not to the subjects of discussion but to the discussion itself: 'in a manner worthy of our previous statements and speculations.'

καὶ πάνυ ἐξαρκέσει | Socrates characteristically doubts the success even of their more modest attempt. Compare vi. 506 Ε πλέον γάρ μοι φαίνεται ή κατά την παρούσαν δρμήν έφικέσθαι του γε δοκούντος έμοι τὰ νῦν.

> 435 E-441 C

It is clear that if a state has moral attributes, these can only come from the individuals of whom the state is composed. But what is not so clear is whether the three activities which we have identified with our three classes, are functions of three faculties or of one indivisible nature. In other words, is the distinction which we draw between thought, passion and desire, a real distinction?

The soul is one, Is it also many? Let us make sure. a top revolve and yet stand still. But that implies that it has an axis and a circumference. For nothing can have opposite activities (or passivities) at the same time with the same part of itself and in the same respect.

Now assent and dissent, desire and repugnance, are opposites.

And thirst is desire of drink,—of that simply, without qualification,—unless the thirst is qualified. One may be thirsty, however, and yet not drink, because reason is opposed to the desire. This proves that reason excludes desire. It remains to distinguish anger from desire and reason. Some may be inclined to identify the two impulsive principles. But the case of Leontius is a refutation of them. For when he was led by a low craving to look at the dead bodies of criminals in the place of execution, a higher impulse struggled with his desire and he was angry with himself. Indeed anger commonly takes part with reason (just as our soldiers support the rulers), wherever injustice is perceived. Yet anger is clearly to be distinguished from reason. For children are irrationally angry—so are lions and wolves,—and when Odysseus rebuked his spirit, it was the reason in him which checked his passion,

ãρ' οὖν ἡμῖν, κ.τ.λ.] The courageous temper (τὸ θυμοειδές) in the state is said to be derived from the individuals who compose the state. Cp. infra viii. 544 D, E ological ologi

435 E

435 E

Republic / Socrates again leaves out of sight the fact that the collective courage of a state or an army is in some degree different from the courage of individuals. And yet the conception of the state as an ideal unity different from the individuals who compose it belongs rather to ancient than to modern thought. See Thuc. ii. 60 πόλιν πλείω ξύμπασαν δρθουμένην ωφελείν τους ίδιωτας ή καθ' έκαστον των πολιτών εὐπραγοῦσαν, ἀθρόαν δὲ σφαλλομένην,

> γελοίον γὰρ . . . ταύτην τὴν αἰτίαν 'For example, in the case of a people who have the character of being passionate, to imagine that this quality does not originate in the individuals, who compose the state, would be ridiculous.' For the use of airia compare Laws i. 624 θεδς . . . εἴληφε τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς τῶν νόμων διαθέσεως; and elsewhere αἰτίαν ἔχειν. οι δή: the relative refers to a masculine understood from πόλεσιν, rather than immediately to ίδιωτῶν.

> τον ἄνω τόπον This can hardly mean 'the Highland country,' as L. and S. interpret: rather the parts of Europe which are remote from Hellas and the Aegean Sea.

436 A

Φοίνικας . . . Αἴγυπτον In Laws v. 747 c he passes a similar censure on the Phoenicians and Egyptians, whose institutions are charged with causing πανουργία instead of σοφία, though he is uncertain whether this is to be attributed to the hand of the legislator, to adverse fortune, or to climate. For Thrace and Scythia cp. Arist. Pol. vii. 7, δ 2 τὰ μὲν γὰρ ἐν τοῖς ψυχροῖς τόποις ἔθνη καὶ τὰ περὶ την Εύρωπην θυμοῦ μέν έστι πλήρη, διανοίας δὲ ἐνδεέστερα καὶ τέχνης, κ.τ.λ., which he goes on to contrast with the intellectual and indolent character of the Asiatics, and the union of intellect and passion in the Greek.

The fallacy about the sameness of the state and the individual easily escapes notice. A question of psychology receives more attention, and is imagined to involve a real difficulty:-Does the soul act as a whole or in three parts? Before this question can be resolved, the meaning of sameness and difference has to be ascertained. (1) Opposition in the same relation is to be distinguished from opposition in different relations; in the first case the two members of the opposition are necessarily exclusive or contradictory—they cannot co-exist; but not so in the second. (2) If one of the terms which are correlative (e.g. drink or thirst) is simple, the other should be simple: if one is compound the other must be compound.

τόδε δὲ... ἄλλο ἄλλω] 'But this is a real difficulty. Is there one principle here by which we perform our several actions, or three whereby our actions are severally performed?'

Republic IV. 436 A

В

τῷ αὐτῷ τούτῳ] finds an imperfect antecedent in what precedes: 'this faculty' of which we spoke as  $\theta \nu \mu o \epsilon \iota \delta \epsilon s$ ,  $\phi \iota \lambda o \mu a \theta \epsilon s$ ,  $\phi \iota \lambda o \mu a$ 

δῆλον ὅτι...οὐκ ἐθελήσει ἄμα] 'It is clear that the same thing will not do or suffer opposites at the same time, in the same part and in the same relation.'

Can two contradictories be true? Not in the statement of particular facts, when the terms are accurately used and the same relation is preserved. A wheel or top which moves upon a fixed axis or centre may be said to move and not to move, i.e. it may move at its circumference, while its axis (conceived as a vertical straight line) remains still. But the wheel or top cannot move and not move around its axis at the same time: it is ridiculous to maintain that 'the earth goes round the sun in the same sense and at the same time that the sun goes round the earth.' Where in any subject of theological or metaphysical speculation, such as necessity and free-will, or the divisibility of matter, contradictories are said to be equally true, the reason is that neither expression is more than half the truth, and both together are only approximations to the truth. Plato is perhaps arguing with the Heracliteans in this passage. If so, he has got beyond their point of view and reached the region of common sense. Cp. Symp. 187 A, B: Soph. 242 Ε διαφερόμενον γάρ ἀεὶ ξυμφέρεται, φασίν αὶ συντονώτεραι τῶν μουσῶν, κ.τ.λ.

οὐ ταὐτὸν ἢν] The imperfect of εἰμί is nowhere used simply for the present, but either (1) with some reference to the past as in ix. 580 p τὸ μέν, φαμέν, ἢν, referring to the discussion at iv. 439 p: or (2), as in this passage, supra 428 A, and x. 609 B, implying an assertion of existence confirmed by inquiry and therefore prior to it,—'was all along.' Compare the expression τὸ τί ἢν εἶναι, in which the past tense refers to the essence as prior to our conception of it.

οὖκοῦν...περιφέρωνται] 'And suppose such an objector were still further to display his wit by subtly arguing that tops at any

D

(

Republic IV.

rate, when they spin round with their pegs fixed on the same spot, stand and are moved in their entirety at the same time.'

436 D These are apparent exceptions to Plato's law of contradiction which have to be cleared away before we are in a condition to determine whether the parts of the soul are really opposed. There would be no distinction of  $\theta\nu\mu\dot{\phi}s$  and  $\dot{\epsilon}\pi\iota\theta\nu\mu\dot{\epsilon}a$  unless the actions which flow from the one principle excluded those which flow from the other.

ώς οὐ κατὰ ταὐτὰ... φερομένων] τὰ τοιαῦτα is to be taken as cognate accusative with the participles. 'Since things which act in this way are not at such moments in motion and at rest with the same parts of themselves.'

437 A πάθοι . . . ποιήσειεν] The words εἴη ἢ καί to which Stallbaum objects as unmeaning, and which he supposes to have crept in from the termination of ποιήσειεν, have the authority of the best MSS. They are more likely to have been omitted than inserted. Nor is there any objection to them on the ground of want of sense. Because the categories of ποιεῖν and πάσχειν are correlatives there is no reason why εἶναι should not be interposed between them, the three together answering to active, intransitive, passive.

ἴνα μὴ ἀναγκαζώμεθα...μηκύνειν] 'that we may not be compelled to be tedious by going right through all such objections, and satisfying ourselves that they are untrue.'

ὑποθέμενοι . . ἔσεσθαι] He means to say that he will not guard every possible case: if any assumption on which the argument turns is found to be erroneous, the consequences which follow shall be withdrawn. Cp. supra 434 D  $\mu\eta\delta\epsilon\nu$ ,  $\mathring{\eta}\nu$   $\delta'$   $\dot{\epsilon}\gamma\dot{\omega}$ ,  $\pi\omega$   $\pi\dot{\alpha}\nu\nu$   $\pi\alpha\gamma\dot{\omega}$   $\alpha\dot{\nu}$   $\dot{\nu}$   $\dot{\nu$ 

В

προσάγεσθαι] 'to draw to oneself,' i. e. to accept.

ἀπωθεῖσθαι] 'to reject.'

τῶν ἐναντίων \* ἄν ἀλλήλοις] The insertion of ἄν seems necessary, and it may easily have dropped out between -ων and dλ-.

εἴτε ποιημάτων . . . παθημάτων] 'Activities or passivities as the case may be.'

οὐδὲν γὰρ ταύτη διοίσει] i. e. this relation of opposition is equally possible between activities and passivities.

ἐπινεύειν τοῦτο . . . τῆς γενέσεως] (1) 'Nods assent to this within herself,' or (2) 'beckons this with a nod towards herself—as if some one were putting a question to her, longing for the attainment of it.' For πρὸς αὐτήν in the former case, cp. Phil. 38 Ε πρὸς αὐτὸν διανοούμενος. But the contrast favours (2).

Republic IV. 437 C

**εἰς τὸ ἀπωθεῖν . . . θήσομεν**] Compare Soph. 235 Λ εἰς γόητα . . . θετέον (sc. αὐτὸν) τινά.

åρ' οὖν, καθ' ὅσον, κ.τ.λ.] He means to say that if one of two relative terms is qualified the other must also be qualified: e.g. simple thirst is relative to simple drink, but great thirst implies much drink, hot thirst cold drink, and so on.

[)

η οὖ] The false reading που seems originally to have had a place in Par. A (ἡ οὐ: που mg). Hermann's inversion of ψυχροῦ and θερμοῦ for the sake of symmetry makes nonsense of the passage; see infra 438 Ε καὶ οὕ τι λέγω, ὡς, οἵων ἃν ἦ, τοιαῦτα καὶ ἔστιν.

τοῦ δὲ τοίου . . . τὰ προσγιγνόμενα] 'But the accessories of the desire are relative to this or that quality in the object of desire.'

E

μήτοι τις, κ.τ.λ.] The objection ends with the words χρηστοῦ σίτου. It is restated in a different and more general form by Socrates in the following sentence (πάντες γὰρ...αὶ ἄλλαι οὕτω). Plato leaves the objection for a time (until 439 A), and proceeds to show more clearly how the qualification of one term of a relation inevitably involves the qualification of the other. Then returning to the case of thirst in 439 A he states that thirst simple is neither of much nor of little, neither of good nor of bad drink, but simply of drink. He does not fully criticize the objection. Had he done so, he would probably have gone on to contest the fact that 'all desire is of good.' Obviously the desire of the drunkard is not of drink that is good for him—or to explain that the statement could only be accepted as true if 'desire' is used in an ideal sense and therefore implying the qualification of it by the word 'good.'

438

ἴσως γὰρ ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] γάρ means, 'You are right to call attention to this, for,' &c.

τοιαῦτα οἷα εἶναί του] For the technical use of the genitive to express relation, cp. Theaet. 160  $\Lambda$  Ανάγκη δέ γε ἐμέ τε τινὸς γίγνεσθαι, κ.τ.λ.

οὖκ ἔμαθες, κ.τ.λ.] The example of comparatives is next taken, to which the same principle applies. 'Greater' is relative to

13

Republic IV. 438 B 'smaller,' 'heavier' to 'lighter,' 'more' to 'fewer.' But if one of the terms in these several pairs is qualified, the other must also be qualified. Thus 'much greater' is relative to 'much smaller,' 'much heavier' to 'much lighter,' 'many more' to 'many fewer.'

A similar transition is made in the Charmides, from the relation between sense and knowledge, and the objects of sense and knowledge, to comparative terms: 168 β καὶ γὰρ τὸ μεῖζόν φαμεν τοιαύτην τινὰ ἔχειν δύναμιν, ὥστε τινὸς εἶναι μεῖζον; C οὐκοῦν καὶ εἴ τι διπλάσιόν ἐστι τῶν τε ἄλλων διπλασίων καὶ έαυτοῦ, ἡμίσεος δήπου ὅντος ἑαυτοῦ τε καὶ τῶν ἄλλων διπλάσιον ἂν εἵη: ibid. πλεῖον δὲ αὐτοῦ ὃν οὐ καὶ ἔλαττον ἔσται, καὶ βαρύτερον ὄν, κουφότερον, καὶ πρεσβύτερον ὂν νεώτερον, καὶ τἄλλα πάντα ὡσαύτως;

C τὰ διπλάσια πρὸς τὰ ἡμίσεα] The same rule applies to these terms as to 'greater' and 'smaller,' 'more' and 'fewer,' a 'larger double' is relative to a 'larger half.' The double of 6 (=12) is a larger double than the double of 4 (=8): and the larger half (6) is relative to the larger double (12): the smaller half (4) to the smaller double (8).

τί δὲ τὰ περὶ τὰς ἐπιστήμας; κ.τ.λ.] So with regard to sciences: the object of science is knowledge, but the object of a particular science is a particular kind of knowledge. With  $\tau$ ί δέ, σοὶ δοκεῖ may be supplied.

δ αὐτὸς τρόπος] SC. τούτων ἐστί.

οἰκίας ἐργασίας ἐπιστήμη]
 Cp. Theaet. 146 D ὅταν λέγης σκυτικήν,
 μή τι ἄλλο φράζεις ἢ ἐπιστήμην ὑποδημάτων ἐργασίας; κ.τ.λ.

αὐτά] 'themselves,' i. e. without their accidents. The simple correlatives are simply of each other, the qualified correlatives are of the qualified.

αὐτῶν μόνων Sc. ὧν ἐστίν.

F. καὶ οὖ τι λέγω, κ.τ.λ.] The qualities of the two terms of a relation, though correlative, are not necessarily identical, e.g. as we have seen above, hot thirst is of cold drink; or to take the case of knowledge and its objects: there is a sub-division of things which are objects of knowledge into healthy things; and there is a subdivision of knowledge corresponding to these healthy things: but because the objects are healthy it does not follow that the knowledge which is concerned with them, although distinguished from other kinds of knowledge, is healthy too. As these objects are

distinguished from other objects by the possession of a particular quality (i.e. health), so the knowledge which is relative to them is distinguished from other kinds of knowledge by possessing a peculiar quality (i. e. having to do with health).

Republic 438

τὸ δὲ δὴ δίψος ... (430 A) πώματός γε] 'Will you not say that thirst, said I, is in this class, the class of relations, as far as its essence is concerned. Thirst is, I imagine,— Yes, said he, thirst is of drink.' Two questions are asked; before the second is completed Glaucon breaks in with a reply to the first (ἔγωγε); and in πώματός γε he completes and answers the second. The order of words in the first question is οὐ θήσεις τὸ δίψος εἶναι τούτων τῶν τινός (sc. ὄντων) and in adding τοῦτο ὅπερ ἐστίν, sc. εἶναι, τούτων is neglected. a brachylogy similar to that in των τινός cp. Phil. 16 D των έν έκείνων.

The bearing of this passage on the argument appears to be as follows. The object of Socrates is to establish a difference between θυμός, ἐπιθυμία and λόγος, and to show that these are primary WB elements of the soul. In order to meet the possible objection that these are not distinct elements, as is shown by such phrases as a 'reasonable' or a 'passionate desire,' or 'a reasonable anger,' he insists that 'desire' or 'anger' are in themselves simple, and that they become qualified by the addition of something apart from them and different from them.

ου γὰρ δή . . . πράττοι 'For surely as we maintain, the same thing cannot do opposite things with the same part of itself in reference to the same thing at the same time.' and is to be supplied from the previous sentence: cp. for parallels i. 352 E, ii. 382 E, and notes.

439

τοῦ τοξότου cp. supra 428 A and note.

πότερον, κ.τ.λ. A man may be thirsty and not choose to drink: but this is because there is present in him another principle (usually reason) besides thirst, which masters his thirst.

C

τὰ τοιαῦτα i.e. the indulgence of appetite generally.

οταν \* εγγίγνηται | Plato never loses an opportunity of saving that D 'all men have not' right reason. Cp. Theaet. 186 c τὰ δὲ περὶ τούτων αναλογίσματα πρός τε οὐσίαν καὶ ωφέλειαν μόγις καὶ ἐν χρόνω διὰ πολ-

λών πραγμάτων καὶ παιδείας παραγίγνεται οξς αν καὶ παραγίγνηται.

δια ... νοσημάτων 'through the incidence of morbid conditions.'

Republic IV.
439

Cp. especially Tim. 86 B, C ήδουὰς δὲ καὶ λύπας ὑπερβαλλούσας τῶν νύσων μεγίστας θετέον τῆ ψυχῆ περιχαρὴς γὰρ ἄνθρωπος ὧν ἡ καὶ τἀναντία ὑπὸ λύπης πάσχων, σπεύδων τὸ μὲν έλεῖν ἀκαίρως, τὸ δὲ φυγεῖν, οὔθ ὁρᾶν οὔτε ἀκούειν ὀρθὸν οὐδὲν δύναται, λυττᾳ δὲ καὶ λογισμοῦ μετασχεῖν ῆκιστα τότε δὴ δυνατός ἐστι.

οὐ δὴ... ἐταῖρον] From the rule that the same principle when rightly defined cannot have two contradictory effects is inferred that the desire to drink and the power to abstain from drinking proceed from different elements in the soul.

ἐπτόηται] The perfect signifies a perpetual or constantly recurring state, 'is in a continual flutter.' Cp. vii. 521 Ε τετεύτακε.

οὖκ] in the answer refers back to οὐ δη ἀλόγως.

Ε ταῦτα μὲν... τῷ ἐπιθυμητικῷ] The opposition of desire and reason is admitted. Are desire and anger equally opposed? At first sight the impression is that they are nearly related.

τούτων ποτέρω] 'To one or other of these.' The indefinite πότερος (L. and S. s. v.) occurs several times in Plato. It is hardly found in other Greek writers of the classical period.

ἀλλ', ἦν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] An anecdote is introduced to prove that a similar opposition may exist between anger and desire as between reason and desire. The interpretation of ποτὲ ἀκούσας τι πιστεύω τούτῳ is difficult; the best explanation of the words as they stand is as follows: 'I once heard a story in which I put faith,' and which implies that anger is not akin to desire. [Possibly, however, a negative οὐ has been dropped before πιστεύω. 'I once heard a tale which makes me doubt that suggestion of yours.' L. C.]

τὸ βόρειον τεῖχος] I.e. the outer wall on the north running from Athens to the Peiraeus. The middle wall (τὸ διὰ μέσου τεῖχος), which was parallel to the north wall, is mentioned in the Gorgias  $(455 \, \mathrm{E})$ : it also extended from Athens to Peiraeus, and was so called because it lay between the north wall and another wall which ran to Phalerum. Thus a fortified open space communicating between Athens and the Peiraeus, and not merely a wall, was still preserved as a means of communication between Athens and the Peiraeus, even if the north wall were captured.

παρὰ τῷ δημίῳ] The story is that Leontius, son of Aglaion, going up from the Peiraeus underneath the north wall on the out-

side observing dead bodies lying by the executioner' [or 'at the executioner's,' L.·C.], &c. There is no reason to read  $\delta\eta\mu\epsilon\iota\omega$  for  $\delta\eta\mu\iota\omega$ . The spot is sufficiently described as outside the north wall on the road from Peiraeus to Athens, being also the spot where the executioner would naturally be found.

Republic IV. 439 E

ίδου υμίν . . . ω κακοδαίμονες ' There's for you, wretches!'

440 A

οὖτος μέντοι ... ὁ λόγος] 'This tale, however.' μέντοι contrasts the inference suggested by Leontius' words with Glaucon's first impression.

οὐκοῦν καὶ ἄλλοθι . . . (B) τοῦ τοιούτου ] The subject is at first the man himself, but changes to τὸν θυμόν as the sentence proceeds. Cp. supra 411 B.

αὐτὸν κοινωνήσαντα Sc. τὸν θυμόν.

В

αίροῦντος λόγου μὴ δεῖν ἀντιπράττειν] 'When reason decides that she is not to be opposed.' The omission of ἐαυτῷ (sc. τῷ λόγῳ) after ἀντιπράττειν is sufficiently supported by instances (L. and S., s.v. ἀντιπράσσω 2). The reading of the principal MSS. has therefore been retained, and may be construed as above. There is no distinct subject of ἀντιπράττειν, with which either θυμόν οτ ἐπιθυμίαν οτ τὸν ἄνθρωπον, or all together may be supplied. The other reading, ἄν τι πράττειν, accepted by Bekker, is obviously an emendation, which gives a poor sense. Stallbaum places a comma after δεῖν, and construes as follows:—'But that the spirit, making common cause with the desires when reason insists that its making common cause is wrong (μὴ δεῖν, sc. κοινωνῆσαι), should oppose reason,' &c.,—a method of taking the words which is harsher than the other.

The sentence is an anacoluthon, the structure of κοινωνήσαντα being broken by τοῦ τοιούτου αἰσθέσθαι, which is substituted for ἰδεῖν.

ὅταν ἀδικεῖσθαί τις ἡγῆται . . . (d) πραϋνθ $\hat{\eta}$ ] The subject of ζεῖ, κ.τ.λ., is ὁ θυμός from the previous sentence, as appears from ισπερ κύων ὑπὸ νομέως. But the θυμός is closely identified with the person in whom it forms the active principle. Hence  $\pi \alpha \rho$  αὐτ $\hat{\phi}$ , 'with the man's self.'

С

διὰ \* τοῦ πεινῆν, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. infra 442 c διά τε λυπῶν καὶ ἡδονῶν: vi. 494 d διὰ τοσούτων κακῶν. The reading is conjectural. The manuscript reading διὰ τό can only be defended in one of two ways. Either (1) connecting διὰ τὸ . . . πάσχειν directly with οὐ λήγει τῶν γενναίων = 'he does not on that account desist from noble efforts,'

Republic IV. 440 C

44 I

the words καὶ νικᾳ καί being introduced διὰ μέσου: or (2) [B. J.] 'and because it (sc. passion) endures hunger and cold and other such sufferings patiently, &c. (πεινῆν ὑπομένων being equivalent to ὑπομένων πεινῶν). The words καὶ νικᾳ καὶ οὐ λήγει, κ.τ.λ., present considerable difficulty, and involve a contradiction if νικᾳ and οὐ λήγει are supposed to refer to the same struggle, because they put together conjunctively (καὶ . . . καί) what should be joined disjunctively (ἢ . . . ἤ). The difficulty is somewhat obviated if νικᾳ and οὐ λήγει, κ.τ.λ., are taken to refer to different struggles,—the former to the struggle between θυμός and ἐπιθυμία within the injured man himself/ as exemplified in his endurance of hunger and cold in the attempt to satisfy his anger, the latter to the struggle in which the injured man strives to avenge himself on his injurer.

καίτοι γ'] 'And indeed'—a common use in Homer, rare in Attic.

άλλ' \*  $\hat{\eta}$  ... ἐνθυμεῖ;] 'But do you bear this also in mind, I wonder?' \* $\hat{\eta}$ , the conjecture of Ast, is more expressive than εἰ, the manuscript reading. Εἰ in Hellenistic Greek (Matt. xii. 10), as in Homer (Od. i. 158) is used with directly interrogative force. But this only helps to account for the corruption.

E 'όμεθα] refers to the suggestion hesitatingly put forward by Glaucon, supra 439 ε Ἰσως, ἔφη, (τὸ τοῦ θυμοῦ ἂν εἴη ὁμοφυές)...τῷ ἐπιθυμητικῷ. Socrates, as in other passages, courteously assumes a share of the responsibility of a suggestion which has proved erroneous.

τίθεσθαι τὰ ὅπλα πρὸς τοῦ λογιστικοῦ] 'Arrays itself on the side of the rational part.'

φύσει, ἐὰν μὴ . . . διαφθαρῆ] These words seem to imply an admission that the statement in 440 B goes beyond the actual fact, and represents what Plato regards as the normal condition. It is only in the uncorrupted soul that passion always obeys reason. It may, in perverted natures, become subject to the many-headed monster, i.e. the desires, cp. ix. 590 B, where the depravation of θυμός is described, especially in the words κολακεία δὲ καὶ ἀνελευθερία οὐχ ὅταν τις τὸ αὐτὸ τοῦτο, τὸ θυμοειδές, ὑπὸ τῷ ὀχλώδει θηρίφ ποιῆ καὶ ἕνεκα χρημάτων καὶ τῆς ἐκείνου ἀπληστίας προπηλακιζόμενον ἐθίζη ἐκ νέου ἀντὶ λέοντος πίθηκον γίγνεσθαι;

ἀνάγκη, ἔφη, τρίτον] SC. τοῦτο εἶναι.

ναί, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ. That passion or spirit is the ally of reason against appetite has been already shown. But is there any difference between passion and reason? Yes, for passion exists in : children who have not attained to reason, and in irrational animals. A further proof of their opposition is given by Homer, who makes the reasoning principle rebuke senseless wrath.

Republic

44 I

λογισμοῦ δ' ἔνιοι . . . οψέ ποτε ] Cp. Theaet. 186 c τὰ δὲ περὶ τούτων . . . παραγίγνηται.

ανω που ἐκεῖ 'Somewhere above (you know where).' The В reference is to iii. 300 D.

> 441 C-111 11

Since, then, it is proved that the state and the individual are alike resolvable into three elements, it may be assumed that wisdom, courage, temperance, and justice are severally referable to corresponding parts and relations in either. Justice in the individual as in the state exists when reason, passion, and desire perform severally their proper functions. And this end is secured by the united influence of music and gymnastic applied to the two higher elements, which together will rule and keep guard over the third. Courage in the individual as in the state is the virtue of the spirited element, and consists in tenacity of patriotic resolve; temperance is the harmony between higher and lower; wisdom is the supremacy of the rational element. The 'small letters' are now as legible as the large. And our theory will stand the test of common instances. For the actions of the just man, as we have defined him, are in accordance with popular notions of justice. Our presentiment that justice would be found in the interaction of the various classes of the community has been more than confirmed. But the principle of the division of labour which we then asserted was but a shadow of the deeper truth, that there are these three elements in the soul of man, whose right and consentaneous working constitutes him just. Such is justice, then, in states and individuals.

διανενεύκαμεν Compare Parmen. 137 Α πως χρή τηλικόνδε όντα διανεύσαι τοιούτόν τε καὶ τοσούτον πληθος λόγων.

44 I

ἐπιεικῶς like μετρίως, is an expression of moderation, which is not, however, to be taken very strictly—' we are fairly agreed.'

Socrates determines that we reason with one part of the soul, and desire with another, and are angry with another. This is an important beginning in the science of psychology. For though

Republic IV. 441 C a thinker of the Megarian school may argue that the soul is without parts (and Plato himself hints as much—Book x. p. 611), the thing intended is nevertheless true, that there are different and opposite effects which may be ascribed in a figure to parts of the soul. The division does not interfere with the higher unity in which they meet. A limb is dead when cut off from the source of life; a faculty is unmeaning which is independent of the mind and of other faculties. But the body or mind which had no limbs or faculties would be incapable of being made the subject of inquiry or of description.

Psychology seems to rest (1) on language, which expresses in a crude and general manner, subject to the conditions of language, the collective reflections of the human mind about itself; the common use of terms which has come down from former ages is partially modified (a) by the efforts of great thinkers, who stamp words anew, and  $(\beta)$  by the experience of mankind, which insensibly changes their meaning: names which have originally referred to material objects insensibly pass into the sphere of mind: (2) on consciousness, which suggests rather than proves, and the facts or results of which are generally lost in the attempt to define them: (3) on external observation (a) of the physical antecedents of mental states or habits, which, however, fall very far short of the whole secret of the mind:  $(\beta)$  of outward acts either seen by the eye or verified by the independent testimony of several observers,—and admitting sometimes of being tabulated in the form of statistics: these form the principal scientific ground of psychological inquiry: (4) on history, which traces the continuity of the human mind in all ages and countries, though with many breaks and chasms: which shows the impossibility of explaining mental phenomena within the limits of the individual: which helps to separate the abstract from the concrete, the ideas of the understanding or reason from the colours of mythology or imagination: which subjects the mental world to our use by showing us our place in the whole, There is no science in which we are more likely to be imposed upon by words: in none is greater care required that the parts should not be separated from the whole; in none is more left to the subtlety of individual apprehension. The greatest use of such a science is not to supply positive information about the mind or the faculties of the mind, but to quicken the habit of observation of ourselves and others.

(

τὰ αὐτὰ μὲν τὰ αὐτὰ δ'] For this idiomatic pleonasm cp. Soph. Trach. 263, 264, Philoct. 1370, 1371 $\delta\iota\pi\lambda\hat{\eta}\nu$ μὲν $\delta\iota\pi\lambda\hat{\eta}\nu$ δέ, κ.τ.λ.	Republic IV.
ἀμφότερα] The individual and the state.	441
τῷ τὸ ἐαυτοῦ γενῶν] The order is τῷ ἔκαστον τριῶν ἄντων ἐν αὐτῆ γενῶν πράττειν τὸ ἐαυτοῦ.	D
τὸ μέν] SC. τὸ λογιστικόν. τὸ δέ, SC. τὸ θυμοειδές.	E
ήμεροῦσα άρμονία τε καὶ ἡυθμῷ] Cp. iii. 401 D, 412 A.	442 A

καὶ τούτω . . . \*προστατήσετον] The MSS. give προστήσετον, which would mean,—'And so music and gymnastic' (the subject is supplied from μουσικής καὶ γυμναστικής κρᾶσις above), 'will place these two' (reason and anger), 'which have been thus nurtured and have learned their parts and been educated, in authority over the concupiscent element.' There is a harshness in this change from the singular to the dual with a dual object, and in the further change of subject in τηρήσετον to which the subject appears to be τὸ λογιστικὸν καὶ τὸ θυμοειδές. Το avoid this Bekker has, without manuscript authority, altered προστήσετον into προστατήσετον,—'these two' (reason and anger) 'will preside,' &c. But the correction is not absolutely necessary, and therefore, like all emendations which are not absolutely necessary, should not be admitted into the text. [B. ].]

δ τηρήσετον . . . (Β) ἀνατρέψη] 'Over this part of the soul they (reason and passion) will keep guard, lest waxing great with fulness of bodily pleasures, as they are termed, and no longer confined to her own sphere, the concupiscent soul should attempt to enslave and rule those who are not her natural born subjects, and overturn the common life of all.' For the use of οὖκ αὖ, referring to τὰ αὐτῶν μαθόντε (supra), cp. iii. 393 d, and note: vi. 499 d τοῖς δὲ πολλοῖς, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, ὅτι οὖκ αὖ δοκεῖ, ἐρεῖς; Bekker reads γενῶν for γένει with q β΄, these MSS. also give προσῆκεν for προσῆκον with Stobaeus—probably the right reading.

καλουμένων] implies the unreality of the grosser bodily pleasures. Cp. Phileb. 45, supra 420 Λ, &c.

πάντων] sc. τῶν μερῶν, which, in Plato's figurative language, are spoken of as a community: cp. infra ἐκάστφ τε καὶ ὅλφ τῷ κοινῷ σῷῶν αὐτῶν τριῶν ὄντων.

σοφὸν δέ γε ἐκείνῳ τῷ σμικρῷ μέρει, τῷ ὁ ἦρχέ τ' ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ταῦτα παρήγγελλεν] The reference in the first words, ἐκείνῳ τῷ σμικρῷ...

Republic IV. 442

D

ἢρχέ τ' ἐν αὐτῷ, is to supra 428 Ε τῷ σμικροτάτῳ ἄρα ἔθνει καὶ μέρει έαυτῆς καὶ τῆ ἐν τούτῳ ἐπιστήμη, τῷ προεστῶτι καὶ ἄρχοντι, ὅλη σοφὴ αν εἴη κατὰ φύσιν οἰκισθεῖσα πόλις.

ταῦτα παρήγγελλεν] referring to τὸ ὑπὸ τοῦ λόγου παραγγελθέν supra, and both containing a reference to supra 429 c, where the instruction is given not by reason to the individual, but by the law-giver to the state. The imperfect refers to the time of education.

ἔχον αὖ κἀκεῖνο, κ.τ.λ.] 'that again too having in itself a knowledge, the knowledge of what is advantageous to each and to the whole community which is composed of them, being three in number.' Reason has in itself a knowledge (i. e. of the expedient for each and all), as it was implied in the previous sentence that  $\theta \nu \mu \delta s$  had received a knowledge (i. e. of what is or is not fearful).

τό τε ἄρχον καὶ τὼ ἀρχομένω] the one ruling principle of reason, and the two subject ones of passion and desire.

στασιάζωσιν αὐτῷ] sc. τὼ ἀρχομένω τῷ ἄρχοντι.

φ πολλάκις λέγομεν] Cp. ii. 368 Λ for a similar 'pronominal' phrase.

τί οὖν; ... ἐφάνη;] 'Is justice in any way more dim to our eyes, so as to appear other than she appeared in the state?' Justice, as now seen in the individual, has the same form under which she appeared in the state, and the outlines are as sharp in every way. In ii. 368 c the form of justice in the individual was said to require a keen vision. And a visual image, if seen more dimly in one position than in another, might be said ἀπαμβλύνεσθαι. As elsewhere, the attribute of perception is transferred to the thing perceived.

Ε δδε γάρ . . . προσφέροντες] 'Because if there be any doubt lingering in our minds we may thoroughly convince ourselves in this way;—by applying to it (i.e. to justice as we define it) the test of common-place notions.' αὐτῷ refers to δικαιοσύνη, as elsewhere, a neuter taking up a feminine. προσφέρειν is used as in Phileb. 23 A τὴν ἀκριβεστάτην αὐτῆ προσφέροντα βάσανον. Plato uses common opinion, not without disdain, as a confirmation of his philosophical definition. The common notions about justice, which when adduced by Polus and Cephalus are rejected as superficial and external, are now used 'as witnesses' to the soundness of the deeper conception. Cp. supra 433 E, where the definition of

justice in the state is illustrated by the legal notion of justice, viz. Republic that every man should have his own.

τέλεον ἄρα . . . τὸ ἐνύπνιον . . . ὁ ἔφαμεν ὁποπτεῦσαι] 'Our dream, then, is fulfilled, I mean the suspicion which we expressed.' The antecedent to ὅ is in apposition to τὸ ἐνύπνιον, and ὅ is a cognate accusative, governed by ὑποπτεῦσαι. In what follows, the reference is to supra 432 d κινδυνεύομέν τι ἔχειν ἴχνος, and 433 A ὁ γὰρ ἐξ ἀρχῆς ἐθέμεθα . . . ὅτε τὴν πόλιν κατωκίζομεν. That again refers back to ii. 370 B ff. And an anticipation of the dream occurs at ib. 371 E, 372 A ποῦ οὖν ἄν ποτε ἐν αὐτῆ εἴη ἥ τε δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἡ ἀδικία; . . . ἐν αὐτῶν τούτων χρεία τινί. There is also some reference to supra 432 d. It follows that ἀρχόμενοι in the present passage is in the imperfect tense, and ἐμβεβηκέναι pluperfect:—' how that in the very commencement of our foundation of the state we had lighted (it would seem) upon a certain beginning and impress of justice.'

ἀρχόμενοι τῆς πόλεως οἰκίζειν] lit. 'making a beginning of the city to found it.' So v. 450 Β μέτρον . . . τοιούτων λόγων ἀκούειν.

κινδυνεύομεν] In recalling the language of supra 432 D κινδυνεύομέν τι ἔχειν ἴχνος, Plato retains the direct form, although κινδυνεύοιμεν would have been more regular.

τὸ δέ γε ἦν ἄρα . . . δι' ὁ καὶ ἀφελεῖ, εἴδωλόν τι τῆς δικαιοσύνης] 'And this (the division of labour) was really a sort of shadow of justice. Hence the advantage of it,' i. e. because it partakes of the nature of justice. τό refers to ἀρχήν τε καὶ τέπον τιτὰ τῆς δικαιοσύνης and is further explained by τὸ τὸν μέν, κ.τ.λ.

τὸ δέ γε ἀληθές] 'Whereas in reality.' The words oppose what, after inquiry, has been found out to be the case, to what at one time they suspected to be the case. The construction of this sentence is as follows: τοιοῦτο is first explained in the clause ἀλλ' οὐ περὶ τὴν ἔξω πράξιν . . . περὶ ἐαυτὸν καὶ τὰ ἑαυτοῦ, and what follows (μὴ ἐάσαντα . . . περὶ τὰ ἴδια ξυμβόλαια) is again an explanation of the second part of this explanatory clause (περὶ τὴν ἐντὸς ὡς ἀληθῶς περὶ ἑαυτὸν καὶ τὰ ἑαυτοῦ). οὕτω δὴ πράττειν resumes the participial clauses from μὴ ἐάσαντα . . . σώφρονα καὶ ἡρμοσμένον. Plato passes from explanation to a more general characterization of justice in the words ἐν πᾶσι τούτοις ἡγούμενον, κ.τ.λ.

τοιοῦτο μέν τι] 'Something of this kind': i.e. a sort of doing one's own business.

443 B

С

Republic IV. 443

άλλ' οὐ περὶ τὴν ἔξω πρᾶξιν] 'but not concerned with the performance of any external action of his own, but with internal actions which are in very truth concerned with himself and are his own.'

D

ἔκαστον ἐν αὐτῷ] —The omission of the article των is supplemented by the addition of τὰ ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ γένη below.

τῷ ὄντι τὰ οἰκεῖα εὖ θέμενον] 'Having in very truth arranged his proper home business well.' For what is more οἰκεῖον than a man's soul, and what arrangements more perfect than what is here described?

καὶ ξυναρμόσαντα . . . ὅρους τρεῖς . . . καὶ μέσης] 'and having harmonized the three elements, just as if they were three notes of a scale of a higher, middle and lower string.' The scale contemplated seems to be the octave: νεάτης, ὑπάτης, μέσης, sc. χορδῆς. The Greek 'highest' note (ὑπάτη) corresponds to our 'lowest,' the 'lowest' (νεάτη) to our 'highest.'

The words εἰ ἄλλα ἄττα μεταξύ (suggested by the intermediate notes of the lyre) are observable, as seeming to imply that Plato did not wish his threefold division of the soul to be taken as strictly exhaustive.

σοφίαν δὲ... δόξαν] The distinction between  $\epsilon \pi \iota \sigma \tau \eta \mu \eta$  and δόξα is here assumed.

444 A ἐν αὐτοῖς] Sc. ἐν ἀνδρὶ καὶ πόλει.

444 A-445 E Injustice is the strife of the three elements with one another, the insurrection of a part against the whole, the rebellion of the lower nature against that which has natural authority.

Having determined so much we have no difficulty in distinguishing what actions are just and what are unjust. And we perceive that virtue is health and vice disease in the soul.

Let us ask once more, Is it expedient to be just or unjust, apart from opinion, human or divine? It is no longer possible to ask the question seriously. For if incurable bodily disease makes life not worth living, how utterly unprofitable must it be, if the soul which is the principle of life is diseased? However, we must complete our survey, and describe the forms of unrighteousness. They are innumerable, but four may be selected as sufficiently distinct for our examination. These four severally correspond to four forms of

political constitution. The just life, which is the fifth, answers to Kepublic Kingship or Aristocracy.

οὖκοῦν στάσιν τινά, κ.τ.λ.] Evil, unrighteousness, injustice are regarded by Plato here and in other passages (e.g. Soph. 228 A) as a sort of distraction or dissolution. They can only exist to a certain degree, because they would be destructive to that in which they are contained. As he says in i. 352 p, there is no such thing as perfect injustice, for that would be suicidal: enough justice must remain to keep injustice together.

No single aspect includes all the forms of evil, which varies infinitely with the characters and circumstances of mankind. (i) Evil may be represented as weakness: the higher nature, though not absolutely extinct, habitually and without resistance giving way to the lower: ἀκρασία, δειλία. Or (ii) as mere negation or privation of good: the diverse, transient, irrational principle, which has been imagined to stand in the same relation to God that physical impurity does to ourselves. (iii) Evil may be conceived as strength; the merely animal passing into a diabolical nature, the reason giving a malignant intensity to the passions, doing and suffering without end in this world and another, —τὸν δ' ἔχοντα καὶ μάλα ζωτικὸν παρέχουσαν (x. 610 E: cp. vi. 491 E). (iv) Evil may be summed up under the two commonest forms of evil: (a) untruth— $\psi \epsilon \hat{v} \delta \delta s$ : (b) sensuality - ἀκολασία. (v) Evil, according to some theological writers, is the preference of self to God or other men. Lastly (vi) evil is strife, or ἐπανάστασις μέρους τινὸς τῷ ὅλω τῆς ψυχῆς, as in this passage; or, as in the Epistles of St. Paul, the consciousness of sin. To Plato evil appears more under the aspect of deformity and untruth than to modern writers, and less under that of sensuality; also more as political and social, and less as spiritual and moral. Yet in the picture of the tyrant and the tyrannical man in the Republic (Book ix), and in the discussion of the Gorgias respecting the chastisement of evil, the effect of evil in the individual is also strongly felt and expressed.

οὐκοῦν...τῷ τοῦ ἀρχικοῦ γένους ὄντι] 'Must not it (i.e. injustice) on the other hand be a kind of quarrel between these three, a meddlesomeness and interference and rising up of a part of the soul against the whole in order that it may rule over her when it has no right, but is of such a nature as to be properly the slave to that which is of the royal race.'

The majority of MSS., including Par. A, read τοιούτου . . . δου-

444 B Republic IV.
444
B

λεύειν, τοῦ δ' αὖ δουλεύειν ἀρχικοῦ γένους ὅντι (ὅντος Μ: ὅντε q). Vind. E has τῷ δ' αὖ μὴ δουλεύειν, ἀρχικοῦ γένους ὅντι. This last is approved by Madvig, but is much too feeble. The variation of the MSS. is difficult to account for, and throws some doubt upon the text.

αλλά opposes τοιούτου . . . ὅντι το οὐ προσῆκον (sc. αὐτῷ ἄρχειν). In τῷ τοῦ ἀρχικοῦ γένους ὄντι he describes a part of the soul in language-appropriate for describing a member of a class in the state 'to that which is of the ruling class' instead of 'to the ruling part.' This use of language is rendered easier by the expression τὰ ἐν τῷ ψυχῷ γένη supra. And again the highest class is figuratively compared to a dynasty or royal family. Cp. Polit. 310 Β μᾶλλον δέ γε δίκαιον τῶν περὶ τὰ γένη ποιουμένων ἐπιμέλειαν, τούτων πέρι λέγειν, εἴ τι μὴ κατὰ τρόπον πράττουσιν.

Τὸ δὲ νόσον παρὰ φύσιν, κ.τ.λ.] SC. τὸ δὲ νόσον ποιεῖν ἐστι τὰ ἐν τῷ σώματι παρὰ φύσιν καθιστάναι ἄρχειν τε καὶ ἄρχεσθαι ἄλλο ὑπ' ἄλλου.

Justice is the health of the soul, is beauty, is harmony, is fitness, is division of labour, is nature, is happiness: of all which injustice is the contrary. Already at this stage of the argument our old question about their comparative expediency 'has become ridiculous,' and can no longer be seriously entertained.

445 A έάν τε λανθάνη] sc. τις.

μηδὲ βελτίων γίγνηται κολαζόμενος] Cp. supra ii. 380 B οἱ δὲ ωνίναντο κολαζόμενοι.

τῆς δὲ αὐτοῦ τούτου . . . ἀρετὴν κτήσεται] 'And when the very principle of our life is thrown into confusion and is going to pieces, shall we be told that it is worth a man's while to live, whatever course he choose to follow, unless he finds some means of escaping from vice and injustice, and of acquiring justice and virtue?' δέ marks the transition from the trivial to the more important case. The general drift of the sentence is, that nothing can make life bearable to the unjust, except the prospect of escape from injustice. For a similar mode of expressing an 'a fortiori' argument cp. i.  $336 \times \mu \dot{\eta} \gamma \dot{\alpha} \rho \delta \dot{\eta}$  οίου . . .  $\dot{\phi} a \nu \dot{\eta} \nu a u \dot{\nu} \dot{\tau} \dot{\sigma}$  and note. οὐ, not  $\dot{\mu} \dot{\eta}$ , is used because the clause depends on δοκεί and not on the conditional particle εἰ, which introduces the whole sentence. The negative belonging to the direct form is retained in the indirect. The fresh protasis, ἐάνπερ, κ.τ.λ., is added in the development of the thought independently of the preceding participial clause, so that the sen-

445

(

tence has a twofold protasis, or in other words,  $\epsilon' \dot{\alpha} \nu \pi \epsilon \rho$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ ., Republic modifies the apodosis.

\*ἀποκμητέον] This is Bekker's conjecture for ἀποκυητέον, the MS. reading. The change is very slight, and is justified by the general exactness of the replies in the Platonic dialogue. It is obvious that Glaucon is intended to emphasize (with characteristic ardour) what Socrates has just said. He is much less likely to have used a different expression than the copyists are to have written the commoner for the rarer word. And the form ἀποκμητέον, though not occurring elsewhere, is perfectly legitimate.

ἄ γε δὴ καὶ ἄξια θέας] Plato will not assert that his division is exhaustive. Cp. viii. 544 D ἥ τινα ἄλλην ἔχεις ἰδέαν πολιτείας, ἢτις καὶ ἐν εἴδει διαφανεῖ τινὶ κεῖται; Similarly in Theaet. 156 B it is said that modes of sensation are infinite, though only a few of them have distinct names.

ωσπερ ἀπὸ σκοπιᾶς] The course of the argument which had once kept Socrates and his companions watching a thicket, has now taken them up to a mountain top, from which they have a wide and clear survey of human things,—of the one form of virtue and the countless forms of vice. The graphic use of δεῦρο has prepared for this.

**ἐγγενομένου** . . . ἀριστοκρατία Cp. Polit. 297 c περὶ σμικρόν τι D καὶ ὀλίγον καὶ τὸ ε̈ν ἐστι ζητητέον τὴν μίαν ἐκείνην πολιτείαν τὴν ὀρθήν.

οὖτε γὰρ ἂν πλείους οὖτε εῗς ἐγγενόμενος] 'For the accident of [ there being one, or more than one of them will not lead them to disturb any fundamental law of the state so long as they observe the nurture and education which we have described.'

τῶν ἀξίων λόγου νόμων τῆς πόλεως] For the partitive genitive E 'any of them,' cp. Gorgias 514 A δημοσία πράξαντες τῶν πολιτικῶν πραγμάτων.

## BOOK V.

At this point Socrates is interrupted by a whispered conversation between Adeimantus and Polemarchus, who has not failed to notice the application of the proverb 'Friends have all things in common' to the question of marriage (iv. 423 E). He and Adeimantus are agreed that Socrates must be challenged to explain himself on a matter of such paramount importance as the relation of the sexes.

Republic V. 449 A-451 B

VOL. III.

C

Republic Socrates admits that the subject is one on which it would be v. calamitous to miss the truth, but for that very reason he is reluctant 449 A-451 B to speak. In the end, however, he yields to their request.

A περὶ ἰδιωτῶν ψυχῆς τρόπου κατασκευήν] περὶ κατασκευὴν τρόπου ψυχῆς ἰδιωτῶν is the order of the words. Each form of constitution has a form of the individual life corresponding to it.

ἐν τέτταρσι, κ.τ.λ.] The subject of the four perverted forms of the state is resumed again in Book viii.

B σμικρὸν γὰρ ἀπωτέρω τοῦ ᾿Αδειμάντου καθῆστο] That is, Polemarchus sat a little further away from Socrates than Adeimantus did. He is supposed to draw the latter away from Socrates and to whisper in his ear. This explains how a conversation could be carried on of which Socrates heard only the last words.

λαβόμενος ... παρὰ τὸν ὧμον] 'having taken hold of him (αὐτοῦ) by his garment, high up, close to the shoulder.'

τί μάλιστα, ἔφην... ἡμῖν δοκεῖς, ἔφη] τί μάλιστα is taken in two senses: in the first case as meaning 'what in particular?' and in the second case 'why in particular?' This play of words cannot be maintained in English.

ἔτι ἐγὼ εἶπον] is the reading of all the MSS. but Ven. Ξ, in which ὅτι ἐ. ϵ. is found. (A trace of the same reading appears in M, which reads ἔτι, according to Signor Rostagno. Schneider asserts that ἔτι is the reading of q, notwithstanding the silence of Bekker.) The alteration to ὅτι . . . τί ('because of what?') is no improvement in the meaning: and where this combination occurs, as in i. 343 Λ οτι δὴ τί μάλιστα; ἢν δ' ἐγώ. "Οτι οἵει, κ.τ.λ.: Charm. 161 c "Οτι δὴ τί γε; ἔφη. "Οτι οὐ δήπον, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, ἢ τὰ ῥήματα ἐφθέγξατο, ταύτη καὶ ἐνόει: ὅτι is resumed in the reply and the words are not separated, as they are here, by ἐγὼ εἶπον. For the use of ἔτι with an aorist, cp. vi. 508 c Πῶς; ἔφη ἕτι δίελθέ μοι: Prot. 310 c ἔτι μὲν ἐνεχείρησα.

**είδος ὅλον**] 'a whole division' or 'subject.' See Essay on Diction, vol. ii. p. 295, and cp. iii. 392 A Τί οὖν . . . ἔτι λοιπὸν **είδος** λόγων πέρι, κ.τ.λ., and iv. 427 A τὸ τοιοῦτον **είδος** νόμων πέρι.

καὶ λήσειν οἰηθῆναι...κοινὰ τὰ φίλων ἔσται] 'And you seem to have thought (δοκεῖς ... οἰηθῆναι) that you would escape detection in throwing out the slight remark that forsooth in the

matter of women and children everybody must know that friends will have all things in common.' The passage referred to is iv. 423 Ε ταῦτα ράδίως διόψονται, καὶ ἄλλα γε ὅσα νῦν ἡμεῖς παραλείπομεν, τήν τε τῶν γυναικῶν κτῆσιν καὶ γάμων καὶ παιδοποιίας, ὅτι δεῖ ταῦτα κατὰ τὴν παροιμίαν πάντα ὅ τι μάλιστα κοινὰ τὰ φίλων ποιεῖσθαι.

Republic V. 449

δρθως] sc. εἶπον to be supplied from εἰπών supra.

τὸ ὀρθῶς τοῦτο ... λόγου δεῖται, τίς ὁ τρόπος τῆς κοινωνίας] 'but your word "rightly," like the rest, requires explanation, as to the manner of the community.' τἄλλα, the other particulars of legislation which have not been lightly passed over but fully explained.

γενομένους sc. τοὺς παίδας understood from παιδοποιήσονται.

D

όλην ταύτην ην λέγεις κοινωνίαν] 'and [speak about] the whole subject of the community of women and children which you mean.' Some verb governing the accusative must be supplied with όλην in place of μνησθήσεσθαι. or the construction goes back to μη οὖν παρης.

μέγα γάρ τι οἰόμεθα φέρειν καὶ ὅλον, κ.τ.λ.] 'For we think that whether it takes place rightly or not rightly will make a great, nay all the difference to the state.' Cp. Phaedo 79 Ε ὅλφ καὶ παντί: Laws xii. 944 c διαφέρει δὲ ὅλον που καὶ τὸ πᾶν.

φέρειν . . . γιγνόμενον ] SC. τὸ τῆς περὶ ταῦτα κοινωνίας.

ἐπειδὴ...πολιτείας] 'But now as you are taking in hand another form of government.' For ἐπιλαμβάνεσθαι in this sense cp. Soph. 217 Β λόγων ἐπελάβου παραπλησίων, κ.τ.λ.

ἀμέλει] 'Never mind!'—' without more ado,' setting aside a remark or question either as unimportant or not requiring further discussion. Cp. iv. 422 c and note 'Αμέλει, ἔφη, οὐδὲν ἃν γένοιτο θαυμαστόν: and vii. 539 Ε 'Αμέλει, εἶπον, πέντε θές.

450

ểπιλαβόμενοί μου] 'In laying hands upon me.' The word is repeated in a different sense, for which cp. especially Prot. 329 A μακρὸν ἢχεῖ καὶ ἀποτείνει, ἐὰν μὴ ἐπιλάβηταί τις, 'unless someone lays hold of it.'

ωσπερ εξ άρχης] 'As if we were just beginning,' cp. i. 348 B.

ώς τότε ἐρρήθη ίν. 423 Ε.

å...παρακαλοῦντες] Either (1) 'and in now calling in this fresh argument,' or (2) 'and in now urging me to this.' In the latter case the antecedent is to be gathered from the general sense

Republic of the preceding words (sc.  $\tau a \tilde{v} \tau a \pi \acute{a} \lambda \iota v \delta \iota \epsilon \lambda \theta \epsilon \tilde{\iota} v$ ) and  $\ddot{a}$  is cognate V.

450 οσον έσμον λόγων] For the image cp. Cratylus 401 Ε έννενόηκά τι σμηνος σοφίας.

τί δέ; ἢ δ' ôs... ἀκουσομένους] χρυσοχοείν, literally, 'to smelt ore for gold.' The word had also acquired the sense of 'to go on a fool's errand,' 'to be imposed upon,' the origin of which Suidas and Harpocration explain in the following manner: A report was once spread about at Athens that there was on Hymettus a great quantity of gold dust guarded by warrior ants. The Athenians went armed out to seize the treasure but were worsted and returned home without accomplishing their purpose. Cp. the parallel expression in English—'to seek for the philosopher's stone.'

μέτρον δέ γ<sup>2</sup>] In book vi. (498 d) such discussions are not merely limited to this life, but are supposed to be continued in another, when the soul is reborn to the world:  $\pi\epsilon i \rho as \gamma a \rho$  οὐδὲν ἀνήσομεν, εως αν ἢ  $\pi\epsilon i \sigma \omega \mu \epsilon \nu$  καὶ τοῦτον καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους, ἢ  $\pi \rho o i \rho \rho \rho \nu$  τι ποιήσωμεν εἰς ἐκείνον τὸν βίον, ὅταν αὐθις γενόμενοι τοῖς τοιούτοις ἐντύχωσι λόγοις: Theaet. 173 c: Polit. 283. ἀκούειν is an epexegetic infinitive.

άλλὰ... ἔα] 'but never mind us,' i.e. never mind inflicting on us a discourse of immoderate length, referring to  $\mu$ ετρίων γε.

C ἡ δὴ ἐπιπονωτάτη δοκεῖ εἶναι] 'Which is generally thought to be the most troublesome part of education.' ἐπιπονωτάτη, sc. τῆς τροφῆς. Plato dwells on the importance of the very earliest training in Laws vii. 792 A. See especially the words ἔστι δὲ ὁ χρόνος οὖτος τριῶν οὖκ ἐλάττων ἐτῶν (i. e. the three first years of life), μόριον οὖ σμικρὸν τοῦ βίου διαγαγείν χεῖρον ἡ μὴ χεῖρον.

πειρῶ\* δή] The choice lies between this correction of πειρῶ ἄν, the reading of Par. A, and πειρῶ οὖν, the reading of IIM. Cp. iv. 431 B: Symp. 221 E.

οὐ ῥάδιον . . . ἀπιστήσεται] καὶ ταύτη refers to ὡς ἄριστ' ἀν εἴη ταῦτα. For εὐδαίμων in the sense of 'blissfully ignorant,' cp. iv. 422 Ε εὐδαίμων εἶ, ἢν δ' εγώ, ὅτι οἴει, κ.τ.λ. and note.

Great preparations are made for the introduction of the new social system. First, Socrates is disposed to pass over the entire subject. After he has been detected in this little trick he will only proceed at the earnest request of the company, who are willing to take upon themselves the entire responsibility. He anticipates all

the ridicule which the common sense of mankind has agreed to heap on the attempt to overthrow the first and simplest of human institutions. At each fall of the wave the sound of laughter is resounding in our ears, until the greatest wave swallows up all, and the Republic, which was originally a Dorian state, reappears as a kingdom of philosophy.

Republic V. 450 C

μὴ εὐχὴ δοκῆ εἶναι ὁ λόγος] Cp. infra 456 c οὐκ ἄρα ἀδύνατά γε I) οὐδὲ εὐχαῖς ὅμοια ἐνομοθετοῦμεν.

**ἐμοί**] not ἐμαυτῷ, because the object is to be distinguished from the subject of belief. The repetition of the same word adds point. Cp. Soph. O. T. 379 Κρέων δέ σοι πῆμ' οὐδέν, ἀλλ' αὐτὸς σὺ σοί.

καλῶς εἶχεν] The omission of ἄν gives emphasis to the apodosis, cp. Goodwin, M. and T., § 431.

περὶ τῶν μεγίστων τε καὶ φίλων] 'About matters dear to us, and E of the highest importance' (such as family life).

ἀσφαλès καὶ θαρραλέον] 'A thing safe and giving confidence,' i.e. a thing which may be done with safety and confidence. The epithet θαρραλέος, commonly used of a person who possesses confidence, is here applied to a thing which inspires confidence in the doer. Cp. Prot. 359 c: Soph. Philoct. 106: Pind. Nem. vii. 50.

οὔ τι γέλωτα ὀφλεῖν is an explanatory infinitive after φοβερόν τε καὶ σφαλερόν—' not at all as to incurring ridicule.' The phrase γέλωτα ὀφλεῖν recurs in vi. 506 p ἀλλ' ὅπως μὴ οὐχ οἶός τ' ἔσομαι, προθυμούμενος δὲ ἀσχημονῶν γέλωτα ὀφλήσω.

κείσομαι] 'I shall be overthrown.' Cp. Euthyd. 303 A ὥσπερ πληγεὶς ὑπὸ τοῦ λόγου ἐκείμην ἄφωνος: Ar. Nub. 126 ἀλλ' οὐδ' ἐγὼ μέντοι πεσών γε κείσομαι. The future indicative follows μή by a slight anacoluthon arising from the common tendency to revert to the more direct form of expression.

45 I A

προσκυνῶ δὲ...οῦ μέλλω λέγειν] 'And I bow to Adrasteia touching what I am about to say.' The involuntary homicide prays Adrasteia to bear witness that he could not help his act, and Socrates is in a like evil case. Cp. Aesch. Prom. 936 οἱ προσκυνοῦντες τὴν 'Αδράστειαν σοφοί. The slightly archaic form ἀπατεὼν (cp. λυμεών) adds to the mock solemnity here and infra B.

ἐλπίζω γὰρ...νομίμων πέρι] 'For I do indeed believe that to be an involuntary homicide is a less crime than to be a deceiver about the beautiful, the good, and the just, in the matter of laws.'

Republic V. 451 A Schneider joins the words καλῶν τε καὶ ἀγαθῶν καὶ δικαίων with νομίμων, but is inclined to cancel δικαίων. Several MSS., with Ven. Ξ, read δικαίων καὶ νομίμων πέρι.

ἄστε εὖ με παραμυθεῖ] (1) 'So that you console me well.' This at first sight appears to be a contradiction of the words καλῶς εἶχεν ἡ παραμυθία, at 450 E. The apparent difficulty has led the scribe of q to insert οὖκ after ἄστε. Socrates had rejected the consolation when first offered, and now, without much point, he is supposed to repeat his refusal. The reading of the text, in which the other MSS. agree, gives also a better sense. Socrates ironically accepts the consolation which he had previously rejected. The ironical emphasis is more pointed than the simple negative would have been. Cp. the ironical use of καλόν in iii. 406 β καλὸν ἄρα τὸ γέρας, κ.τ.λ. 'You are indeed happy in your attempt to console me!' This is better than (2) making the words equivalent to εὖ ποιεῖς ὅτι με παραμυθεῖ ('You do well in endeavouring to console me') which loses the reference to the point of Glaucon's remark, οὕτε ἄπιστοι οὕτε δύσνοι οἱ ἀκουσόμενοι.

B ἀλλ', ὧ Σώκρατες, ἔφη . . . εἴπερ ἐκεῖ, κἀνθάδε] The first ἀλλά is adversative to the remark of Socrates about the risk which he is running, the second ἀλλά is a repetition of the first with the addition of a request. Both are resumed in the third ἀλλά, which implies that Socrates adopts Glaucon's point of view in opposition to his own.

άφίεμεν...καθαρὸν εἶναι] 'We acquit you both as guiltless of our blood, so to say, and as not our deceiver.'

ἀλλὰ μέντοι, κ.τ.λ.] 'Well, it is true that in that case, said I, the man who is acquitted is clear as the law says, and if in that case' (i. e. in the case of the homicide) 'it is likely that he will be so in this' (i. e. the case of involuntary deception).

C **δράμα**] 'business,' or 'part.' Cp. Theaet. 150 A τὸ μὲν τοίνυν τῶν μαιῶν τοσοῦτον, ἔλαττον δὲ τοῦ ἐμοῦ δράματος.

451 C- Our guardians have been compared to watch-dogs. Now in 452 E training these, we make no difference between male and female, except that we do not expect the female to be quite equal to the male in strength.

In applying this general principle we must be prepared for ridicule, especially when we insist that the women, like the men,

must strip for gymnastic exercises. But we may remember that when this custom was first introduced among the men, the wits of that day had their opportunity, and no doubt made use of it. Yet experience and common sense have proved too much for them.

Republic V. 451 C-452 E

**ἰοῦσιν**] sc.  $\eta \mu \hat{\imath} \nu$ . For the idiomatic dative cp. infra 452 c  $\pi o \rho \epsilon \nu - \tau \epsilon o \nu$ ...  $\delta \epsilon \eta \theta \epsilon \hat{\imath} \sigma \iota$ ,  $\kappa. \tau. \lambda$ .

451 C

ακολουθῶμεν... ἀποδιδόντες] 'Let us follow out that hint in the matter of the birth and training which we assign to our women, making it similar (to that of the watch-dogs) and then consider whether we deem it suitable or not.' The subject of πρέπει is τὸ τὴν γένεσιν καὶ τροψὴν παραπλησίαν ἀποδιδόναι gathered from the previous words.

εἰ ἡμῖν πρέπει] 'If we find it suitable.' Cp. especially infra 462 Λ ἀρα...εἰς μὲν τὸ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ἴχνος ἡμῖν ἀρμόττει.

απερ των ... φυλάττωσι] απερ is cognate accusative: 'In those duties of guardianship which are performed by the males.'

κοινή, ἔφη, πάντα] SC. οἰόμεθα δεῖν αὐτὰς πράττειν.

E

**ως ἀσθενεστέραις**] The subject, ταῖς θηλείαις τῶν φυλάκων κυνῶν, is sufficiently indicated by the previous sentence.

παρὰ τὸ ἔθος] sc. πραττόμενα, which is absorbed in λεγόμενα.

452 A

В

εἰ πράξεται ἢ λέγεται] Cp. iii. 389 D Ἐάν γε, ἢ δ' ὕς, ἐπί γε λόγφ ἔργα τελῆται, where see note.

οὐ μόνον τὰς νέας, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἤδη τὰς πρεσβυτέρας] Said with a slight hyperbaton (which adds emphasis) for τὰς ἤδη πρεσβυτέρας.

ρυσοί] sc. ὄντες.

οὐκοῦν, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] The uncompromising tone of this passage may be contrasted with the greater respect for public opinion which is shown in Laws viii. 834 D θηλείας δὲ περὶ τούτων νόμοις μὲν καὶ ἐπιτάξεσιν οὐκ ἄξια βιάζεσθαι τῆς κοινωνίας ἐὰν δὲ ἐξ αὐτῶν τῶν ἔμπροσθεν παιδευμάτων εἰς ἔθος ἰόντων ἡ ψύσις ἐνδέχηται, κ.τ.λ.

περὶ τὴν τῶν ὅπλων σχέσιν] 'as to their bearing of heavy arms.'

C

πορευτέον, κ.τ.λ.] Plato's theory of female education, though at variance with modern ideas, has points which are worthy of attention.

(1) He considers the subject independently of existing practice, and with reference to the difference of sex only. He implies (2) that

Republic V. 452

T)

bodily health and strength, and the training which gives them, are equally necessary for both sexes. (3) Also that men and women have the same interests and duties, and are capable of the same occupations in a greater degree than the customs of society allow. (4) That false delicacy is not a good foundation either for manners or morals. The error of Plato seems to arise from not considering the other differences to which the difference of sex gives rise in mind and feeling. He has forgotten that 'women's best education is the training of their children. He has lost sight also of the fact that education is relative to character, and the character of women is necessarily formed by the universal opinion of mankind. The merit of seeking to give them position in an age in which they were comparatively degraded must certainly be conceded to him. Modern philosophy would ascribe to them equal powers of different qualities:

'For woman is not undeveloped man, But diverse.'

Plato has made a considerable step in advance of the ancient world by assigning to them unequal powers of the same quality: as the poet elsewhere sings:

'Woman is the lesser man.'

τὸ τραχὰ τοῦ νόμου] For an analogous phrase cp. viii. 568 c πρὸς τὸ ἄναντες τῶν πολιτειῶν.

δεηθεῖσί τε τούτων] sc. ημῖν.

οὐ πολὺς χρόνος ἐξ οὖ, κ.τ.λ. ] Cp. Hdt. i. 10: Thuc. i. 6, § 5.

πάντα ταῦτα and πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα refer partly to the ludicrous image called up supra ὅταν ῥυσοί, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ τὸ ἐν τοῖς ὀφθαλμοῖς . . . ἐνεδείξατο, κ.τ.λ.] Then the ludicrous effect to the outward eye vanished before the arguments which showed what was best, and this (i.e. the disappearance of ridicule) showed that he is a fool who thinks anything else ridiculous, &c. The first καί is intensive, marking the correspondence between men's experience and the change in their opinions. This was an instance of the folly of ridicule not grounded in reason.

μάταιος δς γελοΐον, κ.τ.λ.] Ridicule is not 'the test of truth' or goodness, but the test of strength, the detector of some flaw or inconsistency or pretension or deviation from custom in

character or action. 'Man is a laughing animal,' and reason uses this power no less than that of speech as the expression of herself, finding in the pleasure of laughter a ready opening at which wisdom or wit may enter in. But the alliance, though capable of a serious purpose, is partly fanciful and humorous, and cannot always be constrained, as Plato seems to imply, for the sake of some political or moral end. Ridicule has more influence on manners than on morals:—is more concerned with the outward surface of life and society than with the inner nature of man, having a free touch and passing lightly from one topic to another. Ridicule is the enemy of superstition and sentimental feeling; and the employment of such an instrument on serious subjects is not always to be deprecated as hurtful; there is nothing of which hypocrisy is so much afraid, nothing which better sifts the weaknesses of human nature. Successful ridicule (1) depends on a certain force of character or ready tact in the person who makes another ridiculous: (2) it requires either an object of attack which is sensitive to ridicule, or (3) public opinion which supports the assailant. A rude justice is the result, in which perhaps a certain degree of injustice may be concealed by the excellence of the jest. On the other hand, the greatest minds, one of whose proper works is to help and free others from scorn, are perhaps incapable of using the weapon of

καὶ καλοῦ αὖ σπουδάζει] is the reading of the majority of the MSS., which yields a tolerable sense—'and who again aims seriously at any standard of nobility which he sets up for himself, except the good.' Schneider reads ἢ σπουδάζει, omitting καὶ καλοῦ. Others make πρὸς... σκοπόν depend on στησάμενος, 'having set himself to some other aim.' (Jebb on Soph. Ant. 200.)

ridicule as they are also incapable of being made ridiculous.

Compare Arist. Eth. Nic. iv. 8, 9.

But the first aorist middle of  $\tilde{\imath}\sigma\tau\eta\mu$ , unlike  $\tilde{\imath}\sigma\tau\sigma\sigma\theta\alpha$ , requires an object. This may be supplied in one of two ways, (1) supposing the expression to be metaphorical, sc.  $\tau \delta$   $\tau \delta \xi \sigma \nu$ : cp. the absoluteuse of  $\epsilon \pi \iota \sigma \tau \hat{\eta} \sigma \alpha u$ , sc.  $\tau \delta$   $\tilde{\alpha} \rho \mu \alpha$ ; or (2) as above,  $\sigma \pi \iota \sigma \upsilon \delta \delta \xi \epsilon \iota$   $\pi \rho \upsilon \delta s$ ...  $\sigma \kappa \iota \sigma \sigma \delta \iota \nu$ ,  $\sigma \iota \tau \iota \sigma \delta \iota \nu$ , 'with any other aim which he proposes to himself.' The word  $\tilde{\imath} \sigma \tau \eta \mu \iota$  is used of setting up a mark, although  $\theta \epsilon \iota \mu \epsilon \iota \nu$  would be more usual. Cp. Hom. Od. xix. 573, 574:

τοὺς πελέκεας, τοὺς κεῖνος ἐνὶ μεγάροισιν ἑοῖσιν ἴστασχ' ἑξείης, δρυόχους ως, δώδεκα πάντας.

The conjectural omission of  $\pi\rho\delta s$  (W. H. Thompson on Gorg. 474 D)

Republic

452 D

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

Republic is plausible, but not necessary. For the epexegetic participle cp. iii. 397 c ξυγκεραννύντες.

The only question of any real moment is whether the female sex 452 Ein man is capable of sharing in the duties which we assign to them. 457 B For our first principle is that our citizens, all and each, shall do the work which is suited to their several natures. A controversialist will say that men and women differ, and therefore that the pursuits assigned to them must differ. But in the spirit of controversy such a one omits to ask whether the difference of nature has anything to do with the particular work in question. One cobbler may have a shock of hair and yet another who is bald is not disqualified from cobbling. Now the difference of sex is limited to the function of procreation, and this lies quite apart from government and war. In point of fact women can do all that men do, though as a rule they cannot do it so well, and men can do all that women do (even to weaving and the baking of cakes), and as a rule, when they do it, they do it better. And there are the same differences amongst women as amongst men. One has a taste for medicine, another for music. And we may presume that some of them, though not all, have capabilities for war and government. These ought to be selected as companions and helpmates for the highest class of men, and to share in the same occupations. In giving them also the same education in music and gymnastic we have been legislating according to nature.

This is contrary to present custom: but is it possible? Is it the best course? We have shown that it is possible. And if the men whom we have chosen and educated are better than the other men, will not the chosen women, similarly educated, be better than other women? And is it not best to provide for the existence of the best possible men and women in a community? Our women, then, shall not shrink from physical exercises nor from war, although we shall assign to them the lighter duties in both pursuits, because of the comparative weakness of their natures. Our standard of excellence and grace, in this and all respects, shall not be Custom, but the highest Utility.

452 φύσις ἡ ἀνθρωπίνη ἡ θήλεια] 'Female human nature.' The words ἡ ἀνθρωπίνη, to which Cobet objected, keep up the analogy between man and the other animals which runs through the passage.

Cp. supra 451 d. E.

καὶ τοῦτο δὴ ... ποτέρων ἐστίν;] 'And to which of the two

453

classes (the class of things they can or cannot share with the men) is this duty of warfare to be assigned?

Republic V. 453

ΐνα μὴ ἔρημα ... πολιορκῆται] 'That the other side may not be besieged without having defenders.' Cp. Soph. 246 D: Theaet. 164 E.

В

τῆς κατοικίσεως] sc. τῆς πόλεως, for which πόλιν is substituted by attraction. Cp. iv. 443 c and note. The reference is to ii. 369  $\Lambda$  ff.

& θαυμάσιε] 'O rare, O admirable sir,' as elsewhere, marks the wondering eagerness of Socrates at the new turn in the argument.

C

σοῦ δεήσομαί τε καὶ δέομαι] 'I shall have to ask you, as I now do.' For the future cp. Theaet. 164 Ε κινδυνεύσομεν . . . αὐτῷ βοηθεῖν.

καὶ τὸν . . . . ἐρμηνεῦσαι] Socrates has explained the views of an imaginary critic of the argument (supra A ἴνα μὴ ἔρημα, κ.τ.λ.). He is now asked to explain 'our own' meaning, which is not yet clear. For the word compare Soph. 246 Ε Κέλευε δὴ τοὺς βελτίους γεγονότας ἀποκρίνασθαί σοι, καὶ τὸ λεχθὲν παρ' αὐτῶν ἀφερμήνευε.

D

οὐ μὰ τὸν Δία... ἔοικεν] 'I don't wonder at your hesitation, for by Zeus it is no easy task,' &c. The strong negation is put forward as a reason for the fear which Socrates expresses in the previous sentence:—'No indeed, that does not look easy' (which is a reason for hesitation). 'Why, no; but the truth is that whether a man tumbles into a swimming-bath or into a mighty ocean, he swims all the same.' The real order is, οὐ γὰρ εὐκόλῳ ἔοικεν, οὐ μὰ τὸν Δία. But the eagerness of the speaker brings the oath to the front. Cp. Parm. 131 E Οὐ μὰ τὸν Δία, φάναι, οὕ μοι δοκεῖ εὕκολον εἶναι τὸ τοιοῦτον οὐδαμῶς διορίσασθαι. οὐκ εὐκόλῳ=χαλεπῷ. Cp. i. 348 E.

ἄν τέ τις ... νεῖ οὐδὲν ἣττον] is perhaps the first suggestion of the image of the wave which is distinctly mentioned infra 457 B ff. The word διανενεύκαμεν iv. 441 c, has prepared the way for it. A similar figure occurs in the Laches, 194 c "Ιθι δή, ὧ Νικία, ἀνδράσι φίλοις χειμαζομένοις ἐν λόγω καὶ ἀποροῦσι βοήθησον. Cp. Eurip. Hipp. 469, 470 ἐς δὲ τὴν τύχην | πεσοῦσ' ὅσην σὺ πῶς ἄν ἐκνεῦσαι δοκεῖς;

ἄπορον] lit. 'hard to come by': cp. ii. 378 A ἀλλά τι μέγα καὶ ἄπορον θῦμα, 'some unprocurable victim.' σωτηρίαν is the subject of some more general word than ὑπολαβεῖν, e.g. φανῆναι.

Republic V. 453 E ώμολογοῦμεν] The imperfect tense seems preferable, as the reference to the former argument is so pointed here, although ὁμολογοῦμεν, the reading of Par. A, is also possible. The present might convey a general statement. Cp. supra B ὡμολογεῖτε . . . ΥΩμολογήσαμεν.

τὰς δὲ ἄλλας φύσεις] 'The aforesaid different natures.' τὰς δὲ ἄλλας is to be explained with reference to ἄλλην φύσιν in the preceding line. The verbal ambiguity is obviated by the clearness of the context. So in Soph. O. T. 845 τοῦς πολλοῦς is not 'the many' or 'the greater number,' but 'the plurality of persons which the previous description implied.'

ἢ γενναία . . . (454  $^{\rm A}$ ) πρὸς ἀλλήλους χρώμενοι] That is to say, People make oppositions of words, because they do not understand the differences of things. Our argument hinged upon the opposition of 'some' and 'other'; but we never considered in what sense each of these terms applied to the difference of sex. There are various species of difference  $-\epsilon i \delta \eta \tau \hat{\eta} s$  ἀλλοιώσεως (454 c) each appertaining to some particular quality or capacity (πρός τι τείνοντα), e.g. height, strength, &c.; and because people differ as participating in some particular species of difference, we must not conclude that they differ in toto, depriving 'different' as applied to them of all real significance.

Compare Soph. 218 C δεί δὲ ἀεὶ παντὸς πέρι τὸ πρᾶγμα αὐτὸ μᾶλλον διὰ λόγων ἢ τοὔνομα μόνον συνομολογήσασθαι χωρὶς λόγου: Theaet. 164 C ἀντιλογικῶς ἐοίκαμεν πρὸς τὰς τῶν ὀνομάτων ὁμολογίας ἀνομολογησάμενοι καὶ τοιούτφ τινὶ περιγενόμενοι τοῦ λόγου ἀγαπᾶν, καὶ οὐ φάσκοντες ἀγωνισταὶ ἀλλὰ φιλόσοφοι εἶναι λανθάνομεν ταὐτὰ ἐκείνοις τοῖς δεινοῖς ἀνδράσι ποιοῦντες: Polit. 285 Λ, Β: Soph. 259 D τὸ δὲ ταὐτὸν ἔτερον ἀποφαίνειν άμῆ γέ πη καὶ τὸ θάτερον ταὐτὸν καὶ τὸ μέγα σμικρὸν καὶ τὸ ὅμοιον ἀνόμοιον, καὶ χαίρειν οὕτω τἀναντία ἀεὶ προφέροντα ἐν τοῖς λόγοις, οὕτε τις ἕλεγχος οὖτος ἀληθινὸς ἄρτι τε τῶν ὅντων τινὸς ἐφαπτομένου δῆλος νεογενὴς ὧν.

454 A κατ' εἴδη διαιρούμενοι] Cp. Phaedr. 265 Ε τὸ πάλιν κατ' εἴδη δύνασθαι τέμνειν, κατ' ἄρθρα  $\hat{\eta}$  πέψυκε, κ.τ.λ.

κατ' αὐτὸ τὸ ὄνομα διώκειν] Either (1) as in the translation 'pursuing a merely verbal opposition,' or (2) (as suggested by Mr. J. Solomon) 'assailing,' or 'holding in chase, what is a mere verbal contradiction.' For the latter cp. Theaet. 166 D τὸν δὲ λόγον αὖ μὴ τῷ ῥήματί μου δίωκε.

τὸ μὴ τὴν αὐτὴν φύσιν μή is the reading of Ven. Ξ and the old

editions, and is probably right. 'We might valiantly and contentiously insist upon the verbal truth that the nature which is not the same (i. e. the female nature) ought not to have the same pursuits (i. e. as the male nature), but we never considered at all what was the nature of the sameness and difference which we were then distinguishing and whereto it was related.' The reading of the other MSS. A II M &c.  $\tau \dot{o} \tau \dot{n} \nu a \dot{v} \tau \dot{n} \nu a \dot{v} \tau \dot{n} \nu$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ ., can only mean, 'the nature which was in fact the same we argued in our contentious manner to be incapable of the same pursuits.' But the words  $\tau \dot{o} \dots \tau u \gamma \chi \dot{\alpha} \nu \varepsilon \iota \nu$  are simply a restatement of the objection in 453 B, c that men and women having different natures should have different pursuits, while the assertion that men and women share the same human nature would be out of place. And the opposition of  $\mu \dot{\eta} \tau \dot{n} \nu a \dot{v} \tau \dot{n} \nu$ , où  $\tau \dot{\omega} \nu a \dot{v} \tau \dot{\omega} \nu$ , is more like Plato than the conjectural reading  $\tau \dot{\eta} \nu \ddot{\alpha} \lambda \lambda \eta \nu$  (Baiter).

ἐπεσκεψάμεθα δὲ...(c) μὴ τοὺς ἐτέρους] We spoke of the same and other, but we did not define the meaning or object of the difference. Bald and hairy men are different; but no conclusion can be drawn from this that because the bald man is a cobbler the hairy man is not to be a cobbler. Plato is well aware of the value of a ludicrous illustration. Cp. infra 474 E: vi. 495 E: Theaet. 149 Λ.

μὴ ἐᾶν κομήτας] SC. σκυτοτομεῖν.

την αὐτην καὶ την έτέραν ο αὐτός and δ ετέρος are here generalized. Cp. Theaet. 190 c.

Republic V. 454 B

C

D

Republic V. 454

18

the slight alteration  $i\alpha\tau\rho\delta\nu$  is unnecessary, and it is better not to depart further from the MSS. than is absolutely required. Schneider obtained nearly the same meaning by reading as in the text and joining την ψυχήν with the second  $i\alpha\tau\rho\iota\kappa\delta\nu$  exclusively. But the repetition simply emphasizes identity in order to prepare for the contrast between identity and difference. 'If two men have each the soul of a physician, we meant to say for example that they have the same nature' (however different they may be in other respects); 'if one have the soul of a physician, and the other have the soul of a carpenter, we meant to say that they have different natures' (however else they may resemble one another). The singular ὅντα is accounted for by attraction to the nearest word.

πρὸς τέχνην τινά] 'in regard of fitness for some art.' Riddell, Digest, § 128.

- Ε ὡς πρὸς ὁ ἡμεῖς λέγομεν, κ.τ.λ.] 'that a woman differs from a man with reference to the point of which we are speaking,' i. e. common training and participation in the same duties. Cp. Theaet. 177 D τοῦτο δέ που σκῶμμ' ἀν εἵη πρὸς ὁ λέγομεν.
- 455 ὅπερ σὺ ὀλίγον πρότερον ἔλεγες] supra 453 c ʿΩς μὲν ἐξαίφνης, ἔφη, οὐ πάνυ ῥάδιον.
- Β καὶ τῷ μὲν . . . (c) τῷ δὲ ἐναντιοῖτο;] Strength of body is needed for strength of mind. Cp. vi. 498 Β τῶν τε σωμάτων, ἐν ῷ βλαστάνει τε καὶ ἀνδροῦται, εὖ μάλα ἐπιμελεῖσθαι, ὑπηρεσίαν φιλοσοφία κτωμένους: Protag. 326 Β ἔτι τοίνυν πρὸς τούτοις εἰς παιδοτρίβου πέμπουσιν, ἵνα τὰ σώματα βελτίω ἔχοντες ὑπηρετῶσι τῆ διανοία χρηστῆ οὕση.
- C οίς ... ωρίζου] For the dative cp. ii. 376 Β συνέσει τε καὶ ἀγνοία δριζόμενον τό τε οἰκεῖον καὶ τὸ ἀλλότριον. The imperfect tense alludes to what was implied in the objection, 'you meant to define,' supra 453 Β.

κρατείται] κρατείσθαι is passive, and as in a few other instances (with the meaning of ήττασθαι) takes the genitive (πολλων ἀνδρων) without the preposition (e. g. κρατείσθαι ήδονων Aeschin. de Fals. Leg. § 152).

Compare Cratyl. 392 c πότερον οὖν αἱ γυναῖκες ἐν ταῖς πόλεσι φρονιμώτεραί σοι δοκοῦσιν εἶναι ἡ οἱ ἄνδρες, ὡς τὸ ὅλον εἰπεῖν γένος;

άλλ' όμοίως . . . ἀμφοῖν τοῖν ζώοιν] 'But natural aptitudes are equally diffused in both.' αἱ φύσεις are the qualities suited for the different occupations of life. For the generic use of ζῷον cp. Theaet.  $157 \, \mathrm{C} \, \mathring{\phi} \, \delta \mathring{\eta} \, \mathring{a}\theta \rho o i \sigma \mu \alpha \tau \, \mathring{u}\nu \theta \rho \omega \pi \acute{v} \, \tau \epsilon \, \tau i \theta \epsilon \nu \tau \alpha \iota \, \lambda i \theta o \nu \, \kappa \alpha \iota \, \mathring{\epsilon} \kappa \alpha \sigma \tau o \nu \, \zeta \mathring{\omega} \acute{o} \nu \, \tau \epsilon \, \kappa \alpha \iota \, \epsilon \mathring{\iota} \delta \sigma s$ .

Republic V. 455

ἐπὶ πᾶσι δέ, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. supra 451 Ε πλην ως ἀσθενεστέραις χρωμεθα, τοις δὲ ως ἰσχυροτέροις.

E

ἀλλ' ἔστι γάρ] It has been agreed that women must have some occupation. 'But then (ἀλλὰ γάρ) as we shall say, women's capabilities differ, just as men's do, and their occupations therefore must be similarly distributed.'

καὶ γυνή ] SC. ή μεν ιατρική, ή δ' ού.

γυμναστική δ' ἄρα οὖ . . . (456 Λ) ἔγωγε] 'But is not one woman a lover of gymnastics and of war, another unwarlike and no lover of gymnastics?' 'I should think so.'

The reading γυμναστική δ' ἄρα οὖ, οὖδέ is adopted by Schneider and Hermann and the Zurich editors, and is supported by the preponderance of MS. authority. The form of question is not the ordinary use of οὖ expecting an affirmative answer, but rather an ironical negation with an interrogative tone. Cp. infra 468 B (where however the humour is more apparent): ᾿Αλλὰ τόδ', οὖμαι, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, οὖκέτι σοι δοκεῖ. Τὸ ποῖον; Τὸ φιλῆσαί τε καὶ φιληθῆναι ὑπὸ ἐκάστου. The other readings, καὶ γυμναστική, ἡ δ' ἄρα οὔ and that of q, which Bekker adopted, καὶ γυμναστική ἄρα καὶ πολεμική, look like clumsy attempts at emendation.

ἄθυμος] 'Passionless.' For this use of the word cp. iii. 411 B, Laws x. 888 A.

456

η οὐ τοιαύτην] sc. φιλόσοφον καὶ θυμοειδη. The instances from μουσική onwards have led the way to this.

ἐπείπερ εἰσὶν ἰκαναὶ καὶ ξυγγενεῖς] 'Seeing that they are qualified and of a kindred nature,' i. e. one which is at once φιλόσοφος and θυμοειδής. In the Politicus and Laws, on the other hand, the aim of the legislator is rather to unite in marriage opposite natures that they may supplement each other.—Polit. 309, 310: Laws vi. 773 ff.

В

ἥκομεν ἄρα . . . ἀποδιδόναι] 'And so we are come round to what we were before saying, and allow that there is nothing

Republic unnatural in assigning the pursuit of music and gymnastic to the vives of the guardians.' Cp. Laws ii. 659 c Δοκεῖ μοι τρίτον ἢ τέταρτον ὁ λόγος εἰς ταὐτὸν περιφερόμενος ῆκειν: Gorg. 521 Ε ὁ αὐτὸς δέ μοι ῆκει λόγος, ὅνπερ πρὸς Πῶλον ἔλεγον: ibid. 517 c οὐδὲν παυόμεθα εἰς τὸ αὐτὸ ἀεὶ περιφερόμενοι.

C εὐχαις ὅμοια] Cp. supra 450 D μή εὐχή δοκή είναι ὁ λόγος.

ή ἐπίσκεψις] supra 452 E.

δτι δὲ δὴ βέλτιστα, κ.τ.λ.] The *possibility* of our proposals has received an elaborate proof. Men and women have been shown to have a common nature and therefore it is natural to assign to them a common education and common pursuits. Whether our proposals are *desirable* remains to be considered.

Aristotle (Pol. i. 13, § 9), perhaps referring to Meno 71 E, will not hear of the ascription of the same qualities to men and women: οὐχ ἡ αὐτὴ σωφροσύνη γυναικὸς καὶ ἀνδρός, οὐδ' ἀνδρία καὶ δικαιοσύνη, καθάπερ ἄρετο Σωκράτης, ἀλλ' ἡ μὲν ἀρχικὴ ἀνδρία, ἡ δὲ ὑπηρετική.

οὖκ ἄλλη μὲν... (D) παραλαβοῦσα;] 'Then surely with a view to a woman's becoming fitted to be a guardian, there will not be one education which will make men and another which will make women guardians, especially when it has received the same nature to work upon.' The whole sentence is negatived, and the paratactic expansion breaks from the construction with πρός. ποιήσει, sc. ψυλακικούς.

1) ἐν οὖν τῆ πόλει . . . τῆ σκυτικῆ παιδευθέντας; ] This is the most distinct allusion which is made in any part of the Republic to the education or want of education of the lowest class in the state. Cp. however viii. 547 c, where the condition of the ordinary citizens is alluded to in general terms, and iv. 421 E, where apprenticeship is incidentally referred to. The lower classes have no real place in the Republic; they fade away into the distance.

τῶν ἄλλων πολιτῶν...ἀριστοι] i.e. (1) 'better than the other citizens,' as they are better than the cobblers, or (2) 'than the citizens besides themselves.' [B. J.]

A καὶ οὐκ ἄλλα πρακτέον] Their devotion to public duty forbids their absorption in the nursery. This remark contains a hint of the next-coming 'wave.'

Β ἀτελη τοῦ γελοίου σοφίας δρέπων καρπόν] σοφίας is the genitive

457 B

after καρπόν, which is governed by δρέπων, ' the man who laughs at naked women, plucks from his laughter an unripe fruit of wisdom, i. e. foolishness, 'not knowing at what he is laughing.' According to Stobaeus (ed. Gaisford, Tit. 304), the quotation is from Pindar, who applies the words ἀτελη σοφίας καρπὸν δρέπων to the physiologists, the addition τοῦ γελοίου is Plato's own. See also Phaedr. 260 C, D ποιόν τινα οίει . . . την ρητορικήν καρπόν ων έσπειρε θερίζειν; Jests about the gymnastics of the Spartan women such as Plato describes are found in the Lysistrata of Aristophanes (80-83).

κάλλιστα γὰρ δὴ τοῦτο καὶ λέγεται καὶ λελέξεται] i.e. 'this which is commonly said will ever be the noblest saying: "That the useful is noble and the hurtful is base." See especially Theaet. 172 A, B, The sentiment recurs infra 458 E εἶεν δ' αν ίεροι οί ώφελιμώτατοι. The future-perfect expresses permanence and absoluteness in future time.

> 457 B-461 E

We have escaped one wave of the sea of ridicule which was ready to swallow us up alive. But the next is still more formidable. For on the community of education and employment there follows the community of marriage. And here also the scepticism to be encountered is two-fold:—(1) Is the change possible, and (2) is it for the best? Socrates is confident upon the latter point, and proposes to take it first, leaving what is more doubtful and difficult to be disposed of afterwards. Let us build our 'Castle in the air,' and then consider whether we may hope one day to find a place fit for it on the solid ground.

The women shall be first selected, then educated, and, lastly, have their duties assigned to them. Then-having their work, their quarters, and their meals in common—the two sexes cannot but be drawn together, by a more than mathematical necessity. Now order is inseparable from our first principle: licentiousness, in a city of the blessed, is a thing not to be permitted: and so the question rises, What order is to be observed about marriage-rites? Once more we may appeal to the analogy of the lower animals. In breeding hawk or hound, Glaucon is careful in the matter of selection, pairing the best-bred individuals with the best, while both are in their prime. And the same conditions ought to be applied to the breeding of other animals and of men amongst them, if the quality of the race is to be preserved. Here, then, is a point in which the wisdom of our rulers will be put to the test. For they must have recourse to the 'medicine' of deception, so that, without apparent constraint,

Republic V.
457 B461 E

D

the highest privileges in the way of marriage may be reserved for the noblest. There must be festivals and hymeneal songs proclaiming how 'the brave deserve the fair.' And exceptional advantages in affairs of this kind must be provided for those who distinguish themselves in war. There will be lotteries cunningly devised, which, unknown to the people, will effect our purpose. And there will be magistrates, male and female, appointed to take care of the children who are born of these marriages. The perfect offspring of noble parents they will carry to the common nurseries and place them under appropriate care. But the children of inferior parents, and accidental misbirths, will be carried off by them none shall know whither,—never to reappear. The mothers shall be allowed to suckle their own and one another's children (not knowing the difference, as much as is desirable for their health. But there will be wet nurses who will relieve them of any duties that might break their rest.

It remains to define the age for marriage. In women this lasts from twenty to forty, and in men from about twenty-five to fifty-five. Beyond these limits either way none shall be permitted to bring forth children for the state. Nor shall any one within the prescribed age cohabit without permission of the magistrates. But a general dispensation shall be given to those who are past the age, provided that they abstain from incestuous intercourse and provided also that if a child is born, it shall be understood that no one shall be responsible for rearing it.

Now under these new laws what connexions are incestuous? Children are not to know their real parents. But all who are born from seven to nine months after each marriage festival will be brothers and sisters to each other, and sons and daughters to all who were married at that festival. These will be the prohibited degrees.

άλλά πη... ὁμολογεῖσθαι] 'But that the argument somehow comes to an agreement with itself.' For the reciprocal middle voice, cp. Phaedr. 265 D τὸ αὐτὸ αὐτῷ ὁμολογούμενον: Tim. 29 C: Laws v. 746 C.

The image of the wave, the way for which has been already prepared (453 n), is one of those continuous images in Plato which also form links in the arrangement of the subject.

μείζον πρὸς ἀπιστίαν] 'more formidable, as more provocative of incredulity.'

ἀλλ' οἷμαι . . . γενέσθαι] The aorist is sometimes used without Republic ἄν in confident prediction. Cp. Protag. 316  $\underline{c}$  τοῦτο δὲ οἴεταί οἱ μάλιστα γενέσθαι, εἰ σοὶ συγγένοιτο: Goodwin, M. and T.,  $\S$  127. But the similarity of ἄν, ἀμ, may easily have led to the loss of the particle here.

**λέγεις**] 'Your words imply.' Cp. iv. 425 Ε **Λέγεις**, ἔφην ἐγώ, Ε Βιώσεσθαι τοὺς τοιούτους, κ.τ.λ.

λόγων σύστασιν] 'A combination' (or 'coalition') 'of arguments': i.e. λόγον λόγω συνιστάμενον. Socrates had hoped to escape from one of his enemies, he now finds that he has to meet both of them. Cp. Eurip. Androm. 1088 εἰς δὲ συστάσεις | κύκλους τ' ἐχώρει λαὸς οἰκήτωρ θεοῦ: Ďem, κατὰ Στεφάνου Α, 1122, l. 5 τὰς αὐτῶν συστάσεις κυριωτέρας τῶν νόμων ἀξιοῦν εἶναι.

ểκ γε τοῦ έτέρου] The language is still coloured by the image of the 'sea of arguments.'

λοιπὸν δὲ δὴ . . . περὶ τοῦ δυνατοῦ καὶ μή] sc. διαλέγεσθαι, or λόγον διδόναι, which is supplied in the next sentence (cp. infra).

ἔασόν με ἐορτάσαι 'suffer me to keep holiday.'

καὶ γὰρ οἱ τοιοῦτοί που, κ.τ.λ.] καί in καὶ γάρ anticipates καί in 458 ἤδη οὖν καὶ αὐτός, κ.τ.λ., to which it is correlative.

γενομένου] sc. έκείνου δ βούλονται. Cp. ii. 369 A Οὐκοῦν γενομένου αὐτοῦ έλπὶς εὐπετέστερον ἰδεῖν δ ζητοῦμεν ;

καί ὕστερον] καί implies 'there will be an opportunity of doing B so hereafter as well as now.' Cp. iii. 400 B καὶ μετὰ Δάμωνος and note: Soph. 254 B περὶ μὲν τούτου καὶ τάχα ἐπισκεψόμεθα σαφέστερον. [καί simply='and.' B. J.]

γιγνόμενα] 'When they do take place.' Cp. supra γενομένου.

τὰ δὲ καὶ μιμουμένους] sc. τοὺς νόμους, i.e. 'following their spirit.' Cp. Polit. 300 ff., where the actual rulers are advised to 'imitate,' i.e. act in the spirit of, the ideal ruler.

σὺ μὲν τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] αὐτοῖς depends on παραδώσεις, sc. τοῖς ἄρχουσι καὶ τοῖς ἐπικούροις.

όμοῦ δὲ ἀναμεμιγμένων ... ἄξονται] The subject of ἀναμεμιγμένων D is also the subject of ἄξονται. ἄξονται is passive in sense.

οὐ γεωμετρικαίς γε . . . ἀνάγκαις ] The dative ἀνάγκαις is to be

Republic V. 458

construed with ἀναγκαῖα, 'necessary in virtue of': cp. Soph. 252 D ταῖς μεγίσταις ἀνάγκαις ἀδύνατον. For the play on ἀνάγκη, cp. vii. 527 Λ, ix. 581 E.

άλλὰ μετὰ δὴ ταῦτα, ὧ Γλαύκων, κ.τ.λ.] Is Plato\_serious in his scheme of communism? Modern readers would like to explain this part of the ideal commonwealth in a figure only (ἐν ὑπονοία); they might imagine themselves not far off a kingdom of heaven, 'in which they neither marry, nor are given in marriage.' But the particularity of the details forbids this: we seem rather to be entering on a 'new moral world.' It may be urged on behalf of Plato: (1) that he himself acknowledges the community of women and children to be 'the second of the three great waves' or paradoxes: (2) that in the Laws the theory is not put into practice, though regarded as affording the true and absolutely perfect rule of the state, Laws v. 730 D ή μέν δη τοιαύτη πόλις, είτε που θεοί ή παίδες θεών αὐτὴν οἰκοῦσι πλείους ένός, οῦτω διαζώντες εὐφραινόμενοι κατοικοῦσι: (3) that the Greek sentiment about the relations of the sexes is unlike that of modern times: (4) that the family is not destroyed but merged in the state; public interests are supposed to take the place of private ones: (5) the equalization of the sexes was a great thought in that age and country, not entirely realized by any modern nation: (6) the communism of Plato has other aims than the indulgence of the passions; licentiousness is to be deemed 'an unholy thing': (7) although the physical considerations to which Plato draws our attention can hardly be dwelt upon, neither can they be safely overlooked: (8) lastly, there is a speculative interest in considering social institutions with a reference to first principles which lie beyond the range of custom and experience.

459 A

В

άρ' οὐκ εἰσί τινες καὶ γίγνονται ἄριστοι;] 'Are there not some who are and who prove themselves to be the best?' The same creatures form the subject of both verbs.

έκ τῶν ἀρίστων] SC. γεννᾶν.

γεννάται] sc. (1) τὸ γεννώμενον, or (2) τὸ γένος infra.

τί δὲ ἴππων οἴει] ἵππων may be taken as a genitive of reference (with  $\pi \epsilon \rho i$  omitted), as in Hom. Od. xi. 174 εἰπὲ δέ μοι πατρός τε καὶ υἰέος, ο̂ν κατέλειπον: Soph. O. C. 354, 355 μαντεῖ ἄγουσα πάντα, . . . â τοῦδ ἐχρήσθη σώματος: this is eased by assimilation to the genitives in

D

the previous sentence (ὀρνίθων . . . κυνῶν). Cp. Phaedo 78 d Tί δὲ Republic τῶν πολλῶν καλῶν . . .; ἀρα κατὰ ταὐτὰ ἔχει . . .;

459

ώς ἄρα . . . δεῖ ἄκρων εἶναι τῶν ἀρχόντων] is a fusion of two constructions of δεῖ: ὡς σφόδρα δεῖ ἄκρων ἀρχόντων and ὡς σφόδρα δεῖ ἄκρων εἶναι τοὺς ἄρχοντας.

ὅτι ἀνάγκη αὐτοῖς, κ.τ.λ.] For deception as a political medicine, C cp. ii. 382 c. The order is ἡγούμεθα εξαρκεῖν ἰατρὸν εἶναι καὶ φαυλότερον.

μὴ δεομένοις μὲν . . . ἐθελόντων ὑπακούειν] ἐθελόντων (1) sc. τῶν σωμάτων (the genitive absolute is changed in one MŚ.,  $\mathfrak{r}$ , to the dative ἐθέλουσιν), 'when the constitution is amenable to diet:' cp. ii. 370 B and note; or (2) the subject of ἐθελόντων is personal: 'when the patients are willing to submit to regimen' [B. J.].

ἀνδρειοτέρου] 'more courageous': the task of prescribing medicine is more difficult than of prescribing a diet, and therefore requires more courage in the physician.

τὸ ὀρθὸν τοῦτο] sc. τὸ ὀρθὸν εἶναι τῷ ψεύδει χρῆσθαι, ὡς ἐν φαρμάκου εἴδει. Socrates echoes the expression of Glaucon. Cp. supra 449 C τὸ ἀρθῶς τοῦτο . . . λόγου δεῖται.

εἰ μέλλει . . . ἀκρότατον εἶναι] 'If the flock is to be of the E highest quality': as above σφόδρα ἄκρων.

ποίμνιον . . . ἀγέλη] The words are meant to recall the analogy of the lower animals (cp. Polit. 261).

τοις ήμετέροις ποιηταίς] For the sort of poetry and poets to be received in our state cp. iii. 398 A, B.

τοι̂s γιγνομένοις γάμοις] 'The unions which result' from brides and bridegrooms being brought together. The expression prepares for the restriction following.

τὸ δὲ πλῆθος, κ.τ.λ.] 'But the number of the marriages we shall place under the control of the magistrates.' For πλῆθος of a limited number or quantity, cp. Gorg. 451 c πῶς ἔχει πλήθους (τό τε ἄρτιον καὶ τὸ περιττόν): Phaedr. 279 c τὸ . . . χρυσοῦ πλῆθος εἴη μοι ὅσον, κ.τ.λ.

On the question of population, cp. viii. 546 A, B, D. We may observe that these two passages have an apparent likeness but are not really similar in their drift. In the first, Plato supposes

Republic V. 460 A a limitation to be placed upon population by the rulers to avoid excess and defect of numbers: in the second, he fears the deterioration and confusion of classes which may arise by ignorance in the rulers of the so-called number of the state or cycle of human births.

Aristotle and Plato are agreed, the latter both in the Laws and the Republic, in limiting the state by unity,  $\mu \acute{\epsilon} \chi \rho \iota s$  or  $\mathring{a}\nu \acute{\epsilon} \mathring{b} \acute{\epsilon} \lambda \eta$   $\acute{\epsilon} \mathring{\nu} \alpha \iota$   $\mu \acute{\iota} a$ . No definite number is given in the Republic: in the Laws it is said that the number is to be regulated by the size of neighbouring states. The number finally fixed upon is 5040, which Plato praises in respect of convenience, because it was capable of such numerous subdivisions. At this number, in a passage which it is hardly possible to explain, Aristotle carps. It would require, he says, a territory as great as Babylonia to support such a vast population in idleness, to say nothing of their attendants.

πρὸς πολέμους . . . ἀποσκοποῦντες] Cp. ii.  $372 \, \mathrm{C}$  εὐλαβούμενοι πενίαν  $\hat{\eta}$  πόλεμον (but in the present passage the notion is rather that of making allowance for losses sustained through war or pestilence): and for μήτε . . . γίγνηται cp. iv.  $423 \, \mathrm{C}$   $\delta \pi \omega s$  μήτε σμικρὰ  $\hat{\eta}$  πόλις ἔσται μήτε μεγάλη δοκοῦσα.

κλήροι δή τινες ... τοὺς ἄρχοντας] 'Then, I suppose, we must contrive some ingenious kind of lot, that the less worthy person, on each occasion of uniting them, may lay the blame on chance, and not on the ruler.'

τὸν φαῦλον ἐκεῖνον] The reference is to supra 459 n τοὺς δὲ φαυλοτάτους ταῖς φαυλοτάταις τοὺναντίον.

ἴνα καὶ . . . σπείρωνται] 'That there may be moreover a colourable excuse for such fathers having as many children as possible.

καὶ ἄμα] 'and at the same time,' i.e. while we honour bravery Republic we also reap an advantage.

460 Б

εἴτε ἀμφότερα For this adverbial accusative cp. Laches 187 A η δώροις η χάρισιν η άμφότερα.

κοιναί . . . καὶ ἀρχαί, κ.τ.λ.] 'Offices also' (as well as education and the general duties of guardians, supra 456 ff.) 'are I suppose to be common to both women and men.' The inference on p. 456 supra only extended to the duties of guardians generally. The further consequence that the rulers will be taken from both sexes is here assumed by the way. Plato seems, however, to betray a certain consciousness that the office immediately in question might be specially suitable for women. Cp. Laws vi. 784, vii. 794, where it is actually entrusted to women.

είς τον σηκόν Cp. Homer, Od. ix. 219, 220, where the lambs and kids await their mothers in the pens: στείνοντο δὲ σηκοὶ | ᾿Αρνῶν ηδ' ερίφων.

τὰ δὲ τῶν χειρόνων . . . κατακρύψουσιν ώς πρέπει ] Cp. infra 461 c ώς οὐκ οὕσης τροφης τῷ τοιούτω. Is Plato a maintainer of infanticide? It must be admitted that the words in which he touches on this subject are not perfectly clear. First let us consider the passage supra 459 D δεί . . . τους άρίστους ταις άρίσταις συγγίγνεσθαι ώς πλειστάκις, τούς δὲ φαυλοτάτους ταῖς φαυλοτάταις τοὐναντίον, καὶ τῶν μὲν τὰ ἔκγονα τρέφειν, των δε μή, εί μέλλει το ποίμνιον ο τι ακρότατον είναι. 'The best of either sex should be united with the best as often, and the inferior with the inferior, as seldom as possible; and they should rear the offspring of the one sort of union, but not of the other, if the flock is to be maintained in first-rate condition.' Here Plato is speaking of keeping up the breed of the guardians in perfection: but it does not necessarily follow that the weaklings or imperfect individuals must be put out of the way to accomplish this: he could have obtained his object by degradation of them to an inferior class. Nevertheless the words των δὲ μή (sc. τρέφειν) have an ominous sound, unaccompanied as they are by any explanation of what is to become of them. Still more ominous are the words in the present passage τὰ δὲ τῶν χειρόνων, καὶ ἐάν τι τῶν ἑτέρων ἀνάπηρον γίγνηται, ἐν ἀπορρήτω τε καὶ ἀδήλω κατακρύψουσιν ὡς πρέπει. 'But the offspring of inferior parents, or of the better, when they chance to be deformed, will be put away in some mysterious unC

Republic V. 460 known place, as they should be.' These words are meant to suggest something different from rearing the children in a pen or asylum, which Plato does not like or think it good taste more distinctly to describe. It is further stated in 461 c that the children born of irregular unions between parents who have passed the prescribed limit of age, if abortion has not been already practised, shall not be reared,  $\mu \acute{a}\lambda \iota \sigma \tau a \ \mu \acute{e}\nu \ \mu \eta \delta^{\prime} \ \acute{e}\iota s \ \phi \acute{e}s \ \acute{e}\kappa \phi \acute{e}\rho \epsilon \iota \nu \ \kappa \acute{\nu} \eta \mu a \ \mu \eta \delta \acute{e} \ \gamma^{\prime} \ \acute{e}\nu$ ,  $\acute{e}\grave{a}\nu \ \gamma \acute{e}\nu \eta \tau \iota \iota \iota$ . It may be remarked that whatever doubt may be entertained respecting the meaning of the word  $\tau \rho \acute{e}\phi \epsilon \iota \nu$  in the first of these passages, there can be no doubt as to the sense which is to be assigned to  $\tau \rho \circ \phi \mathring{\eta} s$  in the last.

The Greek feeling is sufficiently expressed in a well-known passage of Aristotle (Pol. vii. 16, § 15): 'As to the exposure and rearing of children, let there be a law that no deformed child shall live, but where there are too many (for in our state population has a limit), when couples have children in excess, and the state of feeling is averse to the exposure of offspring, let abortion be procured before sense and life have begun; what may or may not be lawfully done in these cases depends on the question of life and sensation.' The occurrence of such a passage in Aristotle is a strong reason for believing that similar passages have a similar meaning in Plato. It shows that they are not in any degree at variance with Greek feeling.

On the whole we must conclude that the only reason for denying Plato to be a maintainer of infanticide is the wish to acquit him of allowing a practice so repugnant to modern Christian notions.

There are similar questions in antiquity; e.g. whether human sacrifices were practised by the Greeks and Romans, about which there is the same doubt, due to the same reticence or ambiguity, and which should probably be answered in the same way.

τὰ εἴκοσι ἔτη] 'a period of twenty years.' The article, which Republic is added according to Greek idiom with the word of number, defines the time in reference to the rest of life.

460

τὰ ποῖα αὐτῶν; sc. τῶν ἐτῶν. 'Which years of life do you mean?' i.e. within what limits do you define the twenty or thirty years?

γυναικὶ μέν . . . πεντεκαιπεντηκονταέτους 'For a woman, said I, the proper time (μέτριος χρόνος) is to begin at twenty years of age and to continue to bear children to the state until forty; for a man the proper time is to begin when he has passed "the swiftest prime of running," i.e. when his powers of running are at their highest, 'and to beget children to the state until fifty-five.' The words την δξυτάτην δρόμου ἀκμήν have also been referred to the course of life. But it is difficult to make δρόμος refer to the race of life where there is nothing in the context to suggest this metaphorical application of the phrase. In Laws (vi. 785) a man must marry, if at all, between thirty and thirty-five, a woman between sixteen and twenty.

των είς τὸ κοινὸν γεννήσεων This qualification is added to leave room for the licence given infra c.

461

C

D

αν λάθη] sc. φύς. Cp. infra c ἐὰν δέ τι βιάσηται. It is assumed that, if such a birth came to the knowledge of the rulers, the child would be at once destroyed.

В ύπὸ σκότου Cp. the use of σκότιος in Hom. Il. vi. 24, Eurip. Troad. 44, &c.

ἀνέγγυον 'unwarranted.'

καὶ ταῦτά γ' ήδη . . . προθυμεῖσθαι Ταῦτά γε, sc. ἀφήσομεν. 'Before granting this permission, however, we must instruct them to use all diligence,' &c.

έὰν γένηται SC. κύημα, not παιδίον.

βιάσηται Sc. είς τὸ φως.

ούτω τιθέναι] sc. τὸ γιγνόμενον, 'to dispose of it on the clear understanding that such an offspring is not to be reared.'

πῶς διαγνώσονται . . . οὐδαμῶς ςc. διαγνώσονται. ' How will they distinguish their fathers and daughters and the other relatives of each other whom you mentioned?' (1) 'Not at all,' i.e. they Republic V. 461 D

Ē

Plato's 'table of prohibited degrees' appears to be the following. Brothers and sisters (except in the reserved case of a 'dispensation' from the Oracle), parents and children, grandparents and grandchildren. These terms are all relative to the common marriage of the hymeneal festival. Brothers and sisters are those born from seven to ten months afterwards; they cannot marry those who took part in the festival, who are all their parents, any more than one another; nor any one who took part in the festivals from seven to ten months before the birth of their parents.

There is no difficulty in this passage if we bear in mind that Plato uses the words parents and children, brothers and sisters in a new sense which he consistently observes. Some of the results of his arrangements he hardly saw or does not care to notice. The infrequency of the opportunity of nuptial intercourse is singular: but this is not unreasonable if it is considered that the nuptial scheme has absolutely no other object but the procreation of children: also the circumstance is to be remarked that those who were united in any hymeneal festival would rarely be born in the same year owing to the difference in the marriageable age prescribed for men and women.

μετ' ἐκείνην δεκάτω μηνὶ καὶ ἑβδόμω δή] 'After an interval of ten or indeed of seven months': an inexact way of saying, 'From seven to ten months after.' δή draws attention to the more exceptional case.

καὶ οὕτω δὴ τὰ τούτων ἔκγονα] 'Their offspring defined in the same way.' Cp. Theaet. 156 c τὰ δὲ γεννώμενα οὕτω δή.

ἐἀν ὁ κλῆρος ταύτη ξυμπίπτη] It is not forgotten that the lottery has been cunningly devised by the rulers: supra 460 A.

.461 E- The great merit of the new arrangement is that it secures the unity of feeling in the state: so that if one member suffer, the whole body shall suffer with it, and the gladness of one shall be the gladness of all.

In other states one family sorrows, another rejoices at the same

cvent; the rulers, though fellow-citizens, are masters, the people slaves, and even the ruling class are bound together by no tie but that of office. Whereas in our community the people regard the rulers as their protectors and are regarded by them in turn as bread-winners, and the rulers will be all one family, not only in name, but in reality.

Republic V. 461 E-466 D

This new institution is in keeping with the community of property which was previously ordained. And both together, by securing unanimity, will render quarrels and crimes of violence impossible in our state. Nor shall we have poor men flattering the rich, nor fathers of families harassed by petty cares, but the life of our guardians will be more enviable than that of Olympian victors. So little need we fear the objection that in forbidding them to have property we have made them less happy than the other citizens. Should any of them be moved by a low ambition and seek to appropriate the state to himself, he will learn to his cost how truly Hesiod said, 'Half is better than the whole.'

ώς δὲ... παρὰ τοῦ λόγου βεβαιώσασθαι παρὰ τοῦ λόγου is literally 'to obtain confirmation from the argument,' which, as elsewhere, is personified. Cp. Gorg. 489 A μὴ φθόνει μοι ἀποκρίνασθαι τοῦτο, Καλλίκλεις, ἵν', ἐάν μοι ὁμολογήσης, βεβαιώσωμαι ἤδη παρὰ σοῦ, ἄτε ἰκανοῦ ἀνδρὸς διαγνῶναι ὡμολογηκότος.

461 E

In what follows Plato appears to confuse the absolute unity of the state with the harmony or balance of the various elements which are contained in the state. He has no idea of a unity of opposites or differences—τὸ ἀντίξουν συμφέρον. May we not imagine some Athenian statesman or man of the world saying: 'O Socrates, did you ever see one individual who was by nature the same as another? and is not a state made up of differences of character as well as of different employments? And if you could destroy these differences by education, would you not reduce men to a powerless unity in which their best qualities are lost?' Such has certainly been the fate of religious orders, who, in a spirit not unlike that of Plato's Republic, have attempted to extinguish individual character or genius in a common interest. Cp. Arist. Pol. ii. 2, § 3 οὐ μόνον δ' ἐκ πλειόνων ἀνθρώπων ἐστὶν ἡ πόλις, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐξ είδει διαφερόντων. Cp. also ibid. c. 2, § 2; c. 5, §§ 13-17. This truth begins to find acknowledgement in Plato's regulations concerning marriage in the Politicus and Laws (Polit. 300, 310; Laws vi. 773).

Republic V. 462 A

τῆς ὁμολογίας] 'Of the mutual understanding or agreement,' implied in the words ὡς δὲ ἐπομένη τε τῆ ἄλλη πολιτεία... δεῖ... βεβαιώσασθαι παρὰ τοῦ λόγου.

άρα... ἡμῖν ἀρμόττει] 'If we find that it fits the impress of the good.' For ἡμῖν cp. supra 451 p εἰ ἡμῖν πρέπει and note. ἃ νῦν δὴ διήλθομεν: sc. the community of women and children.

- Β ἡ δέ γε τῶν τοιούτων ἰδίωσις . . . τῶν ἐν τῆ πόλει; ] The clause ὅταν οἱ μὲν . . . ἐν τῆ πόλει; is the explanation of ἰδίωσις, as in the next sentence the clause ὅταν . . . οὐκ ἐμόν; is the explanation of ἐκ τοῦδε.
- ( ἐν ἢτινι δὴ . . . διοικεῖται;] This is that barren unity which Aristotle condemns (Pol. ii. cc. 3, 4: also c. 5, § 14 ώσπερ κᾶν εἴ τις τὴν συμφωνίαν ποιήσειεν ὁμοφωνίαν ἢ τὸν ῥυθμὸν βάσιν μίαν). τοῦτο refers to τό τε ἐμὸν καὶ τὸ οὐκ ἐμόν in the previous sentence.

καὶ ἥτις δὴ . . . ἔχει] αὕτη ἄριστα διοικεῖται is to be supplied from the previous sentence. The illustration then proceeds until Glaucon gives his assent and returns to the original question of Socrates (τοῦτο ὁ ἐρωτᾶς). For the expression ἡ κατὰ τὸ σώμα . . . τεταμένη cp. ix. 584 c αἵ γε διὰ τοῦ σώματος ἐπὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τείνουσαι . . . ἡδοναί: Theaet. 186 c ὅσα διὰ τοῦ σώματος παθήματα ἐπὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τείνει: Phil. 34 c, p: Tim. 64. The redundancy of ὅλη after πᾶσα is occasioned by the antithesis of μέρους.

- Τ) ὁ αὐτὸς γὰρ... πόλις οἰκεῖ For οἰκεῖν as a neuter cp. iv. 421 A καὶ αὖ τοῦ εὖ οἰκεῖν καὶ εὐδαιμονεῖν μόνοι τὸν καιρὸν ἔχουσιν: viii. 543 A τῆ μελλούση ἄκρως οἰκεῖν πόλει.
- Ε ωρα αν είη . . . ἐπανιέναι ἡμῖν] For the familiar idiom cp. Theaet. 145 c ωρα . . . σοὶ μὲν ἐπιδεικνύναι, ἐμοὶ δὲ σκοπείσθαι.

τὰ τοῦ λόγου ὁμολογήματα] 'The things agreed to.' Cp. ii. 362 Β βουλεύματα and note.

ἔστι μέν που . . . ἄρχοντές τε καὶ δῆμος ] For the use of the singular verb with a plural substantive, cp. ii. 363 A ἵνα . . . γίγνηται . . . ἀρχαί τε καὶ γάμοι, κ.τ.λ. and note.

463 A B προς τῷ πολίτας] sc. προσαγορεύειν.

τῶν ἀρχόντων] 'with regard to the rulers.' The genitive is at first vague, as supra 459 B Τί δὲ ἵππων οἴει...; and is then brought into government with εἴ τις.

τὸν μὲν οἰκεῖον...(c) οὐχ έαυτοῦ;] 'The friend he thinks and speaks of as belonging to him; the stranger as not belonging to him.'

Republic V. 463 B

πότερον αὐτοῖς . . . κατὰ τὰ ὀνόματα πράττειν;] 'Will you merely assign to them by law the name of friends?' It is hardly necessary to observe that νομοθετεῖν has two constructions in the successive clauses: (1) with τὰ ὀνόματα: (2) with πράττειν.

С

περί τε τοὺς πατέρας] The correlative phrase (καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους ξυγγενεῖς) is deferred through the expansion of the sentence, and the lost thread is resumed in the words καὶ περὶ πατέρων . . . καὶ περὶ τῶν ἄλλων ξυγγενῶν, in construction with ὑμνήσουσιν.

D

αὖταί σοι ἢ ἄλλαι φῆμαι ... (E) φθέγγοιντο] This resumption only regards the latter part of the preceding sentence (ἡ μήτε πρὸς  $\theta$ εῶν ... ἢ ταῦτα), in which not the law itself, but the sanction of the law is speken of.

ύμνήσουσιν] is used intransitively like οἰκεῖν in the expression ή ἄριστα πολιτευομένη πόλις οἰκεῖ (supra 462 d).

**ἔφαμεν**] supra 462 B, C.

464 A

κοινή] Sc. γιγνομένας.

οὐκοῦν μάλιστα . . . ἔξουσιν; As Aristotle truly remarks (Pol. ii. 1), 'mine and thine,' as well as 'father and mother,' have received a new meaning; Plato seems to forget that the legislator cannot create by new use of names the feeling of family relationship where no such relationship exists. The sweetness of the 'wine,' which is the affection of a family, has been dissolved in water (Ar. Pol. ii. 4, 7, 8).

πρὸς τῆ ἄλλη καταστάσει] 'besides the general arrangement of the state,' i.e. the other arrangements not including the community of wives and children. Cp. supra 463 A, B.

B

τοις πρόσθεν γε The reference is to iii. 415 E ff.

κοινή πάντας ἀναλίσκειν] This was implied in the institution of συσσίτια, which were a κοινή ἀνάλωσις τής διδομένης τροφής (iii. 416 E).

C

Republic V. 464 D καὶ γυναϊκά τε καὶ παΐδας έτέρους] sc. ὀνομάζοντας 'ἐμούς.' 'Calling a different wife and different children his own.'

ίδίων οντων | SC. των τε παίδων και της γυναικός.

E ὅσα γε . . . στασιάζουσιν;] 'They are blest with peace from all those factious dispositions which,' &c. ὅσα is cognate accusative. See Riddell's *Digest*, § 2.

καὶ μὴν οὐδὲ βιαίων γε, κ.τ.λ.] The mention of offences against the person is suggested by the exception of πλὴν τὸ σῶμα in the preceding sentences. (Cp. the classification of criminal offences in the Laws, Book ix, especially pp. 879, 880.)

δικαίως αν εἶεν] 'Can have any right to exist,' i.e. may be expected. This use is idiomatic:—cp.  $\epsilon l \mu \dot{\eta} \dot{a} \delta i \kappa \hat{\omega}$  (iv. 430 E, &c.).

ηλιξι μὲν γὰρ . . . δίκαιόν που φήσομεν] 'First, I believe we shall declare it to be chivalrous and right for equals to defend themselves against equals.' The order is φήσομέν που καλὸν καὶ δίκαιον ηλιξιν ἀμύνεσθαι ηλικας. The dative depends on καλὸν καὶ δίκαιον. Cp. Laws ix. 879 Ε ηλιξ δὲ ηλικα . . . ἀμυνέσθω κατὰ φύσιν ἄνευ βέλους ψιλαῖς ταῖς χερσίν. The correlative to μέν ('in the first place') is supplied by μήν infra.

ἀνάγκην . . . τιθέντες] 'In this way we shall oblige them to keep themselves in condition': literally, 'setting compulsion on the care of their persons.' The reading ἀνάγκην . . . ἐπιμελεία has the greater manuscript authority. Several variations occur: ἀνάγκη  $(\Xi)$ , ἐπιμελείας (q supported by Stobaeus), ἐπιμέλειαν  $(\Pi \Xi)$ : the two last appear to be corrections.

καὶ γὰρ τόδε ὀρθὸν . . . ὁ νόμος] ὀρθόν echoes and expands ὀρθῶς supra. Cp. 459 p and note.

465 ἐν τῷ τοιούτῳ] ἐν τῷ αὐτίκα ἀμύνεσθαι. For πληρῶν τὸν θυμόν cp. Soph. Phil. 324 θυμὸν γένοιτο χειρὶ πληρῶσαί ποτε.

πρεσβυτέρω μὴν νεωτέρων πάντων ἄρχειν ] Cp. iii. 412 C.

B δέος δὲ... βοηθεῖν] Although τό, the MS. reading, may be construed—'the fear, namely, that succour will be brought,'

Madvig's simple change of  $\tau \delta$  to  $\tau \circ \hat{\mathbf{v}}$  seems justifiable. Cp. iv. Republic V.

ξυμβαίνει γὰρ οὖτως] 'That is clearly the result' (viz. of our institutions—ἐκ τῶν νόμων infra).

11 00 00

τούτων μὴν... διχοστατήση] Plato, as Aristotle remarks (Pol. ii. 5, 18 ff.), seems hardly to think of the lower orders of the state. The question which is raised in the Politics has no answer: 'Did he mean the communism of the higher orders to extend to the lower?' There is certainly no proof that he did.

C

δι ἀπρέπειαν] Cp. iv. 425 B-E, 442 Ε τὰ φορτικὰ αἰτῷ προσφέροντες, κ.τ.λ.

κολακείας τε πλουσίων πένητες] (1) 'Flatteries of the rich, in the case of the poor': κολακείας, like ἀπορίας and ἀλγηδόνας, is the accusative after λέγειν, while πένητες is in apposition (part with whole) with the nominative of ἀπηλλαγμένοι ᾶν εἶεν: the full expression is κολακείας τε πλουσίων ὧν πένητες ἀπηλλαγμένοι ᾶν εἶεν. Or (2) κολακείας gen. sing, in the same case with ὧν.

ταμιεύειν παραδόντες] Cp. iii. 416 D οἴκησιν καὶ ταμιείον μηδενὶ εἶναι: viii. 550 D τὸ ταμιείον . . . ἐκείνο ἐκάστω χρυσίου πληρούμενον ἀπόλλυσι τὴν τοιαύτην πολιτείαν.

ἀπαλλάξονται] Cobet's conjecture, ἀπηλλάξονται (future perfect), though in strict accordance with ἀπηλλαγμένοι ἃν εἶεν supra, is quite needless, and the form does not occur elsewhere.

[]

E

γέρα δέχονται . . . μετέχουσιν] Plato seems at first to have intended to end the sentence at τελευτήσαντες, but by an afterthought expands the word into an independent clause. Cp. Phaedr. 258 c ἰσόθεον ἡγεῖται αὐτός τε αὐτὸν ἔτι ζῶν, καὶ οἱ ἔπειτα γιγνόμενοι ταὐτὰ ταῦτα περὶ αὐτοῦ νομίζουσι.

οὐκ οἶδα ὅτου] viz. Adeimantus' imaginary objector, iv. 419 ff.

ποιοῖμεν... σκεψοίμεθα... ποιοῖμεν] The optative has sufficient manuscript authority, and is therefore preferred, although the readings of A, ποιοῦμεν (bis), σκεψόμεθα, are not impossible.

466 A

εἴ που παραπίπτοι] 'If so be that the topic should fall in our way.' Cp. viii. 561 B.

μή πη κατὰ... τὸν τῶν γεωργῶν;] 'Can it from any point of view be regarded as on a level with that of the husbandman,' &c. Cp. Gorg. 512 Β μή σοι δοκεί κατὰ τὸν δικανικὸν εἶναι;

В

Republic  $\epsilon \kappa \epsilon \hat{i}$  iv. 420 D.

466 c μενεί...βίω] either (1) 'he will continue in, or remain true to, this life.' Cp. vi. 496 Β πάνσμικρον...κατὰ φύσιν μεῖναν ἐπ' αὐτῆ: or (2) taking μενεί in a more general and absolute sense, 'he will remain where he is (i.e. he will be content) when such a life is offered to him.' (ἐπί = on condition of.)

συγχωρεῖς] here is followed by two constructions: first by the accusative of the noun (κοινωνίαν), then by the infinitive ( $\delta \epsilon \hat{\nu} \nu$ , πράξειν). 'You agree to the community..., viz. that the women should ( $\delta \epsilon \hat{\nu} \nu$ )... and that if they do so they will do ( $\pi \rho \alpha' \xi \epsilon \iota \nu$ ) what is best....'

- Τ) η πεφύκατον . . . κοινωνείν These words are added in limitation and further explanation of παρὰ φύσιν.
- Here Glaucon would have reminded Socrates of the question which had been left to the last,—whether such a revolution of established custom is possible. Socrates anticipates him by subtly interposing a point of detail, which still detains them for some time. What are to be the laws and usages of war? The women will go campaigning with the men, and they will take their children with them (except those of tender age), mounted on swift and well-trained horses, under proper guidance and protection, to see the battle and to perform such services as they are fitted for. Thus, while their safety is provided for, they will learn their future occupation, and their presence will heighten the valour of their parents.

As to military discipline, the appropriate punishment for cowardice in action will be the degradation of the offender to the rank of an artisan, and if he is taken prisoner, we may make a present of him to the enemy. As rewards for eminent service in the field, there will be crowns, ovations and favours from the young and beautiful (as before said), not to mention feasts for which we have the example in Homer. Those who die bravely for their country shall be declared to be of the golden (or royal) race, and shall have divine honours paid to them, as the God at Delphi shall direct. And a similar tribute shall be assigned to those who die at home after doing eminent service.

But how will our soldiers treat their enemies? They will distinguish between Hellenes and barbarians. No Hellenic city shall be enslaved; no Hellene held in bondage. And it shall be forbidden

to despoil the dead, both on grounds of humanity and discipline. Hellenic armour (unless by Divine command) shall not be hung as a trophy in the temples of Greek Gods. Nor shall Hellenic territory be ravaged, or Hellenic villages burnt. For the quarrel of Hellene with Hellene is not war, but sedition, an untoward variance between kinsmen; and it should be kept within strict bounds, not suffered to degenerate into unnatural violence. Nor should men act as if such contention were irreconcileable. In warring with barbarians, which alone is truly war, the usages heretofore practised by the Hellenes in fighting amongst themselves are quite barbarous enough.

Republic 466 D-471 C

οὐκοῦν, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, . . . (Ε) πολεμήσουσιν 'The only question that remains, is as to the possibility of the scheme.' 'That is what I was going to suggest.' 'We need not speak about war, for it is obvious what will be the manner of their wars.'

466

έφθης ... ὑπολήψεσθαι 'You have forestalled an interruption which I was meditating. ὑπολαμβάνεσθαι has the meaning of interrupting, taking up a conversation, cp. Prot. 318 A ὑπολαβων . . . εἶπεν.

E

περί μέν γὰρ τῶν ἐν τῷ πολέμῳ, κ.τ.λ. γάρ introduces the reason why the possibility of the scheme is the only remaining topic (λοιπόν supra). The real motive of the digression is an artistic one. The great peripeteia, the on-rushing of the 'third wave,' is made more impressive by being delayed.

ότι κοινή . . . (467 A) καὶ μητέρας Τhe words διακονείν, κ.τ.λ., follow the general notion of what is fitting. They may be construed with ἄξουσι, but the change is occasioned by δεήσει intervening. For άδροί cp. Hdt. iv. 180 έπεὰν δὲ γυναικὶ τὸ παιδίον άδρὸν γένηται.

οξα δή εν πολέμω φιλεί] sc. γίγνεσθαι. Cp. viii. 565 Ε αδίκως έπαιτιώμενος, οἷα δή φιλοῦσιν (SC. ποιείν).

αναλαβείν] here as often in later writers is intransitive in meaning = 'to recover.'

καὶ οὐκ ἄξιον κινδύνου (1) οὐκ ἄξιον is co-ordinate with σμικρόν. 'Do you think the difference unimportant and not worth some risk?' Or (2) the words οὐκ ἄξιον κινδύνου are parenthetical and are to be joined with θεωρείν, neglecting η μή. [B. ].]

C

467

Republic παίδας ... ἐσομένους] 'Boys who are to be men of war.'

οσα ἄνθρωποι] sc. γνῶναι πεφύκασι. Cp. Crit. 46 ε οσα γε τἀνθρώπεια.

D εὐλαβήσονται] SC. ἄγειν.

άλλὰ γάρ] introduces an objection. 'But this is not enough. For many accidents defy calculation.' This is said in the same spirit as supra  $\mathbf{B}$  σφαλεῖσιν, οἶα δὴ ἐν πολέμω φιλεῖ. He is careful to enumerate all the risks with the view of providing against them.

E καὶ διδαξαμένους ἱππεύειν] 'And when we have had them taught. to ride.' διδαξαμένους is a correction of q. Cp. Meno 93 d Θεμιστοκλης Κλεόφαντον τὸν νίὸν ἱππέα μὲν ἐδιδάξατο ἀγαθόν. The construction of the accusative with the gerundive (διδαξαμένους . . . ἀκτέον = ἡμᾶς διδαξαμένους αὐτοὺς (sc. τοὺς παῖδας) δεῖ ἄγειν) is quite legitimate; although διδαξαμένους would be more unequivocal here. The reading of A II M, διδαξομένους, could only mean 'that they may teach themselves to ride.' But it would surely be more reasonable for them to learn to ride before they were taken on such expeditions. And the rare reflexive use in Aristoph. Clouds 127: Soph. Ant. 356 will not justify such an interpretation either of the future or of the aorist here. Another reading, διδαχθέντας, is probably conjectural. The passage is referred to in vii. 537 A.

τὸ αὐτῶν ἔργον ] SC. ἐσόμενον.

468 πῶς ἐκτέον σοι τοὺς στρατιώτας] πῶς ἐκτέον; =πῶς ἔχειν δεῖ; σοι is an ethic dative: 'How should you have your soldiers disposed to one another and to their enemies?'

ποι ἀν] sc. εἴη τὰ σοὶ καταφαινόμενα. [H. Richards cj. ποία δή ;] τοις θέλουσι] sc. ἔχειν.

B δεξιωθήναι] δεξιοῦσθαι often means 'to extend the right hand towards a person in token of admiration.' See especially Soph. El. 975, 976: Xen. Hellen. v. I, 3 οὐδεὶς ἐκεῖνον τῶν στρατιωτῶν ὁς οὐκ ἐδεξιώσατο, καὶ ὁ μὲν ἐστεφάνωσεν, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ μηδενὶ ἐξεῖναι] καί, which is omitted in some MSS., including A, may indicate the addition of a further clause to the law. 'Be it furthermore enacted,' &c. Cp. iii. 417 A and note.

Republic V. 468 C

αἰρέσεις τῶν τοιούτων] Either (1) 'there will be more frequent selections of such men' (τοιούτων referring to ἀγαθῷ ὄντι) 'than of others by the rulers to take part in the marriage festivals,' cp. supra 460 A, B; or (2) 'success in winning such prizes.'

άλλὰ μὴν καὶ καθ' Όμηρον . . . (D) τὴν ἰσχὸν αὐξήσει ] II. vii. 321, 322

νώτοισιν δ' Αἴαντα διηνεκέεσσι γέραιρεν ηρως 'Ατρεΐδης, εὐρυκρείων 'Αγαμέμνων.

As in iii. 408 B and elsewhere, Socrates takes a humorous delight in supporting his opinions by the authority of Homer.

ως ταύτην οἰκείαν οὖσαν τιμήν] 'implying that this was a proper D way of honouring.'

ταῦτά γε] 'in this,' although we refuse to follow him in other things (ii. 383 A, &c.).

νῦν δή] supra B, C.

καὶ κρέασιν . . . δεπάεσσιν] Il. viii. 162: xii. 311. This may seem a curious form of training and hardly consistent with iii. 390 A, B, &c.; but compare Laws i. 649. Plato cannot be held up as an advocate of total abstinence, but rather of moderation in the use of wine.

τοῦ χρυσοῦ γένους ] iii. 415 A-C.

άλλ' οὐ πεισόμεθα Ἡσιόδω] The lines which follow are altered from Hesiod, Op. et Dies, 121 ff.:

τοὶ μὲν δαίμονές εἰσι Διὸς μεγάλου διὰ βουλάς, ἐσθλοί, ἐπιχθόνιοι, φύλακες θνητῶν ἀνθρώπων.

They occur also in Crat. 398 A, where it is inferred that Hesiod meant by δαίμονες the wise and good. Ib. c δς αν άγαθὸς η δαιμόνιον εἶναι, καὶ ζῶντα καὶ τελευτήσαντα καὶ ὀρθῶς δαίμονα καλεῖσθαι.

τοῦ τοιούτου] τοῦ χρυσοῦ. Cp. iv. 424 A.

πῶς χρὴ... τιθέναι] 'how to order the sepulture of heroic and divine persons': τιθέναι used absolutely for ἐς ταφὰς τιθέναι (cp. τὰς θήκας infra β).

469 A

E

τί δέ; πρὸς τοὺς πολεμίους, κ.τ.λ.] Plato would make a distinction

В

Republic V. 469 B

between Greek meeting Greek and the wars of Greeks with barbarians, not unlike that which has been observed in modern times between the wars of civilized nations with one another and with Orientals or savages.

What are to be the usages of war is a question which has not received a complete solution. This is due to the comparative infrequency of wars and the variety of their circumstances. The precedents are few and there are no courts to sanction or register them. Still some shadow or reflection of law seems to watch over a state of man which in one sense is the negation of law. As in other cases in which the law of nations fails, the law of nature tends to appear. 1. In ancient times there was a faith that 'God would defend the right'; and in our own day justice has not so entirely vanished from the world, but that some plea or appearance of right also gives might. there must be a degree of justice in the commencement, there must also be some regard to the common rights of humanity in the conduct of a war: (a) so much truth and sincerity in the dealings of the two adversaries as may enable them to fight collectively; an army would cease to be an army which had no word of honour with their opponents; (b) so much humanity as is consistent with the object of war; everyone would agree that a destruction of life or property, say of an unfortified town or of helpless persons, which had no military result, was barbarous and inhuman; (c) but the question when the destruction of life and property is justified by the military result is always a matter of opinion; (d) the first thoughts of mankind regard war as a great evil, which is to be humanized as far as possible; their second thoughts lead them to doubt the 'greatest humanity principle,' as likely to multiply and protract the evil: on the other hand, cruelty or severity, which may perhaps tend to shorten wars, tends also to deprive them of their chivalry, and to demoralize those who are engaged in them; (e) neutral nations insist that the two belligerents shall not be allowed so to injure one another, as permanently to injure the world: also that they shall settle their quarrel within as narrow limits and with as little injury to others as possible. 3. An element of feeling and courtesy happily enters into the usages of war; the friendly relation of individuals is not wholly absorbed in the collective antagonism; the condition of prisoners is ameliorated, and the communications between the two parties are couched in friendly language, and are not interpreted by legal technicalities.

4. No Christian or civilized nation would willingly overstep the limits of custom. The soldier may be trained to give the most fatal wound; the engineer may invent deadly machines: but the suggestion of any new kind of death by poisoning and suffocation is revolting to the military as well as to the common feeling. With a like inconsistency, the Greek, who slew his prisoners, nevertheless restored the bodies of the slain. 5. Speculative politicians have sometimes imagined that war, which has been in some degree regulated, might be further conventionalized into a duel between armies and fleets. But the elements of war are never so completely under our control, or the situation so equal, as to admit of such a convention. International law, whether about neutral ships or goods, rights of blockade, privateering, can only be altered by common consent; and the alterations commonly affect the relative positions of different nations in the event of war. 6. That one usage of war should be maintained towards Greeks, one towards barbarians—one towards Europeans, another towards Indians or New Zealanders, may be palliated by necessity or previous wrong, but cannot be defended in theory. 'A great nation's little wars' are commonly the least creditable part of her history.

δοκεὶ δίκαιον . . . τοῦτο ἐθίζειν ] ἄλλη sc. πόλει (ἄλλφ Ξ). For the form of sentence cp. Theaet. 154 Α ἔχεις τοῦτο ἰσχυρῶς, ἡ πολὺ μᾶλλον, κ.τ.λ. For the influence of this feeling on actual Greek usages of war cp. Xen. Hellen. i. 6, § 14 κελευόντων τῶν συμμάχων ἀποδόσθαι καὶ τοὺς Μηθυμναίους οὐκ ἔφη (ὁ Καλλικρατίδας) ἑαυτοῦ γε ἄρχοντος οὐδένα Ἑλλήνων εἰς τὸ ἐκείνου δυνατὸν ἀνδραποδισθῆναι.

καὶ τοῦτο ἐθίζειν] sc. τοὺς Ἦλληνας. Our state is a Greek state (cp. 470 E) and will therefore habitually spare their own kinsmen.

τὴν ὑπὸ τῶν βαρβάρων δουλείαν] 'Their enslavement by the barbarians.'

ολφ καὶ παντί] 'altogether,' ganz und gar. The expression is varied in different places,  $\tau \hat{\varphi}$  όλφ καὶ παντί (Rep. vii. 527 c):  $\tau \hat{\varphi}$  παντί καὶ όλφ (Laws v. 734 E).

μηδὲ... ξυμβουλεύειν;] 'Is it just that they should not even possess a Greek as a slave and that they should advise the other Hellenes not to do so either?' The sentence is divided by μήτε... τε, the latter particle introducing a variation of μήτε τοὺς ἄλλους. The infinitives depend on the general notion of δοκεῖ δίκαιον, understood from the previous question.

Republic V. 469 B

C

Republiç V. 469 C

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

σκυλεύειν . . . πλην ὅπλων, κ.τ.λ.] Xenophon tells us (Hell. ii. 4, § 19) that Thrasybulus and his friends, after their victory over the thirty tyrants, τὰ μὲν ὅπλα ἔλαβον, τοὺς δὲ χιτῶνας οὐδενὸς τῶν πολιτῶν ἐσκύλευσαν.

η οὐ πρόφασιν . . . τοῖς δειλοῖς ἔχει] For the use of ἔχω cp. Thuc. ii. 41 οὕτε τῷ πολεμίω ἐπελθόντι ἀγανάκτησιν ἔχει.

τοῦ βαλόντος] 'of him who hit them,' is the reading of Par. A. Other MSS. have βάλλοντος, 'of the thrower' in general, or 'of him who is throwing at them.' This passage is quoted by Aristotle, Rhet. iii. 4, § 3, as a specimen of an εἰκών: καὶ τὸ ἐν τῷ πολιτεία τῷ Πλάτωνος, ὅτι οἱ τοὺς τεθνεῶτας σκυλεύοντες ἐοἰκασι τοῖς κυνιδίοις, α τοὺς λίθους δάκνει τῶν βαλλόντων οὐχ ἀπτόμενα.

ἐατέον . . . τὰς τῶν ἀναιρέσεων διακωλύσεις] 'We must let alone spoliation of the dead, or prevention of the removal of corpses.' See Thuc. iv. 97-101 (the affair of Delium).

ἐατέον μέντοι] μέντοι here implies strong assent to a proposition which alters what had previously been thought.

470 A

В

ἐὰν μή τι δή, κ.τ.λ.] Plato thus avoids clashing directly with religious tradition. He will not lay down the law too rigidly, but allows an appeal against himself to the oracle of Delphi (iv. 427 B, c). See Paus. x. 10, § 3.

γη̂s τε τμήσεωs] For the omission of περί cp. supra 459 Β τί δὲ ἴππων οἴει . . .; vii. 515 Β τί δὲ τῶν παραφερομένων; οὐ ταὐτὸν τοῦτο; and Gorg. 500 D. The correction τιμήσεωs, formerly adopted by the Zurich editors ('assessment of the territory'?), is not in keeping with the corresponding clause, and is unsupported by manuscript authority. What is expressed in γῆν τέμνειν, which is forbidden, is clearly more than the removal of the year's produce, which he allows (infra D), and would include the cutting down of fruit-trees, the destruction of farm buildings and the like.

τί σοι δράσουσιν] For σοι cp. supra 468 Λ πῶς έκτέον σοι τοὺς στρατιώτας;

δύο ταῦτα, κ.τ.λ.] The article τά, which is added after ταῦτα in some MSS. (MΞ), throws a stronger emphasis on the verb, but makes no real difference in the sense: 'It appears to me that wars and sedition, as they are two in name, are two in reality.'

ὄντα ἐπὶ δυοῖν . . . τῆ τοῦ ἀλλοτρίου πόλεμος] 'being applied to

differences arising in two things. And the two things I speak of are what is domestic or kindred and what is alien or foreign. Accordingly sedition is the name for the enmity of what is domestic: war, for the enmity of what is alien.' The quarrel or enmity of what is domestic and kindred = the guarrel of one state with itself: the quarrel or enmity of what is alien and foreign = the quarrel of two states with one another. For καλείν ὄνομα ἐπί τινι cp. Parmen. 147 D, Soph. 218 c: and for the use of the passive, Eurip. Hec. 1271 τύμβω δ' ὄνομα σώ κεκλήσεται. The particle οὖν (ἐπὶ μὲν οὖν), which is omitted in a few MSS., is probably genuine. It is hardly worth while, therefore, to discuss whether the asyndeton which is occasioned by the omission of over is justified by examples. The genitives are possessive or descriptive: 'where the relation is that of kindred,' 'where it is that of aliens.' For the definition of στάσις cp. Soph. 228 Α την τοῦ φύσει ξυγγενοῦς έκ τινος διαφθορᾶς διαφοράν.

καὶ οὐδέν γε... ἄπο τρόπου λέγεις] 'That is a very just mode of speaking.' ἄπο in the sense of 'away from' is accented by the grammarians as a paroxytone, a distinction however which is often neglected in the MSS.

ὄρα δὴ καὶ εἰ τόδε . . . λέγω] καί belongs in sense to τόδε.

"Ελληνας μὲν ἄρα . . . τὴν ἔχθραν ταύτην κλητέον] A slight variation in the order of the text occurs here: instead of πολεμεῖν μαχομένους τε . . . εἶναι, some MSS. (including Λ mg.) read μαχομένους πολεμεῖν τε in order to give τε its proper position after the main verb. But τε may follow πολεμεῖν μαχομένους as a single word.

ξυγχωρῶ οὖτω νομίζειν] 'I agree to hold this language.'

έν τῆ νῦν ὁμολογουμένη στάσει] 'In what people now agree in calling sedition,' i.e. in sedition as ordinarily understood, as opposed to the new meaning which Socrates has given to it, viz. the war of Greeks with Greeks. For the use of νῦν in such a connexion cp. ii. 372 Ε ὄψα ἄπερ καὶ οἱ νῦν ἔχουσι: vii. 529 Λ ὡς μὲν νῦν αὐτὴν μεταχειρίζονται οἱ εἰς φιλοσοφίαν ἀνάγοντες.

ώς ἀλιτηριώδης τε, κ.τ.λ.] ώς is substituted for ὅτι at the beginning of the sentence. It is to be taken with ἀλιτηριώδης in the sense of 'how.' 'How wicked does the strife appear! and neither of the two parties seem lovers of their country.' Cp. vi. 496 c.

την τροφόν τε καὶ μητέρα κείρειν | See note on iii. 414 E.

Republic V.

С

`

Republic V.

μέτριον είναι] The force of δοκεί is continued from above.

470 E ώς διαλλαγησομένων] For the construction of διανοεῖσθαι ώς cp. i. 327 C ώς . . . μὴ ἀκουσομένων . . . διανοεῖσθε : vii. 523 C ώς ἐγγύθεν τοίνυν ὁρωμένους λέγοντός μου διανοοῦ.

αὖτη ἡ διάνοια ἐκείνης] αὖτη refers to the words immediately preceding, τοὺς καρποὺς ἀφαιρεῖσθαι . . . πολεμησόντων: ἐκείνης to ἐὰν ἐκάτεροι, κ.τ.λ.

ην σù πόλιν οἰκίζεις] σύ is emphatic. The new city shares the nationality of Glaucon, who is playfully called the founder of it.

άλλ' οὐ . . . ὧνπερ οἱ ἄλλοι ἱερῶν ;] For οὐδέ in interrogations cp. supra 455 Ε οὐδὲ πολεμική ;

471 σωφρονιοῦσιν] For the significance of this term cp. Xen. Hell.

Α iii. 2, § 23 ἔδοξε τοῖς ἐφόροις καὶ τῆ ἐκκλησία σωφρονίσαι αὐτούς (sc. τοὺς ἸΗλείους), and the context there.

πρὸς δὲ τοὺς βαρβάρους, ὡς . . . πρὸς ἀλλήλους] 'And they should deal with barbarians as the Greeks now deal with one another.' The <u>irony is transparent</u>.

In the previous clause the ingenuity of the transcriber of q has unnecessarily altered  $\partial u = \pi i \cos \pi i$ . That Greeks only are intended is clear from the context.

θῶμεν, ἔφη . . . καὶ τὰ πρόσθεν] The infinitive ἔχειν is governed by θῶμεν, which is used in two constructions: 'We will lay down this law, and we will assume that this and the former enactments are excellent.' For the infinitive after  $\tau i\theta \eta \mu \iota$  cp. i. 33 i  $\Lambda$  ἔγωγε  $\tau i\theta \eta \mu \iota$   $\tau i \nu$   $\tau i \nu$ 

471 C- Glaucon grows impatient of the digression and Socrates can no longer elude the advance of the 'third and greatest wave.' The new institution involves innumerable benefits, but is it possible? Can this ideal ever become real?

Socrates first pleads that such a demand goes beyond the aim proposed (ii. 368), which is to find the nature of Justice in the abstract. If we have made that discovery, our success will not be

C

to the

discredited, though we should be unable to show an actual embodiment of Justice answering to the ideal conception of it. It is enough to have obtained a pattern by which to judge of approximate resemblances, without seeking for absolute agreement. And if asked in what way the nearest approximation can be made, we must premise that in the nature of things all practical realization must fall short of the ideal as conceived in thought and expressed in language.

Republic 471 C-473 C

What then is the simplest and least difficult change within the range of human possibility, by which the present hindrances to the attainment of perfection may be removed? One change there is that would effect this object, and it is not impossible, though neither slight nor easy.

471

ὅτι γε, εἰ γένοιτο . . .  $\hat{\eta}$  γένοιτο, κ.τ.λ. The point to be chiefly dwelt on is put forward, leaving the construction in suspense, and the words καὶ α σὸ παραλείπεις εγώ λέγω supply the apodosis: 'For as to the advantages of this form of government, if possible, to the state in which it might be possible, I add particulars not mentioned by you.' For a similar turn of expression cp. iv. 420 A ναί, ην δ' έγώ, καὶ ταῦτά γε ἐπισίτιοι . . . κατηγορημένα, and for παρωσάμενος cp. Soph. Trach. 358 δν νθν παρώσας οδτος έμπαλιν λέγει.

ότι καὶ τοῖς πολεμίοις, κ.τ.λ.] As in vii. 528 E, 537 D, the lively imagination of Glaucon seizes on the incidental results and circumstances of the institution which is in question. γιγνώσκοντες is to be taken closely with what follows, 'acknowledging each other as brothers,' &c. Compare supra 461 c.

στραγγευομένω] instead of the unmeaning στρατευομένω, is the 472

ingenious emendation of Orelli; and is also found as a correction in the Viennese MS. F: 'You have no mercy on my hesitation.' The metaphor in the word στραγγεύομαι is taken from the falling of drops of water extracted by pressure: cp. στρεύγομαι, and for the use of the word Aristoph. Nubes 131 τί ταῦτ' ἔχων στραγγεύομαι; Acharn. 126 κἄπειτ' έγω δητ' ένθαδὶ στραγγεύομαι; This reading is confirmed by the resumption of the same idea in "Κνουν τε καὶ έδεδοίκη infra. στρατευομένω may have been suggested to a scribe by the association of καταδρομήν ἐποιήσω: or possibly by the notion which Stallbaum seems to entertain that warfare is the subject in hand.

Republic V. 472

В

τῆς τρικυμίας] The same metaphor occurs in the Euthydemus 293 Λ σῶσαι ἡμᾶς ... ἐκ τῆς τρικυμίας τοῦ λόγου. It is continued infra 473 c ἐπ' αὐτὸ δὴ ... εἶμι ὁ τῷ μεγίστῳ προσεικάζομεν κύματι.

δ ἐπειδὰν . . . ἐπιχειρεῖν διασκοπεῖν] ἀκούσης still preserves the metaphor of the wave, referring to its roar. The expression ὅτι εἰκότως ἄρα expands the idea of συγγνώμην, 'you will make allowance for me and feel that my hesitation was natural.'

λόγον λέγειν τε] This is the reading of MΞ. The reading of Par. A, Ven. II, λέγειν λόγον τε, might be preferred as the *durior lectio*, but on no other ground. It is probably an accidental miswriting. The reading of the text is also supported by q corr., the first hand having written  $\lambda έγειν$  λέγειν according to Schneider, who examined the MS. after Bekker.

ήττον SC. τοσούτω ήττον.

οὖκοῦν, κ.τ.λ.] As a preparation for the third and last wave, which is still impending, Socrates returns to the main object of the work, which, as he again reminds us, is the search after justice and injustice, first in the state, and secondly in the individual, The ideal of justice is not the less ideal because incapable of realization, any more than the perfection of human beauty in a picture is less perfect because there is no ideal man like the man in the picture. Therefore Socrates regards the task required of him, to prove the possibility of his state in fact, as a work of supererogation, the failure of which in no way interferes with the truth of his speculations, and in which only a contingent and imperfect success is to be expected. The spirit of this passage may be compared with vi. 501 ff., where the relation of the ideal to the actual is again in question. In both these passages Plato talks of painters as copyists of the Idea. In Book x he speaks of them along with poets as mere copyists of the copy. The former view comes nearer to the modern notion of art as the idealization of nature than the ordinary Greek conception of μιμητική.

άλλὰ τί τοῦτό  $\gamma$ ;] sc. εἶπες, 'why that?'

οὐδέν· ἀλλ' ἐάν] 'Only that if.' Cp. supra 461 p οὐδαμῶς and note.

άρα καὶ ἄνδρα τὸν δίκαιον...διαφέρειν] Plato here implies that it is the nature of the actual to fall short of the ideal, and of the concrete to fall short of the abstract.

ουτως] 'The latter,' answering the last question.

Republ**i**c V. 472

εἰ γένοιτο] These words may be explained to mean 'whether he could be produced'; but they are then inconsistent with οὐ τούτου ἔνεκα infra D. Madvig would obviate the difficulty by omitting καί. But the tautology of εἰ γένοιτο ... γενόμενος is then very weak, and it is better to cancel εἰ γένοιτο as a gloss on γενόμενος. Another expedient is to read ½ (ἄν?) γένοιτο with Bekker. τελέως is omitted in Ven. Π. [There is no inconsistency between εἰ γένοιτο . . . γενόμενος and ἀλλ' οὐ τούτου ἔνεκα infra D: to inquire whether perfect justice or a perfectly just man are possible is a different thing from trying to demonstrate their possibility. B. J.]

την ἐκείνοις μοῖραν ὁμοιστάτην ἔξειν] την ἐκείνης, the reading of Par. A and most MSS., 'The lot that is most like justice,' is not ungrammatical, but extremely improbable, as answering to ἐκείνοις . . . ὁμοιότατος preceding. It is much more likely that ἐκείνης is due to itacism or to an echo of the phrase μηδὲν δεῖν αὐτῆς ἐκείνης διαφέρειν in what precedes.

ιν' ἀποδείξωμεν] is the explanation of τούτου ενεκα: cp. infra τούτου ενεκα, ελιν μὴ εχωμεν.

D

Е

τὰ αὐτὰ διομολόγησαι] Socrates in 472 D had extracted from Glaucon the admission that an artist who cannot demonstrate the possibility of the existence of a man so beautiful as he has painted is not to be considered inferior for that reason. Here, before he attempts to show the possibility of his communistic scheme, he asks Glaucon to make the same admission, in a different, it is true, and more universal form: 'That action can never come up to description.'

473 A

ἢ φύσιν ἔχει, κ.τ.λ.] 'All experience is against this, but that is no reason for doubting the truth of it,' says Euler (quoted by Coleridge) of the properties of the arch. He means that the mathematical ideal of the arch is imperfectly realized in matter. The relation of mathematics to physics is a good because a definite type of the relation of the abstract to the concrete. The ideal of the state is much farther removed from actual fact; or in Plato's words, 'action falls short of conception or expression, though some may deem otherwise.' What is true or perfect is one thing: what is possible, another. And great evils may arise from an attempt to enforce political ideals on a state of the world unsuited to them,—

Republic the 'respublica Platonis' or 'the primitive church,' 'in faece V. Romuli' or 'the dregs of the Gothic empire.'

473 A For the expression φύσιν ἔχει cp. vi. 489 Β οὐ γὰρ ἔχει φύσιν κυβερνήτην ναυτῶν δεῖσθαι ἄρχεσθαι.

καν εὶ μή τω δοκεῖ;] i.e. though it may seem an inversion of the recognized opposition between λόγος and ἔργον. ἀλλὰ σύ is an appeal from common opinion to the judgement of Glaucon.

καὶ τῷ ἔργῳ δεῖν δεῖν is pleonastic, expanding ἀνάγκαζε.

φάναι] is the common use of the infinitive for the second person of the imperative (like φάσκειν in poetry). Cp. vi. 508 β τοῦτον τοίνυν . . . φάναι με λέγειν, and 509 β καὶ τοῖς γιγνωσκομένοις τοίνυν μὴ μόνον τὸ γιγνώσκεσθαι φάναι, κ.τ.λ.

Β α σὺ ἐπιτάττεις] sc. ἐξευρεῖν ως δυνατὰ ὅντα γίγνεσθαι, 'which you bid us find to be capable of coming into existence.'

ώς ἔοικε, πειρώμεθα] πειρώμεθα is probably subjunctive : cp. Theaet. 173 c λέγωμεν δή, ως ἔοικε.

473 C- The change required is nothing short of this. Either kings and 474 D rulers must be philosophers or philosophers kings. Until that is effected, there can be no happiness for individual or state.

This is a hard saying, and to escape from the consequences of having uttered it we must distinguish whom we mean by 'philosophers.'

ἐπ' αὐτὸ δὴ . . . κατακλύσειν] For ἐπ' αὐτὸ . . . εἶμι cp. infra
476 Β ἐπ' αὐτὸ τὸ καλὸν . . . ἰέναι. The pronoun is used as in Soph.
Ο. Τ. 1169 πρὸς αὐτῷ γ' εἰμὶ τῷ δεινῷ λέγειν. The metaphor of the laughing wave is perhaps the most audacious in Plato; the wave which has been following us throughout the book, since our first plunge, supra 453 p, is at last turned into a roaring sea of ridicule.

εἰρήσεται δ' οὖν] 'But the word shall be spoken, come what may.'

ἐὰν μὴ . . . (Ε) διεληλύθαμεν] (Cp. Laws iv. 710, 711, where a wise and virtuous despotism is affirmed to be the best basis of legislation: εἰ τύραννος γένοιτο . . . νέος, σώφρων, εὐμαθής, μνήμων, ἀνδρεῖος, μεγαλοπρεπής).

In this celebrated sentence Plato expresses the real unity of

practical and speculative life. Everywhere they seem to diverge in politics, in religion, in the characters of men; but the principle which unites them lies deeper than the divergences. One is subject to the idols of the tribe, the other, of the den; the one is of this world, the other not of this world: the one is strong within a limited range, the other has a feeble intelligence of all things. The philosopher, in the description of the Theaetetus (173 ff.), may hardly recognize the existence of his fellow-creatures: the lawyer or politician in the companion picture (ib. 175) often w. 18 knows only a narrow and debased section of human nature, and is as much out of his element in extraordinary circumstances as the philosopher is in common life. And there are false ways in which the two elements may be reconciled—in the doctrinaire (Euthyd. 305), in the pseudo-philanthropist, in the political idealist, or in any premature and superficial attempts to rest society on a liberal and philosophical basis. There is a real reconcilement of them when the king is also a seer, or the statesman in the highest sense is a philosopher, equal to the immediate present, rising also into the more distant future. The words of the text may also be regarded as a sort of Greek prophecy of a millennium: 'I heard a voice crying. The kingdoms of the world are become the kingdoms of wisdom and truth.'

The passage is the keystone of the Republic. In other writings of Plato the speculative is divorced from the practical: in the Republic there is an attempt to unite them. The philosopher is no longer an isolated being who lives in contemplation; he descends from his 'mountain heights' to dwell among his own people, and in 'his father's house,' 'if there is such a home upon the earth' (ix. 592 B).

οί βασιλής . . . λεγόμενοι It is implied that the actual rulers of the world are not true kings.

καὶ τοῦτο εἰς ταὐτὸν συμπέση] 'And unless these two, political power and philosophy, meet together in the same.' Two things are here spoken of which coalesce in one. In the form of the sentence their coalition is anticipated. Cp. iv. 435 A and note.

είς τὸ δυνατόν 'so far as is possible,' in the nature of things. Such touches of moderation (in accordance with supra 472 ff.) occur in the most ideal passages of Plato. Cp. especially Symp. 212 Α καὶ εἴπερ τῷ ἄλλω ἀνθρώπων, ἀθανάτω κἀκείνω: Phaedr. 253 Α καθ' όσον δυνατών θεοῦ ἀνθρώπω μετασχείν.

Republic V. 473 C

Đ

Ė

Republic V. 473 E It may be asked whether there has ever been a period in which this dream of the Republic has received a fulfilment: in the course of ages, as Plato pathetically asks, may there not have been a king who was also a philosopher? Some would add a further condition, not only that the king should be a philosopher, but that he should rule over a people fitted to receive his institutions. The names of the philosophical Roman emperors naturally occur to us; as has been truly said, one of the greatest blessings to the world would have been the adoption of Christianity by Marcus Antoninus instead of by Constantine. Still nearer approaches to a philosopher-king may be found in the legislators and princes of the East: Zoroaster, Sakya Muni, in the Mahometan emperor Akbar Khan, in our own Alfred the Great or the Mexican Montezuma.

Nor have there been wanting in our own day one or two who have shown a remarkable union of philosophical genius with military and political insight. Compare the ideal of the Puritans and the French Protestants.

χαλεπὸν γὰρ ἰδεῖν] 'It is given to few to perceive.' Cp. Phaedo 62 B δ . . . λόγος . . , μέγας τέ τίς μοι φαίνεται καὶ οὐ ῥάδιος διϊδεῖν. χαλεπόν is used of an excellence rarely attained: cp. Theaet. 144 Λ ώς ἄλλφ χαλεπόν.

καὶ ὅς, Ἦ Σώκρατες, κ.τ.λ.] We are reminded of the manner in which the upholders of paradoxical or revolutionary ideas are threatened with popular hostility in Aristophanes, e.g. Birds 310 ff., Wasps 400 ff., and Acharnians 280 ff.

The famous words are introduced with great circumstance and preparation. The expectation has been raised by the image of the wave; at last the time has arrived for the revelation of the overwhelming truth. The real solemnity of the revelation is instantly broken by the ludicrous outburst which follows. Socrates admits all the consequences which are urged, and gravely charges them upon his companion. The companion promises to help with good wishes and encouragement, which are all that he has to offer; and Socrates, having such a champion to support him, takes heart, and, still relieving the discourse by ludicrous imagery, proceeds to the description of philosophy.

διαδήλων] 'distinguished,' i.e. from those whom we do not mean.

474 B The philosopher loves wisdom in its entirety. His desires are fixed on universal truth: not as seen in the concrete, but as known in the abstract. For between knowledge and ignorance there is an intermediate faculty of sense or opinion (86\xi\xi\xi\xi\xi), and between being and nonentity there is an intermediate region of 'contingent-matter.' Now, as being corresponds to knowledge, and not-being to ignorance, so the contingent, which now is and now is not, must be the object of the blinking, twilight faculty of opinion. That is the sphere of sense and ordinary thinking, and has no share in philosophy.

Republic V. 474 C-480

οὐ γὰρ πάνυ γε 'Not perfectly.' Cp. iv. 429 c and note.

474 D

δάκνουσι] Compare the image in the Symposium of those who are 'bitten' with philosophy 218  $\Lambda$  τὴν καρδίαν . . . πληγείς τε καὶ δηχθεὶς ὑπὸ τῶν ἐν ψιλοσοφία λόγων: Eurip. Hippol. 1301–1303 τῆς γὰρ ἐχθίστης θεῶν | ἡμῖν ὅσαισι παρθένειος ἡδονὴ | δηχθεῖσα κέντροις παιδὸς ἡράσθη σέθεν. So with comic exaggeration, δαρδάπτει πόθος in Aristoph. Ran. 66. κνίζω is the common word.

ἢ οὐχ οὕτω ποιεῖτε;] 'Is not this your way?' Cp. ii. 365 Λ τί οἰόμεθα . . . ψυχὰς ποιεῖν; and note.

δ μέν, ὅτι σιμός, κ.τ.λ.] A parallel to the thought is furnished by Hor. Sat. book I. iii. 38 'Illuc praevertamur amatorem quod amicae | Turpia decipiunt caecum vitia . . . Strabonem | Appellat Paetum pater: 'Lucret. iv. 1160–1164 'Nigra melichrus est, immunda et fetida acosmos, | Caesia Palladium, nervosa et lignea dorcas | Parvula pumilio, chariton mia, tota merum sal, | Magna atque immanis cataplexis plenaque honoris.' In Charmides 154 Β ἀτεχνῶς γὰρ λευκὴ στάθμη εἰμὶ πρὸς τοὺς καλούς, Socrates ironically represents himself as thus universally susceptible. Cp. Herrick, 'What I fancy, I approve, | No dislike there is in love.' For the colour of μελίχλωρος cp. Theocritus x. 26

βομβύκα (silkworm) χαρίεσσα, Σύραν καλέοντί τυ πάντες, ἰσχνάν, ἀλιόκαυστον· ἐγὼ δὲ μόνος μελίχλωρον:

and for the expression πάσας φωνάς ἀφίετε, Laws x. 890 p ἀλλὰ πᾶσαν, τὸ λεγόμενον, φωνὴν ἱέντα . . . ἐπίκουρον γίγνεσθαι.

The meaning is that the lover, by the excuses he makes for the defects of his favourites, proves that his love is not partial, but universal: in this he is the figure of the lover of knowledge. The idea of a 'whole' in this passage is less abstract than elsewhere in Plato, e.g. Theaet. 173 F, where philosophy is again the love of Republic the whole, πᾶσαν πάντη Φύσιν ἐρευνωμένη τῶν ὅντων ἐκάστου ὅλου. This is intentional, however, and prepares for the correction of Glaucon's view, infra 475 p. ε.

475 Α εἰ βούλει ... τοῦ λόγου χάριν] 'If you wish to say, taking me as your example, that lovers act thus, I agree, for the argument's sake.' For this use of ἐπί cp. x. 597 β ἐπ' αὐτῶν τούτων ζητήσωμεν τὸν μιμητὴν τοῦτον, and Charm. 155 D ο̂s εἶπεν ἐπὶ καλοῦ λέγων παιδός, κ.τ.λ.

καὶ μὴν φιλοτίμους γε] 'And further you see that lovers of honour,' &c., cp. τοὺς φιλοίνους supra. The article appears to be omitted for the sake of variety; the difference of meaning is hardly distinguishable in English.

τριττυαρχοῦσι] 'If they cannot be στρατηγοί, they are glad to be in command of the third of a tribe.' See Photius, p. 288: Pollux viii. 109.

C τὸν . . . εὐχερῶς ἐθέλοντα, κ.τ.λ.] The real lover of knowledge has a taste for every kind of knowledge.

ἀλλ' ὁμοίους μὲν φιλοσόφοις] Aristotle says more seriously that the love of knowledge is apparent even in the delights of sensible perception: Metaph. i. I Πάντες ἄνθρωποι τοῦ εἰδέναι ὀρέγονται φύσει. Σημεῖον δ' ἡ τῶν αἰσθήσεων ἀγάπησις καὶ γὰρ χωρὶς τῆς χρείας ἀγαπῶνται δὶ αὐτάς, καὶ μάλιστα τῶν ἄλλων ἡ διὰ τῶν ὀμμάτων . . . Αἴτιον δ' ὅτι μάλιστα ποιεῖ γνωρίζειν τι ἡμᾶς αὕτη τῶν αἰσθήσεων καὶ πολλὰς δηλοῦ διαφοράς. For the use of μέν cp. Theaet. 201 Β οὐδαμῶς ἔγωγε οἶμαι, ἀλλὰ πεῖσαι μέν.

οὐδαμῶς . . . τὸ τοιόνδε] (1) Socrates appeals to Glaucon's confession of discipleship, supra 474 A, B. Cp. vi. 504 E, 505 A: Phaedo 100 B, c. This agrees better with the context and with the tone of the passage than to suppose (2) that Socrates is continuing the raillery with which he attacked Glaucon, supra 474 D, E, 'A man of pleasure like you will readily perceive that beauty and ugliness are not the same.'

τῆ δὲ τῶν πράξεων . . . καὶ ἀλλήλων κοινωνίᾳ] Plato here supposes, first of all, an admixture of the ideas with human actions, and with sensible objects; secondly, with one another. For the intercommunion of ideas, cp. Soph. 250 ff. It may also be illustrated from infra 478 E, where τὸ δοξαστόν is shown to be τὸ ἀμφοτέρων μετέχον, τοῦ εἶναί τε καὶ μὴ εἶναι: there is therefore no

476 A

 $\mathbb{R}$ 

reason for suspecting or emending the word ἀλλήλων. Cp. also Polit. 278 D μετατιθέμενα δ' εἰς τὰς τῶν πραγμάτων μακρὰς καὶ μὴ ῥαδίους συλλαβάς, κ.τ.λ.

Republic V. 476 A

ἐπ² αὐτὸ τὸ καλὸν δυνατοὶ ἰέναι] Cp. Sympos. 210 Ε πρὸς τέλος ήδη ἰων . . . . ἐξαίφνης κατόψεταί τι θαυμαστὸν τὴν φύσιν καλόν, κ.τ.λ.

В

ήγούμενος τέ τι αὐτὸ καλόν] For ἡγεῖσθαι (= νομίζειν) with a simple accusative and without εἶναι cp. Laws x. 899  $\,$ D ὅτι μὲν ἡγεῖ θεούς, κ.τ.λ.: Soph. 222  $\,$ B εἴτε . . . ἀνθρώπων . . . μηδεμίαν ἡγεῖ θήραν.

D

καὶ τὰ ἐκείνου μετέχοντα] The language of μέθεξις is here used, although the ideal of justice has just before (472 c) been spoken of as  $\pi a \rho a \delta \epsilon \iota \gamma \mu a$ . The two notions, which are figures, are not here, as in Arist. Met. i. 6, §§ 3 and 4, opposed.

E

ἐπικρυπτόμενοι ὅτι οὐχ ὑγιαίνει] 'Drawing a veil over the fact that he is not in his right mind.' Cp. Phaedr. 268 ε οὐκ ἀγρίως εἴποι ἄν, ³Ω μοχθηρέ, μελαγχολậς, ἀλλ' ἄτε μουσικὸς ὢν πραότερον, ὅτι, ³Ω ἄριστε, κ.τ.λ. for a similar humanity of feeling.

-

άλλ' ἡμῖν εἰπὲ τόδε] The sentence returns to the direct form, addressing the imaginary respondent.

477

ίκανως οὖν . . . πάντη ἄγνωστον Being, according to Plato in this passage, is the absolute object of knowledge; not-being, of ignorance; and the intermediate which partakes of both, matter of opinion. This last, as here expressed, is probably the earliest conception of contingent matter. That Plato should not have perceived that degrees of certainty are in the subject only, and have no corresponding object, considering the great difficulty which the ancient world experienced in disengaging subject and object, is not perhaps surprising: the wonder is rather that such a figment as a 'contingent or probable matter' should have survived in the traditions of modern logic. The other two conceptions of being and not-being also present a different aspect to the ancient philosopher and to the student of modern metaphysics. Being, according to Plato, is true existence, the essence of things human and divine, the correlative of absolute knowledge, almost the Supreme Being. To the modern metaphysician, on the other hand, being, as Hegel says, is a word only, the poorest and most void of all abstractions, which only by negation or combination with not-being attains to positive or definite meaning. The necessity of passing from being to the determinations of being or to

101

Kefublic V. 477 A

D

actual phenomena was never seen distinctly in the Platonic philosophy (although approximately realized in the Sophist, Politicus, and Philebus). Not-being has in Plato, at least in the present passage, a positive or substantial existence, and is not perceived to be abstract or negative only.

ίκανῶς . . . καν εἰ πλεοναχῆ σκοποῖμεν] The supposition refers to the negative notion implied in ἱκανῶς. 'We could not be more assured of this, even if we were to look at it in several more points of view.' For the implied admission that an important truth may be proved in more ways than one cp. x. 611 B: Theaet. 206 c αλλὰ δὴ τούτου μὲν ἔτι καν ἄλλαι φανεῖεν ἀποδείξεις.

τοῦ εἰλικρινῶς ὄντος] 'the pure light of being'; cp. Phaedo 67 Β γνωσόμεθα δι' ἡμῶν αὐτῶν πῶν τὸ εἰλικρινές.

οὐκοῦν \*ἐπεὶ ἐπὶ μέν, κ.τ.λ.] Most of the MSS. omit δέ after μεταξύ. Two of them  $(q \beta)$  complete the sentence by adding εἰ after οὐκοῦν. Hermann and Baiter further amend εἰ by ἐπεί, for the omission of which the alliteration may afford a reason. This is adopted in the text. The true reading is uncertain. A further step is being taken in the argument: 'Since knowledge corresponded  $(\eta \nu)$  to being, and ignorance to not-being, for this intermediate must we not look for a corresponding intermediate between ignorance and knowledge, if such there be?'

B κατὰ τὴν δύναμιν ἐκατέρα τὴν αὐτῆς] For αὐτῆν in the reading of Par. A, &c. (κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν δύναμιν), Hermann and the Zurich editors conjecture ἄλλην (cp. infra 478 B ἄλλη δὲ ἐκατέρα, ὡς ψαμέν). But a safer correction is (with Schneider and the Viennese MS. F) to omit αὐτήν, which may be due to a repetition of the preceding letters | ὰ τὴν. The addition of ἡ κατὰ τὴν αὐτὴν δύναμιν in Vind. E, &c. indicates an early variation of reading. The words from κατά to αὐτῆς are omitted in Ven. Ξ. II M really agree with Par. A.

οὐκοῦν ἐπιστήμη μὲν ... διελέσθαι] The words γνῶναι ὡς ἔστι τὸ ον are a resumption or epexegesis of the words which precede. Socrates returns to the same question below (478 A), where he repeats it in nearly the same words—ἐπιστήμη μέν γέ που ἐπὶ τῷ ὅντι, κ.τ.λ. But first he will explain and illustrate by examples the meaning of the term 'faculties' or 'powers,' which he is employing. Compare the preliminary psychological discussion in iv. 435 ff.

δυνάμεως δ' είς ἐκεῖνο . . . ἀπεργαζομένην ἄλλην] He means that faculties have no sensible qualities, but are known by their effects

only. This is a first principle of psychology. Cp. Ion 537 D  $\delta \tau a \nu \dot{\eta} \mu \dot{\epsilon} \nu \dot{\epsilon} \tau \dot{\epsilon} \rho \omega \nu \pi \rho a \gamma \mu \dot{a} \tau \omega \nu \dot{\eta} \dot{\epsilon} \tau \dot{\epsilon} \tau \dot{\eta} \mu \eta$ ,  $\dot{\eta} \delta^{\circ} \dot{\epsilon} \tau \dot{\epsilon} \rho \omega \nu$ , οὕτω καλῶ τὴν μὲν ἄλλην, τὴν δὲ ἄλλην τέχνην. And for the words οὕτε τινὰ χρόαν ὁρῶ οὕτε σχῆμα, κ.τ.λ. cp. Soph. 247 c,  $\sigma$  and Theaet. 155  $\sigma$  (of the crude materialists) πράξεις δὲ καὶ γενέσεις καὶ πῶν τὸ ἀόρατον οὐκ ἀποδεχόμενοι ὡς ἐν οὐσίας μέρει, whereas the disciples of Protagoras are said to uphold the existence of things (or processes) not visible.

Republic V. 477

 $\epsilon$ πὶ τῷ αὐτῷ τεταγμένην] Cp. i. 345 D  $\epsilon$ Φ' ῷ τέτακται : ib. 346 A.

ἐπιστήμην πότερον . . . φὴς εἶναι αὐτήν] The pronoun is unemphatic, being simply a resumption of the noun, which is placed at the beginning for the sake of emphasis.

εἰς τοῦτο . . . ἐρρωμενεστάτην] For the two-fold answer to one question in the same sentence cp. iv. 439  $\Lambda$  ἔγωγε,  $\mathring{\eta}$  δ' őς πώματός γε.

είς δύναμιν] Cp. Soph. 235 A είς γόητα . . . θετέον.

E

οἴσομεν] θήσομεν M corr.  $\Theta$  Vind. D; and so Cobet. The use in the text is certainly singular. But  $\phi \acute{\epsilon} \rho \omega$  is elsewhere used (with  $\acute{\epsilon} \pi \acute{\iota}$ ) of referring a predicate to a subject (Soph. 237 c, Tim. 37 E), or a thought to its object (infra 478 B).

πῶς γὰρ ἄν... τιθείη] Δόξα is the faculty of opinion and is also nearly allied to sensible perception or sense. But what has opinion to do with perception? To us opinion is fallible and probable; sense is generally infallible. Opinion to us is for the most part concerned with the same matter as knowledge; sense with external objects only. The truth seems to be that here and in some other passages of Plato δόξα is a union or rather confusion of two operations of the mind which are really distinct. The origin of this confusion is to be sought for in the history of early Greek philosophy which opposed sense and opinion alike to the certainty of pure intellect. Both are opposed to the universal and neither of them affords a standard of measurement. Αἴσθησις and δόξα are however distinguished in Theaet. 187 A, where it is suggested that knowledge may be the same with true opinion.

έπιστήμη μέν γέ που ἐπὶ τῷ ὅντι] sc. πέφυκεν. Cp. supra 477 Β. δόξα δέ, φαμέν, δοξάζειν] sc. πέφυκεν.

478 A

η ταὐτὸν ὅπερ ἐπιστήμη γιγνώσκει] η ταὐτόν sc. δόξα δοξάζει; 'Is it the nature of opinion to opine the same which knowledge knows?'

Republic V. 478 B

C

ἄρ' οὖν τὸ μὴ ὅν δοξάζει] sc. ὁ δοξάζων: cp. i. 345 Λ ἔστω μὲν ἄδικος, κ.τ.λ. So infra c οὖκ ἄρα . . . δοξάζει. For the form of argument cp. Theaet. 188 p δυνατὸν δὲ ὅτφοῦν ὁ λέγετε, καί τις ἀνθρώπων τὸ μὴ ὃν δοξάσει; . . . ὁ ἄρα ἕν γέ τι ὁρῶν ὄν τι ὁρᾶ: Soph. 237 p τὸ τὶ τοῦτο ῥῆμα ἐπ' ὄντι λέγομεν ἐκάστοτε . . . ἀνάγκη τόν τι λέγοντα ἕν γέ τι λέγειν.

μὴ ὄν γε] (1) sc. τὸ μὴ ὅν, which is resumed as the subject of προσαγορεύοιτο from supra τὸ μὴ ὅν δοξάζει. Το this μὴ ὄν γε is attached as a ground or reason. 'Not-being, since non-existent, would not rightly be called one-thing, but, strictly, no-thing' (μὴ ὄν γε i. q. εἰ μὴ εἴη γε, Stallbaum).

[(2) It is better to take  $\mu\dot{\eta}$   $\delta\nu$  more simply for 'what is not' or ('not-being') the sense in which  $\mu\dot{\eta}$   $\delta\nu$   $\tau\iota$  occurs just below.

B. J.]

άρ' οὖν ἐκτὸς τούτων...ἀσαφείᾳ] 'Does opinion then lie in a region beyond these, surpassing either knowledge in clearness, or ignorance in dimness?'—But if not 'without,' the argument proceeds to show that opinion is within these limits.

σκοτωδέστερον . . . φανότερον] Cp. Soph. 254  $\Lambda$  ό μὲν ἀποδιδράσκων εἰς τὴν τοῦ μὴ ἄντος σκοτεινότητα . . . κατανοῆσαι χαλεπός . . . ό δὲ . . . τῆ τοῦ ἄντος . . . προσκείμενος ἰδέᾳ, διὰ τὸ λαμπρὸν αὖ τῆς χώρας οὐδαμῶς εὐπετὴς ὀφθῆναι.

1) οὐκοῦν ἔφαμεν ἐν τοῖς πρόσθεν] supra 477 A, B.

οἷον ἄμα ὄν τε καὶ μὴ ὄν] There is probably a confusion of the two constructions οἷον εἶναι and φανείη ὄν.

Ε ἀποκρινέσθω ὁ χρηστός . . . (479 A) φιλοθεάμων εκείνος ὁ φιλοθεάμων is a resumption of ὁ χρηστός, referring to supra 475 D—476 B, c. For the vague reference cp. supra 460 A τὸν φαῦλον ἐκείνον. Socrates proceeds to show that sensible objects are and are not what they are:—They have no fixed character of their own; they are different in different relations.

479 A ήγεῖται . . . νομίζει] supra 476 c, d.

καὶ τἄλλα οὕτω] Some of these 'other things' are enumerated infra B.

B τί δέ; τὰ πολλὰ διπλάσια ... φαίνεται; That is to say, although, in the abstract, a double and half differ, in the concrete they may coincide; e.g. two chairs are the half of four and the double of one.

The same view of the relativeness of sense occurs often elsewhere: e.g. Theaet. 152 D ἐἀν ὡς μέγα προσαγορεύης, καὶ σμικρὸν φανεῖται, καὶ ἐἀν βαρύ, κοῦφον, ξύμπαντά τε οὕτως: Phil. 14 D καὶ βαρὺν καὶ κοῦφον τὸν αὐτόν: Phaedo 74 B ff., 102.

Republic V. 479 B

τοις ἐν ταις ἐστιάσεσιν, ἔφη, . . . αἰνίγματι] (1) 'They are like the double-entendres at feasts, and like the children's riddle about the cunuch throwing at the bat.' ἐπαμφοτερίζουσιν is thus explained by Timaeus in his lexicon to Plato: cp. the active use of ἐξημφοτέρικε in Euthyd. 300 d. [(2) But the verb occurs immediately below, ἐπαμφοτερίζειν sc. ἔοικεν, in the ordinary intransitive sense, and it is unlike Plato to repeat the same example in illustration—(Riddles at feasts and the children's riddle). The phrase τοις ἐν ταις ἐστιάσεσιν ἐπαμφοτερίζουσιν may contain an allusion to some incident of Greek festivity familiar to Plato's readers, but to us unknown. L. C.]

καὶ τῷ τῶν παίδων αἰνίγματι] The riddle referred to is given C by the Scholiast:—

Αἶνός τίς ἐστιν ὡς ἀνήρ τε κοὐκ ἀνὴρ ὄρνιθα κοὖκ ὄρνιθ' ἰδών τε κοὖκ ἰδὼν ἐπὶ ξύλου τε κοὖ ξύλου καθημένην λίθω τε κοὖ λίθω βάλοι τε κοὖ βάλοι:

i.e. a eunuch aimed at a bat which he saw imperfectly sitting upon a reed with a pumice-stone and missed him.

 $\hat{\psi}$ ] 'wherewith,' viz. with a pumice-stone. This proves to be the reading of Par. A, and is therefore to be adopted without question in preference to  $\hat{\omega}s$ .

ἐφ' οῦ ς. καθημένην.

παγίως νοῆσαι] Cp. Theaet. 157 Λ ἐπεὶ καὶ τὸ ποιοῦν εἶναί τι καὶ τὸ πάσχον αὐτῶν ἐπὶ ἐνὸς νοῆσαι, ὥς φασιν, οὐκ εἶναι παγίως.

μεταξύ που κυλινδεῖται] 'range somewhere between.' The word κυλινδεῖσθαι has often a depreciatory association, as of 'knocking about, a prey to chance or circumstance,' &c. Cp. Phaedr. 275 E, Phaedo 81 C, 82 E.

προωμολογήσαμεν δέ γε . . . πλανητὸν άλισκόμενον] 'But we agreed beforehand, that anything of this kind which might come to light was to be described as the object of opinion, not of

D

Republic knowledge, being the class which oscillates between and is apprehended by the intermediate faculty.

480 η οὐ μνημονεύομεν] supra 476 B, C: 479 A.

ἕκαστον τὸ ὄν] 'Each kind in its essential nature,'—i. e. αὐτὸ τὸ καλόν, δίκαιον, ἀγαθόν, . . . καὶ τἄλλα οὕτω.

## BOOK VI.

Republic VI. 484 A-487 A If the philosopher can lay hold of universal and unchanging truth, and those who cannot rise above opinion are not philosophers, to which of the two shall we commit the government of the state? In a word, ought the true guardian to be clear-sighted or blind? There can be but one answer to this question, unless the philosopher is deficient in some other way. But the philosophic nature contains all the elements of virtue. He who is to be trained in philosophy must be quick-witted and have a good memory; he must be a lover of all truth, a hater of falsehood, courageous, temperate, just, gentle, large-minded, gracious in his thoughts and ways. Not even Momus can have any fault to find with such a character.

. 484 A διὰ μακροῦ . . . λόγου] λόγος, as elsewhere, is personified: cp. infra 503 A παρεξιόντος καὶ παρακαλυπτομένου τοῦ λόγου, πεφοβημένου κινεῖν τὸ νῦν παρόν. διεξελθόντος may be explained (I) as intransitive (cp. Soph. 237 Β τὸν δὲ λόγον,  $\mathring{\eta}$  βέλτιστα διέξεισι: Sophocl. Oed. Col. 574 χῶ λόγος διέρχεται: Dem. 54I, 22 πάντα δ' ἤδη διεξεληλύθει τὰκ τῶν νόμων)—the participle being added afterwards to complete the expression—'In the course of a long discussion which has come to its conclusion.' Or (2) αὐτούς, sc. τοὺς φιλοσόφους, may be supplied as the object of διεξελθόντος—'after a long argument which has discussed their nature.' Cp. Laws v. 743 Ε  $\mathring{\eta}$ ν διεξερχόμεθα πολιτείαν.

μακροῦ] a slight exaggeration, as the argument about the true nature of philosophers does not extend to more than six pages, 47.4–480. But if such a matter-of-fact objection needs an answer, it may be replied that six pages seem a considerable space to devote to the definition of a single term: and the steps through which Glaucon has been led to the conclusion were elaborate and

minute. The reading of  $\mathbf{z}$ , διὰ  $\mu$ .  $\tau$ . δ.  $\tau$ οῦ λόγου, is due to a false interpretation, i.e.  $\tau$ οῦ λόγου διεξελθόντος διὰ  $\mu$ ακροῦ  $\tau$ ινός. διεξελθόντες ( $\mathbf{x}$   $\mathbf{v}$ ) is another manuscript conjecture. According to this reading the philosophers are supposed to run the gauntlet of the argument through which their nature is revealed.

Republic VI. 484 A

οὐ ράδιον ] sc. ἀναφανήναι αὐτούς.

οὐ φαίνεται] is, 'it appears to be not easy': not 'it does not appear easy.'

ἔμοιγ' οὖν] 'To me at least it appears that it might have been set forth in a still better manner, if we had had only to speak of this one point.' The subject of φανῆναι is τὸ πρᾶγμα rather than τοὺς φιλοσόφους, as appears from τούτου μόνου following.

μέλλοντι] agreeing with τινί understood, not with ἔμοιγε supra: 'if one were not required'; not 'if I were not required.'

οί δὲ μή  $\int$  SC. οί δὲ μὴ τοῦ ἀεὶ κατὰ ταὐτὰ ώσαύτως ἔχοντος δυνάμενοι εφάπτεσθαι.

πλανώμενοι] 'Wandering up and down'—referring to the uncertainties of opinion: cp. v. 479 A ff., especially D τὸ μεταξὺ πλανητόν: also infra 485 B. For the word cp. especially Lysis 213 E οὐκ ἄν ποτε οῦτως ἐπλανώμεθα.

καθιστάναι Sc. λέγοντες δείν.

τόδε δέ... τηρεῖν ὁτιοῦν;] 'But can there be any question whether a blind or sharp-seeing watchman should guard a thing?'—In Plato's language, he who is ignorant of the universal is blind, 'not seeing the sun': he has no mental image or 'pattern in the mount' (cp. ix. 592), no idea of true being or principle of order, to which he may refer objects of sense or the particulars of human action: he is still in the den, having his back turned toward the light (cp. vii ad init.).

ὥσπερ γραφης] Cp. infra 500 ε οί τῷ θείῳ παραδείγματι χρώμενοι ζωγράφοι, 501 Λ, Β, where Plato repeats and expands the image suggested here.

κάκεισε] sc. εἰς τὸ ἀληθέστατον. But the opposition of ἐκεισε— ἐνθάδε implies that the truth is not here but yonder,—ἐν οὐρανῷ που ἀνακείμενον (ix. 592 Β: cp. also x. 610 Β).

В

C

Republic VI. 484 čàν δέη τίθεσθαι] 'If there should be need of such enactments.' The regulation of minutiae was to be left to each generation of rulers, the great principles having been once for all laid down: cp. iii. 412 B, iv. 425, 426, 427 A: and Laws vi. 769, 770, 772, 779 D, vii. 816, viii. 846 E, xii. 956 E.

τούτους] sc. 'the blind leaders of the blind,' who have just been described.

έκαστον τὸ ὄν] i.e. who know the essential reality of each thing: who are capable, in modern language, of abstraction and generalization:—The power of abstraction seemed to Plato in his own age to constitute the great difference between one man's mental condition and another's (Phaedr. 265 E, Rep. vii. 534).

εἴ γε τἄλλα μὴ ἐλλείποιντο] 'If they did not fall behind in other ways.'

τούτω γὰρ αὐτῷ ... ἄν προέχοιεν] 'For this very thing in which they will have the superiority is about the most important point of all.' σχεδόν τι τῷ μεγίστω: the emphasis is on τῷ μεγίστω, 'the greatest point of all' is the knowledge of ideas and universals. τι which follows σχεδόν does not weaken its force but calls attention to it: as 'pretty' is employed in some uses of the phrase 'pretty nearly' in English.

485 A κἀκεῖνα καὶ ταῦτα] 'The other qualities (= τἄλλα supra E—i.e. experience and general excellence) and these (the special attributes of the philosopher). Both are comprised in ταῦτα infra (ταῦτα ἔχειν οἱ αὐτοί).

The question how this combination of the practical and speculative may be attained, is answered by an inquiry into the nature of the philosopher. For the necessity of the philosopher's knowing also the particular, 'if he is to find his way home,' cp. Phileb. 62 B.

 $\delta$  τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] v. 474 B. If with the best MSS, we read  $\delta \epsilon \hat{\imath} \nu$ , we must supply τοῦτο ποιε $\hat{\imath} \nu$   $\delta \epsilon \hat{\imath}$  from πρῶτον  $\delta \epsilon \hat{\imath} \nu$  καταμαθε $\hat{\imath} \nu$  to complete the sentence. Or if this explanation is deemed unsatisfactory we must adopt the reading  $\delta \epsilon \hat{\imath}$  of the inferior MSS.

В

δ ἃν αὐτοῖς δηλοῖ . . . καὶ φθορᾶς] The genitive οὐσίας is partitive and follows δηλοῖ: cp. iv. 445 Ε οὕτε εἶς ἐγγενόμενος κινήσειεν ἃν τῶν ἀξίων λόγου νόμων τῆς πόλεως. ἐκείνης refers to the discussion in v. 475 F foll.

The words are found in Themistius, Orat. xxi. 250, with some verbal differences: τοῦτο μὲν δὴ ὁμολογείσθω τῆς φιλοσόφου φύσεως πέρι, ὅτι μαθήματος δέοι οὔτοι παντὸς ἀλλ' ὁ ἀν ἐκείνην δηλοῖ τὴν οὐσίαν τὴν ἀεὶ οὖσαν καὶ μὴ πλανωμένην ὑπὸ φθορᾶς καὶ γενέσεως. The agreement is not sufficiently exact to justify the substitution of οὐσίαν for οὐσίας in the text; Themistius appears to have simplified the construction.

Republic VI. 485 B

πάσης αὐτῆς sc. τῆς οὐσίας, governed by ἐρῶσιν.

οὖτε τιμιωτέρου οὖτε ἀτιμοτέρου μέρους] Cp. Soph. 227 Λ, Parmen. 130 E, for this favourite thought.

ώσπερ έν τοις πρόσθεν . . . διήλθομεν] V. 474 C ff.

έκοντας εἶναι] 'so far as their being willing is concerned.' έκον εἶναι is a parenthetic phrase—generally used in negative sentences—in which the word έκων gains force from the addition of εἶναι.

С

μηδαμή προσδέχεσθαι τὸ ψεῦδος Cp. Theaet. 151 D ἀλλά μοι ψεῦδος τε ξυγχωρήσαι καὶ ἀληθὲς ἀφανίσαι οὐδαμῶς θέμις.

άλλὰ μὴν... ἀπωχετευμένον] For ἀπωχετευμένον in strict accuracy ἀπωχετευμέναι might be expected. But the attraction which confuses the simile and the thing compared is common in Greek (e. g. Soph. Trach. 33), and occurs elsewhere in Plato: cp. iii. 401 c, D ὁπόθεν ἃν αὐτοῖς... πρὸς ἀκοῆν τι προσβάλη, ὥσπερ αὔρα φέρουσα ἀπὸ χρηστῶν τόπων ὑγίειαν, καὶ ... ἄγουσα. ἐκεῖσε refers to εἰς ἔν τι.

I)

τὰς δὲ διὰ τοῦ σώματος] τάς is an accusative of reference—'in respect of': or  $\pi\epsilon\rho$ i may be supplied from the previous clause. The former is the more natural way of taking the words. The image of the stream is continued in ἐρρυήκασι and ἐκλείποιεν.

It is common to draw a line between talent and character: the powers of a man are distinguished from his interests and affections. Such lines of demarcation are convenient, but they are also partly misleading. For the love of knowledge is knowledge: moral qualities interpenetrate with mental: how much a man feels is quite as important as how much he thinks, or rather he must feel what he thinks. There is no surer criterion of progress in education than an interest in study: nor anything more fatal to intellectual excellence than envy and meanness.

ο γε τοιοῦτος] 'such an one, at any rate'—i. e. one who takes no delight in the pleasures of the body—'must be temperate.'

E

Republic VI. 485 E μετὰ πολλῆς δαπάνης σπουδάζεται] 'For the reasons why wealth is eagerly pursued with lavish expenditure.' For the use of μετά cp. viii. 560 d μετριότητα . . . ὑπερορίζουσι μετὰ πολλῶν καὶ ἀνωφελῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν: ix. 575 c οἱ τὸν τύραννον γεννῶντες μετὰ δήμου ἀνοίας. And, for the thought, cp. Ar. Eth. Nic. iv. 1, § 33 οἱ πολλοὶ τῶν ἀσώτων . . . καὶ λαμβάνουσιν ὁθεν μὴ δεῖ.

486 .\

В

τοῦ ὅλου καὶ παντός] Compare Theaet. 173 E, where the soul of the philosopher is described as πάσαν πάντη φύσιν ἐρευνωμένη τῶν ὄντων ἐκάστου ὅλου, εἰς τῶν ἐγγὺς οὐδὲν αὐτὴν συγκαθιεῖσα.

η οὖν ὑπάρχει διανοία ... οἶόν τε οἴει τούτφ, κ.τ.λ.] The common transition from the mind or soul to the person. Cp. x. 620 p. Ast and Stallbaum, following a quotation of the passage in Marcus Aurelius (vii. § 35), read φ ... διανοίας for η ... διανοία, but this is unnecessary.

μηδ' ἀλαζών This refers to the love of truth, supra 485 c.

ἔσθ' ὅπη ἄν δυσξύμβολος . . . γένοιτο] For δυσξύμβολος with δυσκοινώνητος following, compare the juxtaposition of ξυμβάλλειν and κοινωνείν in ii. 362 B.

καὶ τοῦτο δὴ . . . καὶ ἀγρία] Cp. Theaet. 144 d. The qualities here enumerated are nearly the same that are found to be actually embodied in the 'wise' Theaetetus. The words  $\epsilon i \ldots \dot{\alpha} \gamma \rho i \alpha$  are the explanation of τοῦτο, the whole question being suggested by the words of the previous sentence, δυσξύμβολος ἢ ἄδικος.

( εὐμαθὴς ἢ δυσμαθής] sc. εἰ ἄρα. The construction is to be supplied from the previous sentence.

λήθης ὢν πλέως] Cp. Theaet. 144 Β νωθροί . . . πρὸς τὰς μαθήσεις καὶ λήθης γέμοντες.

D ἀλλὰ μνημονικὴν ... δεῖν εἶναι] A seeming combination of two constructions, μνημονικὴν αὐτὴν δεῖ εἶναι and μνημονικὴν αὐτὴν ζητῶμεν εἶναι. Cp. infra 503 B ῆν γὰρ διήλθομεν φύσιν δεῖν ὑπάρχειν αὐτοῖς.

čλκειν] Cp. viii. 568 c εls τυραννίδας . . . ελκουσι τὰς πολιτείας. The word conveys an idea of distortion and perversion.

είς ἀμετρίαν] Cp. Soph. 228 A τὸ τῆς ἀμετρίας πανταχοῦ δυσειδὲς ον γένος.

μή πη δοκοῦμέν σοι, κ.τ.λ.] πη = 'at any point.' The dative τη Republic VI. . . . . ψυχη depends chiefly on ἀναγκαῖα.

φίλος τε καὶ ξυγγενής] The latter word implies a reference to 487 485 C ἢ οὖν οἰκειότερον σοφία τι ἀληθείας ἂν εῦροις;

ἀλλ', ἦν δ' ἐγώ.... τὴν πόλιν ἐπιτρέποις] Compare the virtues of the philosopher-tyrant in Laws iv. 709, where despotism is thought to afford the most favourable opportunity for organizing a state: εἰ τύραννος γένοιτο, φής, νέος, σώφρων, εὐμαθής, μνήμων, ἀνδρεῖος, μεγαλοπρεπής.

τελειωθείσι . . . παιδεία τε καὶ ἡλικία] is introductory to the discussion about the education and age of the rulers, from 502 onwards.

The conclusion appears inevitable that the philosophic nature, 487 B-E when matured by time and training, ought to be entrusted with the supreme power. But Adeimantus meets all these theoretical assumptions by an appeal to facts. Experience shows that those who continue in the pursuit of philosophy after their first youth turn out to be either strange creatures, not to say rascals, or at all events, even when they are thoroughly respectable, their philosophy makes them useless. Socrates admits the force of the objection, yet maintains his paradox. To explain his position he has recourse to an allegory.

παρ' έκαστον τὸ ἐρώτημα] 'at every question.' Cp. Laws iv. 705 Α παρ' έκάστην ἡμέραν.

487 B

παραγόμενοι . . . μέγα τὸ σφάλμα . . . ἀναφαίνεσθαι] i.e. μεγάλως σφάλλεσθαι καὶ τοῖς πρῶτον ὡμολογημένοις ἐναντιοῦσθαι: cp. vii. 534 c ἀπτῶτι τῷ λόγῳ. The subject is changed from the persons to that which they experience: 'the overthrow which is revealed is great and contradictory of their first impressions.' At σφεῖς, κ.τ.λ., the original construction is resumed.

Compare the description of the Elenchus in the Sophist, 230 B διερωτώσιν ὧν ἃν οἵηταί τίς τι πέρι λέγειν λέγων μηθέν εἶθ ἄτε πλανωμένων τὰς δόξας ῥαδίως ἐξετάζουσι, καὶ συνάγοντες δὴ τοῖς λόγοις εἰς ταὐτὸν τιθέασι παρ' ἀλλήλας, τιθέντες δὲ ἐπιδεικνύουσιν αὐτὰς αὐταῖς ἄμα περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν πρὸς τὰ αὐτὰ κατὰ ταὐτὰ ἐναντίας. And for the effect of Socrates on his hearers see the image of the torpedo in Meno 80.

ύπὸ τῶν πεττεύειν δεινῶν The game of draughts here spoken

Republic VI. 487

of is plainly one in which the victory was won by hemming in the adversary. The metaphor of  $\pi \epsilon \tau \tau o i$  occurs again in Laws v. 739 A, where legislation is compared to a game of draughts.

D τοῦ πεπαιδεῦσθαι ἔνεκα] Cp. infra 497 E (where ἄπτεσθαι occurs in the same idiomatic sense).

πάνυ άλλοκότους . . . παμπονήρους] 'very strange beings, not to say utter rogues.'

τους δ' ἐπιεικεστάτους . . . ἀχρήστους ταις πόλεσι γιγνομένους See the description of the philosopher in the Theaetetus, who has not a word to say for himself in the courts or the assembly (173 c, D): or the view of Callicles in the Gorgias, 485 A φιλοσοφίας μέν, όσον παιδείας χάριν, καλόν μετέχειν, καὶ οὐκ αἰσχρὸν μειρακίω ουτι φιλοσοφείν. The man of the world admires philosophy in youth: such interests, at that time of life, are indications of a free and generous spirit: but if a person has not 'passed his metaphysics' when he is old, why, he should go to school again and be beaten. The feeling which Plato here expresses is a feeling of modern quite as much as of ancient times. The study of metaphysics is regarded as at once dangerous and puerile. They have been thought to belong only to a particular stage of life: 'poetry for boys,' 'metaphysics for young men,' 'facts for those who are of full age.' The true conception of metaphysics is the combination of the parts of knowledge by an effort of the mind into an ideal whole. They are always extending their domain, as the prospect is opening of new fields of science and of the past history of man. The narrower view is lost in a wider one: the previous elements of knowledge, whether in the world or in the individual, are taken up into the mind, and adjusted in new proportions. Also the knowledge of facts would be narrow and partial unless the imagination enabled us to allow for the unknown part of man and nature, raising us above our own particular study or aspect of things to the other elements of truth and knowledge. On the other hand it may be argued that metaphysics may easily outrun facts, and interfere with our capacity of observing and acquiring them.

E ἀκούοις ἄν...λέγειν] The popular opinion of philosophy has been seriously urged against Socrates. Instead of the expected refutation, 'Quite true' is the only reply.

έρωτᾶς . . . δι' εἰκόνων λέγειν] 'You ask a question, I said,

requiring to be answered through a similitude.' 'And you, methinks, are not accustomed to speak through similitudes.'

The last words are of course ironical: Socrates carries on the irony in what follows ( $\tilde{\iota}\nu$ )  $\tilde{\epsilon}\tau\iota$  μάλλον  $\tilde{\iota}\delta\eta$ s, κ.τ.λ.).

Republic VI. 487 E

ἔτι μάλλον] 'that (having this contempt for my similitudes) you may see still better what a poor hand I am at them.' For γλίσχρως cp. Crat. 414 c, where Hermogenes, speaking of one of the etymologies offered by Socrates, says: καὶ μάλα γε γλίσχρως, δ Σώκρατες. He who would judge of Socrates' powers in inventing similitudes may, after reading this passage, compare ix. 588 c, p.

488 A

There is a ship of which the captain is a simple-minded giant, short-sighted, dull of hearing, and but slightly skilled in navigation. The crew are always contending among themselves for the possession of the helm, but have never learnt, and even deny the possibility of learning, the art of steering. He only is the skilled navigator who is a partisan of theirs. If they cannot succeed by persuasion, they resort to force, throwing their rivals overboard and drugging the captain. Thus beginning they proceed to make free with the stores, and their voyage is such as might be expected of men like them. What chance of a hearing has the skilled pilot among such as they are? They only call him prater, star-gazer, and good-for-nothing. This image sufficiently indicates the position of those philosophers whom Adeimantus has acknowledged to be honest men. They are useless, because their states, as at present governed, make no use of them.

487 E-489 C

At a later date Plato returns to the comparison of the ruler to the steersman as a familiar image: Polit. 297 E Els δη τὰς εἰκόνας επανίωμεν πάλιν, αἷς ἀναγκαἷον ἀπεικάζειν ἀεὶ τοὺς βασιλικοὺς ἄρχοντας.

Ποίας ; Τὸν γενναῖον κυβερνήτην καὶ τὸν έτέρων πολλῶν ἀντάξιον ἰατρόν. κατίδωμεν γὰρ δή τι σχῆμα ἐν τούτοις αὐτοῖς πλασάμενοι.

αὐτό] SC. τὸ πάθος τῶν ἐπιεικεστάτων.

488 A

οῖον... γράφουσι] οῖον may be taken either as an adverb, 'just as'; or as an adjective governed by  $\gamma \rho \dot{a} \phi o \nu \sigma \iota$ —'to form by combining from many sources an idea of it like what' &c. The former is right.

νόησον . . . (Β) έτερα τοιαῦτα] τοιουτονί, i. e. the kind of thing which I have now before my mind.

ναύκληρον] The asyndeton, as usual, in an explanatory clause.

Republic VI. 488 R

C

D

βραχύ τι] is cogn. accus. 'having but a narrow range of vision,'—and ἔτερα τοιαῦτα is in the same construction,—'and whose intelligence in nautical matters is much on the same level.'

περὶ τῆς κυβερνήσεως] 'quarrelling about the steering, each thinking that he ought to steer.'

μήτε μαθόντα, κ.τ.λ.] This recalls Socrates' well-known accusation against the statesmen of Greece, that there are among them no teachers of political virtue. Cp. Protag. 319 D τούτοις οὐδεὶς τοῦτο ἐπιπλήττει ὥσπερ τοῦς πρότερον, ὅτι οὐδαμόθεν μαθών, οὐδὲ ὅντος διδασκάλου οὐδενὸς αὐτῷ, ἔπειτα συμβουλεύειν ἐπιχειρεῖ δῆλον γάρ, ὅτι οὐχ ἡγοῦνται διδακτὸν εἶναι. Cp. also Xen. Mem. iii. 6.

πρὸς δὲ τούτοις ... κατατέμνειν] Yet Plato himself seems to maintain this paradox in the Protagoras and Meno. In those dialogues the postulate that there must be a science of politics was ironically held in reserve, while the hollowness of the actual politicians was disclosed. But Plato is now ready to assert, not only that there is such a science, but that he has the key of it.

περικεχύσθαι . . . τῆς νεὼς ἄρχειν . . . πλεῖν ] These infinitives, which follow νόησον at the beginning of the sentence, avoid the confusion which would otherwise be occasioned by the multiplication of participles. In πρὸς δὲ τούτοις, κ.τ.λ., a return is made to the participial construction.

ξυμποδίσαντας is metaphorical: 'having enchained the noble captain,' i. e. rendered him incapable, 'by some narcotic drug, or by drink or some other means.' Cp. Gorg. 482 Ε ἐκ ταύτης γὰρ αὖ τῆς ὁμολογίας αὐτὸς ὑπὸ σοῦ συμποδισθεὶς ἐν τοῖς λόγοις ἐπεστομίσθη: Theaet. 165 Ε ἤλεγχεν ἃν . . . οὐκ ἀνιεὶς πρὶν . . . ξυνεποδίσθης ὑπ' αὐτοῦ.

πλεῖν ὡς τὸ εἰκὸς τοὺς τοιούτους] 'make just such a voyage as might be expected of men like them.' Cp. Polit. 302 Λ πολλαὶ μὴν ενίστε καὶ καθάπερ πλοῖα καταδυόμεναι διόλλυνται καὶ διολώλασι καὶ ἔτι διολοῦνται διὰ τὴν τῶν κυβερνητῶν καὶ ναυτῶν μοχθηρίαν τῶν περὶ τὰ μέγιστα μεγίστην ἄγνοιαν εἰληψότων, κ.τ.λ.: Laws x. 906 p.

όπως δὲ κυβερνήσει . . . (Ε) καὶ τὴν κυβερνητικήν] (τ) 'But to get the helm into one's hand, with or without consent, is an art and study which they imagine to be irreconcileable with the acquisition of the science of navigation.' The mutinous sailors think that the struggle to get the helm into one's power, which, in their opinion, is the all-important thing, leaves no time for the study of navigation, and so

488

D

they neglect it. Transferring the image into the language of Republic politics we have—ὅπως δὲ ἄρξει (τις) κ.τ.λ., μήτε τέχνην τούτου... δυνατον είναι λαβείν αμα καὶ τὴν φιλοσοφίαν. They are absorbed in the struggle for power, and have no time to think how power should be used. Therefore they reject philosophy and the philosopher. όπως . . . κυβερνήσει . . . εάν τε μή is a resumption of όπως άρξουσιν ή πείθοντες ή βιαζόμενοι τὸν ναύκληρον, and την κυβερνητικήν refers to the science of the true pilot, τοῦ . . . ἀληθινοῦ κυβερνήτου supra. τούτου takes up ὅπως, κ.τ.λ. Socrates reiterates his main point, that power, not knowledge, is the object of the actual politicians. (2) According to Ast and others the true pilot is the subject of κυβερνήσει, and this part of the sentence gives the impression which the behaviour of the true pilot makes on the world in general. The phrase ear τέ τινες βούλωνται ἐάν τε μή is supposed to contrast the scientific pilot, who keeps the ship in her course, without consulting the passengers, with the conduct of the sailors in the allegory, whose one thought is to cajole or intoxicate the captain (i. e. to flatter and humour the people) so that they may get the helm into their power. The sense then would be: 'imagining that to know how to steer, whether he has the leave of those on board or no,'-as, in their opinion, the true pilot does,—'is an art and study quite incompatible with the business of a steersman'—as they conceive of it. They consider that the arbitrary rule as it appears to them of the true pilot is inconsistent with steering, as they understand it (i.e. as the art of cajoling the captain). They think it is no part of pilotage to know how to manage the helm (no part of politics to know how to govern). This explanation appears plausible on comparing infra 489 B où γαρ έχει φύσιν κυβερνήτην ναυτών δείσθαι . . . ύφ' αύτοῦ: and Polit. 293 Α έάν τε έκόντων έάν τε ἀκόντων ἄρχωσιν, . . . νομιστέον . . . κατὰ τέχνην ... ἄρχοντας. But the exactness of the parallel in the immediate context between ὅπως ἄρξουσιν and ὅπως κυβερνήσει, and between πείθοντες ή βιαζόμενοι and εάν τε τινες βούλωνται εάν τε μή, is decisive in favour of the first (1) interpretation. And the true king in the Republic is imagined as the ruler of a willing people: infra 502 B πόλιν έχων πειθομένην, 400 Β καὶ τῆ πόλει \*κατηκόω γενέσθαι.

οἰόμενοι The MSS. vary between ἐπαΐοντες, οἰόμενοι, and ἐπαΐοντας, οἰομένους. That the copyists should have changed the accusative into the nominative is unlikely; the analogy of ψέγοντας was almost certain to lead some of them to change the nominative into the accusative. The transition to the nominative may be occasioned by E

Republic VI. the neighbourhood of "ap\xi\ov\ov\ou\nu\, and in so long a sentence the original construction is apt to be lost sight of.

489 A ταις πόλεσι...την διάθεσιν ἔσικεν] 'resembles cities in their attitude towards true philosophers.'

The 'parable' hardly needs an interpretation. The ship is the state: the star-gazing pilot is the philosopher: the noble captain, 'not very quick in his perceptions,' the people honest and stupid: the mutineers, the sophists and adventurers by whom the noble captain is 'drugged and disabled,'—who make their last appearance in the Politicus (291).

Aristotle refers to this passage in Rhet. iii. 43 as an example of an  $\epsilon l \kappa \omega \nu - \dot{\eta}$   $\epsilon l s$  τὸν δημον ὅτι ὅμοιος ναυκλήρω,  $l \sigma \chi v p \tilde{\omega}$  μέν, ὑποκώφω δέ. The passage should be compared with Politicus 298, 299, where it is supposed that if certain rules were prescribed by the state about navigation and the true  $\kappa v \beta \epsilon \rho \nu \dot{\eta} \tau \eta s$ , who steered from knowledge of the stars and winds, were to transgress them, he would be liable to be called  $\mu \epsilon \tau \epsilon \omega \rho o \lambda \dot{\phi} \sigma \chi \eta s$   $\tau \iota s$   $\sigma o \phi \iota \sigma \tau \dot{\eta} s$ .

čκείνον] supra 487 D.

ὅτι...οὐ τιμῶνται] Socrates softens the language of Adeimantus.

В

καὶ ὅτι ... λέγεις, κ.τ.λ.] ὅτι depends on δίδασκε and is parallel with ὅτι in the previous sentence. The MSS. are divided between λέγεις and λέγειν (for Par. D, which reads λέγει, has no independent value): the greater weight of authority is in favour of λέγεις. 'And that you are not wrong in saying that the best of the votaries of philosophy are of no use to the world:—for their uselessness, however, bid him blame those who make no use of them and not the good philosophers themselves.'

In using the second person ( $\lambda \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota s$ ), Socrates attributes to Adeimantus what he had only represented to be the opinion of others, though with an evident inclination to assent (cp. infra D où  $\delta \mathring{\eta}$  où  $\phi \mathring{\eta} \mathring{s} \ldots \mathring{a} \lambda \eta \theta \mathring{\eta}$  or  $\delta \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota \nu$ ). The other reading,  $\delta \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota \nu$ , could only be explained, if at all, as a harsh confusion of two constructions— $\delta \mathring{\iota} \delta a \sigma \kappa \epsilon \delta \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota \nu$  and  $\delta \mathring{\iota} \delta a \sigma \kappa \epsilon \delta \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota \nu$   $\delta \acute{\epsilon} \gamma \epsilon \iota \nu$ .

οὐ γὰρ ἔχει φύσιν ] φύσιν ἔχει, 'it is natural,' like λόγον ἔχει, 'it is reasonable.' The phrase occurs in Herodotus, ii. 45.

C ἀλλ' ὁ τοῦτο κομψευσάμενος . . . πέφυκεν, κ.τ.λ.] The saying is attributed by Aristotle to Simonides: Rhet. ii. 16 τοὺς σοφοὺς γὰρ ἔφη ὁρᾶν ἐπὶ ταῖς τῶν πλουσίων θύραις διατρίβοντας. Cp. for the general

sentiment, Theaet. 170 A, B καὶ ἔν γε τοῖς μεγίστοις κινδύνοις, ὅταν ἐν στρατείαις ἣ νόσοις ἣ ἐν θαλάττη χειμάζωνται, ὥσπερ πρὸς θεοὺς ἔχειν τοὺς ἐν ἐκάστοις ἄρχοντας, σωτῆρας σφῶν προσδοκῶντας, οὐκ ἄλλφ τφ διαφέροντας ἣ τῷ εἰδέναι. καὶ πάντα που μεστὰ τὰνθρώπινα ζητούντων διδασκάλους τε καὶ ἄρχοντας ἑαυτῶν τε, κ.τ.λ.

Republic VI. 489 C

δεῖσθαι] (1) is governed by some word (such as  $\pi \rho \acute{\epsilon} \pi \epsilon \iota \nu$ ) suggested by ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι preceding. Or (2) ἀναγκαῖον εἶναι is neglected, and the infinitive continued directly with  $\pi \acute{\epsilon} \varphi \iota \kappa \epsilon \nu$ .

μετεωρολέσχας] 'Meteorologizers' combines the μετεωροσκόπου τε καὶ ἀδολέσχην of supra 488 ε.

έκ τε τοίνυν . . . ἐπιτηδευόντων] 'As a result of this and (τ) in these circumstances '—or (2)' among men like these '—' the noblest pursuit can hardly be held in esteem by those who have opposite pursuits.'

έν τούτοις may be either masculine or neuter (infra 494 c ἐν τοῦς τοιούτοις: Symp. 220 Β: Phaedo 101 c), but for the masculine cp. supra ὑπὸ τούτων. The words οἱ δὲ ἐπιεικέστατοι ἄχρηστοι are added to recall both sides of the statement, although only one is in point.

τὰ τοιαῦτα Sc. τὰ τῆς φιλοσοφίας.

D

τον έγκαλοῦντα . . . ἀληθη σε λέγειν] Supra 487 d, e. As before in supra b Socrates chooses to identify Adeimantus with the objectors whose opinions he quotes.

οὖκοῦν τῆς μὲν... ἀχρηστίας, κ.τ.λ.] The reason why one class of philosophers are useless is that the world will not use them: the reason why another class are corrupted is that the finest natures are most susceptible of adverse influences.

τῆς δὲ τῶν πολλῶν πονηρίας τὴν ἀνάγκην] 'The cause which inevitably produces the wickedness of the greater number.'

The philosophic nature combines qualities that are rarely found in the same person. It is also exceptionally liable to corruption. Rare plants are more than others sensitive to surrounding influences. And the very graces which have been enumerated, above all when combined with gifts of fortune, become, through their perversion, sources of evil. The world is the great sophist that spoils the highly endowed youth, and moulds him with popular applause and clamour to mundane purposes. How can such an one, except through some divine providence, give ear to the teachings of philosophy? The professional, fee-earning sophist is like the attendant of a great beast,

489 E-496 E Republic VI. 489 E-496 E whom he knows when to approach, and who indicates by grunts his likes and dislikes. He never distinguishes between what is inevitable and what is best. Hence, of those who are at their birth endowed with a philosophic nature, all save the few 'useless' ones (whom pride or sickness or some internal oracle have retained) desert philosophy for 'politics' and leave a vacant room, which is filled by those whom Adeimantus designates as nondescripts and rascals. The maiden of high estate, left poor and desolate, is married to a tinker just let out of prison. Meanwhile the child of light, who is faithful to his trust, sees the hopelessness of effort, and stands in shelter until the storm has passed, contented if he may preserve his own integrity.

489 E ἀκούωμεν δὴ... κἀγαθὸν ἐσόμενον] ὅθεν is put for οὖ by attraction with ἐκείθεν, which is to be construed with ἀναμνησθέντες.

490 A αὐτ $\hat{\psi}$ ] is not the usual dative after  $\hat{\eta}\gamma\epsilon\hat{\iota}\sigma\theta\alpha\iota$ , but an ethical dative: sc.  $\hat{\eta}\gamma\epsilon\hat{\iota}\tau\sigma$  τοῦ χοροῦ αὐτ $\hat{\psi}$ —' was the leader of his band,' infra c.

εἰ νῷ ἔχεις] 'if you remember.' Cp. Euthyphro 2 β εἴ τινα νῷ ἔχεις Πιτθέα Μέλητον.

η ἀλαζόνι ὄντι, κ.τ.λ.] For the use of η in the sense of 'or else' cp. v. 463 D η μήτε πρὸς θεων μήτε πρὸς ἀνθρώπων αὐτῷ ἄμεινον ἔσεσθαι.

οὖκοῦν . . . περὶ αὐτοῦ;] 'Is not this one point, to say no more (οὕτω), very inconsistent with our present ideas about him?' οὕτω is idiomatic, as in νῦν οὕτως, ἀπλῶς οὕτως.

παρὰ δόξαν τοῖς νῦν δοκουμένοις] i. e. πρὸς τὰ νῦν δοκούμενα, the whole expression being an amplified equivalent of παρὰ τὰ νῦν δοκούμενα = παρὰ τὰς τῶν νῦν δόξας. τοῖς νῦν δοκουμένοις = 'received opinions,' is a noticeable phrase.

ἀπολογησόμεθα . . . άμιλλᾶσθαι] 'We shall defend ourselves' (when accused of being paradoxical) 'by saying' (as we have said) 'that it was his nature to press onward towards true being.' The optative after the future indicative in an indirect sentence may be explained as implying a reference to some former expression of the thought quoted. See Goodwin, M. and T., §§ 159, 676.

καὶ οὐκ ἐπιμένοι] Cp. Laches 194 Λ καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐπὶ τῆ ζητήσει ἐπιμείνωμεν.

B ἀλλ' ἴοι . . . ἀδίνος, πρὶν δ' οὔ] In such glowing language does Plato describe what are termed by us mere abstractions, to which metaphysical enthusiasm has, nevertheless, given a permanent

place in the mind, and which in a secondary logical stage have been the regulators and instruments of human knowledge. In one point of view the language may be compared with that of Eastern Pantheism (μιγεὶς τῷ ὄντι ὄντως), in another (ἐπὶ τοῖς . . . πολλοῖς ἐκάστοις), with that of the Organon of Aristotle.

Republic VI. 490 B

ζώη καὶ τρέφοιτο] Cp. Phaedr. 248 Β οὖ δ' ἔνεχ' ἡ πολλὴ σπουδή, τὸ ἀληθείας ἰδεῖν πεδίον οὖ ἐστίν, ἥ τε δὴ προσήκουσα ψυχῆς τῷ ἀρίστῷ νομὴ ἐκ τοῦ ἐκεῖ λειμῶνος τυγχάνει οὖσα.

λήγοι ἀδίνος] Cp. Theaet. 148 Ε ἀδίνεις γάρ, & φίλε Θεαίτητε: Symp. 206 Ε τῷ κυοῦντι... πολλή ἡ πτοίησις γέγονε περὶ τὸ καλὸν διὰ τὸ μεγάλης ἀδίνος ἀπολύειν τὸν ἔχοντα.

τούτω τι μετέσται . . . μισεῖν;] 'Will he have any part in loving falsehood, or, on the contrary, will he not hate it?'

ἀλλ' ὑγιές τε καὶ δίκαιον ἦθος] sc.  $\phi$ αῖμεν ἃν αὐτ $\hat{\eta}$  (sc. ἀληθεί $\phi$ ) C ἀκολουθῆσαι,

καὶ δὴ τὸν ἄλλον... ἀναγκάζοντα τάττειν;] 'Why should I again set in array from the very beginning the rest of the band of qualities which make up the philosophic nature, at each step compelling your assent?' ἀναγκάζοντα is taken up in ξυνέβη: 'Why force you again to admit what you have already admitted?'

ἀναγκάζοντα is the reading of the best MSS.: ἀναλαμβάνοντα (= 'recapitulating'), the reading of Stephanus and of Ven. Ξ, is probably a correction: cp. infra p τὴν τῶν ἀληθῶς φιλοσόφων φύσιν ... ἐξ ἀνάγκης ὡρισάμεθα.

For the favourite image of the chorus (continued from χορὸν κακῶν supra), cp. especially Euthydemus 279 c τὴν δὲ σοφίαν ποῦ χοροῦ τάξομεν; ἐν τοῖς ἀγαθοῖς, ἢ πῶς λέγεις; Rep. viii. 560 E ὕβριν καὶ ἀναρχίαν . . . λαμπρὰς μετὰ πολλοῦ χοροῦ κατάγουσιν ἐστεφανωμένας: ix. 580 B ἔγωγε ὥσπερ χοροὺς κρίνω, κ.τ.λ.: also Theaet. 173 B-D τοὺς δὲ τοῦ ἡμετέρου χοροῦ . . . περὶ τῶν κορυφαίων.

καὶ σοῦ ἐπιλαβομένου] 'And when you interposed and said.' Cp. Symp. 214 Ε ἐάν τι μὴ ἀληθὲς λέγω, μεταξὺ ἐπιλαβοῦ.

τῆς διαβολῆς] διαβολή is a malicious 'misrepresentation.' Cp. D supra 480 p: infra 500 p διαβολή δ'  $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$  πῶσι πολλή.

Kepublic VI. 490 σμικρὸν δέ τι . . . καλοῦσι] 'A small number, whom, as you say, they call,' &c. The antecedent of ous is implied in the collective neuter σμικρόν τι =  $\partial \lambda \ell \gamma o\iota$  τινές.

E 491 A

καὶ εἰς τὸ ἐπιτήδευμα καθισταμένας αὐτῆς] 'and settling down to her pursuit.'

ἀνάξιον . . . ξαυτῶν] 'of which they are themselves unworthy.' For this use of ἀνάξιος = 'too good for,' cp. Soph. Phil. 1009 ἀνάξιον μὲν σοῦ, κατάξιον δ' ἐμοῦ: i.e. 'of which you are unworthy and I am worthy.'

καὶ μείζον] For μείζον = 'too great' or 'high,' cp. Soph. 231 Λ μὴ μείζον αὐτοῖς προσάπτωμεν γέρας.

καὶ ἐπὶ πάντας] sc. τείνουσαν: 'and extending to all who bear the name.' This phrase is added by an afterthought and is not strictly in construction.

Β καὶ ὀλίγας] sc. τοιαύτας φύσεις.

δ μèν πάντων . . . ἀποσπῷ φιλοσοφίας] 'In the first place what is strangest of all to hear, viz. that each of the qualities which we praised as belonging to the philosophic nature destroys the soul which possesses them and draws it away from philosophy.' These words are the answer to τίνες δή;—giving one of the ways in which these rare natures are corrupted.  $\mathring{\omega}_{\nu} = \mathring{\epsilon} \kappa \epsilon \acute{\iota} \nu \omega \nu \ \ddot{a}$ .

C τὰ λεγόμενα ἀγαθά] This is Plato's way of quoting a common opinion which is not acknowledged by philosophy. Cp. iv. 431 c τῶν ἐλευθέρων λεγομένων ἐν τοῖς πολλοῖς τε καὶ φαύλοις.

λαβοῦ τοίνυν...περὶ αὐτῶν] αὐτοῦ = 'the subject in hand': αὐτῶν = 'the philosophic natures;' last mentioned supra  $_{\rm B}$  in τούτων δὴ τῶν ὀλίγων, κ,τ,λ.

κελεύεις] sc. λαβέσθαι αὐτοῦ.

D παντός, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, ... ἴσμεν] 'Of every seed or growing thing, whether vegetable or animal, we know.' φυτόν is here taken in its widest sense.

It is not, however, the stronger or better nature of which the remark in the text is psychologically true. The poetical and sensitive temperament is the one which suffers most from alien conditions. Weakness, especially when accompanied by intellectual gifts, may indeed, by the help of accidents, be matured into strength. And strength, which was wanting in the original

character, has been sometimes developed in a life-long struggle against the passions or against circumstances. But, in general, the finer qualities of mind, which are capable also of coming to the greatest good, are most injured by corrupting influences: the gentler nature, which meets with no response at school or in the world, is coated over with an impenetrable rind: the soil is receptive, and the imagination is frequently haunted by impressions of evil, when they have ceased to affect the will. Genius, in the spring of youth, is hardly ever aware of the deteriorating effects of the surrounding atmosphere or soil. Stronger, rougher characters are not in the same way the creatures of circumstances. But weakness has no limit of evil, when the barriers of education and of public opinion have been once passed. This is commonly the stuff out of which great criminals are made.

κάκιον ἀπαλλάττειν] Stallbaum reads κακίου, with a slight variation of writing and of meaning, but see L. and S. s. v. ἀπαλλάσσειν, A. ii.

νεανικήs] 'vigorous,' 'high-spirited.' Cp. infra 503 C νεανικοί τε καὶ μεγαλοπρεπεῖε τὰς διανοίας.

ἀσθενῆ δὲ φύσιν, κ.τ.λ.] This clause depends on the general force of the words ἢ οἴει . . . ἀλλ' οὖκ, which emphasize the second alternative mentioned:—' Surely you must think that great crimes spring from a high-spirited (not from an inferior) nature, but that a weak nature,' &c. For ἢ οἴει . . . ἀλλ' οὖκ cp. i.  $344 \, \text{E} \, \mathring{\eta} \, \sigma \mu \kappa \rho \mathring{\nu} \nu$  οἴει ἐπιχειρεῖν πρᾶγμα διορίζεσθαι, ἀλλ' οὖ βίου διαγωγήν; αἰτίαν here is the adjective.

οὔκ, ἀλλά . . . οὕτως ] οὔκ, SC. ἐκ φαύλης : οὕτως, SC. ἐκ νεανικῆς. ἣν τοίνυν ἔθεμεν ] SC. εἶναι.

ἢ καὶ σὺ ἡγεῖ...(Β) ἄνδρας καὶ γυναῖκας;] 'Or do you, like the many, really think that there are, in any degree worth speaking of, young men corrupted by Sophists, or Sophists in a private capacity who corrupt them?' &c. Plato exhibits the Sophist in different lights,—here in a more favourable one. The point of this passage is to show that whether the Sophists are good or bad, their influence is unimportant compared with that of the great Sophist, public opinion, which they merely echo.

ίδιωτικούς] 'in a private capacity,' is opposed to the sophistry

Republic VI. 491

Ď

492

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

Republic of the assembly or of public opinion. Cp. infra c παιδείαν ἰδιωτικήν: Ε ἰδιωτικούς λύγους.

492 μεγίστους . . . σοφιστάς] Cp. Polit. 303 c, where Plato says of false statesmen — μεγίστους δὲ ὄντας μιμητὰς καὶ γόητας μεγίστους γίγνεσθαι τῶν σοφιστῶν σοφιστάς.

ξυγκαθεζόμενοι ἀθρόοι \*οί πολλοί | 'sitting down together assembled in great force.' Hermann's correction \*οί πολλοί adopted in the text is not quite certain. ἀθρόοι πολλοί seems to have been a not uncommon phrase: cp. Gorgias 490 Β ἐὰν ἐν ταὐτῷ ὅμεν, ὥσπερ νῦν, πολλοὶ ἀθρόοι ἄνθρωποι: Xen. Anab. vii. 3, § 9 οἶδα κώμας πολλὰς ἀθρόας. The subject of ψέγωσι is to be supplied from αὐτοὺς τοὺς ταῦτα λέγοντας supra.

C ύπερβαλλόντως έκάτερα] sc. ποιοῦντες—' doing either in excess' (referring to ἐπαινῶσιν and ψέγωσι).

ἢ \*ποίαν αὐτῷ ... ἀνθέξειν] ποίαν ἄν MSS. (1) ἄν with future indicative and future infinitive is a well-authenticated construction, that is, in many cases it has the support of the best MSS.: the omission of it is unjustifiable when it has sufficient manuscript authority in its favour. Here it is read in all the MSS. The particle, without weakening it, gives an ironical force to the future: 'will be likely to.' Cp. x. 615 d 0 0 $^{i}$  $\chi$   $^{i}$  $\eta$ κει,  $\phi$ άναι, 0 $^{i}$  $\delta$  $^{i}$  $\delta$  $^{i}$  $\delta$  $\epsilon$  $^{i}$  $\delta$ ε $\delta$ ρ $\delta$  $\epsilon$  $\delta$ ρ. Cp. Goodwin, M. and T., §§ 197, 208. [B. J.]

(2) The repetition of the same syllable in  $\pi o (av)$  makes it easier to question the authority of the MSS. The 'colloquial style' of which Goodwin speaks in referring to x. 615 p, is not present here. [L. C.]

οὖτος] ό τοιοῦτος ψόγος  $\mathring{\eta}$  ἔπαινος, under the image of a torrent suggested by κατὰ ῥοῦν and by κατακλυσθεῖσαν supra.

φήσειν ... τοιοῦτον] φήσειν is dependent on οὐκ οἴει to be gathered from ποίαν αὐτῷ παιδείαν ἰδιωτικὴν ἀνθέξειν (sc. οἴει, supplied from τίνα οἴει καρδίαν ἴσχειν;) ῆν οὐ ... οἰχήσεσθαι which is equivalent to οὐκ οἴει καὶ ἡντιναοῦν παιδείαν ἰδιωτικήν ... οἰχήσεσθαι. Cp. note on 491 Ε ἀσθενῆ δὲ φύσιν, κ.τ.λ.

I)  $\tau \delta[\nu]$  μὴ  $\pi \epsilon \iota \theta \delta \mu \epsilon \nu o \nu$ ]  $\tau \delta \nu$  is the reading of Ven. II  $\Xi$  and a majority of the MSS. and seems more expressive here than  $\tau \delta$  (collective neuter), the reading of A M, for which cp. infra  $\Xi \delta \tau i \pi \epsilon \rho$ ,  $\kappa . \tau . \lambda$ .  $\tau \delta \nu$  μὴ  $\pi \epsilon \iota \theta \delta \mu \epsilon \nu o \nu$  is Bekker's reading.

VI.

492

οὐ γὰρ . . . ἐξαιρῶμεν λόγου For ἐξαιρῶμεν λόγου cp. Symp. 176 Republic

C Σωκράτη δ' έξαιρῶ λόγου.

'That which is impossible with men is possible with God' is one way in which Plato expresses the Socratic feeling that the ideal of philosophy is a divine reality, which is nowhere fully manifested. Cp. the θείος λόγος of the Phaedo (85 D), and the 'epiphany' of the philosopher in the Sophist (216 c): ii. 368 A: ix. 502 A  $\epsilon \hat{a} \nu \mu \hat{\eta} \theta \epsilon \hat{a} \tau \iota s \xi \nu \mu \beta \hat{\eta} \tau \dot{\nu} \chi \eta$ . See also the words which have prepared for this, supra 492 Λ έαν μή τις αὐτŷ βοηθήσας θεων τύχη.

άλλοιον ήθος . . . πεπαιδευμένον (1) 'A different type of character, which has been trained to virtue in opposition to the education which they (sc. οἱ πολλοί) supply.' It is better to adopt this interpretation, giving to παρά its common signification, and taking προς ἀρετήν with πεπαιδευμένον (cp. Protag. 342 D Λακεδαιμόνιοι πρὸς φιλοσοφίαν καὶ λόγους ἄριστα πεπαίδευνται: Gorg. 47 I D), than (2), with Stallbaum, to take παρά in the unparalleled sense of 'in accordance with,' translating the whole passage: 'a type of character differently disposed towards virtue, if it has been trained in accordance with the education which they supply.' participle, πεπαιδευμένον, according to the first interpretation, is equivalent to a relative clause, δ πεπαίδευται: according to the second, to a conditional, ην πεπαιδευμένον η.

εκαστος . . . μη άλλα παιδεύειν] sc. δοξάτω σοι. For what follows cp. Phaedrus 260 c, p, especially the words δόξας δὲ πλήθους μεμελετηκώς, κ.τ.λ.

493

ους δη ... ήγουνται 'whom they regard as their professional rivals.'

οῦτοι the people, who are themselves the Sophist: cp. τούτων, supra 492 E. The dislike of the Sophists on the part of men like Anytus (Meno, sub fin.) is humorously attributed to professional jealousy.

μεγάλου καὶ ἰσχυροῦ τρεφομένου 'a great and mighty beast which is fed by him,'-' of which he is the keeper.'

έφ' οις \*έκάστας The reading of nearly all the MSS. is εκαστος, which cannot be explained satisfactorily. Corrections are έκάστοτε (Vind. E), έκάστοις, ας έφ' έκάστοις (q), and έκάστας (cj. van Prinsterer). έκάστας is preferred because it gives a slight increase of distinctness

to the meaning: 'upon what occasions he utters his different cries.' Cp. Laws vii. 792 Λ οὖ μὲν γὰρ ἃν προσφερομένου σιγᾳ, καλῶς οἴονται προσφέρειν, οὖ δ' ἃν κλαίη καὶ βοᾳ, οὐ καλῶς.

καὶ χρόνου τριβ $\hat{\eta}$ ] τριβ $\hat{\eta}$  is opposed to ἐπιστήμη, Phaedr. 260 E &c.: Gorg. 463 B: Soph. 254 A.

καὶ ἐπιθυμιῶν] Opinion and desire are hardly distinguishable in the great beast.

C ονομάζοι δὲ πάντα ταῦτα, κ.τ.λ.] 'should employ all these terms (καλόν, αἰσχρόν, &c.) according to the opinions of the great beast.'

τἀναγκαῖα δίκαια καλοί] His only principle of justice would be the physical necessities and exigencies of the great beast's nature.

οὐκ ἄτοπος ἄν . . . παιδευτής ] ἄν is to be joined with εἶναι.

I) ξυνιόντων] marks the fact that the Sophist represents the collective opinion of mankind in their assemblies: παντοδαπῶν, that this opinion is a mixture of very incongruous elements, cp. Protag. 319 D δμοίως μὲν τέκτων, όμοίως δὲ χαλκεύς, κ.τ.λ.

eἴτ' ἐν γραφικῆ, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Polit. 297 E ff., where the absurdities of actual politics are ridiculed by imagining the result of similar proceedings in other sciences.

ὅτι μὲν γάρ...ἐπαινῶσιν] The construction is incomplete: δῆλον or some such word has to be supplied with ὅτι. Cp. v. 47 I C, D ἐπεὶ ὅτι γε, κ.τ.λ., and note: Soph. 248 D τὸ δὲ ὡς τὸ γιγνώσκειν εἴπερ ἔσται ποιεῖν τι, τὸ γιγνωσκόμενον ἀναγκαῖον αὖ ξυμβαίνει πάσχειν.

ἐπιδεικνύμενος] supra iii. 398 A.

πέρα τῶν ἀναγκαίων] is to be joined with κυρίους αὐτοῦ ποιῶν τοὺς πολλούς: 'The man who makes the many his arbiters of taste, except in so far as is necessary, will experience the fatal necessity of doing whatever they approve.' The true artist will not fall under the dominion of the many: but he must respect the opinion of the world up to a certain point, if 'he is to get leave to live in it.'

The aim of the Sophist, in Plato's view, is not to undermine public opinion or morals, but to reproduce them. His wisdom is to think like other men: cp. Shaks. 2 *Henry IV. ii.* 2,62 'Never a man's thought in the world keeps the roadway better than thine.' He is

the representative man, who utters the average mind,—in religion, in politics, in arts, in society. He gathers up in his words the power of the many, which he directs against the wisdom of the few. He systematizes received opinions, which are thus rendered capable of being taught (compare the Protagoras). And sometimes philosophy may enable him to invest a popular belief with the dignity of a great truth, or to embody in a general formula the maxims of a party or sect.

Republic VI. 493 D

ἡ Διομηδεία λεγομένη ἀνάγκη] The proverb is said by the Scholiast to refer to the following story:—Διομήδης καὶ ᾿Οδυσσεὺς τὸ Πάλλάδιον κλέψαντες ἐξ Ἰλίου νυκτὸς ἐπαυήεσαν ἐπὶ τὰς ναῦς σελήνης ὑποφαινούσης, φιλοτιμούμενος δ' ᾿Οδυσσεὺς αὐτοῦ μόνον δόξαι γενέσθαι τὴν πρᾶξιν, ἐπεχείρησε τὸν Διομήδεα μετὰ τοῦ Παλλαδίου προηγούμενον ἀνελεῖν. ὁ δὲ κατὰ τὸ τῆς σελήνης φῶς τὴν καθ' αὐτού θεασάμενος τοῦ ἐπιφερομένου ξίφους σκιάν, συλλαμβάνει τε τὸν ᾿Οδυσσέα, καὶ τὰς χεῖρας τοῦδε συνδεῖ, προάγειν τε κελεύει, καὶ τύπτων αὐτοῦ πλατεῖ τῷ ξίφει τὸ μετάφρενον ἐπὶ τοὺς Ἔλληνας παραγίνεται. The Scholiast on Aristoph. Eccles. 1029 has a different explanation:—ὅτι Διομήδης ὁ Θρᾶξ, πόρνας ἔχων θυγατέρας, τοὺς παριόντας ξένους ἐβιάζετο αὐταῖς συνεῖναι. Whatever the story may be to which the phrase refers, it is quite clear that the general meaning of it is 'inevitable necessity.'

E

ταῦτα τοίνυν ... (404 A) ὑπ' αὐτῶν The opposition of the few and the many is almost as great in the reading age of the nineteenth century as in the hearing age of Socrates and Plato. In politics, in society, in the realms of thought and imagination, there are two classes not marked in the vocabulary of party and found in all parties—the inferior minds and the superior: those who are under the influence of the hour; and those who have characters and principles. The difference is exaggerated when a single mind is at variance with the rest of the world. The great man who may be borne on the deeper tide of ages has, nevertheless, to struggle with the eddies and currents which react upon the surface. Yet the opposition is not so entire and absolute as Plato seems to assume. For different classes of minds, like different ranks in society, fade into one another: and also the simple elements of moral and religious truth afford a wide ground of common interest. No link from the highest to the lowest can be spared in the order of things. And through the progress of commerce and the arts, in the movements of history, by the gradual spread of education; the discoveries of great thinkers at length find a place in the world,

Republic and the speculative ideas of one generation become the received opinions of the next.

ταῦτα τοίνυν . . . ἀναμνήσθητι] 'Bearing all these things in mind, remember further that point which we mentioned before'—
i.e. in 491 A, where it is said that the truly philosophic nature is rarely found among men.

αὐτό τι ἔκαστον] Cp. v. 479 E: supra 484 D, 490 B.

494 ἀνέξεται] sc. λεγόμενα.

φιλόσοφον μεν ἄρα . . . πληθος αδύνατον εἶναι] Cp. especially Polit. 292 Ε μῶν οὖν δοκεῖ πληθός γε ἐν πόλει ταύτην τὴν ἐπιστήμην δυνατὸν εἶναι κτήσασθαι; Καὶ πῶς;

καὶ ὑπὸ τούτων δὴ τῶν ἰδιωτῶν] supra 493 Λ.

ἐκ δὴ τούτων] 'As a consequence of this,'—i.e. the fact of their being blamed by the people and by their flatterers. Cp. supra 489 c.

ώμολόγηται 485 A, 487 C.

οὐκοῦν εὐθὺς ἐν \*παισὶν . . . ἐν ἄπασιν] The MSS. have εὐθὺς ἐν πᾶσιν. But the conjecture ἐν παισίν is clearly right. For (1) it makes explicit the contrast to πρεσβύτερος infra: (2) the same correction (παισί for πᾶσι) is required in iv. 431 c, where there can be no reasonable doubt: (3) it agrees better with εὐθύς: cp. iii. 401 D εὐθὺς ἐκ παίδων.

C ὑποκείσονται ἄρα] 'Then they will lie at his feet.' ὑποκείσθαι is here used like ὑποπίπτειν (infra ix. 576 A) οτ ὑποτρέχειν (iv. 426 c). Cp. Gorg. 510 C ταὐτὰ ψέγων καὶ ἐπαιτῶν ἐθέλη ἄρχεσθαι καὶ ὑποκείσθαι τῷ ἄρχοντι.

τί οὖν οἴει . . . ποιήσειν 'How then do you suppose that he will behave?' For ποιήσειν cp. supra ii. 365 A and note: Thuc. V. 71 τὰ στρατόπεδα ποιεί μὲν καὶ ἄπαντα τοῦτο.

 $\epsilon \nu$  τοις τοιούτοις ' under such circumstances': cp. supra 489 c  $\epsilon \kappa$  τε . . . τούτων καὶ  $\epsilon \nu$  τούτοις according to one interpretation.

ἡγούμενον] The lives of Pausanias, Themistocles, Alcibiades (the latter especially in the words καὶ ἔτι εὐειδῆς καὶ μέγας), perhaps of Lysander, may have been in the writer's mind. Cp. I Alcibiades 105, where Socrates charges the young Alcibiades with an ambition extending beyond Athens to Greece, beyond Greece to Asia and the world.

494 A

В

E

τὸ δὲ οὐ κτητόν] sc. ὁ νοῦς, as elsewhere the neuter referring to Republic a masculine word.

*VI*. 494

διὰ τοσούτων κακῶν] 'through' (i. e. notwithstanding) 'such manifold hindrance.' For a somewhat similar use cp. Soph. Trach.

1131 τέρας τοι διὰ κακῶν ἐθέσπισας. Cp. also Keble, Christian Year,
Whit-Sunday:

'To other strains our Souls are set;
A giddy whirl of sin
Fills ear and brain and will not let
Heaven's harmonies come in.'

διὰ τὸ ... ξυγγενὲς τῶν λόγων] (1) 'Because such reasoning is congenial to him': or (2) 'Because of that in him which is kindred to dialectic.' Cp. iii. 402 Α ἐλθόντος δὲ τοῦ λόγου ἀσπάζοιτ' ἄν αὐτὸν γνωρίζων δι' οἰκειότητα μάλιστα ὁ οὕτω τραφείς.

cis 'One person': more than 'one' cannot be expected.
 τοὺς ἡγουμένους ἀπολλύναι 'who think that they are losing.'

οὐ πῶν μὲν ἔργον . . . εἰς ἀγῶνας καθιστάντας] With the participles we must supply οἰόμεθα καὶ ὁτιοῦν δράσειν αὐτοῦς from τί οἰόμεθα δράσειν ...; immediately preceding. 'Do we not suppose that they will do anything, performing any action and speaking any word . . .?' The words καὶ ('both') ἰδία . . . καθιστάντας are added in explanation of πράττοντας . . . περὶ τὸν πείθοντα.

έλέγομεν 491 B ff.

495 A

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

πλοῦτοι] The plural has the effect of scorn.

οὐ γάρ] 'Yes, I see that all this is true: for it was not a bad, but a true observation.' κακῶς has to be understood from the beginning of the preceding sentence—οὐ κακῶς ἐλέγομεν.

δλίγης καὶ ἄλλως γιγνομένης] 'which even otherwise' (i. e. setting aside the cause of destruction just mentioned) 'is a rare growth.'

ώς ήμεις φαμέν] v. 476 B: supra 491 A, B.

καὶ ἐκ τούτων δὴ τῶν ἀνδρῶν ... οὖτε ἰδιώτην οὔτε πόλιν δρᾳ] Plato thinks that it is only great natures which do great evil. Yet it is almost a condition of men's greatness that they should also in spite of themselves do some good.

The largeness and force and originality of a man's character are

E

the qualities which give him power over his fellows. The narrow nature, which is incapable of attracting others and has no intelligence either of things or persons, is necessarily unable to act upon them.

καὶ οἱ τὰ μέγιστα] καί = 'also,' anticipating καὶ οἱ τὰγαθά. The latter clause introduces the reverse statement, though not immediately in point.

καὶ οἱ τἀγαθά, οἱ ἀν ταύτη τύχωσι ῥυέντες] 'and' [from these men, i. e. the philosophers, come those who do] 'the' [greatest] 'goods, being such of them as are drawn in this direction.' The element of chance is never wholly eliminated in Plato.

οι̂ς μάλιστα προσήκει] sc. ή φιλοσοφία—' to whom she is nearest of kin.' There is a reference to the Athenian law which compelled the nearest kinsman to marry an orphan maiden. Cp. Laws xi. 924.

C τὴν δέ, κ.τ.λ.] The bad philosophers are not the philosophic natures spoilt, but the unphilosophic pretenders to philosophy. δέ answers both to  $\mu$ έν (οὖτοι  $\mu$ έν) and τε (αὐτοί τε).

1) ὅμως γὰρ δὴ...(Ε) τυγχάνουσιν] The sentence is really unfinished, the finite verb τυγχάνουσιν, substituted for the participle by attraction from λελώβηνται, giving it a fallacious appearance of completeness. The sense is completed figuratively in the words τοῦ δεσπότου τὴν θυγατέρα μέλλοντος γαμεῖν, κ.τ.λ., of the next sentence, and literally in 496 Λ ὅταν αὐτῆ πλησιάζοντες ὁμιλῶσι κ.τ.λ.

The personification which follows is suggested in the words ωσπερ ορφανὴν συγγενῶν (c), and continued by the help of οἱ ξυνόντες αὐτῆ (ibid.), until the idea is complete and philosophy is transformed into a gentle maiden who is compelled by poverty to marry a tinker and has offspring <math>νόθα καὶ φαῆλα. In the words τίδαί; ... ἀληθινῆς ἐχόμενον; the simile is blended with that which it is intended to illustrate.

δοκεῖς . . . διαφέρειν αὐτοὺς ἰδεῖν ] ἰδεῖν is epexegetic := ' to look at.'

φαλακροῦ] is only added to make a more contemptible image, while σμικροῦ is in keeping with the diminutives ἀνθρωπίσκοι, τεχνίον, and νεωστὶ . . . λελυμένου continues the figure οἱ ἐκ τῶν εἰργμῶν . . . ἀποδιδράσκοντες. τοῦ δεσπότου is in construction with θυγατέρα.

496 προσήκοντα ἀκοῦσαι σοφίσματα] 'fit to be called sophisms.' Cp. Lysis 207 Λ οὐ τὸ καλὸς εἶναι μόνον ἄξιος ἀκοῦσαι, and see L. and S., s. v. ἀκούω, iii. 2. The use of this idiom here implies the familiar Republic personification of λόγος, in the shape of the διανοήματά τε καὶ δόξας, which are the offspring of the unworthy marriage. προσήκοντα = οίς προσήκει,—a 'personal' construction.

496

καὶ οὐδὲν . . . ἐχόμενον; ] 'And nothing genuine or worthy of true wisdom or having to do with it.' There is no sufficient reason for cancelling axion, which may be either taken absolutely, or as governing the genitive as well as exómeror, which in this case is pleonastic, like φανείς, έχων, μολών, &c. But the reading of Ven. Π, ἄξιων ώς, suggests the possibility of \*άξίως.

πάνσμικρον δή τι For the collective neuter cp. supra 490 E σμικρον δέ τι έκφεύγει: 402 Ε ὅ τί περ αν σωθη.

καταληφθέν, 'detained by exile,' sc. from deserting philosophy.

βραχὺ δέ πού τι . . . ἐπ' αὐτὴν ἂν ἔλθοι εὐφυές gives the reason of δικαίως ἀτιμάσαν: its force may be rendered thus:— rightly scorning it by reason of its own natural excellence.'

κατασχείν . . . (c) κατέχει ] SC. πρὸς τῆ φιλοσοφία.

τὸ δαιμόνιον σημείον ] On this subject see Apology 31 D: Theaet. 151 A: Theages 128 E: Xen. Mem. i. 4. What we gather respecting this 'familiar' of Socrates is (1) that he had experienced these intimations from childhood (Apol. 31): (2) they prohibited but never instigated a course of action; they would stop him when going out of his house or forbid him to proceed in the middle of a speech (ibid. D), or prevent his taking back truant pupils (Theaet. 151), or hinder his departure till he had expiated some trifling impiety (Phaedr. 242 B): (3) the δαιμόνιον is always described by him in the neuter gender, - once in a doubtful dialogue as having a voice (Theages 128 E); also as a special monitor which is peculiar to himself, as in the text and Xen. Mem. i. 4. Xenophon is very anxious that we should believe his master's account of this strange experience; the simplicity of Socrates' own statement is a strong reason for doing so. It is not to be confounded with the general consciousness of a divine mission received by Socrates from the Oracle, or with special intimations such as that given by the dream in the Phaedo (60 E). There is nothing wonderful or mysterious beyond the fact itself: no intimations are given by the δαιμόνιον of future events or divine truths. Nor can we easily set bounds to the latent forms of instinct which reason may assume.

В

C

Republic VI. 496 C

497

or deny the possibility of mental phenomena, which are without parallel in ordinary experience.

η ... τινι ἄλλω η οὐδενί] A slight extension of a common idiom, for which cp. Apology 17 Β η τι η οὐδέν.

τούτων δη των ολίγων οι γενόμενοι] Cp. Thuc. iii. 56, § 7 ων ημείς γενόμενοι.

If a perfectly wise and just man were to appear, how would the world receive him? Would he make his voice heard in opposition to the opinions and practices of the day? Would any party range themselves on his side? Or would he be an outcast and an exile, 'wandering about in sheepskins and goatskins?' Would he have been burnt at the Reformation, or would he be tolerated in our own day?

 $\epsilon \pi \hat{\iota} \tau \hat{\eta} \nu \tau \hat{\varphi} \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \varphi$  βοήθειαν] The manuscript authority is nearly divided between  $\tau \hat{\varphi} \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \varphi$  (Par. A: Vind. F) and  $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \omega \nu$  (Π M). The former was adopted by Schneider and is idiomatic: but  $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu \delta \iota \kappa \alpha i \omega \nu$  (the objective genitive) is not ungrammatical. Both readings have the same meaning: 'to the assistance of what is just.'

1) ἀλλ' ἄσπερ εἰς θηρία . . . ιλεώς τε καὶ εὐμενὴς ἀπαλλάξεται] Cp. Gorg. 521, 522, where Socrates gives the reason why he takes no part in politics, viz. because he would have been long ago put to death.

εἷs πᾶσιν ἀγρίοις ἀντέχειν] ἀγρίοις is emphatic and a part of the predicate:=ἀγρίοις οὖσι or ἀγριαἶνουσι, 'singly to oppose the fury of them all.' The collocation of εἷs πᾶσιν aids the antithesis.

λογισμῷ λαβών] The change from the plural to the singular (ἰδόντες τὴν μανίαν... ταῦτα πάντα λογισμῷ λαβών) is due to the singular in the image (ὥσπερ εἰς θηρία ἄνθρωπος ἐμπεσών).

Ε τὴν ἀπαλλαγήν, κ.τ.λ.] 'He will take his departure from it with a fair hope, in peace and good-will.' αὐτοῦ, sc. τοῦ βίου.

οὐδέ γε . . . τὰ κοινὰ σώσει] Shall a man acquiesce in the state of life, politics, education, which he finds around him, retiring behind a wall in stormy times, or shall he take arms against a sea of troubles and strive to set men right? That is a question which admits of a general answer so far as this: That he who from cowardice or self-interest or over-refinement or indolence or irresolution fails in resisting the prejudice or injustice or falsehood of his

497

A

age, is wanting in the fulfilment of the highest duty of a citizen and a man. Yet, in the ordinary state of society, the antagonism between the individual and the world, whether of politics or of public opinion, is not so great as is implied in the Platonic contrast. The spirit which replies to divine goodness with the words, 'We have a law and by our law he ought to die,' is, in Plato's language (supra 496 c), hardly worth mentioning, having only occurred once perhaps in the history of mankind. Most societies have better, as well as worse impulses; if they are not so good as the best individuals, of whom they are partly composed, neither are they so bad as the worst. Of their nobler impulses the philosopher may avail himself: he is the Master of those that think; his gentle qualities may readily be appreciated by all. Nor does he really stand alone: many intermediate minds are the conductors between himself and the multitude, with whom he may sometimes also make a direct alliance, like the King and the Commons in the Roman State, against the prejudices or interests of the few. His duty is to struggle rather than to win, in the faith, which is the meeting-point of philosophy and religion, that truth will finally prevail. His place is not in the congenial state which Plato offers him—this would only limit him; but in the world at large, in which he makes himself felt as a power.

> 497 A-498 C

Philosophy must continue thus degraded and defamed, until the true philosopher obtain a state and constitution suited to him, Thus, having a true environment, Philosophy will prove in action that she is alone divine. Such a perfect constitution has now been described in outline. But the education of the philosophic rulers has yet to be determined. And first, the method of their training in philosophy must be the opposite of that now in vogue. Instead of getting a smattering of dialectic in the brief interim between school and business, after which, as things now are, the student hardly meddles with philosophy again, they shall be content in youth with elementary mental discipline and attend seriously to the strengthening of the physical frame; until the age arrives when the mind approaches her maturity. Then they shall increase the gymnastics of the mind. And when declining strength exempts them from public services, they shall be permitted to devote themselves entirely to the pursuit which they love, and so prepare themselves for blessedness to come.

τὴν προσήκουσαν αὐτῆ τίνα . . . λέγεις] For the form of expression cp. v. 475 ε τοὺς δὲ ἀληθινούς, ἔφη, τίνας λέγεις;

ἐπαιτιῶμαι] τὰς νῦν πολιτείας is easily supplied, but is unnecessary.

διὸ καὶ στρέφεσθαι . . . κρατούμενον ἰέναι] 'And so it (i. e. the philosophic nature) is warped and changed, just as a foreign seed, sown in an alien soil, fades away (ἐξίτηλον) and tends to be subdued and pass (κρατούμενον ἰέναι) into the native stock.' For ἰέναι εἰς cp. Laws viii. 834 D παιδευμάτων εἰς ἔθος ἰόντων.

The words which follow, οὖτω καὶ τοῦτο ... ἐκπίπτειν, are added as if ὥσπερ ξενικὸν σπέρμα, κ.τ.λ., had been quite independent of διὸ καὶ στρέφεσθαι ... αὐτήν. The construction would have been more correct if the sentence had terminated at ἰέναι, or if καί had been inserted before ὥσπερ ξενικὸν σπέρμα. As the sentence stands there is an asyndeton either before ὥσπερ οr οὖτω.

C δηλώσει] is impersonal := δῆλον ἔσται: cp. Gorg. 483 D δηλοί δὲ ταῖτα πολλαχοῦ ὅτι οὕτως ἔχει.

 $\hat{\eta}\nu$ ] 'was always,' even when rejected of men.

τὰ μεν ἄλλα, κ.τ.λ.] 'In other respects this one (sc. ην ημείς διεληλύθαμεν) is the best constitution': but there was one defect in it. We did indeed say at the time that the spirit of the legislator was to be preserved, but we did not show sufficiently how this was to be effected. τοῦτο δὲ αὐτό, 'this very point' (which is excluded and excepted by τὰ ἄλλα) was mentioned, but not adequately discussed.

 $\epsilon$ ρρήθη μέν...(d) ἀλλ' οὐχ ἱκανῶς ... έδηλώθη] The construction is broken by the answer,  $\epsilon$ ρρήθη γάρ,  $\epsilon$ φη: and ἀλλ' οὐχ ἱκανῶς ...  $\epsilon$ δηλώθη takes the place of οὐχ ἱκανῶς δ'  $\epsilon$ δηλώθη.

Socrates had said (ἐρρήθη: cp. iii. 412–414) that it was necessary to have an authority in the state that should preserve the spirit of the legislator. The question as to how this was to be effected had only been partly answered in Book iii (οὐχ ἱκανῶς ἐδηλώθη), owing to the objection of Adeimantus (φόβω ῶν ὑμεῖς, κ.τ.λ.) at the beginning of Book iv (419 ff.), and the more serious interruption at the beginning of v (450 ff.), which led to the discussion of communism. Socrates now proceeds to complete (τὸ λοιπόν) his answer by stating how the study of philosophy is to be pursued.

D λόγον 'idea,' 'conception,' 'reasoned notion.'

ων ύμεις ἀντιλαμβανόμενοι ων, sc. ἐκείνων α (cognate accus.).

αὖτοῦ] 'of it,' i. e. of the question which we were discussing in Book iii.

οὐ \*πάντων ῥῷστον] πάντως MSS.—' not by any means the easiest.' Bekker's correction, οὐ \*πάντων ῥῷστον, is unnecessary [B. J.]. But the change is slight and the phrase more idiomatic [L. C.].

Republic VI. 497

καὶ τὸ λεγόμενον . . . χαλεπά] τῷ ὄντι is an addition of Socrates', 'we may indeed say in the words of the proverb.'

άλλ' ὅμως . . . φανεροῦ γενομένου] 'Still, he said, let us clear up this point, and so complete the demonstration.'

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

νῦν μέν... (498Λ) περὶ τοὺς λόγους] 'At present those who do engage in philosophy are mere striplings, just past their boyhood: they approach—that is, those of them who are most thought of as philosophers—the most difficult part of the subject; and I mean by the most difficult part, dialectic; in the interval before keeping house and going into business, and then betake themselves off.' That is to say, the study of philosophy, as at present pursued, begins too early, at the wrong end, and ends too soon. The opposite advice is given by Callicles in the Gorgias (485).

(1) Only the extreme limit (οἶκονομίας καὶ χρηματισμοῦ) of the interval (τὸ μεταξύ) is mentioned; the other is to be gathered from ἐκ παίδων: 'between boyhood and business.' Or (2) we may take τὸ μεταξύ... χρηματισμοῦ, with Stallbaum, as meaning 'in the spare moments of housekeeping and business.'

498

οἱ φιλοσοφώτατοι ποιούμενοι] On comparing vii. 538 c τῶν ἄλλων ποιουμένων οἰκείων, it appears that ποιούμενοι is a qualifying word like δοκοῦντες, &c., and is to be understood passively: 'who are thought to be most accomplished in philosophy.'

πρὸς δὲ τὸ γῆρας . . . αὖθις οὐκ ἐξάπτονται] Cp. Aristot. Meteor. ii. 2, § 9 περὶ δὲ τὸν ἥλιον, ἀδύνατον τοῦτο συμβαίνειν ἐπεὶ στρεφομένου γε τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον, ὥσπερ ἐκείνοί φασι, δῆλον ὅτι καὶ ὁ ἥλιος οὐ μόνον καθάπερ ὁ Ἡράκλειτός φησι, νέος ἐψ' ἡμέρῃ ἐστίν, ἀλλ' ἀεὶ νέος συνεχῶς.

δεί δὲ πῶς;] ςς. πράττειν.

11

πᾶν τοὖναντίον ] SC. δεῖ πράττειν.

ύπηρεσίαν φιλοσοφία κτωμένους] In the Protagoras Plato represents this principle as recognized in the ordinary education of the Greek: Protag. 326 Β ΐνα τὰ σώματα βελτίω ἔχοντες ὑπηρετῶσι τῷ διανοία χρηστῷ οὕση.

προϊούσης δὲ τῆς ἡλικίας, ἐν ἥ] 'as the period of life advances in which.' Two notions are combined: 'As the time of life goes forwards,' and 'as the particular age arrives.'

Republic VI. 498 C

ὅταν δὲ λήγη . . . μοῖραν ἐπιστήσειν πρέπουσαν] 'But when the strength fails, and a man is past political and military duties, they should range at will and devote themselves to no other pursuit, except as a secondary matter, those, that is, who are to live happily and after death to crown the life they have lived with a fitting destiny in the world below.' The subject of γίγνηται is  $\tau \iota \iota \iota$ , for which the Indef. Plur. is substituted in ἀφέτους, κ.τ.λ.

For a similar use of the term ἄφετοι, applied to the sons of Pericles, who are left to get their political education where they can, cp. Protag. 320  $\Lambda$  αὐτοὶ περιϊόντες νέμονται ὥσπερ ἄφετοι, ἐάν που αὐτόματοι περιτύχωσι τῆ ἀρετῆ.

498 C-502 C

Adeimantus thinks that the zeal of Socrates will be met with equal zeal on the part of his opponents, beginning with Thrasymachus, 'Do not try to cause ill-feeling between Thrasymachus and me, who are now friends, although we were never enemies. For I shall never relax my efforts to do good to him and to all men, and my work may bear fruit in another life, if not in this,' He adds that it is no blame to ordinary men that they do not believe, since they have had sophistry palmed upon them for truth, and an artificial combination of words for the spontaneous unity of nature. Nor have they ever seen a perfect man ruling in a perfect state. Socrates therefore once more reiterates his main position, that there is no hope for mankind unless either the few who are now 'useless' should have supreme power, or the actual potentates should be inspired with a genuine love of true philosophy. Then, and not till then, the ideal state will come into being. And when the vulgar see the philosopher as he really is, they will be of another mind. The majority of men cannot be angry with one who loves them, or be jealous of one who is free from all jealousy and personality. For his mind dwells, not among the contentions of earth, but in the divine order. He will take the state in hand and make a 'tabula rasa,' whereon he will plan out the ideal of human society, looking at the abstract principles of virtue, and at the actual traces of it existing among men, framing out of both together the image of a divine humanity. He—or they, if there be more than one—is alone qualified for this work. Nor is it inconceivable that in the whole course of time one such may arise, and may legislate for a willing people, or that he may make his laws according to the spirit of our doctrines. In that case our ideal ('though hard and rare') will be actually realized.

μὴ διάβαλλε, κ.τ.λ.] See note on i. 336 B. The words οὐδὲ πρὸ τοῦ, κ.τ.λ., are in keeping with the good humour which, after the storm, Socrates has contrived to restore at the end of Book i, and which remains unbroken at the beginning of Book v. For the use of διαβάλλειν cp. Symp. 222 p ὅπως ἐμὲ καὶ σὲ μηδεὶς διαβάλη.

Ropublic VI. 498 C

όταν . . . ἐντύχωσι λόγοις] For this notion of discourses taking place in another life cp. Apol. 41, Phaedo 68 A, B, in which Socrates anticipates his meeting with great souls in Hades. In the present passage, however, the reference is to a future life on earth after the interval of a thousand years. It is curious after this allusion to find Glaucon in x. 608 D expressing surprise when Socrates announces the immortality of the Soul.

D

εἰς οὐδὲν μὲν οὖν . . . τὸν ἄπαντα] Cp. x. 608 c τί δ' ἄν, ἦν δ' έγώ, ἔν γε δλίγω χρόνω μέγα γένοιτο ; πῶς γὰρ οὖτός γε ὁ ἐκ παιδὸς μέχρι πρεσβύτου χρόνος πρὸς πάντα ὀλίγος πού τις ἃν εἴη. Οὐδὲν μὲν οὖν, ἔφη. Τί οὖν ; οἴει ἀθανάτω πράγματι ὑπὲρ τοσούτου δεῖν χρόνου ἐσπουδακέναι, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὑπὲρ τοῦ παντός ;

E

èξεπίτηδες ἀλλήλοις ώμοιωμένα] 'artificially made to agree with one another.'

ἀπὸ τοῦ αὐτομάτου, ὅσπερ νῦν] This allusion to the 'spontaneous harmony' of the dialogue is partly a mode of praising his own work (cp. Shakespeare, *Jul. Caes.* iii. 1, 111 'How many ages hence | Shall this our lofty scene be acted over | In states unborn and accents yet unknown!' and Laws vii. 811, where Plato eulogizes his own compositions with the freedom and garrulity of old age), and partly expresses his real conviction that the harmony of his dialogues (as of a living creature—Phaedr. 264 c) was not merely a work of art, but had a real correspondence with the truth of the ideas. Cp. Theaet. 200 E, Phil. 20 C.

λόγων . . . ἐλευθέρων] 'discourses noble and free.'

499

οΐων ζητείν] 'whose nature is to seek.' οΐων = τοιούτων ώστε. The arguments are again personified.

πρὸς δόξαν 'to producing an impression.'

πόρρωθεν ἀσπαζομένων] 'giving a distant welcome.' Cp. Psalm exxxviii. 6 'The proud he knoweth afar off.' The phrase occurs in Eurip. Hippol. 102 πρόσωθεν αὐτὴν ἁγνὸς ὧν ἀσπάζομαι.

тотє] v. 473 D.

B

καὶ δεδιότες ὅμως] 'although with trembling.' καί as in καίπερ.

οὐδέ γ' ἀνὴρ ὁμοίως] 'No, nor can an individual become equally perfect,' sc. as he would in a kingdom of philosophers. See above 497  $\Lambda$  οὐδέ γε, εἶπον, τὰ μέγιστα, κ.τ.λ.

περιβάλη] which is found in the best MSS., is probably correct: 'until necessity (1) encompasses them ' (L. and S. s. v.  $\pi$ εριβάλλω, ii) to take charge of the city and the city to obey them, or (2) 'constrains them ' (lit. 'invests them with it'), the infinitives taking the place of an accusative. The inferior reading,  $\pi$ αραβάλλη, must be taken intransitively, like  $\pi$ αραβάλλω in viii. 556 c  $\tilde{\sigma}$ ταν  $\pi$ αραβάλλωσιν ἀλλήλοις οῖ τε ἄρχοντες καὶ οἱ ἀρχόμενοι.

Τούτων δὲ πότερα . . . ἔχειν λόγον] 'To suppose that either or both of these alternatives is impossible, I maintain to be quite unreasonable.' πότερος is the indefinite, 'either of the two,' as in Theaet. 145 A τί δ', εὶ ποτέρου τὴν ψυχὴν ἐπαινοῖ πρὸς ἀρετήν, κ.τ.λ., and elsewhere. This is one of Plato's subtleties of language which appear to be lost in later writers. The pronoun οὐδένα is more emphatic than the simple negative οὐκ ἔχειν λόγον.

εἰ τοίνυν . . . (D) ἐγκρατὴς γένηται] ἔτοιμοι, sc. ἐσμέν. αὕτη ἡ Μοῦσα, sc. ἡ φιλοσοφία, αὕτη referring to ἄκροις εἰς φιλοσοφίαν at the beginning of the sentence.

έν τῷ ἀπείρῳ τῷ παρεληλυθότι χρόνῳ] The fancy of ancient writers led them to speculate on the boundless past more than on the future. Herodotus has no difficulty in imagining that the Delta might have been accumulated in 10,000 years. Socrates in the Theaetetus (174 E) imagines infinite time, in which every man's

С

pedigree has contained princes, as well as peasants, many times over. In the Laws infinite time, in which a series of destructions is supposed to have occurred, is said to be the origin of states (iii. 677). Similar speculations occur in the Politicus and Timaeus. In this respect, as in several others, Greek thought seems to occupy an intermediate space between the dreamy infinity of the Oriental and the narrower notions of the West.

Republic VI. 499 C

 $\hat{\eta}$  †καὶ ἐὰν οὕτω . . . ἀποκρινεῖσθαι | (1) The difficulty of this passage is removed by reading  $\hat{\eta}$  for  $\hat{\eta}$ , placing a full stop after ἀποκρινείσθαι, and joining καί . . . ούτω: 'You will surely say that, if they look at the philosophers in this light too' (and not in the former only), 'they will change their mind and answer in another strain.' Cp. Thuc. v. 45 του 'Αλκιβιάδην εφόβουν μή καὶ ην ες τον δημον ταῦτα λέγωσιν, ἐπαγάγωνται τὸ πληθος, where καί marks the antithesis of  $\epsilon s \tau \delta \nu \delta \hat{\eta} \mu o \nu to \epsilon \nu \tau \hat{\eta} \beta o \nu \lambda \hat{\eta}$ . This avoids the harshness of taking ἀλλοίαν δόξαν in two opposite senses (i. e. (a) ' different from their earlier opinion': and (b) 'the same with their earlier opinion but different from yours') within a few lines. (2) But the reading q η οὐκ ἐάν suggests a clearer sense which can be obtained by Stallbaum's simple expedient of changing  $\tau o \iota$  to  $\tau \epsilon$ : 'or supposing them to look at the question in this light, will you not say that they will adopt a different opinion and make another reply?' The repetition of ἀλλοίαν has then a natural emphasis. For the omission of a negative see note on iv. 439 E. Cp. for the spirit of the passage Phaedr. 268 D αλλ' οὐκ αν αγροίκως γε, οἶμαι, λοιδορήσειαν, κ.τ.λ.

500 A

ἄφθονόν τε καὶ πρᾶον ὄντα] with this use of ἄφθονος cp. ἄθυμος in iii. 411 B, Laws x. 888 A. It is remarkable that Plato should be found asserting the goodness of ordinary human nature when treated with gentleness and consideration.

ἀμέλει] See note on iv. 422 c.

ekeirous] Supra 495 c, d.

В

λοιδορουμένους . . . αὐτοῖς] αὐτοῖς is better than αὐτοῖς, being more in keeping with the spirit of the passage: cp. supra 499 Ε μὴ φιλονεικῶν ἀλλὰ παραμυθούμενος, and infra c μαχόμενον αὐτοῖς. It was by no means an uncommon practice of the old philosophers to abuse the people. For an illustration of ἐπεισκωμάζεσθαι compare the amusing description of Alcibiades in Symp. 213 ff. A still

В

more fanciful use of the metaphor occurs in Theaet. 184  $\Lambda$   $\hat{\nu}\pi\hat{\delta}$   $\tau\hat{\omega}\nu$   $\hat{\epsilon}\pi\epsilon\iota\sigma\kappa\omega\mu\alpha\zeta\acute{\delta}\nu\tau\omega\nu$   $\lambda\acute{\delta}\gamma\omega\nu$ .

It may be often doubted whether the persecution of religious and philosophical teachers is to be laid to the door of their virtues or of their faults: in the nineteenth century and under ordinary circumstances, rather to the latter. No man is now persecuted for his goodness: there is far more danger that the rewards which he receives may injure the bloom of his disinterestedness. He is more likely to be persecuted for the love of truth, when the truth happens to be opposed to the prevailing sentiments of his age and country. Yet here, again, much will depend upon himself. The philosopher who has no kindness for the many and is too fastidious to sympathize with them, easily becomes the object of enmity to those who are unacquainted with him. This does not show that mankind deliberately prefer falsehood to truth, any more than evil to good.

ηκιστα...ποιοῦντας] Names and authorities in the place of reasons and proofs, personalities instead of facts, in ancient as well as modern times, mark a superficial and unphilosophic character. So the μεγαλόψυχος in Aristotle is οὖκ ἀνθρωπολόγος (N. E. iv. 3, § 31). Yet those who are guilty of these faults are almost always unconscious of them.

πολύ γ'] ες. ήκιστα.

C ἀλλ' εἰς τεταγμένα ἄττα, κ.τ.λ.] In a similar spirit it is said in the Timaeus (47 A-c) that men should in their lives imitate the unchanging motions of the heavens. Compare also the philosopher in the Theaetetus 174 ff., and, for the loftiness of κάτω βλέπειν, Sophist 216 καθορῶντες ὑψόθεν τὸν τῶν κάτω βίον.

ταῦτα μιμεῖσθαί τε . . . ἀφομοιοῦσθαι] sc.  $\delta$ εῖ, elicited from οὐδὲ . . . σχολή, the positive from the negative.

άφομοιοῦσθαι] sc. τούτοις.

διαβολὴ δ' ἐν πᾶσι πολλή] ἐν πᾶσι may mean either (1) 'among all men': or (2) 'in all things,' i. e. attending every form of human-life. 'The philosopher attains to divinity as far as man can: but there is always detraction going on.' The divine life is not complete until its excellence is acknowledged by mankind.

δημοτικής ἀρετής] Cp. iv. 430 c πολιτικήν γε and note: Phaedo 82 B οί τὴν δημοτικήν τε καὶ πολιτικὴν ἀρετὴν ἐπιτετηδευκότες.

οὐ χαλεπανοῦσιν... (501 A) ὁ οὐ πάνυ ῥάδιον] 'They will not be angry if they understand. But tell me, what is their manner of drawing it?' 'I mean, I replied, they will take for their tablet a state and human nature, and will begin by making a clean surface, which is not at all an easy thing to do.'

Republic VI. 500 E

The modern philosopher will rather say: ὅπερ οὐ πάνυ δυνατόν. Neither individuals nor states can wholly break with their antecedents. The power of habit or tradition, in institutions as well as characters brings back the former things.

501 A

ἀλλ' οὖν . . . ἢ αὐτοὶ ποιῆσαι] 'However, you know that this is the point which will at once distinguish them from the others: they will have nothing to do with individual or state, and will draft no laws, until they have either (ἤ) received or (ἤ) themselves made a clear surface.' In other words they will begin with the abstraction of a state. A method of effecting such a 'clean sweep' is suggested at the end of Book vii, where all persons of ten years old and upwards are to be sent out of the city.

οὐκοῦν... τῆς πολιτείας] 'Do you not suppose that the next step will be to make an outline of the form of the constitution?' For the meaning of ὑπογράφειν cp. the opposition of ὑπογραφή and τελεωτάτη ἀπεργασία infra 504 p. In Protag. 326 p the word is used of the writing-master setting a copy.

ἀπεργαζόμενοι 'In filling up the outline.'

В

τὸ φύσει δίκαιον... τὸ ἐν τοῖς ἀνθρώποις] i.e. to natural justice and to that justice which exists among men. Cp. Phaedo 103 Β οὕτε τὸ ἐν ἡμῶν οὕτε τὸ ἐν τῆ φύσει: ibid. 102 p. The absolute ideal or the ideal in nature, is opposed to the actual in man. The pronoun is resumed in ἀπ² ἐκείνου.

ἐμποιοῖεν... θεοείκελον] 'they would put into the picture what is manlike, mingling and mixing it from the modes of human action, forming their conception of it from that ideal, which Homer, when existing among men, called divine and godlike.' There is possibly an allusion to the secondary meaning of ἀνδρείκελον = a pigment of the colour of human flesh.

ἀπ' ἐκείνου τεκμαιρόμενοι, κ.τ.λ.] Does an artist paint from an ideal in the mind's eye, or from observation of nature and life? Is moral and political philosophy to be gathered deductively from ideas, or inductively from experience? The same answer may be

Republic VI. 501 B

B

given to both questions: (1) that different minds work in different ways: one with eye and thought simultaneously, the other with a conception that always seems to outrun the power of execution. One fills up a previously existing outline, the other creates piecemeal: the ideal is first in one mind, the real in another. And one man is a philosopher from running about in life, another from reading and study. (2) The opposition of fact and idea, though often made and occasionally justified by the differences of human character or genius, is not, speaking generally, a true one; ideas and ideals are only more universal and distant facts, in which the particularity and confusedness of sense is lost.

- C οΰς διατεταμένους ἐφ' ἡμᾶς ἔφησθα ἰέναι] Viz. v. 474 Λ θείν διατεταμένους, κ.τ.λ.
- 1) ην ημείς διήλθομεν] Referring once more to supra 485 ff.

τί δέ; τὴν τοιαύτην . . . ἀφωρίσαμεν] The change from μή to οὐ shows that ἀμφισβητῆσαι has been forgotten, some general notion such as λέγειν having taken its place; and in what follows φήσειν can only be explained by a recurrence to οἴει or some similar word implied in the preceding question, the infinitive being suggested by ἔσεσθαι preceding.

Ε ην μυθολογοῦμεν λόγω [Cp. once more iii. 389 p ἐάν γε . . . ἐπί γε λόγω ἔργα τεληται.

ήττον Sc. άγριανοῦσιν.

βούλει...(502 A) ὁμολογήσωσιν] 'Do you wish that we should say, not that they are less angry, but that they have become altogether gentle.' So the unregenerate materialists in the Sophist are imagined to be better than they are, for the sake of the argument (Soph. 246 D, 247 E). Cp. also i. 354 Λ ὑπὸ σοῦ γε, ... ὧ Θρασύμαχε, ἐπειδή μοι πρᾶος ἐγένου καὶ χαλεπαίνων ἐπαύσω.

ηττον φωμεν] sc. άγριαίνειν.

 $\frac{1}{2}$  αἰσχυνθέντες] 'from shame' at our magnanimity in saying they are quite gentle.

τις]  $\tau$ ίς; which proves to be the reading of Par. Λ, agrees equally well with the answer οὐδ' ἀν εῖς, but cp. ἔχει τις . . . , ἔσθ' ὅστις . . . , infra.

ώς μὲν γὰρ . . . ξυγχωροῦμεν] Supra 491 ff., 499 d. γενόμενος] =  $\epsilon i \gamma \acute{\nu}$ ουτο, 'were he to arise.'

άλλὰ δή . . . ἀδύνατον Plato is arguing about the probability of Republic his perfect state coming into being, and he assumes this to be possible if only one philosophic nature in the course of ages remains uncorrupted, and finds a city willing to obey him—that is the first step. The ruler lays down his laws and the people execute them -that is the second step. But why should not that which approves itself to us approve itself to him? Or, in other words, 'Why should not the laws which he lays down be the same with ours?'

VI. 502 В

We may now return to the education of the ruling class, which, as was said above, must be arranged with due regard to the age best fitted for each branch of study. And first, the tests which we now demand for them will be more severe than those previously required, Their patriotism must indeed be proof against all assaults, but they must also be unwearied in learning. Now this implies the combination, rarely found, of quickness with steadiness, of eagerness with persistence. If this higher nature is to be tested, the course of studies must not only include such provisional views of justice, temperance and other virtues, as have been given above: but the pupil must be taken round by what was then briefly indicated as the 'longer way.' In other words, he must not stop short of the highest of all studies. that of the idea of good, -- a thing of which all men have a presentiment, but which none have grasped, yet without which all pursuits are vain. This the true guardian must not fail to know if our state is to be perfectly ordered. Yet for the present this supreme idea, transcending not pleasure only, but wisdom, knowledge, truth, and even Being, cannot be defined, but only shadowed forth. As the sun is the source not only of light and vision, but also of the generation and growth of visible things, so the Idea of Good is the supreme cause, not of truth and knowledge only, but of Being. The analogy may be carried further. As in the visible world there are shadows and (so-called) substances, so in the intelligible there is a lower sphere in which ideas are symbolized by sensible things, and a higher one, where the ideas are contemplated absolutely in subordination to the idea of good. Thus:-

502 C-511 E

The visible world presided over by the sun has

- a. Shadows perceived by (a) Conjecture:
- b. Realities perceived by  $(\beta)$ Faith

The intellectual world presided over by the Idea of Good has

- c. Mathematical truth perceived by (y) Scientific thought:
- d. Ideal truth perceived by (8) Reason.

Republic VI. 502 D

Ε

В

C

οὐδέν . . . τὸ σοφόν μοι ἐγένετο] 'I gained nothing by the trick.' Cp. Symp. 214  $\Lambda$  πρὸς μὲν Σωκράτη, ὧ ἄνδρες, τὸ σόφισμά μοι οὐδέν. The allusion is to v. 449 c and the passage there referred to—iv. 423 E.

τὴν...δυσχέρειαν] 'the troublesomeness,' i. e. both the inherent difficulty of this, and the dislike which the statement of it was sure to occasion.

ή παντελῶς ἀληθής] The absolutely right arrangement being that the rulers must be philosophers. He proceeds to take up the subject at the point where in Book iii he had digressed. The φύλακες had been supposed to go through a novitiate, with a view of testing, their temperance and courage: 413 Ε καὶ τὸν ἀεὶ ἔν τε παισὶ καὶ νεανίσκοις καὶ ἐν ἀνδράσι βασανιζόμενον καὶ ἀκήρατον ἐκβαίνοντα καταστατέον ἄρχοντα τῆς πόλεως . . . τὸν δὲ μὴ τοιοῦτον ἀποκριτέον.

ἐλέγομεν] iii. 412 c ff.

503 τὸ δόγμα τοῦτο] as appears from iii. 412 E, is that which is implied in φιλοπόλιδας, viz. the determination ô μὲν ἃν τῆ πόλει ἡγήσωνται ξυμφέρειν, πάση προθυμία ποιεῖν, ας δ' ἃν μή, μηδενὶ τρόπω πραξαι ἃν ἐθέλειν.

ἢ τὸν ἀδυνατοῦντα ἀποκριτέον] 'else, he who failed was to be rejected.'

παρακαλυπτομένου] proves to be the reading of A, as well as of Π M. The reading παρακαλύπτεσθαι appears in no manuscript.

ην γὰρ διήλθομεν φύσιν δεῖν ὑπάρχειν αὐτοῖς] ' for the nature which we described as needing to be present in them.' διέρχεσθαι here takes the construction of λέγειν: ὡς δέον would be more regular than the infinitive δεῖν.

διεσπασμένη] διεσπασμένα was wrongly read by Cobet (Var. Lectt., ed. sec., p. 531, quoted by Baiter) in Par. A. It is really found only in a'v, and was adopted by Stephanus from the Latin version of Ficinus. διεσπασμένη is now restored.

εὖμαθεῖς καὶ μνήμονες ... ἐθέλειν ζῆν] There are two ways of construing this passage:—(1) 'You know that people who have a quick apprehension and memory, shrewdness and acuteness, and such like qualities, are not wont to be at the same time of a generous and noble spirit, so as to be such as to wish (ὅστε τοιοῦτοι εἶναι οἶοι) to live an orderly life, quietly and steadily.' (2) 'People who have

a quick apprehension and memory, and shrewdness and acuteness, and other such qualities, as you know (and we must add the impetuous and noble), are not wont to be at the same time such as to wish to live orderly.'

Republic VI. 503 C

The former interpretation (1) gives the more obvious and natural construction. But it is objected, not without a show of reason, that the combination of high-spirit with quickness of intellect does not necessarily produce quietness of conduct (μετὰ ἡσυχίας ... ζῆν). Το which it may be replied that νεανικοί, as well as μεγαλοπρεπεῖς, is here used in a good sense, implying, not youthful impetuosity, but a robust and high-toned character. For this use of νεανικός cp. supra 491 Ε ἡ οἴει τὰ μεγάλα ἀδικήματα ... ἐκ φαύλης, ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐκ νεανικῆς φύσεως τροφῆ διολομένης γίγνεσθαι ...; For the connexion of μεγαλοπρέπεια with σωφροσύνη and κοσμιότης cp. supra 500 c, d.

τὰ βέβαια . . . ἤθη] The ἐμβριθέστεροι of Theaet. 144 B.

αὐτῷ SC. τῷ παιδευομένῳ.

1)

αὐτό] sc. ην διήλθομεν φύσιν (supra B).

οις τότε έλέγομεν] iii. 413 c ff.

Е

δυνατή] is the reading of the majority of MSS. It may be defended by supplying  $\phi i \sigma \iota s$  (or  $\psi \iota \chi \eta$  cp. vii. 535 B) from the general sense of the preceding passage.

oi ἐν τοῖς ἄλλοις] 'In other kinds of effort,' i.e. other than intellectual. Orelli's conjecture, ἄθλοις, is plausible but unnecessary. It is also noticeable that the word ἄθλος is absent from most of Plato's dialogues, occurring only in the Timaeus and Laws.

504 A

διαστησάμενοι ξυνεβιβάζομεν] It is better (1) to take ξυνεβιβάζομεν transitively—' we gathered concerning justice, temperance, courage and wisdom, what their several natures were,' than (2) intransitively, as Timaeus does, 'we came to an agreement.' The meaning here approaches that of proof or inference which is common in Aristotle. L. and S. s. v. συμβιβάζω, iii.

μὴ γὰρ... ἀκούειν] 'Why, if I did not remember, I should deserve not to hear the rest.' μὴ μνημονεύων =  $\epsilon l$  μὴ μνημονεύοιμι.

η καὶ τὸ προρρηθὲν αὐτῶν] sc. μνημονεύεις. αὐτῶν, sc. our discussion of the three parts of the soul.

**ἐλέγομέν που . . . προσάψαι**] Cp. iv. 435 D μακροτέρα καὶ πλείων όδὸς ή ἐπὶ τοῦτο ἄγουσα. That is to say, the account of the ideas of

В

justice, temperance, courage, wisdom, which was given in Book iv, was inexact and popular. Their true nature would only be revealed by dialectical deduction in their relation with the good. For επομένας with the genitive cp. Polit. 27 I Ε ὅσα τῆς τοιαύτης ἐστὶ κατα- ἐπομένας ἐπόμενα.

ώς μὲν δυνατὸν ἢν] The use of the indicative here amongst so many optatives belongs to the idiomatic use of ἢν in speaking of an ultimate fact.

C ἀτελὲς γὰρ οὐδεν οὐδενὸς μέτρον] 'Nothing imperfect is the measure of anything.' The very notion of measure involves completeness or definite quantity. For another play on the word μέτρον cp. v. 450 Β μέτρον . . . τοιούτων λόγων ἀκούειν ὅλος ὁ βίος νοῦν ἔχουσιν. A somewhat different test is proposed in Polit. 286 D, Ε οὔτε γὰρ πρὸς τὴν ἡδονὴν μήκους ἀρμόττοντος, κ.τ.λ., where it is said that discourses are not to be measured by the pleasure they give, nor by the ease or quickness with which they dispose of a subject, but as they tend to sharpen the dialectical powers.

δοκεῖ δ' ἐνίστέ τισιν] Cp. ii. 372 E, where τισιν conveys a similar innuendo.

- D καὶ μεῖζον, κ.τ.λ.] Not only is there a knowledge higher than virtue, but the virtues themselves should be exhibited in their most perfect form.
- Ε καὶ μάλα, ἔφη, ἄξιον τὸ διανόημα] 'Your sentiment, said he, is a right noble one': i. e. that the highest perfection is required on the highest subjects. καὶ μάλα is to be connected with ἄξιον: cp. i. 334 Ε καὶ μάλα, ἔφη, οὕτω ξυμβαίνει. Cp. the αὐτὸ τἀκριβές of the Politicus (284 p), which will require a standard of measure.

Yet in modern, as well as in ancient times, the highest subjects have been treated in the loosest manner. The reason is that they are partly matters of faith and feeling, as well as of reason: all have something to say upon them, and all are eager to hear about them. Not only philosophy, but theology, has often fallen into ignoble hands— $o\dot{v}$   $\pi \rho o\sigma \hat{\eta} \kappa o v$   $\dot{\epsilon} \pi \epsilon \iota \sigma \kappa \epsilon \kappa \omega \mu a \kappa \delta \tau a s$ .

οὐ πάνυ] 'Certainly not.'

πάντως] as elsewhere, has the force of a connecting particle; cp. Theaet. 143 A πάντως έγωγε καὶ ἀναπαύσασθαι δέομαι: Polit. 268 Ε πάντως οὐ πολλὰ ἐκφεύγεις παιδιὰς έτη. The sentence is not therefore to be regarded as an asyndeton.

η αὖ διανοεί . . . ἀντιλαμβανόμενος 'Or you again intend to interrupt and give trouble,' as Adeimantus had previously done by recurring to the subject of women and children (v. 450 B 600) έσμον λόγων έπεγείρετε, κ.τ.λ.).

Republic VI.504 Ε

εὶ δὲ μὴ ἴσμεν . . . ἄνευ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ] The double εὶ in the former part of the sentence helps to distinguish the indicative clause from the optative,—the former mood being correctly used to repeat a previous statement, the latter indicating the further supposition. For the same reason Bekker rightly changed κεκτήμεθα to κεκτήμεθα.

505 A

η οἴει ... ἀγαθήν Compare the passage (iv. 438 A) in which drink or any desirable object is said to include the good. But are all the meanings of 'good' the same?—would have been the question of Aristotle (N. E. i. 6). Words seem to play the same part with the ίδέα τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ as with the Eleatic ὄν or with the abstract  $\theta_{\epsilon\delta s}$ . Language readily provides an expression for the unity which the human mind is vainly seeking.

В

τοις δε κομψοτέροις ] Cp. Aristotle's οι χαριέντες (N. E. i. 4, § 2, &c.): also Theaet. 156 A.

καὶ ὅτι γε, ὧ φίλε, κ.τ.λ.] (a) Those who maintain that intelligence is the good, on being asked what they mean by intelligence, reply-'Intelligence of the good'-thus re-introducing the word and still begging the question 'What is the nature of the good?' (b) Those who maintain that pleasure is the good have to admit that there are bad as well as good pleasures, and therefore that bad and good are identical. In the first sentence Plato appears to be speaking of the Cynics, or perhaps of the Megarians: in the second of the Cyrenaics and of people in general. Cp. Phileb. 67 Β οί πολλοί κρίνουσι τὰς ἡδονὰς εἰς τὸ ζῆν ἡμῖν εὖ κρατίστας είναι. For the contradiction ἀγαθὰ καὶ κακὰ ταὐτά (infra p), cp. Phil. 13 B, C: and, for ως . . . ξυνιέντων, Theaet. 147 A, Β οἰόμενοι συνιέναι έκ της ήμετέρας αποκρίσεως, κ.τ.λ.

τί δέ; τόδε οὐ φανερόν, κ.τ.λ.] However men may differ in their idea of the good, they all alike insist on having what they think the reality and will not put up with a sham.

1)

The argument is in some degree like that of Anselm and Descartes, that the highest perfection involves existence. The reality of pleasure might be maintained on similar grounds. For nobody desires 'sham pleasure.' Plato in this passage (but cp.

Parm. 132 B, where he has begun to suspect that abstractions may be a creation of the mind) does not appear to be aware of the answer to this sort of argument—that good, like being, may be an abstraction only, though one of the three greatest or highest of our abstractions: 'verum, unum, bonum.' Compare Theaet. 172 A, where the real nature of the good or expedient is contrasted with the conventionality of law and justice.

The tautology in  $\delta o \kappa o \hat{\upsilon} \nu \tau \alpha$  . . .  $\delta o \kappa \epsilon \hat{\iota} \nu$  affords no valid objection to the reading.

Ε δ δη διώκει μεν ἄπασα ψυχή, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Aristot. N. E. i. 1, § 1 διὸ καλῶς ἀπεφήναντο τὰγαθόν, οδ πάντ' ἐφίεται.

ει τι ὄφελος ην ] SC. αὐτῶν.

πρότερον] (1) sc. τοῦ φύλακος. The guardians are φύλακες τῶν δικαίων καὶ καλῶν, sc. τῶν νομίμων. Cp. supra 504 c φύλακι πόλεώς τε καὶ νόμων. Or (2) 'before he sees how they (justice and beauty) are good (ὅπη ποτὲ ἀγαθά ἐστιν).' [Β. J.]

B ἀνάγκη...παρὰ ταῦτα] A slight discontent is betrayed in these words. Adeimantus, here, as elsewhere, is not easily satisfied: he wants to know Socrates' own opinion. Socrates before giving his answer, exclaims against the persistent vein of expostulation adopted by Adeimantus already in several passages: ii. 367 p, v. 449 c, vi. 487 B. The impatience of Glaucon (infra p: cp. ii. 357 A) comes to the aid of his elder brother.

A similar trait of character is attributed to Cebes in the Phaedo 63 Λ ἀεί τοι, ἔφη, ὁ Κέβης λόγους τινὰς ἀνερευνῷ, καὶ οὐ πάνυ εὐθέως ἐθέλει πείθεσθαι ὅ τι ἄν τις εἴπη: and 77 Λ καίτοι καρτερώτατος ἀνθρώπων ἐστὶ (sc. ὁ Κέβης) πρὸς τὸ ἀπιστεῖν τοῖς λόγοις.

ἢ δοκοῦσί τί σοι . . . δοξάζοντες] For the blindness of right opinion without knowledge cp. Theaet. 201 c.

Republic VI.

μὴ πρὸς Διός, κ.τ.λ.] As in the search after justice (iv. 432 B, c), the increasing dramatic life indicates the interest and importance of the discovery.

C

ἀρκέσει γὰρ ἡμῖν] Glaucon seizes on the admission of Socrates (504 D), that an approximate method might be sometimes employed. Socrates replies that in the present case even the approximation may be unattainable.

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

πλέον γάρ...ἢ κατὰ τὴν παροῦσαν ὁρμήν] 'To reach what is now in my mind is too much for our present attempt.' We have set out in search of Justice (v. 472 B), and in the attempt to discover it we are called upon to define the Good. But that is only to be attained by metaphysical disquisitions for which the readers of the Republic are not yet expected to be sufficiently prepared. Cp. Theaet. 177 c, where Theodorus prefers moral discourses to dialectic. The present remark throws some light on the scope and aim of the Republic.

δς δὲ ἔκγονός τε τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ . . . καὶ ὁμοιότατος ἐκείνω ] Cp. Laws x. 897 d μὴ τοίνυν ἐξ ἐναντίας οἷον εἰς ἢλιον ἀποβλέποντες, νύκτα ἐν μεσημβρία ἐπαγόμενοι, ποιησώμεθα τὴν ἀπόκρισιν, ὡς νοῦν ποτὲ θνητοῖς ὅμμασιν ὀψόμενοί τε καὶ γνωσόμενοι ἱκανῶς πρὸς δὲ εἰκόνα τοῦ ἐρωτωμένου βλέποντας ἀσφαλέστερον ὁρᾶν.

507

τοὺς τόκους μόνον] The untranslateable pun (τόκος, 'offspring,' and τόκος, 'interest'), for which the way has been prepared in the word ἀποτίσεις, is carried further in what follows: 'Take care that I do not unintentionally deceive you and render a false account of the offspring or interest.'

For the same figure cp. Polit. 267 Λ καλῶς καὶ καθαπερεὶ χρέος ἀπέδωκάς μοι τὸν λόγον, προσθεὶς τὴν ἐκτροπὴν οἶον τόκον καὶ ἀναπληρώσας αὐτόν: and for a different simile viii. 555 Ε τοῦ πατρὸς ἐκγόνους τόκους πολλαπλασίους κομιζόμενοι.

διομολογησάμενος γ', ἔφην ἐγώ . . . εἰρημένα] For the use of the aorist participle with  $\gamma \epsilon =$  'not until,' cp. Phaedr. 228  $\rho$  την μέντοι διάνοιαν . . . δίειμι, ἀρξάμενος ἀπὸ τοῦ πρώτου. Δείξας γε πρώτου, δ φιλότης, τί ἄρα ἐν τῆ ἀριστερὰ ἔχεις ὑπὸ τῷ ἱματίῳ. The reference in ἐν τοῦς ἔμπροσθεν is to v. 476  $\rho$  : cp. supra 493  $\rho$  .

πολ'ὰ καλά . . . τῷ λόγῳ] This passage has been thought

Republic VI. 507 B inconsistent with v. 478, 9, where it was shown that the 'many beautiful,' &c. cannot be said either to be or not to be. But  $\epsilon i \nu \alpha \iota$  is not here used in the sense of 'to have real existence,' but simply = 'to be.'

εκαστα ούτως, sc. πολλά, 'many individuals of each class.'

καὶ αὐτὸ δὴ καλὸν . . . προσαγορεύομεν] 'And we say that there is a beauty in itself and a good in itself: and in the same way with reference to all the classes which we previously regarded as consisting of many individuals, reversing the process and placing the individuals under one idea corresponding to each of these classes, as forming a unity, we call each class by what it really is.' Cp. Phil. 16 C, D δεῖν . . . ἀεὶ μίαν ἰδέαν περὶ παντὸς ἑκάστοτε θεμένους ζητεῖν · εὐρήσειν γὰρ ἐνοῦσαν.

C ἀρ' οὖν . . . ἐδημιούργησεν] Cp. Heracleitus, fragm. 21 ὀφθαλμοὶ ἄτων μάρτυρες ἀκριβέστεροι.

ἔστιν ὅ τι...(p) ἀκουσθήσεται] The ancient physical philosopher did not observe that air was as necessary for the transmission of sound as light for the medium of vision.

Τ) τινα ἔχεις εἰπεῖν; ] SC. αἴσθησιν ἥτινι τοιούτου τινος προσδεῖ.

παρούσης δὲ χρόας ἐν αὐτοῖς] sc. ἐν τοῖς ὁρατοῖς from τοῦ ὁρατοῦς supra. The analysis of vision here is less minute than in the Theaetetus and Timaeus. Colour is imagined as being present in the objects, although neither colour nor vision can be realized without light. Cp. infra 508 c ὧν ἀν τὰς χρόας . . . ἐπέχη . . . νυκτερινὰ φέγγη.

Ε τίνος δὴ λέγεις] (1) sc. γένους παραγενομένου τήν τε ὄψιν ὁρᾶν τά τε χρώματα ὁρατὰ εἶναι. The genitive is used as if εὰν μὴ παραγένηται had been οὖ μὴ παραγενομένου. (2) For the genitive cp. v. 459 B τί δὲ ἵππων οἵει; [Β. J.].

οὐ σμικρῷ ἄρα ἰδέᾳ ... (508 a) τὸ φῶς] 'Then the sense of sight and the quality of visibility are joined together by a bond nobler by the measure of no small nature than the bond which unites other correlatives, if light be no ignoble thing.' 'Nay, said he, it is far from being ignoble.' οὐ σμικρῷ ἰδέᾳ is the dative of measure or comparison, and is said in the same way as μείζονος τῆς πόλεως δεῖ οὖτι σμικρῷ, ἀλλ' ὅλφ στρατοπέδφ (ii. 373 E). Cp. especially Hdt. vi. 106, § 3 πόλι λογίμφ ἡ Ἑλλὰς γέγονεν ἀσθενεστέρη. For the use of ἰδέα in this sense, cp. Phileb. 64 Ε οὐκοῦν εἰ μὴ μιῷ δυνάμεθα

ໄδέα τὸ ἀγαθὸν θηρεῦσαι, κ.τ.λ. Light is necessary to the correlation between the eye and visible things, and the preciousness of light is the measure of the superiority of that correlation to those existing between the other organs of sense and their several objects.

Republic VI. 507 E

τίνα οὖν ἔχεις . . . τούτου κύριον] For the use of αἰτιῶμαι in the sense of 'allege to be the cause' cp. x. 599 Ε σὲ δὲ τίς αἰτιᾶται πόλις νομοθέτην ἀγαθὸν γεγονέναι καὶ σφᾶς ὡφεληκέναι;

508 A

οὖκοῦν καὶ τὴν δύναμιν... κέκτηται;] 'Is not the power which it (the eye) has, dispensed from the Sun and possessed by it as something derived from without?'

В

τοῦτον τοίνον...(c) τὰ ὁρώμενα] This may be appropriately termed Plato's 'solar myth.' Even at the present day, when the power which the sun's force exerts over all nature is so much more truly recognized than formerly, the influence which the idea of the sun continues to exercise over the mind and imagination is hardly less remarkable. The ordinary religious feeling about the sun was shared by Socrates: Apol. 26 c, Symp. 220 p.

For φάναι cp. v. 473 Λ φάναι ήμᾶς έξευρηκέναι ως δυνατὰ ταῦτα γίγνεσθαι ᾶ σὺ ἐπιτάττεις. ὅ τί περ, κ.τ.λ., is added in explanation of ἀνάλογον έαυτῷ.

δν τἀγαθὸν...(c) τὰ ὁρώμενα] 'whom the good begot to be its own counterpart, to be in the visible world in relation to sight and the things of sight what itself is in the intelligible world in relation to mind and the things of mind.' τοῦτον, emphatically resuming the preceding τοῦτον, is in the same construction with ὅν, while τοῦτο is the emphatic antecedent to ὅ τί περ. For the construction of λέγειν with all that follows it cp. 511 Λ, Β.

ων . . . ἐπέχη] ' upon the colours of which the light of day falls.'

C

άλλὰ ων νυκτερινὰ φέγγη] sc, ἀλλ' ἐπ' ἐκεῖνα ὧν ἃν τὰς χρόας νυκτερινὰ φέγγη ἐπέχη.

1)

καταλάμπη] The ἄν, which is not absolutely required in this and similar expressions, may be supplied from what has preceded,  $\mathring{\omega}v$   $\mathring{a}v \dots \mathring{\epsilon}\pi \acute{\epsilon}\chi\eta$ , and would be felt as superfluous after ὅταν.

ένοῦσα φαίνεται] sc. ή καθαρὰ ὄψις.

οὔτω τοίνυν . . . νοῦν ἔχειν φαίνεται] 'In like manner (οὔτω) conceive too of the soul in this way (ὧδε): when she is fixed steadily on that on which truth and being shine, she knows and understands this and appears to have intelligence.'

εἰς τὸ τῷ σκότῳ κεκραμένον] The expression recalls v. 479 c.

508 E τοῦτο τοίνον ... ὀρθῶς ἡγήσει] 'This, then, which imparts truth to the things that are known and gives to the knower the power of knowing, is what I would have you call the idea of good: and this you will deem to be the cause of knowledge and of truth so far as the latter is known: but fair as are both these, knowledge and truth, you will be right in thinking that it is something fairer than these.' μέν strictly belongs to αἰτίαν and is opposed to the following δέ: the idea of good 'is indeed (μέν) the cause of knowledge and truth, but (δέ) it is other and fairer than they.' The reading διανοοῦ instead of the formerly received διὰ νοῦ (Ven. Ξ, &c.) has superior manuscript authority, including Par. A, and gives a clear sense. The other is feeble and the expedient of cancelling the clause ὡς γιγνωσκομένης ... ἡγήσει indefensible.

No

The good is the sun, truth is light, the ideas are the objects of sight, and knowledge is vision. The strain of 'heavenly beauty' in which the mind is to be absorbed is in a region far away from modern thoughts. The intense reality of all beauty and all truth when seen according to the divine idea is perhaps as near an approach as we can make to the meaning of Plato. The want of personality in the  $\partial_{\gamma}a\theta\delta\nu$  prevents our minds from resting in that which to Plato is the most real of thoughts, comprehending in one the idea of order and design, of a cause in nature and of intelligence in man, not without an association of goodness in the sense of benevolence and good-will. Cp. Tim. 29 E.

Preparations for the ἀγαθόν may be traced in the Symposium, 211 D, E τί δῆτα, ἔφη, οἰόμεθα, εἴ τῷ γένοιτο αὐτὸ τὸ καλὸν ἰδεῖν εἰλικρινές, καθαρόν, ἄμικτον, ἀλλὰ μὴ ἀνάπλεων σαρκῶν τε ἀνθρωπίνων καὶ χρωμάτων καὶ ἄλλης πολλῆς φλυαρίας θνητῆς, ἀλλὶ αὐτὸ τὸ θεῖον καλὸν δύναιτο μονοειδὲς κατιδεῖν ; where the idea of ἀγαθόν is not yet evolved out of the καλόν: in the Phaedrus 250 D ὄψις γὰρ ἡμῖν ὀξυτάτη τῶν διὰ τοῦ σώματος ἔρχεται αἰσθήσεων, ἦ φρόνησις οὐχ ὁρᾶται—δεινοὺς γὰρ ἄν παρεῖχεν ἔρωτας, εἴ τι τοιοῦτον έαυτῆς ἐναργὲς εἴδωλον παρείχετο εἰς ὄψιν ἰόν—καὶ τὰλλα ὅσα ἐραστά νῦν δὲ κάλλος μόνον ταύτην ἔσχε μοῖραν, ὅστ' ἐκφανέστατον εἶναι καὶ ἐρασμιώτατον. And in the Philebus, which is probably later than the Republic, we find an attempt to give a further definition to the idea. The eternal nature or highest good is found to consist in measure, above the σύμμετρον and τέλεον, which are second, and νοῦς and φρόνησις, which are third in the scale (Phil. 66 Λ, Β).

ήλιοειδη Neuter plural rather than feminine singular.

Republic

την τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ ἔξιν = το ἀγαθον ώς ἔχει, 'the state or nature of the good.'

509

αμήχανον κάλλος | SC. τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ.

φάναι cp. supra 508 B.

В

οὖκ οὖσίας ὄντος . . . ὑπερέχοντος Referring to the history of philosophy we may translate this:—'The idea of good reaches a step beyond the Eleatic being.'

C

"Απολλον . . . δαιμονίας ύπερβολής Good heavens, what a marvellous superiority!' The way for this exclamation has been already prepared in the words ἀμήχανον κάλλος, supra. Glaucon speaks with a feeling of admiration and yet of incredulity. Cp. Euthyd. 303 A & 'Ηράκλεις, έφη, καλοῦ λόγου! and for the rejoinder of Socrates cp. Phaedr. 238 p οὐκέτι πόρρω διθυράμβων φθέγγομαι... τούτων μέντοι σὺ αἴτιος.

εἰ μή τι sc. ἄλλο: 'at all events complete the simile of the sun.' Cp. 501 Ε ίνα, εὶ μή τι ἄλλο, αἰσχυνθέντες ὁμολογήσωσιν: Meno 86 Ε εὶ μή τι οὖν, ἀλλὰ σμικρόν γέ μοι της ἀρχης χάλασον.

ΐνα μὴ οὐρανὸν . . . περὶ τὸ ὄνομα] . In allusion to the fanciful derivation of οὐρανός from δράν. Cp. Crat. 396 Β οὐρανία, δρώσα τὰ ἄνω. The v.r. οὐρανοῦ, though of inferior manuscript authority, may possibly be right.

D

ώσπερ τοίνυν γραμμήν . . . τὸ μὲν ἔτερον τμήμα εἰκόνες ] CD. Sophist 265 E ff., where ποιητική is first divided κατὰ πλάτος into θεία and ανθρωπίνη, and then sub-divided κατά μήκος into shadows and realities. ἄνισα τμήματα is the reading of Proclus, p. 431. 10; of the Pseudo-Plutarch, 1001; and of the great majority of MSS., including Par. A. The emendations "loa, av" "loa, have been proposed: the variations  $\epsilon is \ "i\sigma a \ (v)$ , perhaps equally an emendation, and "iv, "i\sigma a (Vind. E, &c.), are also found in MSS. The reading  $d\nu$ ' loa is poor Greek, as well as poor sense; and the other correction, els "loa, although not open to the first charge, equally enfeebles the meaning of ἀνὰ τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον:—' Divide the line equally and then subdivide in the same proportion.' The text, as found in the best authorities, is probably genuine: the difficulty is to discover a reason for the inequality in the divisions. The whole line may be regarded as representing a progress upwards from the

Republic 509 D

infinite multiplicity of sense and the reflections of sense at the lower end, to the unity of good at the higher; the reflections of sense are more numerous than the objects of sense, as the mathematical figures and other phenomena of nature are more numerous than the ideas; and also downwards from the infinite value of the idea of good to the insignificance of sensible objects and their shadows (cp. infra 511). Still, although this explanation is in harmony with Plato's ideas and with the general context, as a matter of style further explanation is needed. Cp. however Theaet. 197 p, where in the same manner he describes the different kinds of knowledge under the image of birds, some in larger and smaller groups, others singly flying through all, without adding any explanation of the reason of this.

τὸ μὲν ἔτερον τμῆμα i.e. the lower segment.

οσα πυκνά τε καὶ λεῖα καὶ φανὰ ξυνέστηκε | For ξυνέστηκε of 510 A a compact solid, cp. Tim. 61 A, 83 A. And for an account of the phenomena of reflection, ibid. 46 A, B.

η καὶ ἐθέλοις αν . . . ῷ ὡμοιώθη αὐτό, sc. τὸ ὁρώμενον, which has now been divided.

ή τὸ μὲν αὐτοῦ . . . τὴν μέθοδον ποιουμένη 'As thus: - There are  $\mathbf{B}$ two subdivisions of the intellectual sphere: a lower one, wherein the mind uses the objects given by the former segments as symbols; the inquiry can only be hypothetical, and instead of going upwards to a principle, works downward to a result. In the higher subdivision, the soul passes out of hypotheses and ascends to a first principle, which is above hypotheses, making no use of symbols, as in the former case, but proceeding by ideas alone.'

τοις τότε τμηθείσιν] = τοις έμπροσθεν είρημένοις τμήμασιν, referring to supra 500 D, E, 510 A. The reading of A and of the MSS. of Proclus, μιμηθείσιν, though it may be due to the ingenuity of some early corrector, has the advantage of giving clearness to the logical connexion:—i.e. the visible realities, of which the εἰκόνες in the lower segment of the visible were imitations. These now become εἰκόνες in their turn. Cp. infra Ε ων καὶ σκιαί, κ.τ.λ.: vii, 515 p ἐκείνα ὧν τότε τὰς σκιὰς έώρα. The testimony of Ven. Π is not available here, two leaves of the MS. having been lost; but its congeners D K agree with other MSS. in giving τμηθείσιν.

τὸ δ' αὖ ἔτερον τό, κ.τ.λ.] The genuineness of τό after ἔτερον is open

Republic

510

1)

to question. For no mention has occurred of the upper division leading to an  $\partial_\rho \chi \dot{\eta}$   $\partial_\nu \nu \pi \delta \theta \epsilon \tau \sigma s$ . It may be answered that this is sufficiently implied in the preceding words, which describe the soul in the other division as  $\dot{\epsilon} \dot{\xi}$   $\dot{\nu} \pi \sigma \theta \dot{\epsilon} \sigma \epsilon \omega \nu$  oùk  $\dot{\epsilon} \pi^*$   $\dot{d} \rho \chi \dot{\eta} \nu$   $\pi \sigma \rho \epsilon \nu \sigma \omega \dot{\mu} \dot{\nu} \eta$ . But the construction is also much simpler and more intelligible without the article, the only word to be supplied being  $\dot{\xi} \eta \tau \epsilon \hat{\iota}$ , which governs both  $\tau \dot{\delta}$   $\ddot{\epsilon} \tau \epsilon \rho \rho \nu$  and  $\dot{\epsilon} \kappa \epsilon \hat{\iota} \nu \sigma$ . The conjecture  $\ddot{\sigma}$  for  $\tau \dot{\sigma}$  is ingenious but unnecessary.

Of the three manuscript readings, ὧνπερ ἐκεῖνο εἰκόνων (A M), τῶν περὶ ἐκεῖνο εἰκόνων (DK Vind. F corr.), ὧν περὶ ἐκεῖνο εἰκόνων (Vind. F p. m.), the first, which is that of Par. A is probably the true one: i.e. ἄνευ τῶν εἰκόνων αἶσπερ χρωμένη ἐξήτει ἐκεῖνο.

άλλ' αὖθις ] SC. λεγόμενον μαθήσει.

τούτων] sc. what I am now about to say, as well as what has C been said.

καὶ ἄλλα...καθ' ἐκάστην μέθοδον] This is added, like καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα supra, καὶ τἄλλα οὕτως infra, to show that διάνοια is not confined to Arithmetic and Geometry, but prevails also in the other sciences.

ποιησάμενοι ὑποθέσεις αὐτά] That is to say, they presuppose mathematical quantities and figures without any inquiry into the grounds of their suppositions, and end in the construction of their problem ὁμολογουμένως,—i. e. consistently, without any contradiction within the sphere of mathematics.

οὐκοῦν καὶ ὅτι, κ.τ.λ.] SC. οὐκοῦν καὶ τόδε οἶσθα ὅτι.

καὶ τἄλλα οὕτως] SC. πραγματεύονται.

å πλάττουσι] e.g. the sphere, pyramid, cube, and other solid E figures.

ὧν καὶ σκιαί, κ.τ.λ.] These words allude to the fourth or lowest section. Plato means to say that the mathematicians use as images of abstract ideas those things of which shadows and reflections are the natural images, that is, the forms of superficial and solid geometry, such as the square, circle, sphere, pyramid, cube, &c., and the other objects of vision.

Cp. vii. 534 A, where further inquiry into the relation of the subdivisions is declined. The lowest of the four segments consists of shadows and reflections of objects: and each of the three

Е

lower is the reflection of the segment above it. The two main divisions rest on the fundamental antithesis of Greek philosophy,  $al\sigma\theta\eta\tau\dot{a}$  and  $\nu o\eta\tau\dot{a}$ : the first and third subdivisions appear to be suggested by the Heraclitean and Pythagorean doctrines.

511 A τοῦτο τοίνυν νοητόν, κ.τ.λ.] The mind, beginning with number and figure, in the longest trains of reasoning always remains within the sphere of mathematics—a truth which was not perceived by the Pythagoreans when they identified numbers with moral ideas, and is forgotten by Plato in the next book where he supposes the higher astronomy to consist only of mathematical problems.

εἰκόσι δὲ χρωμένην . . . τετιμημένοις] 'using, however, as images those very things of which there are reflections in the sphere below them, and which, in relation to those reflections, are habitually esteemed and honoured as real and clear.'

There are two respects in which διάνοια or scientific reasoning is inferior to true dialectic (νοῦς):—

- (1) In deducing its results from certain abstract assumptions. Thus arithmetic assumes the notions of 'odd' and 'even,' geometry those of the circle, square, &c., and of acute, right and obtuse angles; solid geometry, the notions of the sphere, pyramid, cube, octahedron, &c.: astronomy, certain relations of matter in motion: harmony, certain proportionate vibrations, and the like. None of these sciences ask the reason of their primary definitions, or can prove them to be otherwise than arbitrary.
- (2) The other point in which these sciences are inferior is that their processes are not pure from matter. For although both their assumptions and their deductions have for their object certain pure abstractions, they are unable to study these apart from visible things. Even the arithmetician has a difficulty in separating his abstract unit from the units which he is engaged in counting, or from the geometrical figures through which he studies the relations of numbers. In the  $\epsilon \pi i \pi \epsilon \delta o \nu \sigma \chi \hat{\eta} \mu a$ , which stands visibly for 9, each side is of a certain length. The geometer cannot reason without diagrams, much less can the astronomer without the outward configuration of the heavens  $(\tau \hat{a} \epsilon \nu \tau \hat{\rho} \sigma i \rho a \nu \hat{a} \pi o \nu k \lambda \mu a \tau a \nu i$ . 529 c) or some copy of this, or the harmonist without audible sounds.

The first of these defects is meant by ὑποθέσεσι δ' ἀναγκαζομένην ψυχὴν χρῆσθαι: the second by εἰκόσι δὲ χρωμένην, κ.τ.λ. Cp. vii. 529 D τῆ περὶ τὸν οὐρανὸν ποικιλία παραδείγμασι χρηστέον τῆς πρὸς ἐκεῖνα μαθήσεως ἔνεκα (sc. τῶν ἀληθινῶν ἐν σχήμασι φορῶν).

But in speaking of sensible objects as the symbols or images through which science works, Plato remembers that what are images or shadows in relation to scientific conception, are the realities of common language and experience, and he recalls the distinction which he made at first between the shadow and the substance (supra 509 E), which were to one another as opinion or fancy to knowledge (τὸ μὲν ἔτερον τμῆμα εἰκόνες . . . τὸ . . . ἔτερον . . . ῷ τοῦτο ἔοικε . . . διηρῆσθαι ἀληθεία τε καὶ μή, ὡς τὸ δοξαστὸν πρὸς τὸ γνωστόν, οὕτω τὸ ὁμοιωθὲν πρὸς τὸ οὧ ὁμοιώθη).

... δηρῆσθαι ἀληθεία τε καὶ μή, ὡς τὸ δοξαστὸν πρὸς τὸ γνωστόν, οὕτω τὸ ὁμοιωθὲν πρὸς τὸ ῷ ὡμοιώθη).

The εἰκόνες of the present passage are taken from the same class, which in the former place (and in common life) hold the higher and more honourable position of Realities—τὸ ῷ ἡ εἰκὼν ὡμοιώθη, and are so esteemed in relation to the εἰκόνες of that place (509 Ε), viz. the shadows and reflections which occupy the fourth or lowest grade. To avoid the confusion that might arise from this, he here resumes what he had hinted just before, supra 510 Ε ὧν καὶ σκιαὶ καὶ ἐν ὕδασιν εἰκόνες εἰσί, and uses emphatic pronouns to make the distinction felt, αὐτοῖς, ἐκείνοις, πρὸς ἐκεῖνα. The things which science uses as her symbols are sensible objects, τὰ ὑπὸ τῶν κάτω ἀπεικασθέντα, —αὐτοῖς, the things themselves, as distinguished from their shadows, &c.—of which the class below them are again the symbols or likenesses: and in relation to those likenesses (their shadows and reflections) those sensible objects (both are ἐκεῖνα because remote

The words ἐκείνοις πρὸς ἐκεῖνα (sc. τοῖς ὁρωμένοις πρὸς τὰς σκιάς) are added in apposition to τοῖς . . . ἀπεικασθεῖσι, so as to show that the 'distinctness' (ἐνάργεια) here spoken of is entirely relative, within the lower world of sense: and αὐτοῖς is not used with the specially Platonic meaning, but simply to distinguish objects from their shadows. Cp. Soph. 266 C, and for ἀπεικασθεῖσι, Phaedr. 250 B ὀλίγοι ἐπὶ τὰς εἰκόνας ἰόντες θεῶνται τὸ τοῦ εἰκασθέντος γένος. The use of ἐκεῖνος here distinguishes the visible, which has been dismissed, from the intellectual, which is the immediate subject of thought.

from the true objects of knowledge) have had awarded to them an

honourable estimation for clearness and reality.

For τετιμημένοις several MSS., including the first hand of Par. A, read τετμημένοις, which may be variously regarded either as supported or suggested by τοις τότε τμηθείσιν above. The word τετμημένοις is not, however, in harmony with δεδοξασμένοις. The correction of Par. A is by the first or second hand, and both Ven. II and M are defective here.

Republic VI. 511

A

In the highest of the four divisions we are concerned with ideas only. The spheres of Mathematics and Metaphysics, as they may be termed in modern phraseology, are alike limited, the one to hypotheses, the other to ideas.

В

τὸ ὑπὸ ταῖς γεωμετρίαις, κ.τ.λ.] Mathematical studies are regarded by Plato as affording the most distinct example of scientific method. Indeed, from the position which they occupy in the next book, it might appear that they are understood by him to constitute the whole of the division intermediate between  $\pi i \sigma \tau is$  and νόησις, the field that is occupied by διάνοια. But from an incidental remark, vii. 517 D των τοῦ δικαίου σκιων ή ἀγαλμάτων ων αί σκιαί, it is evident that he does not clearly distinguish between those hypotheses which are abstractions of sense and those which are abstractions of mind, between the hypothetical conception of a circle or a square, and that of Justice, so far as method is concerned. See also Meno 86 E ff. ωσπερ οἱ γεωμέτραι, κ.τ.λ., where ethical reasoning is illustrated from mathematical. All science is imperfect so long as assumptions are taken for first principles, and symbols for realities. When the hypothesis is referred to a first principle, and the symbol explained by the thing signified, the science is complete (νοητών ὄντων μετά άρχης infra D).

Of the attempt to rise upwards from  $\mathring{\upsilon}\pi o \theta \acute{\epsilon} \sigma \epsilon \iota s$  towards first principles, we have many examples in Plato: for instance in the Phaedo, where from the consideration of equality we rise to the conception of a, perfect ideal, and in the Symposium, where Diotima leads Socrates upwards from the definition  $\tau \acute{\epsilon} \kappa \sigma \dot{\epsilon} \acute{\epsilon} \iota \kappa \alpha \lambda \ddot{\varphi}$  to the contemplation of absolute Beauty. We may doubt if Plato himself would have asserted that in any part of his works he had realized the other aspect of his ideal method, that of descending by due steps from the Idea of Good to particular things. There is a sense in which his method is far more inductive than deductive. But, in the early part of the Timaeus, where from the notion of the Uncreated, the Eternal and the Good, he passes gradually to the necessary constitution of the Universe, there is an approximation to the intellectual movement which is here indicated.

It would be vain to formulate the precise relation in which Plato's view of Mathematics in the Republic stands to the statement of Aristotle, Metaph. i. 6, § 4 ἔτι δὲ παρὰ τὰ αἰσθητὰ καὶ τὰ εἴδη τὰ μαθηματικὰ τῶν πραγμάτων εἶναί φησι μεταξύ, διαφέροντα τῶν μὲν αἰσθητῶν τῷ ἀΐδια καὶ ἀκίνητα εἶναι, τῶν δὸ εἶδῶν τῷ τὰ μὲν πολλὰ ἄττα ὅμοια εἶναι, τὸ δὲ εἶδος αὐτὸ ἐν ἔκαστον μόνον.

τὰς ὑποθέσεις] The assumptions here meant are clearly not those of Mathematics only, but of every subject which can be brought under definition.

Kepublic VI. 511 B

C

οῗον ἐπιβάσεις τε καὶ ὁρμάς] For a similar ladder by which we may ascend through the lower stages of beauty, ἕσπερ ἐπανα-βαθμοῖς χρώμενοι, to the contemplation of a divine perfection see Symp. 211 B, C.

τὸ ὑπὸ τῶν τεχνῶν καλουμένων] Meaning geometry and the sister arts, cp. supra B. That the term is not quite accurately used Plato himself seems to intimate in καλουμένων, and also in vii. 533 c, D especially the words âs ἐπιστήμας μὲν πολλάκις προσείπομεν διὰ τὸ ἔθος, δέονται δὲ ὀνόματος ἄλλου, ἐναργεστέρου μὲν ἡ δόξης, ἀμυδροτέρου δὲ ἡ ἐπιστήμης.

αἷς αἷ ὑποθέσεις ἀρχαί, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Meno 87 Λ, Aristot. Metaplı. iii. 2, § 24 διὰ τοῦτο οὐ τοῦ γεωμέτρου θεωρῆσαι τί τὸ ἐναντίον ἢ τέλειον ἢ ὃν ἢ ἐν ἢ ταὐτὸν ἢ ἔτερον, ἀλλ' ἢ ἐξ ὑποθέσεως.

αὐτά] SC, τὰ ὑπὸ τούτων (τῶν τεχνῶν) θεωρούμενα.

ώς μεταξύ τι... την διάνοιαν οὖσαν] 'meaning to say that διάνοια is intermediate between opinion and reason.' Cp. the phrases διὰ μέσου, διὰ χρόνου, &c., for the meaning of διά. And for a reference to this place cp. vii. 533 p.

E

καὶ τάξον αὐτὰ . . . ἡγησάμενος μετέχειν] 'And arrange the terms in proportion, attributing to them such a degree of clearness as their objects have of truth.' For πίστιν cp. the use of the words πιστεύειν and πίστις applied to right impression as distinct from knowledge in x. 601 E, and Tim. 29 C ὅ τί περ πρὸς γένεσιν οὐσία, τοῦτο πρὸς πίστιν ἀλήθεια. The word expresses the 'natural realism' of ordinary thought.



D

## BOOK VII.

Republic VII. 514 A-516 A Now if the idea of good in relation to the other ideas be represented by the sun, who gives light and warmth and growth to the natural world, the condition of men without philosophy may be compared to that of persons in a subterranean cave, bound fast in a position where they can only see the shadows of manufactured images cast by the light of an artificial fire. Education in the higher sense might then be represented as the process of unbinding such prisoners and turning them round and making them look upwards and then dragging them from their cavernous habitation into the light of day.

514 A μετὰ ταῦτα, κ.τ.λ.] :The metaphor by which the sun represents the idea of Good as supreme over the intellectual world is now developed into an allegory, in which the shadows cast from images by the light of an artificial fire are contrasted with the true objects seen by the light of the sun.

τοιούτω πάθει] 'Το a condition which I may thus describe.' For the use of πάθος cp. vi. 488 A οὕτω γὰρ χαλεπὸν τὸ πάθος τῶν ἐπιεικεστάτων.

ἀναπεπταμένην πρὸς τὸ φῶς...παρ' ἄπαν τὸ σπήλαιον] 'The entrance extending all along the den,' i.e. the cave is shallow in proportion to the width of its mouth. This helps verisimilitude, because a multitude of human beings can be thus imagined as similarly placed with respect to the ascent towards the opening. The light of heaven does not penetrate into the cavern, which is 'open to the light' only in the sense that it is possible to clamber out of it into the light.

B

κύκλω δὲ... ἀδυνάτους περιάγειν] The construction with ἐδέ is continued. The illusion of the shadows could not have been preserved if the prisoners had been able to turn their heads and see the fire and the images from which the shadows fell.

φῶς δὲ αὐτοῖς πυρὸς ἄνωθεν...ἐπάνω ὁδόν] The way along which the figures are moving is raised and the light at a distance is raised still higher: otherwise the shadows of the figures and vessels could not have been visible to the prisoners in the den.

Republic VII. 514

ἄσπερ τοῖς θαυματοποιοῖς ... δεικνύασιν] 'As exhibitors of puppets have a screen before the persons who exhibit them, over which they show the puppets.' The image of puppets is a favourite one with Plato. In the Laws i. 645 B, vii. 804 B, he compares human life to a puppet-show. The difficulty in τῶν ἀνθρώπων, which seems at first sight needless, is best met by supposing the θαυματοποιός to be not the actual exhibitor or puller of the strings but the master of the show. This agrees better with what follows— ρορα τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ., than to suppose τῶν ἀνθρώπων to refer to the spectators.

σκεύη, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. vi. 510 A. These represent the natural and artificial objects (τά τε περὶ ἡμᾶς ζῷα καὶ πᾶν τὸ φυτευτὸν καὶ τὸ σκευαστὸν ὅλον γένος of vi. 510 A) which have their patterns in the upper world and in relation to them are mere toy-work (cp. x. 596, where Plato speaks of the ideal bed, the real bed, which is the copy of it, and the picture of the bed: also Tim. 28, 29, where the visible patterns are made in the likeness of the invisible and fashioned by the younger gods; ibid. 42 p, e): yet even of these only the shadows are perceptible by sense. The intention of this expression is best seen by comparing the following passages:—

- 515 C τὰς τῶν σκευαστῶν σκιάς.
  - ib. D καθορᾶν ἐκεῖνα ὧν τότε τὰς σκιὰς ἐώρα\*
  - ib. πρὸς μᾶλλον ὄντα τετραμμένος:
- ib. εκαστον των παριόντων . . . τὰ νῦν δεικνύμενα
- 517 Β τὸ . . τοῦ πυρὸς . . . φῶς τῆ τοῦ ἡλίου δυνάμει (ἀφομοιοῦν)\*
- ib. D η άγαλμάτων ων αί σκιαί.
- 520 C γνώσεσθε έκαστα τὰ εἴδωλα ἄττα ἐστὶ καὶ ὧν
- 532 Β μεταστροφή ἀπὸ τῶν σκιῶν ἐπὶ τὰ εἴδωλα καὶ τὸ φῶς
- ib. c τὰ ἐν ὕδασι φαντάσματα θεῖα καὶ σκιὰς τῶν ὅντων, ἀλλ' οὐκ εἰδώλων σκιὰς δι' ἐτέρου τοιούτου φωτὸς . . . ἀποσκιαζομένας.
- 534 C εί πη είδώλου τινὸς εφάπτεται, δύξη, οὐκ επιστήμη εφάπτεσθαι.

Without wishing to press the allegory, it is natural to assume that a point of which so much is made has a distinct intention. Now in page 532 A it is stated that the man who in the allegory begins to see the real objects in the daylight represents the soul beginning dialectic, and that the scientific education preceding this was represented by the turning round to the εἴδωλα, the ascent, and the first glimpse of the reflections of the real objects in the light of day.

The stages in this preliminary process represent not different spheres but different degrees of scientific enlightenment. The meaning of εἴδωλα receives further illustration from the following passages :--

530 Α νομιείν μέν, ως οἶόν τε κάλλιστα τὰ τοιαῦτα ἔργα συστήσασθαι, ούτω ξυνεστάναι τῷ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ δημιουργῷ αὐτόν τε καὶ τὰ ἐν αὐτῷ τὴν δὲ νυκτός πρός ήμεραν ξυμμετρίαν, . . . οὐκ ἄτοπον . . . ἡγήσεται τὸν νομίζοντα γίγνεσθαί τε ταῦτα ἀεὶ ὡσαύτως . . . σῶμά τε ἔχοντα καὶ ὁρώμενα, καὶ ζητεῖν παντί τρόπω την αλήθειαν αὐτῶν λαβείν;

533 D συνερίθοις καὶ συμπεριαγωγοῖς χρωμένη αἶς διήλθομεν τέχναις. ας επιστήμας μεν πολλάκις προσείπομεν δια το έθος, δέονται δε ονόματος άλλου, εναργέστερου μεν ή δόξης, αμυδροτέρου δε ή επιστήμης. διάνοιαν δὲ αὐτὴν ἔν γε τῷ πρόσθεν που ὡρισάμεθα. See also ibid. B, C.

The εἴδωλα are (1) out of sight of the ἰδέα of good, (2) made and shown by somebody, (3) lighted by the fire which represents the sun. They are the figures of real outward objects: but as all outward objects can be comprehended under number and figure, Plato seems also to include in them the figures and numbers of arithmetic and geometry. He passes from the world as we see it to the world as conceived of by the mathematician, in which he expects to find the way up to the  $i\delta\epsilon a$  of good.

The notion of the σκευαστά είδωλα has been prepared for by the mention of the solid figures of geometers α πλάττουσιν (vi. 510 E) and the use of the word σκευαστά for inanimate objects (ib. 510 A).

λίθινά τε . . . εἰργασμένα The σκευαστά are wrought in various materials, as the visible world is compounded of the four elements.

οἷον εἰκός To be joined with what follows: 'naturally, some of the carriers are speaking, others not.' The first impression of these words is that they have no point, but we see below (515 B el kal  $\dot{\eta}_{\chi}\dot{\omega}$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ .) the reason why they are introduced. Plato has hitherto spoken of the sensible as the visible world. But he here also

515

includes the world of hearing. This prepares for the science of Republic harmonics infra 530 p.ff.

τί δὲ τῶν παραφερομένων SC. οἴει ἂν έωρακέναι αὐτούς;

515 B

οὐ ταῦτα ἡγεῖ ... ἄπερ ὁρῷεν;] 'Do you not suppose that they would believe that they were naming those things that they saw actually before them?' i. e. that the terms they used in their conversations applied to the shadows and not to the realities of which they are ignorant? ταῦτα the reading of  $\Xi$  K, the simple antecedent, is better than  $\tau αὐτά$ , the reading of  $\Lambda$ . II and M are wanting in this place. Παριώντα the reading of Flor. x is rather confusing as it might signify either the shadows or the realities. The pleonastic expression 'those present things which they actually saw' is emphatic and in the manner of Plato.

παντάπασι . . . σκιάς] σκευαστά are not ordinary artificial objects (as in vi. 510 Λ καὶ τὸ σκευαστὸν ὅλον γένος) but diminutive *images* of ordinary artificial objects, being the σκεύη which are carried along the wall. For the purpose of the present allegory the ζῷα and φυτευτά also are σκευαστά, 'manufactured articles.'

τὸ ἀληθές] ἀλήθεια, 'reality,' was the favourite term of Protagoras, who denied all truth beyond momentary impressions, Theaet. 162 A; Soph. 246 B; Crat. 391 c.

515 C-517 A

C

The stages of the educational process may be roughly sketched in terms of the preceding allegory. The man is first loosed from his bonds and turned towards the light. Then by questions his attention is fixed upon the realities of which he has hitherto seen the shadows. and heard the echoes only: -- then upon the central power which gives light to these. After this he is dragged up the rough and steep ascent into the daylight; where again he first sees the shadows, then real objects, then the heavenly luminaries, first the moon and stars by night, and last of all the sun by day. And when he has seen the sun, he will recognize the truth about him, that he is in a manner the cause of all things. He who has so far attained will not wish himself back in the den nor covet the honours there adjudged to those who make the best guesses about the shadows. And if he were restored to his old place while his eyes were still unaccustomed to the darkness, his fellow-prisoners would laugh him to scorn, and say that Philosophy was the ruin of a man.

σκόπει δή, κ.τ.λ.] join λύσιν των δεσμων, ἴασιν τῆς ἀφροσύνης. The latter phrase refers to the state of ignorance described as the

consequence of their position.  ${}^{\prime}A\phi\rho\sigma\sigma\dot{\nu}\nu\eta$  here is unconsciousness rather than folly.

εἰ φύσει τοιάδε ξυμβαίνοι αὐτοῖς] Supposing that the following were the manner of it (their release and cure as it happened to them): 'in the course of nature.' For the conception of philosophy as the freeing of the soul from sense cp. Phaedo 83.

This is the apodosis of the new sentence which begins with ὁπότε and is grammatically in apposition to that which precedes, although gradually developed into an independent statement. Cp. supra ii. 359 Β εὶ τοιόνδε ποιήσαιμεν, κ.π.λ.

φλυαρίας] Cp. Phaedo 66 c εἰδώλων παντοδαπῶν καὶ φλυαρίας εμπίπλησιν ἡμᾶς πολλῆς. βλέποι is the reading of all the better MSS, which grammarians are disposed to correct into βλέπει in accordance with the more common usage. The optative may be due to the attraction of the preceding optative λέγοι.

καὶ δὴ ... δεικνύμενα;] Plato here seems to be thinking of the practice of Socrates, who by interrogation about the facts of experience in the light of common sense reduced men to perplexity.

Ε διὰ τραχείας τῆς ἀναβάσεως καὶ ἀνάντους] Cp. Theact. 175 Β ὅταν δέ γέ τινα αὐτός . . . ἐλκύση ἄνω, κ.τ.λ.

όδυνᾶσθαι . . . ἀγανακτεῖν . . . (516 Λ) δύνασθαι] These infinitives depend like the preceding (ἀπορεῖν, &c.) on οὐκ οἴει (supra d).

516 Τῶν νῦν λεγομένων] 'Of the objects which are now (by men in general) called real.' Plato reminds us that he is speaking in a figure. Cp. infra 519 A, vi. 490 A.

τά τε... εἴδωλα] He will see an image of the truth in words (Phaedo 100 Λ) before he rises to the contemplation of the highest ideas. The gradations that follow are not to be pressed beyond the general meaning; but there are degrees of glory in the heaven of ideas. Cp. note on vi. 511 Λ. One is tempted however to suppose that 'the moon and stars' may symbolize the ideas of Being, Truth, Sameness, Difference, &c., which although divine are of a lower order than the Good and are studied apart from it.

των ἀνθρώπων] The knowledge of man is the starting-point, as in all Socratic philosophy.

τελευταΐον δή ... οΐος ἐστιν The fulness of expression, the

В

E.

antithesis and the thrice repeated pronoun give effect to the Republic VII.

οτι αὐτός, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. vi. 509 B. οὖτος, the reading of Π, is equally good Greek, but αὐτός has a solemn emphasis.

σφείς] 'He and his fellow-prisoners.'

τρόπον τινά] Inasmuch as the σκευαστά were images of real C objects, and the 'fire' was borrowed from the sun.

τῷ δξύτατα...(n) ἥξειν] We may apply Plato's words to the vain shadow of a philosophy, whether ancient or modern, in which facts are divorced from principles, and about which there arises a mighty controversy having no basis or foundation of truth.

τὸ τοῦ 'Ομήρου] quoted in iii. 386 c.

D
σφόδρα] emphasizes the quotation,—' would indeed wish.'

\* $\vec{a}\nu$ ] before  $\vec{a}\nu$ á $\pi\lambda\epsilon\omega s$  is not found in any MS. In this and many similar places it may be doubted whether  $\vec{a}\nu$  was omitted by the author to avoid cacophony, or by the scribe as an apparent dittographia.

έκ τοῦ ἡλίου; ] 'out of the sun,' i.e. the sunshine. ηλιος = 'sunlight' occurs also in Phaedo 116 Ε ἔτι ηλιον εἶναι ἐπὶ τοῖς ὄρεσιν: infra 532 Β: cp. also Soph. Phil. 17 ἡλίον διπλη πάρεστιν ἐνθάκησις.

τὰς δὲ δὴ σκιάς, κ.τ.λ. Plato is never weary of contrasting in all the fanciful forms that his imagination suggests, the real and seeming; the life of the philosopher, martyr, king, 'who is not of this world,' and the life of the politician, lawyer, sophist (vi. 492 A), who is the impersonation of the world. The contact of philosophy with common opinions and life affords one of those curious points of view in which appearance is opposed to true knowledge: either the philosopher is conceived to be made ridiculous by tumbling into wells, mocked at by Thracian women, mazed and puzzled in the justice-room, blinking at 'a world unrealized,' laughed at by mankind, but also laughing at them, or the ambitious Sophist is imagined, more truly ridiculous in his impotent attempts after first principles, dressing himself up in names and words, to be compared only to a bald little blacksmith's apprentice, who washes the dirt from his face, and marries his master's daughter, which is the Lady Philosophy. Cp. Theaet. 174 ff., Polit. 200.

E

γνωματεύοντα] Α ἄπαξ λεγόμενον in classical Greek, and therefore of uncertain meaning: either 'reasoning from signs' (γνῶμα, 'a sign') or 'measuring the shadows' (γνῶμα, 'a measuring rod'). It is used in the latter sense by Themistius, but the more general sense of 'forming a judgement of' is more in accordance with the context here. It is perhaps used with some degree of contempt, as contrasted with contemplation of the idea. γνωμονεύοντα is quoted by Timaeus in his lexicon to Plato: cp. the γνώμων of the sun-dial.

517 A της συνηθείας] is added to correct the vagueness of οὖτος: sc. τοῦ καταστήναι τὰ ὅμματα.

ἀποκτιννύναι ἄν; ] as though οὐκ οἴει had preceded, which words really occur a long way off in supra 516 c.

517 B -518 B In the foregoing allegory the cave is the phenomenal world, the fire is the power of the sun: the way upwards and the vision of the things above is the elevation of the soul into the intellectual region, whereof the idea of good is the crown or summit. This, once beheld, is known to be the cause of all that is admirable, both in the higher and in the lower sphere. And he who has risen to this contemplation will not be eager to take part in human affairs. And if compelled to do so he will stumble and be confused at first, like one who comes suddenly out of the daylight into a darkened room.

517 B τῆς γ' ἐμῆς ἐλπίδος] ἐλπίς, like ἐλπίζω, is used in the sense of 'surmise' or 'idea,' cp. v. 451  $\Lambda$  ἐλπίζω γὰρ οὖν ('for I suspect') ἔλαττον ἁμάρτημα ἀκουσίως τινὸς φονέα γενέσθαι, Laws vii. 817  $\Pi$  ὡς ἡ παρ' ἡμῶν ἐστὶν ἐλπίς ('as I suspect').

ἐπειδη . . . ἀκούειν | See vi. 506 D μη πρὸς Διός . . . ἀποστῆς.

έν τῷ γνωστῷ, κ.τ.λ.] is an explanation of οὖτω: ἰδέα is in apposition with the nominative to φαίνεται, which has to be supplied with ὁρᾶσθαι and εἶναι: συλλογιστέα is singular feminine:—' My opinion is that in the world of knowledge the idea of good appears last of all and is with difficulty seen.'

C

οἱ ἐνταῦθα ἐλθόντες] 'Those who have attained to this.' Cp. Symp. 211 D ἐνταῦθα τοῦ βίου . . . εἴ πέρ που ἄλλοθι, βιωτὸν ἀνθρώπφ, θεωμένφ αὐτὸ τὸ καλόν.

1)

εἴπερ αὖ . . . τοῦτ' ἔχει] αὖ is to be taken closely with τοῦτο, the most emphatic word :— 'in this particular as well as the rest.' The

point in the allegory to which this corresponds is to be found in 516 p: 'he would rather be a hireling than live and think like his old companions in the den.'

Republic VII. 517 D

έν δικαστηρίοις] Cp. the description of the philosopher in Theaet. 173 c ff. οὖτοι δέ που ἐκ νέων πρῶτον μὲν εἰς ἀγορὰν οὐκ ἴσασι τὴν όδόν, οὐδὲ ὅπου δικαστήριον, κ.τ.λ.: especially pp. 174, 175.

ἀγαλμάτων] ἀγάλματα and σκιαί refer back to the Allegory, and if the meaning of them is asked may be represented as embodiments more or less imperfect of the idea of Justice. The ἀγάλματα may be conceived to be the enactments of Athenian Law; and σκιαί the sophistries of pleaders relating to them and the like. Similarly in iv. 443 ε the principle of the division of labour is called εἴδωλόν τι τῆς δικαιοσύνης.

φανότερον . . . λαμπροτέρου] These words are neuter, not masculine with βίου supplied. For the omission of the article cp. Phaedo 89 Β ἐπὶ πολὺ ὑψηλοτέρου ἢ ἐγώ.

518 A

ύπὸ λαμπροτέρου μαρμαρυγῆς ἐμπέπλησται] 'is dazzled (μαρμαρυγῆς ἐμπέπλησται) by a more brilliant atmosphere.' Cp. supra 516 A αὐγῆς ἃν ἔχοντα τὰ ὅμματα μεστά, κ.τ.λ.

В

καὶ οὕτω δή, κ.τ.λ. Cp. supra 516 c ἀναμιμνησκόμενον . . . τῶν τότε ξυνδεσμωτῶν οὐκ ἃν οἴει αὐτὸν μὲν εὐδαιμονίζειν τῆς μεταβολῆς, τοὺς δὲ ἐλεεῖν;

The returning captive is happy in having once seen the brighter day: the newly liberated one, on the other hand, is an object of pity to the inhabitants of the upper world, or if of laughter, there is more reason in this 'laughter of angels' than in the sounds which greet the other from the den. Cp. Soph. 254  $\Lambda$  δ μèν ἀποδιδράσκων εἰς τὴν τοῦ μὴ ὅντος σκοτεινότητα, τριβῃ προσαπτόμενος αὐτῆς, διὰ τὸ σκοτεινὸν τοῦ τόπου κατανοῆσαι χαλεπός . . . ὁ δέ γε φιλόσοφος, τῃ τοῦ ὅντος ἀεὶ διὰ λογισμῶν προσκείμενος ἰδέᾳ, διὰ τὸ λαμπρὸν αὖ τῆς χώρας οὐδαμῶς εὐπετὴς ὀφθῆναι.

It follows that education consists not in putting knowledge into the mind, but in fixing the organ of knowledge on its proper object by turning the whole soul from darkness to light. The mind of a clever rogue sees keenly, but is forced into the service of evil. The same power, when redeemed from degradation, and directed aright, would see the truth as clearly as now it perceives the mean purposes to which it ministers. It follows, too, that government should be

518 B-521 B Republic VII. 518 B-521 B

entrusted neither to men who are without training in philosophy nor to those who have passed all their life in it. The one sort do not see the end of life, the others are unwilling to engage in politics.

518 C σφεῖς] sc. οἱ σοφισταί. Plato, like other religious teachers, has his doctrine of conversion—the change of nature as a whole, the upward turning of the eye to the light, the vision of the idea of good. This conversion of the soul he ironically compares (infra 521 c) to the spinning round of an oyster-shell.

Whether knowledge is more truly conceived as 'brought to the pupil' or as 'drawn out of him' is a controversy which has always prevailed among philosophers and their disciples. On this turns the opposition between Socrates, as represented by Plato, and the Sophists. It is partly the same with the controversy respecting the absoluteness or relativity of knowledge. It finds a solution in a recognition both of the objective and subjective elements of truth, of facts brought from without and a mind prepared in its own nature and by the knowledge of previous facts to receive them. One of the many aspects of this relation is expressed in the Theaetetus (149 ff.), where Socrates professes that he has nothing to impart, but can only bring to light the thoughts of others.

ταύτην τὴν ἐνοῦσαν . . . δύναμιν] The accusative is governed by περιακτέον infra. The eye of the mind cannot turn to the light without the whole mind: it is as if the bodily eye could not turn and look round unless the body turned with it.

1)

τούτου ... αὐτοῦ ... διαμηχανήσασθαι] τούτου αὐτοῦ is explained in τῆς περιαγωγῆς. The indirect interrogation τίνα τρόπον depends on some such notion as ητις σκέψεται implied in τέχνη. The words οὐ τοῦ ἐμποιῆσαι . . . διαμηχανήσασθαι like τῆς περιαγωγῆς are dependent on τέχνη.

μεταστραφήσεται] SC. τὸ ὄργανον ῷ καταμανθάνει εκαστος.

αὐτῷ] ες. τῷ ὀργάνῳ.

αὐτό] sc. τὸ ὁρᾶν.

τοῦτο διαμηχανήσασθαι] SC. ὅπως ὀρθῶς ἔσται τετραμμένον καὶ βλέψει οἷ δεἷ,

αί μὲν τοίνυν ἄλλαι, κ.τ.λ.] The theory of habit is transferred from the body to the mind: they are the lower not the higher gifts

of the intellect ('memory, allied to sense,' attention, the link between the moral and intellectual qualities) rather than genius or originality, which are subject to the influence of habit. Yet these latter, though not acquired by habit, require to be trained and directed before any good use can be made of them.

Republic VII. 518

καλούμεναι] They are 'virtues of soul' only in a lower sense. See note on supra 516 A.

παντὸς μᾶλλον ] cp. infra 520 E.

Е

θειοτέρου τινὸς . . . οὖσα] sc. ὀργάνου ἀρετή: 'is the virtue of a more divine principle.'

δριμό] 'Shrewdly.' The same word is applied to the narrow legal soul in the Theaetetus 175 D τον σμικρον έκεινον την ψυχην και δριμών και δικανικόν: ib. 173 A ἔντονοι και δριμεις γίγνονται.

519 A

ωστε . . . ἐργαζόμενον] The infinitive ἐργάζεσθαι, which would naturally follow ωστε, is 'attracted' into the participial construction (ως . . . ἔχον . . . ἢναγκασμένον).

τοῦτο μέντοι, κ.τ.λ.] τοῦτο is to be taken with τὸ τῆς τοιαύτης φύσεως, which is a periphrasis for  $\hat{\eta}$  τοιαύτη φύσις, the nature so constituted. The hypothetical clause εἰ ἐκ παιδὸς . . . μολυβδίδας, having been expanded with αἷ δη . . . ὄψιν, is resumed and continued in the words ὧν εἰ . . . τὰληθη, and the apodosis begins with καὶ ἐκεῖνα.

τοιαύτης] SC. οὕτω δριμείας όρᾶν.

τὰς τῆς γενέσεως ξυγγενεῖς] The reading of the older editions τὰ ... ξυγγενῆ, is not indefensible; the gender of the relative (αῖ) being in that case assimilated to that with which the antecedent is compared.

†περὶ κάτω] Madvig, followed by Cobet and Baiter, conjectures περικάτω. This could only mean 'upside down.' It is better to read simply κάτω with Hermann (cp. infra 529 B, ix. 586 A) or περὶ τὰ κάτω with some of the inferior MSS.

В

μήτε...μήτε] The use of μή is occasioned by dνάγκη preceding.

Republic VII. 519 C-521 B Our duty then as founders of the state is first to educate the chosen natures in 'the highest of studies,' and then to compel them to take part in the active conduct of affairs.

'But will it not be a wrong to them,' says Glaucon, 'to drag them down from the realms of light into the darkness of the den?'

The answer is that in legislating (cp. iv. 419) we must consult the welfare not of a part but of the whole state. It is also to be observed that our philosophers do not spring up of themselves as in other cities, but are the product of our institutions. They owe a debt therefore to the state and its founders, which they are bound to pay. When their education has been completed, they must descend by turns into the cave and accustom their eyes to the darkness. For when once habituated, they will see and judge of the shadows infinitely better than those who have always been captives. An incidental advantage of the plan will be that our citizens, coming from a brighter life, and being rich inwardly (cp. iii sub fin.) will take office as a duty, and not for the sake of gain.

519 των οἰκιστων] is explanatory of ήμέτερον.

έν τῷ πρόσθεν Vi. 504 E ff.

ίδεῖν, κ.τ.λ.] In apposition to ἀφικέσθαι . . . μέγιστον and in construction with ἀναγκάσαι.

τὸ αὐτοῦ . . . καταμένειν] A parallel to this description may be traced in the unwillingness of Christian saints and hermits to leave their cells and take part in the business of life, seeming sometimes, as Plato says, to be ἐν μακάρων νήσοις already.

εἴτε σπουδαιότεραι] sc. εἰσίν.

έπειτ', έφη, ἀδικήσομεν αὐτούς] An expression of surprise. 'And are we then to do them an injustice?'

ἄμεινον] sc.  $ζ \hat{\eta} \nu$ .

Ε επελάθου . . . πάλιν] iv. 419 ff.

τοῦτο μηχανᾶται ἐγγενέσθαι] SC. ὁ νόμος τὴν εὐπραξίαν.

320 αὐτὸς ἐμποιῶν . . . τῆς πόλεως] αὐτός bis is emphatic: 'the law itself creating such men in the state, not in order to leave them to their own devices, but that it might itself have the full use of them for the binding together of the state,' or taking ξύνδεσμον in the more common sense of the word, 'so as to be the bond of the state.'

ότι οὐδ' ἀδικήσομεν] 'that we shall not be wronging them after Republic VIII. all.' δέ in οὐδέ = 'in spite of what you say,' referring to ἀδικήσομεν supra 519 D.

520 Α

В

δίκην δ' ἔχει . . . τροφεία] 'now it seems fair that the wild plant which owes culture to nobody should not be eager to pay the price of its culture to anybody.' The phrase δίκην ἔχει may be compared with φύσιν έχει, λόγον έχει.

ύμας δ' ήμεις The sentence returns to the direct form.

έκείνων SC. των εν ταις άλλαις πόλεσι φιλοσόφων γιγνομένων.

έκάστω SC. ὑμῶν.

(

ξυνεθιστέον Not 'to be accustomed together with the prisoners in the den,' but simply 'to be accustomed,' as is seen by the use of the word in the following sentence.

ξυνεθιζόμενοι γάρ, κ.τ.λ. The strength and weakness of the politician in his limitation: he can see and act powerfully on the immediate present or future, but on that only. In times of revolution he is apt to be at fault: he is neither capable of spanning the movement, nor of confining himself to the necessities of the hour. It is only the greatest genius that can use the legal, political, or ecclesiastical maxims of an age and country, and yet be above them, knowing their true value;—who is at once φρόνιμος and σοφός: able to follow θεωρία and πολιτική.

τὰ εἴδωλα] This word is not always strictly used for the images from which the shadows are thrown, as in 532 B ἀπὸ τῶν σκιῶν ἐπὶ τὰ εἴδωλα, but also more generally as in 516 A of reflections in water, and, as in this place, to include oracle. We have risen to a point of view from which the σκευαστά and the σκιαί are included under one notion as εἴδωλα: cp. vi. 511 A.

From this part of the Republic Lord Bacon borrowed his figure of 'idola specûs' and of the 'idols' generally.

σκιαμαχούντων . . . στασιαζόντων περί τοῦ ἄρχειν These words refer to the disputes and ambitions of the prisoners in the den, and στασιαζόντων also reminds us of the quarrelling of the sailors about the helm (vi. 488 c).

οντος SC. τοῦ ἄρχειν.

1)

τὸ δέ που ἀληθές, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. i. 342 D, 345 E. There is a slight change of construction from έν πόλει to ταύτην, κ.τ.λ.

В

ἀπειθήσουσιν . . . ἐν τῷ καθαρῷ] For οἱ τρόφιμοι cp. Laws vii. 804  $\Lambda$  and Polit. 272 B, where the subjects of Cronos are so named. τὸν δὲ πολὺν χρόνον is added to avoid a one-sided statement: they have to toil, but still the greater part of their time is to be passed in the world above. For ἐν τῷ καθαρῷ cp. Theaet. 177  $\Lambda$  ἐκείνος . . . ὁ τῶν καθαρὸς τόπος.

E εἰ μὲν βίον . . . (521 A) ἄρξειν] That is, if you provide your future rulers with a life which is better than that of a ruler.

521 **οἱ τῷ ὄντι πλούσιοι**] Cp. Phaedr. sub fin. πλούσιον δὲ νομίζοιμι τὸν σοφόν.

περιμάχητον γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] The subject, ὁ τοιοῦτος πόλεμος, is developed from περιμάχητον . . . τὸ ἄρχειν γιγνόμενον, which is left out of construction. Cp. Phaedo 69 Β χωριζόμενα δὲ φρονήσεως . . . ή τοιαύτη ἀρετή.

φρονιμώτατοι] sc. εἰσίν, absorbed in ἔχουσι following.

By what methods then shall such rulers be created and brought 521 C-526 C up out of darkness into the light of reason? 'Gymnastic' is clearly incapable of doing this; and so is even 'music' as hitherto defined, seeing that the harmony and rhythm which it imparts are not evolved from within, but impressed by habit from without. And the 'arts' we have already rejected (vi. 495 D) as mechanical. The germ of something higher first appears in the perception of number. Arithmetic may help to educate the reason. For, every perception has this effect which brings with it the perception of an opposite. And not until sensation reports contrary attributes of the same object does the mind become aware of unity and diversity. This, however rudimentary, is an act of pure intelligence; and when aroused in us by the study of number, it becomes an instrument of essential value for the awakening of thought. Arithmetic therefore is the first step in the higher education. The incidental advantages of the study, especially for soldiers, are easily seen.

ξξ "Aιδου... εἰς θεούς] e.g. Herakles, Polydeukes, &c. Cp. Phaedo
 82 B, c, where the soul is said only by the love of knowledge to find her way into the company of the gods.

τοῦτο δή . . . φήσομεν εἶναι] 'this then would seem to be—not the turning over of an oyster-shell, but the conversion of a soul

from a day which is as night to the true ascent, which leads towards being.' The text, as thus interpreted, is not free from objection: the meaning of οὖσαν drags, and ἐπάνοδον gives a feeble antithesis to ἡμέρας. It may however be argued that the addition of ouoav is in harmony with the emphatic and pleonastic expressions in which Plato describes being (cp. infra 529 D); and that ἐπάνοδον arises out of the connexion of the passage. The sense is clear, though the style is perhaps a little at fault. The first thing to be done is to turn the soul round to philosophy, which is not the light itself, but the real and true way up to the light. The περιαγωγή (supra 518 D) or μεταστροφή precedes the ἐπάνοδος (infra 532 B). This is quite in the Socratic and Platonic spirit. For οὖσαν some late copies have loύσηs (q), which appears to be a feeble correction. Ξ omits οὖσαν. Iamblichus has preserved a reading, οὖσα ἐπάνοδος, which may possibly be right ('being the way upward to the "true day" of being", and which may be supposed to have been lost owing to the copyists not understanding that ἡμέραν was to be supplied with ἀληθινήν. But according to this reading the distinction between the 'turning round' and the 'ascent' is not strictly maintained. With reference to Cobet's conjecture, els άληθινήν τοῦ ὄντος οὐσίαν ἐπάνοδος, it may be questioned whether Plato would have used the expression 'the existence of being,' although the phrase οὐσίαν ὄντος οὐδὲ μὴ ὄντος occurs in Soph. 262 c in a different connexion.

For δστράκου cp. Phaedr. 241 Β ὁ πρὶν ἐραστής, ὀστράκου μεταπεσόντος, ἵεται φυγῷ μεταβαλών. ὀστράκου περιστροφή is an allusion to the game ὀστρακίνδα, in which a potsherd white on one side and black on the other was twirled upon a line, and accordingly as the black or white turned up, one party fled and the other pursued. Such at least is the explanation of the game which may be gathered from these two passages, of which only that in the Phaedrus is referred to by Pollux, ix. 111.

τόδε δ' ἐννοῶ... νέους ὅντας;] 'Now this occurs to me as I speak: were we not saying that they must in the days of their youth be trained warriors?' Cp. iii. 403 Ε ἀθληταὶ μὲν γὰρ οἱ ἄνδρες τοῦ μεγίστον ἀγῶνος: viii. 543 Β ὥσπερ δὲ ἀθλητάς τε πολέμου καὶ ψύλακας.

δεῖ ἄρα... ἐκείνω] 'The study which we are searching for must have this in addition to the other;' i.e. military use as well as a philosophical value.  $\tau$ οῦτο refers to what precedes, and is explained in what follows.

Republic VII. 521

D

Republic VII. 521 D προσέχειν] The etymological use, for  $\tilde{\epsilon}_{\chi}\epsilon_{\iota\nu}$  πρός, 'to have in addition,' is remarkable. Cp. Soph. O. T. 175 ἄλλον δ' ἀν ἄλλφ προσίδοις, κ.τ.λ. The singularity has probably led to the various readings προσεχῶς (r), πῶς ἔχειν (q), παρέχειν (Ξ).

522 A ὄσην τὸ πρότερον διήλθομεν] ii. 376 E ff. There is a sense in which philosophy is also μουσική, cp. vi. 499 D αὕτη ή Μοῦσα, Phaedo 61 Λ ως φιλοσοφίας . . . οὕσης μεγίστης μουσικής.

ἀλλ' ἦν ἐκείνη γ', ἔφη, κ.τ.λ.] For the repetition of ἔφη infra (τούτων ἀδελφά, ἔφη), cp. viii. 557 c, where ἦν δ' ἐγώ is similarly repeated.

ἀντίστροφος τῆς γυμναστικῆς] This is said in the spirit of the preceding remark (518  $\,\mathrm{D}$ ) that all the virtues except wisdom are not far removed from bodily habit.

ἀγαθόν] is to be taken with τοιοῦτον and not with μάθημα: — μάθημα δὲ πρὸς τοιοῦτον, κ.τ.λ., refers to supra 521 D μάθημα ψυχῆς όλκὸν . . . ἐπὶ τὸ ὄν, and οῖον σὰ νῦν ζητεῖς probably to μάθημα: cp. supra 521 E ὁ ζητοῦμεν μάθημα. The v. r. ἄγον Π mg. deserves to be considered.

В

αί τε γὰρ τέχναι] The corresponding καί is superseded by the speech of Glaucon, καὶ μήν, κ.τ.λ.

ἔδοξαν] viz. supra vi. 495 D ὑπὸ δὲ τῶν τεχνῶν τε καὶ δημιουργιῶν τωπερ τὰ σώματα λελώβηνται, οὕτω καὶ τὰς ψυχὰς ξυγκεκλασμένοι τε καὶ ἀποτεθρυμμένοι διὰ τὰς βαναυσίας τυγχάνουσιν.

τῶν ἐπὶ πάντα τεινόντων, κ.τ.λ.] 'Let us take something of universal application.' Cp. Laws v. 747 Λ, Β πρός τε γὰρ οἰκονομίαν καὶ πρὸς πολιτείαν καὶ πρὸς τὰς τέχνας πάσας ἐν οὐδὲν οῦτω δύναμιν ἔχει παίδειον μάθημα μεγάλην, ὡς ἡ περὶ τοὺς ἀριθμοὺς διατριβή τὸ δὲ μέγιστον, ὅτι τὸν νυστάζοντα καὶ ἀμαθῆ φύσει, ἐγείρει καὶ εὐμαθῆ καὶ μνήμονα καὶ ἀγχίνουν ἀπεργάζεται, παρὰ τὴν αὐτοῦ φύσιν ἐπιδιδόντα θεία τέχνη: and for the use of arithmetic and geometry, and their relation to the other sciences, cp. Philebus 56, 57.

С

κοινόν  $= \dot{\epsilon}\pi i \pi \dot{\alpha}\nu \tau a \tau \epsilon \hat{\imath}\nu o \nu$ : cp. Theaet. 185 Ε αὐτὴ δί αὐτῆς ή ψυχὴ τὰ κοινά μοι φαίνεται περὶ πάντων ἐπισκοπεῖν, where among τὰ κοινά is mentioned number (ἕν τε καὶ τὸν ἄλλον ἀριθμόν).

διάνοιαι] διάνοια is perhaps here used according to the definition in vi. 511 c, p for mathematical reasoning.

τὸ φαῦλον τοῦτο] For this ironical use of φαῦλος cp. iv. 423 c, Republic VII.

παγγέλοιον γοῦν ... ἀποφαίνει] The three extant tragedians all wrote plays on the subject of Palamedes. Agamemnon is addressed in an extant fragment of the Palamedes of Euripides (584 Nauck). Aeschylus also attributes the invention of number to Prometheus (P. V. 459).

άναριθμήτων ὄντων SC. των τε νεων καὶ των ἄλλων πάντων.

καὶ λογίζεσθαί τε] καί, which is supported by Par. A, and is certainly more likely to have been altered than retained, though maintained by some editors to be a corruption of η (which gives a poor sense), is the right reading. 'Shall we hesitate to set down as a study necessary to a warrior also an ability to reckon and count?' For ἄλλο τι οὖν cp. note on i. 337 c.

καὶ ἄνθρωπος ἔσεσθαι] cp. Tim. 39 Β ΐνα . . . μετάσχοι . . . ἀριθμοῦ τὰ ζῶα, ὅσοις ἦν προσῆκον, μαθόντα παρὰ τῆς ταὐτοῦ καὶ ὁμοίου περιφορᾶς. Also Phaedr. 249 B for difference between the souls of men and animals.

ων ζητούμεν] supra 521 D.

χρῆσθαι δ' οὐδεὶς αὐτῷ ὀρθῶς] οὐδείς, sc. κινδυνεύει. Plato means that persons study arithmetic for convenience only, and not as a training of the mind. In modern education, mathematics, besides their more particular application as the expression of physics, would generally be regarded as having four uses: (1) they fix the attention; (2) they give accuracy; (3) they impart a perception of symmetry and order, and a power of construction; (4) they are also said to strengthen the rational powers generally. The last use must be admitted with reservation, considering that reasoning in general, whether in science or life, is for the most part concrete and not abstract. The highest of human faculties, the judgement, is little cultivated by mathematical studies. Plato seems to have valued mathematics as a general training of the mind (infra 526 c): not without an anticipation of the enormous power gained by it in the interpretation of nature.

τό γ' ἐμοὶ δοκοῦν δηλῶσαι] For a similar hesitating manner of speaking cp. Theaet. 164 D πειράσομαι δηλῶσαι περὶ αὐτῶν ὅ γε δὴ νοῶ.

οὶ λέγομεν Sc. πρὸς οὐσίαν.

523 A

C

D

E

καὶ τοῦτο] SC. τὴν ἀριθμητικήν.

523 Τὰ μὲν . . . (Β) οὐ παρακαλοῦντα . . . τὰ δὲ παντάπασι διακελευόμενα]

The participial construction follows δείκνυμι as a verb implying perception.

B παρακαλοῦντα . . . εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν] i.e. calling in reason to examine the intimations of sense.

 $\epsilon$ κείνην] sc. τὴν νόησιν, emphatically opposed to τῆς αἰσθήσεως following.

οὐδὲν ὑγιὲς ποιούσης] 'is behaving in an untrustworthy manner.' Cp. Soph. 232 Λ ὅταν ἐπιστήμων τις πολλῶν φαίνηται . . . τὸ φάντασμα τοῦτο ὡς οὐκ ἔσθ' ὑγιές, κ.τ.λ.

τὰ πόρρωθεν . . . τὰ ἐσκιαγραφημένα] Cp. x. 602 p ῷ δἡ ἡμῶν τῷ παθήματι τῆς φύσεως ἡ σκιαγραφία ἐπιθεμένη γοητείας οὐδὲν ἀπολείπει. Socrates proceeds to explain that he is referring not to the effect of distance or of artificial illusion, but to the confusion caused by contradictory impressions of natural objects close at hand.

οὐ πάνυ . . . ἔτυχες οῦ λέγω] (1) 'you have not quite hit my meaning,' said ironically rather than (2) 'you have altogether missed it.' οὐ πάνυ varies in meaning according to the context. It is sometimes 'not altogether' and sometimes 'not at all.'

τὰ μὲν οὖ παρακαλοῦντα, κ.τ.λ.] Some sensations excite thought, others do not. Take the case of a finger: a finger as a finger does not give rise to contradictory impressions. But as possessed of qualities it does, e.g. a finger as far as visibility is concerned is at once both great and small; as far as the touch is concerned, at once hard and soft, thick and thin. This contradiction in the 'mere sensation' excites thought to separate the two elements given in sensation and to go on to consider what the elements are in themselves—i.e. what is the great and what is the small, &c.

C ἐναντίαν αἴσθησιν] e.g. 'hard as well as soft,' 'rough as well as smooth.' αἴσθησιν here and supra A (τὰ ἐν ταῖς αἰσθήσεσιν) is not the faculty (either generally, or as one of the five), but the act of sensation. In supra B (τῆς αἰσθήσεως οὐδὲν ὑγιὲς ποιούσης), infra 524 A (ἡ ἐπὶ τῷ σκληρῷ τεταγμένη αἴσθησις . . . τί ποτε σημαίνει αὕτη ἡ αἴσθησις), the word has its more ordinary meaning.

I) ἐν πᾶσι γὰρ . . . ἐπερέσθαι] 'the ordinary mind is not driven to ask any question.' ἐν πᾶσι . . . τούτοις, sc. τοῖς οὕτω φαινομένοις (ἐάν τε

ἐν μέσῳ, κ.τ.λ.). He goes on to show that another faculty is called Kepublic in when contradictions arise which sense cannot explain.

τὸ μέγεθος αὐτῶν, κ.τ.λ.] The interrogation ἆρα gives a strong Emphasis which is continued through the following clause.

ωδε ποιεί 'behaves in the following way.'

ή ἐπὶ τῷ σκληρῷ τεταγμένη αἴσθησις Sc. ἡ άφή.

524 .\

C

αὖ] 'In contradistinction to the former case in which the soul was not perplexed:' 523 c ff.

ή τοῦ κούφου καὶ... βαρέος] What is here mentioned without a name in Plato seems to be the same which modern philosophers call the sense of resistance. For these antinomies of sense cp. v. 479 B, Theaet. 152 D, Phil. 14.

πρῶτον μέν, κ.τ.λ.] The apodosis comes in with οὐκοῦν . . . αὖ (c) B which takes the place of δϵ, because of the development of the first clause which has intervened.

οὐκοῦν ἐὰν δύο φαίνηται, κ.τ.λ.] The sense, while thought is latent, perceives a sort of chaos only, of great and small, afterwards the mind is awakened and distinguishes the great from the small.

διὰ δὲ τὴν τούτου σαφήνειαν . . . ἢ κείνη ] 'But with a view to clearing up this chaos of sense' (τούτου, sc. τοῦ συγκεχυμένου) 'the thinking mind is compelled to reverse the process, and look at small and great as distinct and not confused.' For διὰ . . . σαφήνειαν cp. Polit. 262 c σαφηνείας ἔνεκα. τοὐναντίον is an adverbial accusative, i. e. τοὐναντίον, sc. ποιοῦσα. 'κείνη = ἡ ὄψις.

The difficulty of this passage is to understand how the operation of sense is separated from that of the mind. The theory of vision may offer an illustration of Plato's meaning. Our first impression, as common language seems to imply, is that surrounding objects are seen by us in their true forms and at their proper distances by the sole use of the eye. Experiment shows that much which is apparently part of the act of sight is really an unconscious influence of the mind which habit has confused with the pure sensation, arising from the observation of shadow, colour, or the use of the two eyes in connexion with each other. The mere eye without the mind may be said in Plato's language to perceive où διωρισμένα ἀλλὰ συγκεχυμένα.

Republic VII. 524 C The error of Plato is that he describes the act of vision as having two successive stages, one in which the sense, another in which the mind is active: we ourselves should regard these two processes as one and simultaneous in the concrete, although in thought we can analyze an act of vision into them. The world opening on the half-awakened eyes of a new-born child is perhaps the nearest image of Plato's conception of the material of sense.

D ταῦτα τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] When the same objects suggest the idea of opposites, e.g. of great and small, the mind is 'irritated' into the consideration of the nature of great and small, of which the impressions have hitherto been confused.

ποτέρων] This, although only an early correction in Par. A seems on the whole more probable than πότερον. Cp. infra 525 A, B: Theaet. 186 A.

E εἰ δ' ἀεί, κ.τ.λ.] The 'one and many' here spoken of seems still to be the Zenonian puzzle which is said in the Philebus (14 D) to have been superseded by the deeper oppositions amongst the ideas themselves.

525 περὶ τὸ αὐτό] There is a various reading περὶ αὐτό, sc. περὶ τὸ εν. τὸ αὐτό is retained, not as inherently more probable, but as the reading of the best MSS.

οὐκοῦν εἴπερ, κ.τ.λ.] If this happens in the case of unity it must happen to all number, since number proceeds from unity. Cp. Parm. 144 Λ.

ξύμπας ἀριθμός] 'All number' collectively. Cp. Theaet. 147 Ε τὸν ἀριθμὸν πάντα δίχα διελάβομεν: Phaedo 104  $\Lambda$  ὁ ημισυς τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ ἄπας. For τούτ $\omega$  some MSS, have τοῦτο, others omit the word.

B ταῦτα δέ γε ... πρὸς ἀλήθειαν] This may be illustrated from modern philosophy, which equally recognizes contradiction as a motive of thought. The being which is also not-being, that is to say, the privation or abstraction of individual or particular being: the one which is many: the same which is diverse: the motion which is and is not in the same place: the moment which is and is not in the same time: the continuous which is also discrete: the finite which is infinity: the beginning which begins not,—the negation which is only relation, together with the higher contradictions which arise in the sphere of theology or moral philosophy—

would have been regarded by Plato no less than by Kant and Hegel as highly suggestive difficulties to the student of dialectic. In the later stage of his philosophy, beginning with the Parmenides, he is increasingly disposed to dwell on such modes of thought.

Republic VII. 525 B

φιλοσόφω δέ, κ.τ.λ.] 'while the philosopher must study arithmetic because without emerging from the sea of generation and laying hold of true being he can never become an arithmetician.' The 'philosopher' = the philosophic student, he that would be a philosopher. Else there is some want of point in the termination of the sentence, because the study of arithmetic is a preliminary to philosophy and not the result of it. Davis and Vaughan render λογιστικώ, 'skilful reasoner,' but this is pointless, and hardly possible when the word is used in two other passages within ten lines in the sense of calculation (515 A, c). For  $\mathring{\eta}$  μηδέποτε . . . γενέσθαι cp. iii. 401 B  $\mathring{\eta}$  μ $\mathring{\eta}$  παρ  $\mathring{\eta}$  μ $\mathring{\eta}$  μ

γενέσεως έξαναδύντι] Cp. Phaedr. 247 D where the soul has risen to the inner heaven 'in the revolution she beholds Justice and Temperance and Knowledge absolute not in the form of generation' (οὐχ η γένεσις πρόσεστιν).

προσήκον δη το μάθημα, κ.τ.λ.] μάθημα (or αὐτό) is to be repeated in the accusative after νομοθετήσαι and πείθειν ἐπὶ λογιστικην ἰέναι. Cp. supra 519 D ἰδεῖν τε τὸ ἀγαθόν, κ.τ.λ.

ένεκα πολέμου τε...καὶ οὐσίαν] By the insertion of τε after ράστώνης from Par. A, the awkward agglomeration of three genitive cases is avoided. The warlike use of arithmetic is admitted here; but when Glaucon follows up this line of argument afterwards, he is reproved by Socrates. This change of front is one of the expedients which Plato employs to keep attention alive.

έννοω ἡηθέντος] Socrates professes to have discovered what has long been familiar to him: this also is one of the artifices by which he quickens the interest of his hearers. Cp. a similar form of expression in ii. 370 A ἐννοω γὰρ καὶ αὐτὸς εἰπόντος σοῦ.

άλλὰ μὴ τοῦ καπηλεύειν] Cp. supra c ὡς ἐμπόρους ἢ καπήλους:
i. 345 C, D ὥσπερ χρηματιστὴν ἀλλ' οὐ ποιμένα.

οἶσθα γάρ που ... πολλαπλασιοῦσιν] 'If you go about to divide the unit they multiply it.' In teaching arithmetic, the unit was represented by a line  $\vdash$ —. If the pupil by a natural mistake assumed the magnitude of this line to be significant, and proposed to divide it, the teacher would show him that for arithmetical purposes

C

D

Republic VII. 525 D 526 A ἔκαστον] Apposition of a part to the whole.—Plato is endeavouring to show the purely abstract and intellectual nature of the science of number. The proof of this is, that while bodies or objects of sense have parts, the unit is said by arithmetical theorists to be incapable of division: which shows that, if questioned, they would at once acknowledge that number of a purely intellectual or abstract sort is the subject of their operations.

 $\hat{\omega}_{\nu}$  by attraction for  $\tilde{a}$ .

δρᾶς οὖν ... (B) τὴν ἀλήθειαν;] 'then do you see, my friend, I said, that this science may be fairly thought necessary to us, since we find that it necessitates the soul to use the pure intelligence for the attainment of pure truth?' A slight play of words seems to be intended, as infra  $527\,\mathrm{A}$  and elsewhere, on ἀναγκαΐον and προσαναγκάζον. ἡμῦν, 'for our purpose' (i.e. for us as lawgivers).

В

οι τε βραδείς . . . ἐπιδιδόασιν] Compare again Laws v. 747.

C

καὶ μήν . . . ώς τοῦτο] 'And, indeed, you will not easily find anything that is more laborious to the student; nor will you find many that are equally so.' οὐδὲ πολλά, sc. â πόνον οὕτω μέγαν παρέχεται. Hence in continuing the sentence, ή which should have followed μείζω is changed to ώς.

526 C= 527 C Geometry, no less than arithmetic, is indispensable to the profession of arms, and if followed far enough, it may also serve as a stage in higher education. For, however this has been obscured by the employment of terms implying a practical application, its real purpose is to obtain abstract, universal, and it may even be said, eternal results. Moreover, experience shows that as arithmetic quickens so geometry clears the mind.

526 D őσα δη ἄλλα] such as the hollow square (πλαίσιον). For the form of the sentence cp. Lach. 182 c προσθήσομεν δ' αὐτῷ οὐ σμικρὰν

προσθήκην, ὅτι πάντα ἄνδρα ἐν πολέμω καὶ θαρραλεώτερον καὶ ἀνδρειότερον ἄν ποιήσειεν αὐτὸν αὐτοῦ οὐκ ὀλίγω αὕτη ἡ ἐπιστήμη. And for the phrase γεωμετρικὸς καὶ μὴ ἄν cp. infra 527 c ἡμμένος τε γεωμετρίας καὶ μή.

Republic VII.

τὸ εὐδαιμονέστατον τοῦ ὄντος] The blessedness of the soul that apprehends the good is attributed to the good itself. Phaedr. 250 c εὐδαίμονα φάσματα . . . ἐποπτεύοντες.

526 E

πῶν τοὖναντίον is adverbial.

527 A

λέγουσι μέν που . . . ἀναγκαίως ] 'They talk in a very ridiculous and meagre fashion.' ἀναγκαίως = with merely practical needs in view. For this meaning cp. ii. 369 D ἀναγκαιοτάτη πόλις: Tim. 69 D: Thuc. v. 8 ὅπλισιν ἀναγκαίαν. There is however a facetious allusion to geometrical necessity, for which cp. v. 458 D οὐ γεωμετρικαῖς γε . . . ἀλλ' ἐρωτικαῖς ἀνάγκαις: 'they have only practical necessities in view, not the necessities of geometry.'

τετραγωνίζειν] = to construct a square equal to a given area. The use of the same word in Theaet. 148 A is slightly different, viz. 'to form when squared,' said of the line which represents a square root.

παρατείνειν] (1) 'to produce a straight line' [or, (2) as in Meno 87 A, to extend a plane figure, L. C.]

προστιθέναι] 'to apply,' viz. a plane figure to a line.

ώς τοῦ ἀεὶ ὄντος γνώσεως, κ.τ.λ.] The words διομολογητέον and ἔνεκα are repeated from the previous sentences:  $\tau \iota$  is to be joined with γιγνομένου, 'becoming this or that.'

В

δλκὸν ἄρα . . . ἔχομεν] ὧ γενναῖε, like ὧ θαυμάσιε, ὧ ἥδιστε expresses the feeling of the speaker about the noble thought which has just arisen in his mind.

πρὸς τὸ ἄνω... ἔχομεν] 'with a view to (πρός) our directing upwards what now wrongly we direct downwards.'

ἄ] sc. τὰ τῆς ψυχῆς ὄμματα. Perhaps ő should be read.

ἐν τῆ καλλιπόλει σοι] 'in your model state': used as a term of endearment; cp. ii. 370 p τοῦ πολιχνίου. αὐτοῦ, i.e. 'geometry,' for the incidental advantages of the science are not small.

Astronomy is approved by Glaucon as conveying information that is of use for generalship. Socrates rallies him on his zeal for useful knowledge, which, as he insimuates, is due to the fear of popular

527 D-528 E

C

Republic VII. 527 D-528 E opinion. He reminds him that the main purpose of education is to brighten the eye of reason. Now there is a much-neglected science which should on this account have been taken first. Geometry was understood to mean plane geometry. But the geometry of solids should come before astronomy which is the science of the motion of solids. Although yet in its infancy, the intermediate science may yet some day be developed. For, difficult as it is, if only encouraged, it would work its way through the fascination which it infallibly exercises on superior minds.

527 D ĕμοιγ' οὖν, ĕφη] Socrates seems to think that too much is being made of the military uses of the sciences. He himself first drew attention to the point in the case of arithmetic (521 d): but when Glaucon, following, as he imagines, the lead of Socrates, praises geometry for the same reason, he observes that even a little of it suffices for the commander, and lays stress upon its higher use in purifying the eye of the soul. Here where Glaucon again makes the same point, he laughs at his utilitarianism and fear of popular opinion. When astronomy again comes up for consideration (528 E), Glaucon, mindful of the remonstrance of Socrates, praises it for making the soul look upward: but Socrates objects to having his metaphor understood so literally: and insists that the truth to which the soul should look up is not visible to the eye but to the mind only.

τὸ δ' ἔστιν . . . ὅτι] 'whereas it is a high truth although believed by few, that,' &c. τό is the subject of ἔστιν and is explained by the clause introduced by ὅτι.

έκάστου ὄργανόν τι ψυχη̂ς] 'a faculty in the soul of every man.'

ἐκκαθαίρεται ... ἀναζωπυρεῖται] 'is polished' (like a soiled mirror) 'and lighted up' (like a fading torch) cp. infra 533 D ἐν βορβόρ $\varphi$  ... τὸ τῆς ψυχῆς ὅμμα κατορωρυγμένον.

E

σκόπει οὖν ... (528 A) ὄνασθαι] i.e. 'will you argue with the philosophers or with the utilitarians, or will you carry on the argument independently and chiefly for your own satisfaction?' A similar turn of thought occurs in Protag. 331 c οὐδὲν γὰρ δέομαι τὸ εἶ βούλει τοῦτο καὶ εἴ σοι δοκεῖ ἐλέγχεσθαι ἀλλ' ἐμέ τε καὶ σέ. The argument is sometimes conceived of in Plato as a disputation between two persons, or again, as the mind talking to itself, or once more, as

independent of the mind and having a distinct power and reality of Republic VII.

Cobet's conjecture ( $\hat{\eta}$   $oi\delta\hat{\epsilon}$   $\pi\rho\hat{o}s$   $\hat{\epsilon}\tau\hat{\epsilon}\rho ovs$ ) is neat and plausible, and preferable to Madvig's ( $\hat{\eta}$   $\epsilon i$   $\pi\rho\hat{o}s$   $oi\delta\hat{\epsilon}\tau\hat{\epsilon}\rho ovs$ ), but is not really required. The double negative is merely emphatic.

527 E

> 528 A

ἄναγε . . . αὐτὸ καθ' αὐτὸ λαβεῖν] 'then take a step backward,' I said: 'for the truth is that we mistook the science which should follow next after geometry.' 'How was that?' said he—(sc. πῶς λαβόντες οὐκ ὀρθῶς ἐλάβομεν;)—'The error was in placing solids in motion before solids at rest.' According to Plato's own statement (528 d) the mention of solid geometry in its natural place was purposely omitted because of its backwardness: the omission may also be a trick of style intended to give variety and dramatic effect. If astronomy had not been mentioned twice, Socrates would not have had the two opportunities for laughing at Glaucon, first for his utilitarianism, secondly for his sentimentalism. Cp. iv. 430 d where it is proposed to pass on to Justice without considering Temperance: and Symp. 185 d where the order of the speakers Aristophanes and Eryximachus is transposed.

νῦν δή] These words in the sense of 'just now,' 'a little while ago,' are not divided by  $\gamma$ άρ, but express a single notion: cp. καὶ δή.

ἤδη] is to be joined with ἐν περιφορᾶ ὄν.

τοῦτο] sc. τρίτη αὔξη.

В

μεγαλοφρονούμενοι] 'in their great conceit of themselves:' a word not found elsewhere except in the active voice, but not for that reason to be changed into μεγαλανχούμενοι (Cobet). It is not surprising that Plato should have introduced the middle voice of a verb signifying a mental state. Compare the word φιλοφρονεῖσθαι, which occurs six times in the Laws and nowhere else in the genuine writings of Plato.

ἐπεὶ καὶ νῦν...(n) φανῆναι] The plan of the sentence seems to have changed in the process of construction. ὑπὸ δὲ τῶν ζητούντων may depend on some general idea of disadvantage, e. g. κωλυόμενα understood from the previous clause. (Vögelin cuts the knot of the difficulty by cancelling δέ: this suggests another interpretation, taking ὑπὸ τῶν ζητούντων with αὐξάνεται, 'still by the efforts of their votaries they grow perforce,' but this is also very improbable.) Plato means to say that these mathematicians were ignorant of

the educational value of their own study. His own love of the regular solids may be remarked in the Timaeus (54, 55).

528 D αὐτὰ φανῆναι] = εὶ φανείη.

σπεύδων, κ.τ.λ.] Plato elsewhere alludes to the backwardness of such studies in Greece as compared with Egypt: a fact which the Athenian interlocutor in the Laws (vii. 819 d) says had struck him late in life (καὶ αὐτὸς ἀκούσας ὀψέ ποτε τὸ περὶ ταῦτα ἡμῶν πάθος ἐθαύμασα): when he found that among the Egyptians mathematical problems were an amusement of childhood, the ignorance of the Greeks seemed to him absolutely 'swinish' (οὖκ ἀνθρώπινον ἀλλὰ ὑηνῶν τινῶν . . . θρεμμάτων).

γελοίως] 'In a way that is ridiculous,' and so 'miserable,' or 'contemptible'—a favourite application of the word in Plato: cp. especially iv. 429 Ε ἔκπλυτα καὶ γελοῖα.

528 E- Have 530 C Glaucor a usefue may loo

Having corrected this omission, we proceed in order to Astronomy. Glaucon praises the contemplation of the starry heavens, not now as a useful, but as an elevating pursuit. Socrates replies, that the eye may look upwards, but that the mind looks down, if it is contented with mere observation and does not rise to universal truths. The sky is only a great moving diagram, and Astronomy, like Geometry, must leave poring over phenomena, and proceed to determine the general principles of solids in motion, if this science also is to help us onward and upward, as we advance from what is visible towards the intellectual and invisible. The astronomer must let the heavens alone and make use of problems (i.e. study abstract theorems).

528 E ἐὰν αὐτὴν πόλις μετίη] The expression is elliptical: sc. ἴσμεν
 γὰρ ὑπάρξουσαν, ἐάν, κ.τ.λ. Cp. supra 522 D εἴπερ . . . μὴ ἠπίστατο.

ö γε νῦν δή μοι ... ἐπέπληξας] 'acting on the principle of your rebuke': supra 527 D. There is great humour in the way in which Glaucon is driven from the utilitarian to the sentimental view of knowledge, only to receive a more severe rebuff from Socrates.

The antecedent to δ is an accusative ἐκεῖνο in apposition to the following clause.

529 A οί εἰς φιλοσοφίαν ἀνάγοντες] has been translated (1) 'who embark' or 'set sail on the sea of philosophy': a metaphorical use of ἀνάγειν which, although it receives some colour from Phaedr.

272 D οὐδ' ἀνάγειν ἄνω μακρὰν περιβαλλομένους, seems to require more help from the surrounding imagery; or (2) 'who raise astronomy to the rank of a science.' For this use of ἀνάγειν cp. Tim. 19 Λ τοὺς ἀξίους πάλιν ἀνάγειν δεῦν, 'the worthy are to be raised from a lower to a higher class.' It is also possible (3) that ἀνάγειν simply means 'to refer,' 'those who refer it' (sc. astronomy) 'to philosophy.' φιλοσοφία is here used in the popular sense of any higher kind of knowledge, as in Tim. 88 c μουσικῆ καὶ πάση φιλοσοφία προσχρώμενου.

Republic VII. 529

οὖκ ἀγεννῶς, κ.τ.λ.] This and what follows is of course ironical, as Glaucon very clearly sees (δίκην, ἔφη, ἔχω infra c). Those who have conceived thus 'nobly' of the things above, are said in the Timaeus (91 D) to be destined hereafter to enter on another life in the form of birds.

νομίσαι ... ποιοῦν] For the participle instead of the infinitive after νομίζω, which here avoids a treble infinitive (νομίσαι ποιεῖν βλέπειν) cp. Xen. Anab. vi. 6, § 24 νόμιζε ... ἄνδρα ἀγαθὸν ἀποκτενῶν.

οὔτε μαθεῖν, κ.τ.λ.] As often in an illustration, the construction is resumed with an asyndeton.

νέων ἐν γῆ ἢ ἐν θαλάττη] For this piece of extravagance cp. iii. 388 Λ πλωίζοντα and note. A similar, but more pointed, metaphorical use of ἐξ ὑπτίας νεῖν occurs in Phaedr. 264 Λ ἐξ ὑπτίας ἀνάπαλιν διανεῖν ἐπιχειρεῖ τὸν λόγον. νέων is absent from some MSS. but is required by ἐν θαλάττη.

τῶν τοιούτων] SC. τῶν ὁρωμένων.

τῶν δὲ ἀληθινῶν] sc. φορῶν, as the following clauses show. That swiftness and slowness are themselves causes which move and contain all moving objects, is a mode of speaking due to a philosophy which attributes an excessive importance to abstract ideas. As afterwards in the Timaeus, though in a somewhat different manner, the world is doubled—the true swiftness and slowness convey the real heavenly bodies which are invisible, as the apparent velocities of the bodies that appear are the visible copies of them.

πᾶσι . . . σχήμασι] Plato seems to mean that every mathematical figure is, or ought to be, exemplified in the revolution of the heavens.

οὐκοῦν, εἶπον, κ.τ.λ.] The works of creation are imperfect, like all other works of art. Let us imagine that some Daedalus had

В

D

C

В

drawn mathematical figures: no one would measure these figures with the view of learning the true nature of proportion. Nor will any one gather the true nature of astronomy from measuring the proportions of days and weeks and months and years.

ώσπερ αν . . . (Ε) διαγράμμασιν] Sc. χρήσαιτο αὐτοῖς.

530 νομιεῖν μέν] is a resumption of ταὐτὸν πείσεσθαι, 'that is to say, he will think.'

συστήσασθαι] is of course active in meaning.

αὐτόν sc. τὸν οὐρανόν.

τὴν δὲ νυκτὸς . . . πρὸς ἄλληλα] The sentence is slightly altered in the process of construction, and the general meaning of these words is resumed in ταῦτα infra. For παραλλάττειν cp. Tim. 22 c τὸ δ' ἀληθές ἐστι τῶν περὶ γῆν καὶ κατ' οὐρανὸν ἰόντων παράλλαξις (deviation).

ζητεῖν depends on νομίζοντα with the common ellipse of δεῖν.

προβλήμασιν ἄρα . . . μέτιμεν] 'Astronomy, then, like geometry, we shall pursue by the help of problems.' It is obvious that pure mathematics do not give the slightest knowledge of physics. No abstract study of βάθους φορά would explain the motions of the heavenly bodies. But when a ground of fact has been obtained, mathematical science is the great lever of our knowledge of the universe.

Though Plato was mistaken in identifying the science which treats of solids in motion with astronomy, he was probably before his age in the idea that a theory of matter in motion might form a separate branch of mathematics.

The same desire to make physics a pure science resting on the  $a_{\gamma a}\theta \delta \nu$  appears in Phaedo 97 p, E, where Socrates describes himself as turning away dissatisfied from Anaxagoras, because he was unable to demonstrate the rational necessity of physics. A similar tendency is observable in the Timaeus, where Timaeus, although professing that the knowledge of physics which is attainable by man is only probable, nevertheless seeks to construct the elements out of triangles. In Laws vii. 821, 822, there is a complaint of the empirical state of astronomy, which led men to 'blasphemous' notions of wandering stars and contrarious orbits. Plato seems to imply, perhaps drawn to this by a sound instinct,

that if there were a true science of astronomy, we should find Republic nothing irregular in the motions of the stars.

πολλαπλάσιον . . . ἢ ὡς νῦν ἀστρονομεῖται] For ἢ after an 530 implied comparison cp. i. 335 λ προσθεῖναι τῷ δικαίῳ ἢ ὡς τὸ πρῶτον ἐλέγομεν.

530 C-531 C

The theory of music (a Pythagorean subject which is not at once obvious to Glaucon) must also be raised not only above the wrangling disputes of practical musicians, but also above the limitations of Pythagorean theory, which is still based upon the 'harmonies which are heard.' Our pupils must rise to the universal contemplation of harmonic ratios in themselves.

άλλὰ γάρ τι, κ.τ.λ.] γάρ connects with τἄλλα,—'but (seeing that there are other studies) have you any of the suitable studies to suggest?' For τῶν προσηκόντων cp. supra 521 D.

530 C

τὰ μὲν οὖν πάντα, κ.τ.λ.] Such professions of ignorance or imperfect knowledge are characteristic of Plato: cp. supra iii. 400 c, D εἰs Δάμωνα ἀναβεβλήσθω. Plato is suggesting that many phenomena besides those of astronomy and harmony may be scientifically brought under φορά. All change might be described as a kind of motion. Cp. Theaet. 152 D, 156 c, D, where vision is described as the result of certain motions, and Laws x. 893, 894, where ten kinds of motion are enumerated; among them σύγκρισις and διάκρισις, αὕξη and φθίσις.

D

ώς πρὸς ἀστρονομίαν . . . παγῆναι] Cp. Tim. 47 B, c θεὸν ἡμῖν ἀνευρεῖν δωρήσασθαί τε ὅψιν, ἵνα τὰς ἐν οὐρανῷ κατιδόντες τοῦ νοῦ περιόδους χρησαίμεθα ἐπὶ τὰς περιφορὰς τὰς τῆς παρ' ἡμῖν διανοήσεως, ξυγγενεῖς ἐκείναις οὕσας, ἀταράκτοις τεταραγμένας, ἐκμαθόντες δὲ καὶ λογισμῶν κατὰ φύσιν ὀρθότητος μετασχύντες, μιμούμενοι τὰς τοῦ θεοῦ πάντως ἀπλανεῖς οὕσας, τὰς ἐν ἡμῖν πεπλανημένας καταστησαίμεθα.—The whole passage should be read.

should be read.

ώς οι τε Πυθαγόρειοι φασι, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. iv. 424 c ως φησί τε Δάμων καὶ ἐγὼ πείθομαι: Symp. 186 c, see also Tim. 80 в for an analysis of 'harmony.'

ἐκείνων] viz. the Pythagoreans, who had given special attention to harmonics.

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

καὶ εἴ τι ἄλλο πρὸς τούτοις] This seems to imply that other applications of βάθους φορά are possible besides astronomy and harmonics. Cp. supra  $\mathbf{p}$  τὰ μὲν οὖν πάντα, κ.τ.λ.

Republic VII. 530 E παρὰ πάντα ταῦτα] 'throughout this course of education:' cp. iii. 412 D παρὰ πάντα τὸν βίον,

а́рті] supra 529.

 $\eta$  οὐκ οἶσθ' ὅτι, κ.τ.λ.] There were two parties in the musical world of Athens: one the scientific, which rested on the old Pythagorean doctrines and generally denied the appeal to sense into which however they were sometimes betrayed (they were headed in later times by Aristoxenus the pupil of Aristotle): the other, the empirical, who are referred to in the words which follow. Plato intimates in the words ἀλλ' ἐκείνους (53 I B) that he appeals to the scientific and not to the empirical party. But he adds that even the former are not wholly right.

531 A ποιοῦσι] The subject is to be gathered from the context, viz. οi περὶ τὰs ἀρμονίας. Socrates means the Pythagoreans, but Glaucon understands him to speak of the empirics or ordinary musicians. This is corrected in what follows (infra B, c).

νὴ τοὺς θεούς, κ.τ.λ.] Plato gives a comic description of the empiric musicians experimenting either with voice, flute, or lyre. A tone and a quarter-tone are sounded successively, while the men lean forward to listen, whereupon some of them declare that they perceive no difference, while others say they recognize a distinct interval, and that this ought to be made the unit of harmony and employed as the basis of the scale: ἐν μέσω τινὰ ἢχῆν is a slightly inaccurate but idiomatic expression for μέσον τι τῶν ἢχῶν, 'a difference of tone.'

The introduction (in flute-playing) of a quarter-note  $(\pi\nu\kappa\nu\delta\nu)$  between the middle notes of the enharmonic scale, is recognized as a comparative novelty even by Plutarch (De Musica, c. xi), and was treated as an obscure point by Aristoxenus, who says of it, τελευταίω αὐτῷ καὶ μόλις μετὰ πολλοῦ πόνου συνεθίζεται ἡ αἴσθησις. See Westphal's Harmonik, 2nd ed., p. 128. Aristoxenus (Elem. Harm. i. 24) defines πύκνωμα as τὸ ἐκ δύο διαστημάτων συνεστηκός, ἃ συντεθέντα ἔλαττον διάστημα περιίξει τοῦ λειπομένου διαστήματος ἐν τῷ διὰ τεσσάρων. For example  $a \delta b(c) d$  when the two intervals  $a \delta$ ,  $\delta b$ , are together less than the interval b d (c) being omitted). bθεγγομένων (viz. τῶν χορδῶν). Ven.  $\Xi$  Vat.  $\mathfrak m$  read bθεγγόμενον: 'others contending that the note is now identical.'

οΐον ἐκ γειτόνων φωνὴν θηρευόμενοι] 'as if catching a sound from a neighbour's house.' The exact metaphor is obscure.

σὺ μέν The order of words as rendered in the translation is Republic (1) περὶ κατηγορίας έξαρνήσεως, κ.τ.λ. The words πράγματα . . . στρεβλοῦντας suggest other imagery derived from the law-courts. 'They have a controversy with the strings and torture them: they accuse them of refusing to speak or of speaking too much.' Socrates is contented with hinting at this grotesque conception. According to another way of taking the words (2) κατηγορίας, κ.τ.λ., may be rendered 'concerning accusation of the strings and their denial of it and exaggeration,' the latter words describing the behaviour of the strings under trial. The musicien enragé is imagined as scolding the strings: the strings as denying his accusations and braving him.

For the weakness of empiricism in music cp. Phil. 56 A To μέτρον έκάστης χορδής τῷ στοχάζεσθαι φερομένης θηρεύουσα.

ταὐτὸν γὰρ ποιοῦσι, κ.τ.λ. Plato as we may retort has fallen into the same error about harmony as about astronomy. For harmony no less than astronomy rests ultimately on a fact, which is that certain successions or combinations of sound are agreeable to the human ear. The simplicity of this fact, which is found to agree with certain ratios of number, has naturally led in either case to the substitution of numerical laws for the phenomena of which they are the expression.

οὐκ είς προβλήματα ἀνίασιν 'They do not rise to problems,' i.e. to abstract questions which are independent of facts.

χρήσιμον . . . ἄχρηστον καλοῦ is here added because music seems especially to suggest the identity of the beautiful and the good. ἄλλως, i.e. μὴ πρὸς τὴν καλοῦ τε καὶ ἀγαθοῦ ζήτησιν. The subject of αχρηστον is τὸ περὶ άρμονίας.

Furthermore, the sciences thus purged from empiricism must be carried upwards to the stage where they are seen in mutual correlation. Then they may really become the prelude (they can never be more) of Dialectic, the study of pure abstractions by pure thought. By this alone the mind gets beyond 'hypotheses' and dispenses with them, although employing the arts or so-called sciences concerned with them, in the preliminary stage, which for want of a better word has been termed in the previous survey (vi. sub fin.) διάνοια. Nor is the dialectician perfect until he has realized a complete conception not only of Being but of the Good.

ĺΠ. 531 B

531 C-

534 E

C

οἷμαι δέ γε...(p) ἀνόνητα] The affinity of astronomy and music is not at first sight obvious. To the Pythagoreans and Plato (see Tim. 47) the music of the spheres afforded a link of connexion between them, which to us appears fanciful.

But Plato sees also a real connexion, inasmuch as he supposes them both to be based upon number and proportion, which he regards as the common element of all the preparatory sciences. When reduced to this mathematical form they are the prelude to the science of the Good.

For the application of this remark cp. infra 537 c.

Τοῦ προοιμίου] sc. τὸ ἔργον. The genitive is continued in τίνοs by a sort of attraction.

πάντα ταῦτα προοίμια ἐστιν] The figure of the προοίμιον and νόμος with a play on the word νόμος, is one of the leading features in the structure of the Laws. (Laws iii. 700 B, iv. 722 D.)

Ε ων . . . ἐντετύχηκα ων = ἐκείνων οίς.

ἀλλὰ ἤδη . . . εἰδέναι;] 'But do you imagine that persons who are as yet unable to give and accept a reason will ever know anything of the things which we say they ought to know?' Badham's conjecture οἱ δὴ . . . τινός is partly anticipated  $\binom{οἱ}{\mathring{\eta}δη}$  by a corrector of Par. A, where οἱ μή is written, but with two dots over οἶ. But the text is sound. ἤδη is to be connected with μὴ δυνατοί τινες ὄντες. With εἴσεσθαι, δοκοῦσι has to be supplied from οὐ γάρ που δοκοῦσί γέ σοι supra.

οὐδ' αὖ . . . τοῦτό γε] sc. δοκεῖ. 'Nor again is that my view,' i.e. while I deny that mathematicians are dialecticians, I will not affirm that any but dialecticians can have the knowledge required.

532 ἐλέγομεν] supra 516 A ff.

οὕτω καὶ ὅταν . . . τοῦ ὁρατοῦ] The reading of the MSS. is followed in the text. Various alterations have been suggested:
(1) the insertion of ἄν (or ἐάν) before ἄνευ; (2) ἐπιχειρῶν for ἐπιχειρῆ; (3) ὁρμῶν for ὁρμῷ; (4) κῶν μή for καὶ μή, with a comma after ὁρμῷ (then supposed to be in the indicative mood). It is better to follow the MSS. without attempting to get over the asyndeton which is not without parallel in Plato—the clause ἄνευ . . . ἀποστῆ being explanatory of οὕτω . . . ἐπιχειρῆ.

ο ἔστιν ἔκαστον] Until he reach the Good, he will still find Republic himself among specific εἴδη. Cp. vi. 484 p and note.

ἐκεῖνος τότε] sc. ὁ τῆ τῆς ὄψεως δυνάμει χρώμενος supra Λ : τότε like ἐλέγομεν refers to supra 516 Λ ff.

532 B

ή δέ γε... (c) ἀποσκιαζομένας] 'But the release of the prisoners from their chains and the turning of them from the shadows towards the images and the light, and the ascent from the underground den into the day (supra 516 E), and their vainly endeavouring when there to look on the animals and plants, and the light of the sun, whereas they can only look on the divinely made reflections and the shadows of real things (not shadows of images cast by the light of a fire, which is itself a shadow compared with the sun).' In what follows the construction is changed and the nominatives are resumed in ταύτην...τὴν δύναμιν. For the confusing double use of the demonstrative οὖτος cp. iii. 405 B, c.

The conjecture of Nägelsbach ἔτι ἀδυναμία βλέπειν (a reading found also in Iamblichus) is plausible and in keeping with the previous nominatives feminine. But on the other hand it may be said that ἀδυναμία βλέπειν (for τοῦ βλέπειν) is a questionable construction without a verb preceding; and that the infinitive βλέπειν follows the preceding verbal nouns as if ἡ ἐπάνοδος had been τὸ ἐπανελθεῖν αὐτούς, while the preposition ἐπί may be used as in Sophocles (El. 108, Ant. 759, O. C. 1554), in which passages the sense of condition appears to have passed into the manner. So here, 'to look powerlessly,' i.e. to be without power to see. In πρὸς δέ, κ.τ.λ., the negative notion in ἐπ' ἀδυναμία disappears.

C

θεῖα] This word has been needlessly suspected. In Soph. 266 B, c, p Plato speaks of a divine as well as a human μιμητική. The epithet here contrasts the reflections in water, &c., due to the light of the sun, with the shadows of the σκευαστά cast by the fire-light. The phantasmagoria in the den and the σκιαί of real objects are distinct, as in the passage which this resumes, 516 A ff. For the position of θεῖα as a 'dragging predicate' cp. ix. 573 Λ τῶν ἐν ταῖς τοιαύταις συνουσίαις ἡδονῶν ἀνειμένων.

των ὄντων] is emphatic = the visible realities which in the allegory correspond to the ideas.

δι' έτέρου τοιούτου] τοιούτου refers to εἰδώλων.

ώσπερ τότε | sc. ην έπαναγωγή: supra 516 B ff.

χαλεπά, κ.τ.λ.] It is difficult to accept, being difficult to understand: it is difficult not to accept it, because when understood, it appears self-evident.

Е

τίνες αὖ όδοί] sc. τῆς διαλεκτικῆς εἰσιν. One MS. (r) has αἱ όδοί.

πρὸς αὐτό] The pronoun is emphatic. Cp. v. 473 c ἐπ' αὐτὸ δὴ . . . εἶμι ὁ τῷ μεγίστῳ προσεικάζομεν κύματι.

533 A οὐκέτ', ἢν δ' ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Symp. 200 Ε τὰ δὲ τέλεα καὶ ἐποπτικὰ (μυηθῆναι) . . . οὐκ οἶό' εἰ οἶός τ' ἃν εἴης. ἐρῶ μὲν οὖν, ἔφη, ἐγὼ καὶ προθυμίας οὐδὲν ἀπολείψω' πειρῶ δὲ ἔπεσθαι, ἃν οἶός τε ἦς.

ο γε δή μοι φαίνεται] For the moderation of statement cp. Phaedo 114 C, D τὸ μὲν οὖν ταῦτα διϊσχυρίσασθαι οὕτως ἔχειν, ὡς ἐγὼ διελήλυθα, οὐ πρέπει νοῦν ἔχοντι ἀνδρί, κ.τ.λ.

ὅτι μὲν \*δεῖ] This reading is supported by the version of Ficinus and partially by the reading of  $\Phi$  (ὅτι δεῖ μέν): 'What we must insist on is that our pupils ought to behold the vision which we thus indicate.' The reading of Par. A, &c., ὅτι μὲν δή, κ.τ.λ., 'That in appearance (ἰδεῖν) it is something like this,'—is better authenticated but seems less in point.

В

τόδε γοῦν . . . . ως] follows ἀμφισβητήσει (not λέγουσιν).

όδ $\hat{\phi}$ ] 'Systematically,' 'methodically': cp. Phaedr. 263 Β όδ $\hat{\phi}$  διηρησθαι.

αί μὲν ἄλλαι πᾶσαι τέχναι, κ.τ.λ.] The division of the arts into κολακική (πρὸς δόξας ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἐπιθυμίας), ποιητική (πρὸς γενέσεις τε καὶ συνθέσεις) and ἐπιμελητική (πρὸς θεραπείαν) may remind us of similar divisions in the Gorgias (463 ff., 501, 502), Sophist (222 E, 265 ff.), and Politicus (261–275 E): γένεσις, i.e. γεωργία: συνθέσις, e.g. ὑφαντική, τεκτονική, &c. τετράφαται from τρέπω = τετραμμέναι εἰσί.

γεωμετρίας . . . έπομένας] The accusative, by attraction to  $\mathring{a}s$ , is also in construction with  $\delta ρ \mathring{\omega} μ ε ν$ . The plural, also partly due to attraction, has a depreciatory effect.

Mathematics are not a science in Plato's sense of the term, because they do not inquire into the nature of their own conceptions. They start with certain assumptions: they have a scientific basis only when connected with the idea of good, which is at once the beginning and end of them, the final cause to which they all tend and the foundation on which they rest. Such a connexion is of course an illusion, the nature of which was not understood in the

beginnings of philosophy. The acknowledgement that the 'reality' of mathematics is not metaphysics but physics would have been an entire inversion of the Platonic order of ideas.

Republic VII. 533

C

ω γὰρ ἀρχὴ μὲν ὁ μὴ οἶδε, κ.τ.λ.] The nature of our ideas of number and figure may be summed up under a few heads: (1) Mathematical, like other abstractions, have been gradually separated from the concrete: the process by which the abstract idea of one is obtained is not different from that which gives the abstract idea of man. (2) But in such abstractions the individual being perfectly vacant of any separate content is identical with the universal: hence they admit of endless construction, and every construction has absolute necessity and certainty. (3) They are affected like our other ideas by use and association: the incessant recurrence of them, the power of constructing them; also the verification of their truth in the concrete, as well as by algebra and trigonometry and the various processes of arithmetic,—greatly strengthen our conceptions of them. (4) The mode in which they have been gradually attained and developed by a series of inquirers from Pythagoras to Newton and Laplace, must be clearly separated (as in the case of all our ideas) from the accidental way in which they are acquired by the individual, (a) unconsciously through the medium of language,  $(\beta)$  as the result of education and study. In any other sense, the origin of our ideas of number and figure, as of all our other ideas, is only their history.

οὐκοῦν...(D) αἷς διήλθομεν τέχναις] 'then dialectic and dialectic alone pursues this method: doing away with hypotheses and going to the very first principle so as to have certainty; and gently drawing and leading upward the eye of the soul, which is actually buried in some barbarian bog' (βαρβαρικφ̂ is chosen partly for the sound), 'using as handmaids in the work of conversion the arts which we have discussed.'

ἀναιροῦσα] has been compared to the Hegelian auf heben ('the hypotheses which in the sphere of mathematics were absolute become relative to each other and to the Good'). But the analogy is hardly so close. ἐπ' αὐτὴν τὴν ἀρχήν is governed chiefly by πορεύεται, and ἀναιροῦσα means 'taking out of the way.' The hypotheses are done away with; that is, when seen in their relation to the good they cease to be hypotheses, cp. vi. 511 Β τὰs ὑποθέσεις ποιούμενος οὐκ ἀρχάς, ἀλλὰ τῷ ὕντι ὑποθέσεις, οἷον ἐπιβάσεις τε καὶ ὁρμάς, κ.τ.λ.: and Symp. 211 C ὥσπερ ἐπαναβαθμοῖς χρώμενον. A simpler

Е

Republic conception of διαλεκτική as the 'science of sciences' occurs in Phil. VII. 58 Α τὴν γὰρ περὶ τὸ ὅν καὶ τὸ ὅντως καὶ τὸ κατὰ ταὐτὸν ἀεὶ πεφυκός.

διὰ τὸ ἔθος ] Cp. Theaet. 157 B, Soph. 267 D, Cratyl. 434 E.
 ἔν γε τῷ πρόσθεν που] vi. 511 D.

άλλ' δ αν μόνον . . . δ λέγει έν ψυχή] These words are omitted in Ven. Z, and their genuineness has been doubted, partly on the ground, which is not very strong, that in Plato's language assent in the negative form (où yàp oùr) is not usually accompanied by any further elucidation. There is considerable variety in the readings: the weight of manuscript authority being in favour of that which is retained in the text. The various reading λέξιν for εξιν q need not be rejected on the ground of tautology. Cp. viii. 543 c τους λόγους έποίου λέγων. Another reading is à λέγεις, 'what you mean to express'—this appears as a correction of Par. A. The words in the text are very possibly genuine and may be rendered—'we only require' (the verb is gathered from οὐ περὶ ὀνόματος ἀμφισβήτησις) 'an expression which may indicate with a clearness proportioned to the mental condition, that of which it speaks as existing in the mind.' For example, διάνοια may not be a very clear or definite expression, but the state of mind which it expresses is also far from clear. Of many suggested emendations that of Professor Bywater deserves most consideration, ἀλλ' ὁ ἃν μόνον δηλοῖ τὴν έξιν, πῶς έχει σαφηνείας α λέγεις εν ψυχή. For the whole expression cp. ix. 581 A ώστε τι ήμιν αὐτοις δηλοῦν, ὁπότε τοῦτο της ψυχης τὸ μέρος λέγοιμεν. Ιτ deserves notice that the whole sentence ἀλλ' δ . . . ψυχη being omitted in Z is accordingly absent from the editions of Aldus and Stephanus.

τὴν δ' ἐψ' οἷς ταῦτα, κ.τ.λ.] 'The exact proportion to each other of the things to which these terms apply, and the division of the spheres of opinion and reason severally.' The line (vi. 509 d. E) was proportionately divided. Plato seems to hint that the proportionate division of the line and of each of the subdivisions was not a mere arbitrary fancy.

πολλαπλασίων . . . ή ] Cp. supra 530 c πολλαπλάσιον . . . ή ώς νῦν ἀστρονομείται.

όσων] (1) sc. ὅσων λόγων οἱ παρεληλυθότες λόγοι ἡμᾶς ἐνέπλησαν [B. J.], or (2) for τῶν ὅσοι by a somewhat unusual attraction as if ἤ had not preceded.

534 A

η καὶ διαλεκτικον...οὐσίας; 'Do you call by the name "dialectician" one who has a conception of the essence of each thing?'—The words πως γὰρ αν...φαίην; in the answer, refer only to the latter part of the question.

Republic 534 B

διὰ πάντων ἐλέγχων διεξιών running the gauntlet of all questionings.' Under the figure of a battle Plato describes a logical pursuit.

C

ἀπτῶτι τῷ λόγω] 'without the argument coming to a fall.'

εἴ ποτε ἔργω τρέφοις] Cp. iii. 389 D ἐάν γε . . . ἐπί γε λόγω ἔργα τελήται: and for μετά γε σοῦ, ib. Λ εί σὰ . . . βούλει ἐμὸν τιθέναι.

D

άλόγους ὄντας ώσπερ γραμμάς (1) 'incapable of reason, like irrational lines' (i. e. surds in mathematics) [so Schneider]. It must be admitted that such a punning allusion belongs rather to Plato's later manner. (Cp. Polit. 257 A, 266 B.) But it gives the most plausible meaning to this place, and may be illustrated from Theaet, 146 A (addressed to Theodorus the mathematician) προθυμούμενος ήμας ποιήσαι διαλέγεσθαι καὶ φίλους τε καὶ προσηγόρους άλλήλοις γίγνεσθαι. Cp. also the number of the tyrant in ix. 589 ff. which is little more than an elaborate jest. For the idiom in which the qualifying epithet is omitted with the thing compared cp. Soph. O. T. 922 and 923 εκπεπληγμένου . . . ως κυβερνήτην νεως. Another interpretation (2) is suggested by Theaet. 202 B, where the elements of thought are said ἄλογα καὶ ἄγνωστα εἶναι, αἰσθητὰ δέ being compared to letters, which have no significance until combined in syllables. 'Insignificant and meaningless, like mere lines.' (3) The only other possible explanation is that of Ast, 'incapable of speech like mere lines or written characters.' Cp. Phaedrus 274, where he dwells on the superiority of speech over writing.

> 535 A-537 D

Who are to be counted worthy of this training, and how shall it be ordered? Those who are to be our rulers must be chosen young. not as in our first selection (iii. 412). And besides the steadiness and firmness which were then required, their intellectual quickness and perseverance, and their love of truth, will have to be thoroughly tested and approved. Philosophy will not then be disgraced, as she is now. In early life intellectual training should be given through amusements, but at twenty when compulsory gymnastic comes to an end, our selected pupils must begin a ten years' course of mental discipline, in which the scattered elements of knowledge previously Republic VII. 535 A-537 D acquired must be combined in a whole according to their natural relationship to one another and to true being. Comprehensiveness is the great test of dialectical talent. At thirty a further selection should be made, and those finally sifted out by the help of dialectic for the select class may be promoted to still higher honours.

535 A B

C

τούς τε γὰρ βεβαιοτάτους, κ.τ.λ.] vi. 503.

βλοσυρούς τὰ ήθη] 'Of a sturdy moral nature.'

άλλὰ καὶ . . . αὐτοῖς] 'but also they must have the natural gifts which are suitable to *this* education'—i.e. the higher education of which he is now treating.

ποῖα . . . διαστέλλει;] 'Which do you determine these to be?' For the middle voice cp. Aristot. Pol. ii. 8, § 17 ἐπειδὴ πεποιήμεθα μνείαν, ἔτι μικρὰ περὶ αὐτοῦ διαστείλασθαι βέλτιον.

δριμύτητα . . . μανθάνειν] μανθάνειν, which takes the place of a subject of ὑπάρχειν answering to δριμύτητα, is attracted into construction with δεῖ.

οἰκειότερος . . . ὁ πόνος] 'The toil more properly belongs to the mind, being confined to it and not shared by the body.' For ἀποδειλιῶν cp. vi. 504 A.

καὶ μνήμονα . . . ζητητέον] 'Therefore the man whom we seek must also be endowed with memory; he must be a solid man who is a lover of all kinds of labour.'

ἄρρατον] from a and ράω, a word said to have existed as a various reading for ἄρρηκτον in Il. xiv. 56 ἄρρατον νηῶν τε καὶ αὐτῶν εἶλαρ ἔσεσθαι. The only other place where it is now found is Cratyl. 407 p, where it is said to mean σκληρόν τε καὶ ἀμετάστροφον: compare the French word inébranlable.

τίνι τρόπω ] sc. ἄλλω.

τά τε τοῦ σώματος, κ.τ.λ.] As in iii. 403 D, bodily exercise is subordinated to the training of the mind.

δ καὶ πρότερον εἶπον ] Vi. 495 E.

D χωλὸς δὲ . . . φιλοπονίαν] 'And he too is lame, whose love of labour, instead of this, has taken the opposite turn.' See Tim. 87 c, p for a similar train of reflection.

οὐκοῦν καὶ πρὸς ἀλήθειαν, κ.τ.λ.] For the voluntary and in- Republic voluntary lie cp. ii. 382.

<sup>1</sup>VII. 535 D

Minds that hate falsehood in practice are often very impatient of scientific or historical truth. They may be unconscious of their defect: this unconsciousness, however, is no measure of the responsibility which attaches to them. Prejudice and stupidity cannot be altogether exempted from the guilt of the consequences which flow from them. The educated are apt to imagine that they are no more bound to inquire than the uneducated; and they sometimes think that their duty is rather to conceal than to express the result of their inquiries, when at variance with common belief. The truth is that the less the uneducated inquire, the more the educated are bound to inquire; and the stronger the impulse to concealment, the greater the duty to speak plainly. The sense of such a duty is not easily aroused when at variance with interest or custom, at the point where science and religion, virtue and truth, temporarily seem to diverge, or where the inquirer has to stand against the general opinion of mankind. Intellectual cowardice or common-placeness, or want of faith, are fatal to all true philosophy. He who has such a 'maimed soul' may perhaps escape without injury to himself: but, if a man of ability, he cannot fail to leave an evil mark on others, in our day especially, when more than in ancient times the world needs to be reminded that the love of truth is the first of intellectual virtues.

ἀμαθαίνουσα] The termination is expressive—'to indulge in ignorance': cp. ἀκολασταίνω.

Ε

πρὸς ὅ τι ἀν τύχωσι τούτων] τούτων refers to τὰ τῆς ἀρετῆς μέρη, which has been already resumed in τὰ τοιαῦτα, and the subject of τύχωσι is the same with that of  $\lambda$ ανθάνουσι. 'They fail to see that they are making use of people who are lame and bastard with respect to the qualities for which they happen to make use of them.'

536 A

**τοσαύτη**ν] supra 535 c.

В

άλλοίους . . . καταντλήσομεν] πράξομεν is intransitive, καὶ . . . καί = 'not only,' 'but.' καταντλεῖν and καταχεῖν are favourite metaphors in Plato. Cp. Laws vii. 800 D πᾶσαν βλασφημίαν τῶν ἱερῶν καταχέουσι, and Rep. i. 344 D ὥσπερ βαλανεὺς ἡμῶν καταντλήσας κατὰ τῶν ὥτων ἀθρώον καὶ πολὺν τὸν λόγον.

Republic VII. 536 γελοῖον δ' ἔγωγε . . .  $\pi \alpha \theta \epsilon \hat{\nu} \nu$ ] 'My present error is, if not disgraceful, yet ridiculous enough.' It is observable that although Plato maintains the verisimilitude of the fiction that he is an actual legislator by all sorts of minute touches, he sometimes for the sake of variety, as in the present passage, allows the illusion to be broken through: cp. iii. 389 D ἐάν γε, ἢ δ' ὅς, ἐπί γε λόγφ ἔργα τελῆται: supra 534 D οὖς τῷ λόγφ τρέφεις . . . εἴ ποτε ἔργφ τρέφοις: vi. 510 E.

C τοις αιτίοις] For the strong feeling which these words convey cp. Phaedo 116 c οὐκ ἐμοὶ χαλεπαίνεις, γιγνώσκεις γὰρ τοὺς αιτίους, ἀλλ' ἐκείνοις.

οὐ μὰ τὸν... ῥήτορι] Briefly the meaning is, G. 'You do not in my judgement, who am the listener;' S. 'But I do in my own, who am the speaker.'

Σόλωνι γὰρ οὐ πειστέον] Alluding to the famous line of Solon (Fragment 20, Bergk) γηράσκω δ' αἰεὶ πολλὰ διδασκόμενος, quoted also in Lach. 189 A. In the first selection of rulers or officers, older men were chosen, because no man is to enter on an office, till he has reached a certain age. But in providing for the future the rulers designate must be chosen young, because they have so much to learn.

οὐχ ὡς ἐπάναγκες, κ.τ.λ.] 'Not making the plan of our instruction such that learning should be compulsory.'

E χείρον οὐδέν But see above vi. 495 D.

ψυχη̂ δὲ... μάθημα] 'Knowledge which is acquired under compulsion obtains no hold on the mind.'—Why do we remember some things and not others?—memory is (1) most retentive and impressible in childhood; (2) most suggestive and associative in later life; (3) generally strongest of words and events which are seen by the light of emotion or interest, or under new circumstances. The healthy memory is that of observation, which freely receives from the external world. The memory of study, when not merely verbal or mechanical, is proportioned to the degree of attention or interest which the mind is capable of giving. Memory seems also to flourish at the expense of the other faculties, and may receive by an exclusive training a monstrous and disproportioned growth. On the other hand, memory is greatly impaired and disturbed by excess of imagination, which tends to confuse the

ΥΙΙ.

536 E

recollection of the past; or of reflection which draws away the Republic mind from the external world and is only willing to receive facts connected with theories or principles. Probably even intensity of feeling, while preserving some facts with a preternatural clearness and light tends to impair the ordinary operation of memory about facts in general: the concentration of the intellectual faculties is generally inconsistent with their diffusion. Many persons have observed that a growth of mind has compensated the loss of memory: in such cases the change may be regarded as a sort of adjustment of the intellectual faculties. The true art of remembering is also an art of forgetting: better to forget most things than to remember all. Lastly, memory appears to be allied to sense and to depend on health: the reason of the common decay of the faculty in old age is partly physical, partly due also to the fading interest in the surrounding world.

ΐνα καί = besides making the knowledge permanent.

ἔφαμεν V. 467 E.

έν πᾶσι . . . ἐγκριτέον 'And whoever appears to be always most ready at all these things—labours, lessons, dangers, will have to be enrolled in a select number.'

οὖτος γὰρ . . . πρᾶξαι 'This time of life,' viz. that devoted to compulsory gymnastic: cp. infra 539 E, where twice the time is estimated at five years as the mean between 4 and 6. The time meant is between 17 and 20.

άδύνατός τι άλλο πράξαι is one in which it is impossible to do anything else.' The inability which is really inherent in the persons is transferred to the age.

τίς ἕκαστος, κ.τ.λ.  $\dot{\tau}$ ίς = ποιός τις: cp. viii. 558 c ἄθρει δή, ἦν δ' έγω, τίς ὁ τοιοῦτος ἰδία: Thuc. iii. 12, § 1 τίς οὖν αὕτη ἢ φιλία ἐγίγνετο ἢ έλευθερία πιστή: Soph. O. Τ. 151 τίς ποτε τῶς πολυχρύσου, κ.τ.λ.: Ο. C. 775 τίς αυτη τέρψις, ακοντας φιλείν;

μετά δη τοῦτον τὸν χρόνον, κ.τ.λ. Education in the higher sense of the term is concerned not only with practical subjects of knowledge, but with the method or connexion of knowledge in general.

That science which adjusts other sciences in relation to each other, which begins where they end, and examines the conceptions A a

537 A

В

VOL. III.

Republic VII. 537 B which they receive and use; which separates the progress or movement or history of human thought from the course of events; which regards the body in relation to the mind, and both in relation to God and the world, perceiving amid abstractions and imperfect points of view, the higher or united nature of all, is called by Plato dialectic, and may be accepted by ourselves as the description of metaphysic. But to Plato such a science is almost imaginary, extending only to the connexion of the mathematical sciences: among ourselves it is very imperfect; in idea a 'novum et antiquum organum' of all knowledge; in fact, scarcely advancing beyond discussions respecting the origin of human ideas, and the correlation of the sciences.

C τά τε χύδην μαθήματα . . . γενόμενα] The imperfect construction of the article and noun with the adverb, for which cp. viii. 564 Λ ή . . . ἄγαν ἐλευθερία: Laws i. 630 p εἰς τοὺς πόρρω νομοθέτας: Aesch. Ag. 165 τὸ μάταν . . . ἄχθος, is supplemented by the participle.

τούτοις SC. τοῖς ἐκ τῶν εἰκοσιετῶν προκριθεῖσιν.

εἰς σύνοψιν . . . φύσεως] The genitives ἀλλήλων, καὶ τῆς . . . φύσεως, both depend on οἰκειότητος . . . τῶν μαθημάτων.

έν οις αν έγγενηται] Cp. Theaet. 186 c τὰ δὲ περὶ τούτων ἀναλογίσματα πρός τε οὐσίαν καὶ ἀφέλειαν μόγις καὶ ἐν χρόνω διὰ πολλων πραγμάτων καὶ παιδείας παραγίγνεται οις αν καὶ παραγίγνηται.

ό μὲν γὰρ συνοπτικὸς διαλεκτικός] Cp. especially Phaedr. 265 D, Soph. 253 D, Tim. 83 C τις ὧν δυνατὸς εἰς πολλὰ μὲν καὶ ἀνόμοια βλέπειν, ὁρᾶν δ' ἐν αὐτοῖς ἐν γένος ἐνὸν ἄξιον ἐπωνυμίας πᾶσι.

Great caution has to be exercised in admitting young men to the study of dialectic. As things now are, dialectic is another word for eristic, which may be described as a sort of revolutionary scepticism. As a supposititious child, who after a time discovers that his supposed parents are not his real parents, ceases to honour them: so the young man ceases to honour the principles of justice and virtue in which he has been brought up, when he hears them refuted by the eristics. By postponing the study of dialectic to the age of thirty we have provided one security. But there is still need of caution.

537 οὖκ ἐννοεῖς, κ.τ.λ.] Compare the evil name of philosophy in vi. 495.

--

V11.

537 E

ἐμπίπλανται] The first hand of Par. A agrees with Ven. Π in reading ἐμπίπλαται, a corrector has changed this to ἐμπίμπλανται, and ἐμπίπλανται is the reading of M. If ἐμπίπλαται were read, the subject would be τὸ διαλέγεσθαι, and αὐτούς in what follows would get its antecedent from the general context. But the expression τὸ διαλέγεσθαι παρανομίας ἐμπίπλαται has a sound unlike Plato, who would speak of κακοὺς περὶ τὸ διαλέγεσθαι, but hardly of τὸ διαλέγεσθαι as ἐμπιπλάμενον κακίας.

ἐμπίπλανται gets a subject, οἱ διαλεκτικοί, from the preceding words, τὸ διαλέγεσθαι, and this subject is the antecedent to αὐτούς.

τὰ μεγάλα] 'in important matters.'

ἀπαρακαλύπτως] Cp. the democratic youth in viii, 560 c πάλιν τε εἰς ἐκείνους τοὺς Λωτοφάγους ἐλθὼν φανερῶς κατοικεῖ.

τῶν ἄλλων ποιουμένων οἰκείων] 'the rest of his reputed kindred.' This meaning of ποιείσθαι (passive) is supported by vi. 498 λ οἱ φιλοσοφώτατοι ποιούμενοι—(where see note), ix. 573 Β δόξας . . . ποιουμένας χρηστάς, 574 D δόξας . . . τὰς δικαίας ποιουμένας. It is therefore unnecessary to take the word in the middle sense of 'adopting,' i. e. 'laying claim to him.'

ἔστι που . . . αὐτά] The contrast of knowledge and opinion, or of speculative truth and popular belief, is the source of a real difficulty in education. The maxims in which the young are brought up, and which have a kind of parental influence on them (ὥσπερ ὑπὸ γονεῦσι) are sometimes narrow or partially untrue or perhaps represent the traditions of a former generation. False or imperfect conceptions of the truth necessarily precede higher and more perfect ones. There is a time at which the young man grows out of them, and falls under the influence of other ideas or meets the tide of the world. With active minds the element of authority is always receding within narrower limits. But when 'the human spirits on a day' begin to ask what are the real foundations, τί τὸ καλόν, δίκαιον, &c., there comes the danger that the youth in his iconoclasm, or destruction of shams, may lose his sense of reverence for the first principles of truth and right.

Emerson says, 'when the Gods come, the half-gods go': but the half-gods sometimes go first, and leave an empty room. The candles are out, and the sun has not yet risen. 538 B Republic VII. ἥκουεν] 'he used to hear,' viz. in the days before doubt came to him. For the imperfect cp. supra 515 p έωρα bis.

538 E μη εὐρίσκη] τε... μη are substituted for a second μητε for the sake of emphasis or variety.

539 A

(`

τὸν κολακεύοντα] 'the life that is flattering him:' i.e. the life of pleasure which has been described, supra 538 p.

δόξει γεγονέναι] 'He will have become.' The expression is idiomatic, and the force of δοκείν is not to be pressed. Cp. iii. 403 B and note.

τὸ πάθος] 'their condition,' that which happens to them. Cp. τὸ πάθος τῶν ἐπιεικεστάτων vi. 488  $\Lambda$ .

ο άρτι έλεγον] supra 537 Ε οὐ ξυγγιγνώσκεις, κ.τ.λ.

άπτέον] sc. αὐτούs, i.e. εὐλαβουμέν $\omega$  σοι δεῖ αὐτοὺs ἄπτεσθαι τῶν λόγων. 'You must exercise every sort of care about the manner in which they are to apply themselves to dialectic.'

B μία...συχνή] 'Is not this one great precaution—that they should not taste dialectic when young?'

αὐτῶν sc. τῶν λόγων.

χαίροντες... τοὺς πλησίον ἀεί] For the manner in which a young gentleman who has these propensities may inflict himself not only on his neighbours, but on the domestic circle, see the ludicrous description in the Philebus, 15 D, and cp. Apol. 23 C αὐτόματοι χαίρουσιν ἀκούοντες ἐξεταζομένων τῶν ἀνθρώπων, καὶ αὐτοὶ πολλάκις ἐμὲ μιμοῦνται, εἶτα ἐπιχειροῦσιν ἄλλους ἐξετάζειν.

έλκειν τε καὶ σπαράττειν] an amusing parallel to the language occurs in Boswell's life of Johnson: 'I found him extremely proud of his conversational prowess. "Sir, we had good talk last night." 'Yes, Sir, you tossed and gored several people."

τὸ ὅλον φιλοσοφίας πέρι] 'the cause of philosophy altogether.'

ό δὲ δὴ πρεσβύτερος] It may be truly said that moderation is the lesson which is latest learnt in speculative philosophy. The intensity and isolation of mind which is necessary for the invention of a metaphysical system, depending on the force with which a single idea is seized rather than on the power of filling up details or of using the system in relation to what is beyond and outside of

it; and also the susceptibility in the disciple which is required for the reception of such a system,—are unfavourable to counsels of moderation. Such moderation, which may be only the 'via media' of expediency borrowing the language of philosophy, may also rest on a just appreciation of the many aspects and hindrances of human knowledge. The thought here is very similar to that put into the mouth of Protagoras in Theaet. 167 Ε ὅταν τις μὴ χωρὶς μὲν ὡς ἀγωνιζόμενος τὰς διατριβὰς ποιῆται, χωρὶς δὲ διαλεγόμενος, καὶ ἐν μὲν τῷ παίζη τε καὶ σφάλλη καθ' ὅσον ἀν δύνηται, ἐν δὲ τῷ διαλέγεσθαι σπου-δάζη.

a' 539 est of out uèν τῷ

Republic VII.

τὰ προειρημένα vi. 485, 490 ff., 503, resumed supra 535.

1)

τούτου ἐπ' εὐλαβείᾳ] (1) i.e. ἐπὶ τῷ εὐλαβείσθαι τοῦτο. This seems better than (2) taking τούτου with προειρημένα (as in vi. 504 Λ τὸ προρρηθὲν αὐτῶν) because there is nothing sufficiently definite between pp. 535 and 539 for τούτου to refer to.

καὶ μὴ ὡς νῦν, κ.τ.λ.] As often in comparisons, the illustration takes the place of the thing illustrated, hence the construction changes from ἔρχεσθαι το ἔρχεται. Cp. x. 610 p.

539D-540 C

The first course of dialectic, beginning at thirty, is to last five years. And at thirty-five, the trained dialectician is to come down to practical life and for fifteen years to exercise command in war, and other subordinate offices of state. At fifty, if deemed worthy of promotion, he is to renew the study of dialectic, and at last proceed to the contemplation of the Form of Good. Having seen the Good, he is to take his turn at intervals in the labour of government, legislation and education, still spending the greater part of his time in contemplation, until he pass to the islands of the blest.

άρκεῖ δή, κ.τ.λ.] ἀντιστρόφως . . . γυμνασίοις is explanatory of μηδὲν ἄλλο πράττοντι, and ἔτη διπλάσια ἢ τότε refers to 537 b.

ΐνα μηδ' ἐμπειρία ὑστερῶσι] Cp. vi. 484 D.

cł ἐμμενοῦσιν . . . (540 Λ) ἤ τι καὶ παρακινήσουσιν] Great intellect often exists without will, and is drawn hither and thither by the influence of circumstances; and sometimes may be apparently even increased by yielding to their influence. The power of mind which is shown at a particular moment is not always consistent with the self-command or patience which is necessary for continuous action. The bravery of the orator's words (e.g. Demosthenes') is no test of his ability as a commander, nor the speculative politics of the

Republic VII. 539 E philosopher (e.g. Bentham's) any evidence of capacity as a statesman. There is a narrower as well as a wider circle, of action as well as thought, which may be compared to the den, and which must not be confounded with the world of ideas, nor yet wholly cut off from them: into this the philosopher has to descend and apprentice himself to practical affairs. He who is the 'spectator of all time and of all existence' has to reconcile immutable principles with the jealousies, fears, passions, prejudices of the hour: in his own character he must unite the utmost readiness and power of adaptation with the greatest inflexibility.

540 A η τι καὶ παρακινήσουσιν] 'or whether they will give way at all,'  $\pi a \rho a \kappa \omega \epsilon \hat{\nu}$  is here used intransitively: cp. the similar use of  $\hat{\nu} \pi o \kappa \omega \epsilon \hat{\nu}$  and other compounds of  $\kappa \omega \epsilon \omega$ .

ἀνακλίναντας... παρέχον] 'directing the light of the soul upward to look at that which gives light to all.' The eye in the act of vision is here, as in Tim. 45, conceived of as emitting light.

C ξυναναιρῆ] 'give her consent;' cp. v. 461 ε ἐὰν ὁ κλῆρος ταύτη ξυμπίπτη καὶ ἡ Πυθία προσαναιρῆ. The MSS, vary between ξυναιρῆ and ξυναναιρῆ. Par. A gives ξυναιρῆ—αν perhaps by a later hand. But the use of ξυναιρῆ in the sense of 'consenting' is improbable.

ωσπερ ἀνδριαντοποιός] Cp. ii. 361 D ως ἐρρωμένως ἐκάτερον, ωσπερ ἀνδριάντα, εἰς τὴν κρίσιν ἐκκαθαίρεις τοῦν ἀνδροῦν.

540C-541 B Such women as are found capable, are to take office with the men. But these things will not come to pass until the philosopher-king, or kings, arrive upon the scene, and have removed all the inhabitants who are more than ten years old. He or they will then set to work to educate the remainder in the manner which we have described. Here ends the account of the perfect state. And the perfect individual is like unto it.

540 (C I) ώς διήλθομεν] v. 451 c ff.

εὐχὰς εἰρηκέναι] ν. 450 D ἄκνος τις αὐτῶν ἄπτεσθαι, μὴ εὐχὴ δοκῆ. εἶναι ὁ λόγος: ib. 456 C, vi. 499 C.

E ἀναγκαιότατον] i.e. they will hold justice to be the highest necessity. In other words they will not allow any so-called political necessity ('the tyrant's plea') to stand in the way of what they know to be right. Cp. vi. 493 c.

διασκευωρήσωνται] 'when they shall have set to rights their own The construction is continued from ὅταν, κ.τ.λ., supra. city.'

Republic ΫIJ. 540 E.

οσοι μεν αν, κ.τ.λ. The philosopher-statesmen will save a generation by sending the grown-up inhabitants into the country and taking possession of their children to educate them in the new plan. With ἐκπέμψωσιν . . . θρέψωνται ὅταν must be again supplied. The poet Gray was led by a curious misapprehension to suspect δεκετῶν. 'This is undoubtedly a false reading,' he says, 'for έξηκονταετών or έβδομηκονταετών, so that till some MSS, inform us better, we must remain in the dark as to the age when Plato would permit his statesmen to retire wholly from the world.' This is extravagant enough, but Plato has hardly considered how the provision, which he here abruptly introduces, is to be reconciled with what precedes. For how are the children to be taught music and gymnastic when all their elders have been sent away? From what other state, πόρρω που έκτὸς ὄντι τῆς ἡμετέρας ἐπόψεως (vi. 499 c), are the new teachers to be brought?

εὐδαιμονήσειν . . . ὀνήσειν The dependent construction is continued from ξυγχωρείτε . . . εἰρηκέναι supra 540 p. The similarity of sound in εὐδαιμονήσειν ὀνήσειν is probably intentional as in Παυσανίου δέ παυσαμένου (Symp. 185 c).

54I A

## BOOK VIII.

Having determined the great questions of state communism and Republic of the philosopher-king, we return to the point from which we digressed (vi. 499 A) and proceed to describe the four principal false forms of political society. These are (1) the Cretan or Laconian (τιμαρχία), (2) oligarchy (a condition fraught with evils), (3) democracy, the reaction from this, and (4) the consummation of political evil, which is tyranny. Parallel to these are the corresponding perversions of individual character. The tyrant represents the ideal of evil, as the just man (vii. 541 B) embodies the ideal of good.

543 A-545 C

τῆ μελλούση ἄκρως οἰκεῖν πόλει in the state which is to be perfectly administered'-opposed to the imperfect states which follow: οἰκεῖν, as elsewhere, is used intransitively: cp. iv. 421 A καὶ αὖ τοῦ εὖ οἰκεῖν καὶ εὐδαιμονεῖν μόνοι τὸν καιρὸν ἔχουσιν.

543 A

Republic VIII. 543 καὶ πᾶσαν . . . εἰρήνη] The community referred to in these latter words includes the education and employment of women on the same lines with the men. The lowest class is here left out of sight.

Β οΐας προείπομεν] iii. 415 Ε στρατιωτικάς γε, ἀλλ' οὐ χρηματιστικάς, κ.τ.λ.

άλλὰ μνημονεύω] 'certainly I have not forgotten' (referring to εἰ μνημονεύεις), 'that at all events we thought none of them ought to possess anything which other people possess.'

ῶν νῦν οἱ ἄλλοι] iv. 419 οἶον ἄλλοι, κ.τ.λ.

άθλητάς τε πολέμου καὶ φύλακας] iii. 404  $\Lambda$  κομψοτέρας . . . ἀσκήσεως δεῖ τοῖς πολεμικοῖς ἀθληταῖς. In several other passages he harps upon the same figure of speech, iv. 422 c, vii. 521  $\rho$ .

C την είς ταῦτα τροφήν] sc. είς τὸ στρατιώτας καὶ φύλακας είναι,

ἀναμνησθώμεν... ἴωμεν] 'let us recall the point at which we digressed, that we may return into the same pathway.' The accusative is cognate, sc. δδόν.

οὐ χαλεπόν, κ.τ.λ.] The words from καὶ ταῦτα refer to v. 449 Λ ᾿Αγαθὴν μὲν τοίνυν τὴν τοιαύτην πόλιν τε καὶ πολιτείαν καὶ ὀρθὴν καλῶ, καὶ ἄνδρα τὸν τοιοῦτον. Socrates, having completed the first sketch of the state and of education at the end of Book iv, in order to supply an omission of which he is supposed to be guilty in the first part of Book v, begins the higher conception of both (καλλίω ἔτι, κ.τ.λ.), which is given by the addition of the philosopher-king at the end of Book v. The true idea of the philosopher-statesman is then separated from the false, and a second or higher education provided for him in books vi, vii.

Socrates now passes from the ideal commonwealth to various defective polities, which have a clear affinity to the ordinary Greek states: he afterwards returns to another ideal, not of this world, including a vision of a future life, which is faintly sketched in Book x.

The following lines of Wordsworth's Prelude describe a similar descent from the ideal to the actual:—

Ere long, the lonely mountains left, I moved, Begirt from day to day with temporal shapes Of vice and folly thrust upon my view, Objects of sport, and ridicule and scorn,

1 voies. Doon v 111.	
Manners and characters discriminate, And little bustling passions that eclipse, As well they might, the impersonated thought, The idea or abstraction of the kind.	Republi VIII. 543 C
αλλ' οὖν δή ] άλλά supplies the opposition to μέν (ἀγαθὴν μὲν τὴν οιαύτην): οὖν δή marks the emphatic resumption of the train of hought preceding the digression καὶ ταῦτα, κ.τ.λ.: 'but, however his may be, you said.'	1)
ῶν καὶ πέρι, κ.τ.λ.] iv. 445 c.	544 A
αὐτούς] SC. τοὺς ταῖς πέντε πολιτείαις όμοίους ἄνδρας.	2.8
καὶ ἐμοῦ ἐρομένου, κ.τ.λ.] For the absolute use of ὑπέλαβε cp. Meno 74 c εἰ μετὰ ταῦτα ὑπέλαβεν ὁ ἐρωτῶν. A summary of the previous discussion is ingeniously grafted upon the dialogue. Compare for a similar recapitulation the opening of the Timaeus.	
ωσπερ παλαιστής, την αὐτην λαβην πάρεχε] 'like a wrestler, let me have the same grip of you,' i.e. let me resume my position. For this favourite metaphor cp. Phil. 13 Ε τάχ' ἀνιόντες εἰς τὰς ὁμοίας sc. λαβὰς) ἴσως ἄν πως ἀλλήλοις συγχωρήσαιμεν: Phaedr. 236 B, Laws iii. 682 Ε.	В
οὐ χαλεπῶς Λακωνικὴ αὖτη] 'there will be no difficulty in answering your question: the forms of government of which speak are those which also have distinct names that which meets with general approbation, the well-known Cretan and Spartan	С

a Ι constitution: cp. infra D ητις καὶ έν εἴδει διαφανεῖ τινὶ κεῖται; For the connexion of the Cretan and Lacedemonian forms of government see especially Arist. Pol. ii. 10.

ύπὸ τῶν πολλῶν 'by most people.'

tl tl

N p

> ή ... Λακωνική αύτη] i.e. the Spartan constitution with which we are so familiar. Cp. iii. 403 Ε ή τῶνδε τῶν ἀσκητῶν εξις.

> καὶ δευτέρα, κ.τ.λ.] ή ολιγαρχία would naturally have followed ἐπαινουμένη, but the participle καλουμένη is added, and the expression is then accommodated to the participial phrase.

> In the words συχνών γέμουσα κακών πολιτεία there is a trace of the same personal bitterness which makes the picture of oligarchy, infra 552, so full of scathing satire.

ταύτη διάφορος 'at variance with this last'—being familiarly

Republic known as the watchword of the opposite faction—not merely VIII. 'different from this,' which would be  $\tau a \dot{\nu} \tau \eta s \delta \iota \dot{\alpha} \phi \rho \rho \sigma s$ .

544 καὶ ἡ γενναία δὴ τυραννίς, κ.τ.λ.] γενναία is ironical as in v. 453 Ε  $\mathring{\eta}$  γενναία . . .  $\mathring{\eta}$  δύναμις τῆς ἀντιλογικῆς τέχνης.

The reading διαφεύγουσα for διαφέρουσα is found in Par. A and all the best MSS. (διαφέρουσα Ven. Ξ, Flor. x, Ang. v, Vind. E). Such a degree of unanimity in a singular reading might possibly justify a forced interpretation: 'and escaping' (or 'surviving') 'all these comes tyranny, the fourth and last disorder of a state.' This interpretation, however, clearly passes the limits of usage in language and is almost unmeaning, even though we take into account Plato's tendency to resolve words compounded with prepositions, and give them new senses (e. g. προσέχεω vii. 521 p). It may be further remarked that διαφεύγεω always governs the accusative.

ήτις καὶ . . . κεῖται] Cp. supra Λ ὧν καὶ πέρι, κ.τ.λ., and note.

δυναστεῖαι . . . εἰσίν] 'for the family governments and sovereignties which are bought and sold and other constitutions like these are a sort of intermediates.' This sentence makes it clear that although Plato is idealizing he has an eye to historical facts. Aristotle does not mention the ἀνηταὶ βασιλεῖαι. ( ) (

ἢ οἴει, κ.τ.λ.] An allusion to Od. xix. 163 οὐ γὰρ ἀπὸ δρυός ἐσσι παλαιφάτου οὐδ' ἀπὸ πέτρης.

The same allusion occurs in Apol. 34 D ἐμοί, ὧ ἄριστε, εἰσὶ μέν πού τινες καὶ οἰκεῖοι καὶ γὰρ τοῦτο αὐτὸ τὸ τοῦ 'Ομήρου, οὐδ' ἐγὼ ἀπὸ δρυὸς οὐδ' ἀπὸ πέτρης πέφυκα. For the relation of the state to the individual cp. especially iv. 435 E τὰ αὐτὰ ἐν έκάστῳ ἕνεστιν ἡμῶν εἴδη τε καὶ ἤθη ἄπερ ἐν τῆ πόλει; οὐ γάρ που ἄλλοθεν ἐκεῖσε ἀφῖκται.

- E αί τῶν ἰδιωτῶν κατασκευαί] 'the formations of the individual character.'
- κατὰ τὴν . . . πολιτείαν] 'whose characters answer or correspond to' (lit. 'are ranked with') 'the Spartan constitution.'

καὶ τὸν τυραννικόν] The article is omitted with ὀλιγαρχικόν and δημοκρατικόν so as to reserve the emphasis for 'the tyrannical man.'

Republic VIII. 545 A

 $\tilde{\imath}$ να . . .  $\hat{\eta}$  σκέψις  $\hat{\eta}$ ] These words contain a reference to Books  $\hat{\imath}$  and  $\hat{\imath} \hat{\imath}$ .

προφαινομένω] 'which is coming into view.' Cp. Charm. 173 Λ δμως τό γε προφαινόμενον ἀναγκαῖον σκοπεῖν καὶ μὴ εἰκῆ παριέναι.

В

ἄσπερ ἦρξάμεθα, κ.τ.λ.] ii. 368 Ε πρῶτον ἐν ταῖς πόλεσι ζητήσωμεν, κ.τ.λ. The allusion here, as in other places, to what has preceded, is part of what may be called the composition of the work. The drawing together of the various threads is the beginning of the end.

καὶ νῦν οὕτω . . . κλητέον] (I) 'first we have to consider the "ambitious" constitution: I say "ambitious," because there is no other name of it in common use. Or shall we call it timocracy or timarchy?' or (2) 'first we have to consider the "ambitious" constitution: I say "ambitious," because there is no other name in use. We must call it either timocracy or timarchy.' According to the last way of taking the words, which appears to be the best, the clause ἡ τιμοκρατίαν, κ.τ.λ., is an asyndeton. Dr. W. H. Thompson ingeniously suggested λεγόμενον, ἀλλ' ἡ, κ.τ.λ.

The word timocracy, which in Plato and Xenophon means a government of which honour is the ruling principle, is used by Aristotle in the sense of η ἀπὸ τιμημάτων πολιτεία (Eth. N. viii. 10, Pol. iv. 14; cp. Isocr. Antid. 259 E): a government based on a property qualification, which existed in Athens even before the time of the Solonian constitution, as in Corinth after the fall of the Cypselidae. In Plato the constitution ἀπὸ τιμημάτων is the characteristic of oligarchy: infra 550 c.

The succession of states has but a slender resemblance to the actual fact: and the succession of individuals is still more shadowy; for in the first place, admitting the Spartan and Cretan type as a fair representative of timocracy, which is the first declension from the perfect form, there is no example of this or any similar state passing into an oligarchy of wealth, while the common form of oligarchy, resting on distinctions of birth, is unnoticed in the Republic. Again, the transition from democracy to tyranny is not the order of history, except perhaps in the single instance of Dionysius the elder and the Sicilian despots (the thirty tyrants are imposed by a foreign power, and are not the natural outgrowth of

Republic VIII. 545 None of the descriptions of Plato are to be verified by history: the pictures of the oligarch, democrat, tyrant, are all caricatures. The latter is such a portrait as the Greeks in later times loved to draw of Phalaris or Dionysius the elder, being a great exaggeration of the truth, in which quite as much as in the lives of medieval saints or mythic heroes, the conduct and actions of one were attributed to another in order to fill up the outline. There was nothing that the Greek was not willing to believe of them (Clearchus apud Athenaeum ix. 396). The tyrant was the negation of government and law, whose assassination was glorious, for he ruled only for the good of himself and not of his subjects. The ideal image of Plato was therefore not far removed from the vulgar thought of the ordinary Greek.

In the succession of individuals Plato is also following an order of ideas, and not an order of facts. Here and there a trait may be found of Alcibiades or Themistocles or perhaps of Critias. But the transition of one type of character to another is wholly imaginary. The error of identifying the individual and the state is seen most strikingly in the further assumption that the succession of states implies a corresponding succession of individuals.

πρὸς δὲ ταύτην] 'In comparison with this.'

545 C-547 C All change in states begins with a factious spirit arising within the governing class. But how should faction enter in amongst our philosophic rulers? It can only spring from some degeneracy, which must inevitably come sooner or later from some flaw in their arithmetic—since being human, they are not infallible—leading them to diverge, however slightly, from the true number which presides over

human generation. Some inauspicious births, consequent on such an error will gradually deteriorate the breed, until men come to power, who know not the muse, and neglect the liberal element in education. And those so educated, when they succeed in turn, will fail to climinate aright the iron and brass from the pure silver and gold, whence disproportion following will lead to contention: the brass and iron pulling one way, towards acquisition, the gold and silver towards wisdom and virtue; until a compromise is reached, whereby private property is established, the industrial class depressed, and the guardians become an army of occupation.

Republic VIII. 545 C-547 C

άπλοῦν] 'True without distinction' of all governments.

545 D

ὅταν . . . ἐγγένηται] 'When division arises within the governing power itself.' Cp. Laws iii. 683 Ε βασιλεία δὲ καταλύεται . . . ἢ καί τις ἀρχὴ πώποτε κατελύθη μῶν ὑπό τινων ἄλλων ἢ σφῶν αὐτῶν;

κἂν πάνυ ὀλίγον  $\hat{\eta}$ ] Cp. iv. 423 Λ εως ἃν  $\hat{\eta}$  πόλις σοι οἰκ $\hat{\eta}$  σωφρόνως ως ἄρτι ἐτάχθη, μεγίστη έσται . . . καὶ ἐὰν μόνον  $\hat{\eta}$  χιλίων τῶν προπολεμούντων.

† βούλει . . . (Ε) λέγειν;] 'Shall we after the manner of Homer pray to the Muses to tell us how faction first was fired? Shall we imagine them in tragic vein talking in mock earnest and lofty style, playing and jesting with us as with children.'

ὅπως δὴ πρῶτον στάσις ἔμπεσε] An allusion to Iliad xvi. 112 ἔσπετε . . . μοι, Μοῦσαι . . . ὅππως δὴ πρῶτον πῦρ ἔμπεσε νηυσὶν ᾿Αχαιῶν.

546 A

γενομένω παντὶ φθορά ἐστίν] Plato says here that all created things are liable to dissolution. In the Timaeus the same thought is expressed, but with a difference. They exist only under the form of time: and when time comes to an end, they will no longer exist.

όταν . . . συνάπτωσι] 'When their revolutions severally join their circumferences:' i.e. come round to the point where they began.

γένους δὲ ὑμετέρου] i.e. the human race, opposed by the Muses to their own or the divine.

λογισμῷ μετ' αἰσθήσεως] Cp. Phaed. 65 Ε μήτε τινὰ ἄλλην αἴσθησιν εφέλκων μηδεμίαν μετὰ τοῦ λογισμοῦ. Το Plato philosophy is abstract: when alloyed with sense, as in all human endeavours, it is doomed

В

Republic VIII. 546

B

to error and failure. Cp. Polit. 269 c, p and Tim. 28  $\rm A$  τὸ δ' αδ δόξη μετ' αἰσθήσεως, κ.τ.λ.

The change now to be contemplated is the greatest possible—from the perfect to the imperfect; and the causes of the transition are occult. It is precisely at such a critical moment that the reader of Plato may expect the occurrence of a myth—in which, while the style is adorned, verisimilitude is made to compensate for the absence of exact knowledge (ii. 382 D). And as the irruption of evil is supposed to spring from an error in the calculation of times and seasons, the myth is a mathematical one.

The danger of over-population is not here in question, as in iv. 423 B, v. 460 A; deterioration comes in with an alteration in the quality of the breed.

The list of interpreters who have tried to solve this famous riddle, which even in Cicero's time had become proverbial, is a very long one. Even of those who have contributed important hints, from Faber and Barocci in the fifteenth century to Gow and Adam in the nineteenth, it must suffice to name here, besides those just mentioned, K. F. Hermann, Schneider, Weber and Monro.

The last named critic, after a very full and clear discussion of the chief interpretations (Journal of Philology) appears to think, not that the key has been lost, but that there never was any one key, the passage being really nothing else than a series of tentative guesses disguised in intentionally vague language. Professor Jowett, on the other hand, believed that Plato meant something which contemporary Greeks would understand, but he thought that the exact meaning was irrecoverable, and probably also unimportant. He was by no means confident of the soundness of the explanation which he finally adopted, and it need not be repeated here. See Translation of Dialogues, ed. III. vol. iii. pp. cxxx-cxxxv.

Mathematical definition in Plato's time was tentative and uncertain, and the significance of terms consequently unfixed. He himself uses  $\delta \acute{\nu} \imath a \mu \iota s$  in different senses, and it is by no means clear that his use of  $\pi a p a \tau \epsilon \acute{\nu} \iota \nu \iota s$  is consistent with the terminology of the geometrical writers. (See note on vii. 527 A.) All that will be attempted here will be first to give approximately the most probable force of each expression, and then with great diffidence, chiefly by way of illustration, to put forth one amongst many partial solutions.

One or two general remarks may be prefixed. (1) That the answer to the riddle is probably much simpler than the tragic

546

language of the Muses has led some commentators to expect. This may be inferred from the words ἐν ῷ πρώτῳ, as well as from the language of the opening sentence, in which it is indicated that the elaborate terminology is not to be taken too seriously. This has to be considered in the interpretation of such words as δυναστευόμεναι, αὐξόντων, φθινόντων, &c. (2) That as Plato intends to puzzle his reader, it is quite possible that even if the mathematical methods of his time were clearly known to us, their employment in the solution of this riddle might be misapplied. (3) That the whole tenour of the passage would lead one to expect the introduction of some arbitrary assumption at some point or other. The difficulty turns on minimizing this, and finding where it comes in. Whether, for example, in the phrase τρὶς αὐξηθείς or in ἑκατὸν τοσαυτάκις?

λογισμῷ μετ' αἰσθήσεως] 'Through reasoning accompanied with sensation.' Notwithstanding their high training, they cannot absolutely attain to pure reason. The tincture of sense makes it impossible wholly to eliminate error.

θείω . . . γεννητω For example the World of the Timaeus.

περίοδος] This is explained by the words ὅταν . . . συνάπτωσι :

ἀριθμὸς . . . τέλειος] The 'perfect number' which comprises the period in which a divine birth (i. e. the right moment for it) comes round, may or may not correspond to the definition 'a number equal to the sum of its divisions.' But Plato is probably thinking of some higher and more complex expression than any of the simpler terms of which this is true (6, 28, 496). This is implied in the expression βραχυβίοις μὲν βραχυπόρους, ἐναντίοις δὲ ἐναντίας: cp. Tim. 39 E.

 $\epsilon \nu$   $\psi$  πρώτ $\psi$ ] 'In which first,' i. e. in the series of numbers;—the simplest that is resolvable into elements of which the following statement is true.

aθξήσεις... ἀπέφηναν] Almost every word in this sentence has been disputed. It seems pretty clear that a series of four terms is meant,—having of course three intervals between them. That which has met with most favour is the continuous proportion 27: 36: 48: 64, or the converse of this. The difficulty is to make this harmonize with the remaining expressions.

αὐξήσεις] Is it necessary that this should mean anything more than 'increments'? Some would restrict the word to powers (αὔξη

Republic VIII. 546 B δευτέρα, τρίτη, &c.): others to multiples generally. Granting this last, may it not extend to multiples of unity?

δυνάμεναί τε καὶ δυναστευόμεναι] The latter word does not occur elsewhere, and the explanations of it given by Greek arithmeticians are inconsistent. If  $\hat{\eta}$  δυναμένη (εὐθεῖα) is the side of a square, may not τὸ δυναστευόμενον (passive, sc. ἐπίπεδον) be the square itself? Thus if 3 is  $\hat{\eta}$  δυναμένη, 9 would be τὸ δυναστευόμενον. The series will then consist of root-numbers and their squares.

όμοιούντων τε καὶ ἀνομοιούντων] 'Consisting of numbers that make similar and dissimilar figures:' i.e. numbers odd and even. For the genitive with ὅρους cp. iv. 443 d ὅρους τρεῖς ἀρμονίας . . . νεάτης τε καὶ ὑπάτης καὶ μέσης—also the expression in what follows, infra c ἐκατὸν μὲν ἀριθμῶν, κ.τ.λ. This designation of the odd and even numbers turns upon a theorem to which Aristotle alludes in Phys. iii. 4 and which is in fact the geometrical expression for the formula  $(a+b)^2 = a^2 + 2$   $ab+b^2$ .

Thus CG = a + b, and  $CF = CG^2 = (a + b)^2$ . CE is the square on a. Then DE, EG, are each severally equal to ab, and  $EF = b^2$ . Hence the square  $CF = (a + b)^2 = a^2 + 2$   $ab + b^2$ . Take now the



case in which b = 1. Then  $CF = (a+1)^2 = a^2 + 2 a + 1$ . Now 2a + 1 = the gnomon DFG, and is clearly an odd number, which varies from 3 upwards according to the value of a, so that any such number equals 2a + 1. Hence every odd number has the peculiar

property that when added to the square of half-itself-minus-one (i. e. to  $a^2$ ), it produces a square number:—

$$1+3=4$$
  
 $4+5=9$   
 $9+7=16$   
 $16+9+25$ , and so forth.

The odd numbers are in this way  $\delta\mu$ oιοῦντες, 'producing similar figures,' viz. squares; the even numbers (each = 2 a) are ἀνομοιοῦντες, because when added to the same squares they produce oblongs, not squares, every such oblong being dissimilar from every othre:

$$a^{2} + 2a = CE + DE + EG = CH.$$
 $1 + 2 = 3$ 
 $4 + 4 = 8$ 
 $9 + 6 = 15$ 

16 + 8 = 24 &c.

Otherwise the words have been explained more generally, δμοιοῦντες = 'expressing similar figures,' e. g. 9 and 81; ἀνομοιοῦντες, 'expressing dissimilar figures': e. g. 3 and 9 or 27 and 81.

Republic VIII. 546 B

καὶ αὐξόντων καὶ φθινόντων | Either αὔξειν here must be intransitive or φθίνω transitive, and there is no authority for either in classical Greek. As αἴξω is frequently intransitive in common Greek, such a meaning may possibly be admitted here. The terms are borrowed from the Pythagoreans, who may not have observed Attic purity. And in speaking of the numbers, to which so much of active force is attributed, the difference may have been hardly felt. Schneider tried to identify this distinction with that between ὑπερτελεῖε ἀριθμοί ('numbers exceeded by their factors') and ἐνδεεῖε ('exceeding them'): but there is no reason why it should not be understood more simply of a series of numbers alternately increasing and diminishing.

πάντα . . . ἀπέφηναν] I.e. the process is completed without having recourse to any-irrational quantity, such as the diameter of the square of five. This is implied in ὑητά: προσήγορα conveys something more, viz. a common measure: in this case unity. I.e. no use is made of fractions.

C

At this point we pause to consider 'the number of the human period' which has been now described. The solution which has found most favour is 216, a number which has more integral factors than any previous number. It is the cube of 6 and may be divided into 27, 64, 125, the cubes of 3, 4, 5, which are the sides of the Pythagorean triangle. Anatolius, Theolog. Arithm. p. 40, ed. Ast (quoted by Schneider), asserts that the successive births of Pythagoras were said by Androcydes, Eubulides, Aristoxenus and others to have taken place at intervals of 216 years. But the very complexity of the number, which is its chief recommendation, also makes it difficult to say which of the many ways of forming it was selected by Plato's fancy. He is not satisfied with describing it simply as 6°. In the Timaeus (35 B ff.) the soul of the world is formed by the interweaving of two numerical series starting severally from 2 and 3. Can it be that the four terms here intended are simply the combination of 2, 2<sup>2</sup> with 3, 3<sup>2</sup>? Taking these in the order 2, 4, 3, 9, they are both odd and even, they increase and diminish, for 2 < 4 > 3 < 9; and when multiplied together they make 216.

Republic VIII. 546 C ῶν ἐπίτριτος πυθμήν, κ.τ.λ.] The wonderful properties of the mysterious number are not yet exhausted. By skilful manipulation there can be developed out of it a complex geometrical expression which, taken in connexion with the number itself, contains the secret of prosperous generation. The terms of this expression are clearly indicated in the sequel, but the method of obtaining it is, as in the former case, extremely obscure.

ων ἐπίτριτος πυθμήν] 'The base whereof, in the proportion of four to three.' πυθμήν is the word used for the lowest term of any series: thus 3 is the base of the series 3:0:27:81. The phrase ἐπίτριτος πυθμήν, taken alone, could only mean the proportion of 4 to 3, as the lowest term of the series of ratios 4:3, 8:6, 12:9, 16:12, &c. See Nicomachus Gerasenus, Introd. Arithm. i. 19, who gives these examples of the enirpirov είδος τοῦ ἐπιμορίου (Schneider). But then what becomes of ων? The expression as a whole seems to suggest some process of which the πυθμήν of the series in question is the foundation. Supposing the first term of the series to be 2, as proposed in the preceding note, and still following the analogy of the passage in the Timaeus, may not the words be understood to mean, 'the base of the series,—viz. 2,—being (1) quadrupled, and (2) tripled' -so obtaining the two numbers 8 and 6, for the operation which follows?

πεμπάδι συζυγείς] 'In conjunction with the pentad,' i.e. the number 5 is also to be employed in the operation. The meaning of συζεύγνυμι is quite general; for example, in the passage of Nicomachus just referred to, οἱ ἀπὸ τετράδος συνεχεῖς τετραπλάσιοι, συνεζευγμένοι τοῖς ἀπὸ τριάδος τριπλασίοις, όμοταγεῖς ὁμοταγέσιν, it means simply that the numbers are to be arranged in pairs. So far then the manner in which 5 enters into the combination is left vague. It is rendered more precise, however, by the addition of τρὶς αὐξηθείς, which is paraphrased by Aristotle, Pol. v. 12, § 8, in the words ὅταν ὁ τοῦ διαγράμματος ἀριθμὸς τοῦ διαγράμματος τούτου, the only answer is ὁ τῶν (πρόσθεν εἰρημένων) ἐπίτριτος πυθμὴν πεμπάδι συζυγείς. I. e. if we are right so far, some combination of the numbers 8 and 6 with the number 5.

Suppose, for the sake of argument, that having multiplied 8 and 6 severally by 5, producing 40 and 30, we multiply each of these

products, first by 10 (=2×5) and then by 25 (=5 $^2$ ). The Republic result is

 $40 \times 10 \times 25 = 10,000,$  $30 \times 10 \times 25 = 7500.$ 

Each of these, as the product of three factors, is a 'solid' number. And if they are to be added together (but this is uncertain) 17500

is also στερεός (25 × 25 × 28).

By this, or some other process, the number produces 'two harmonies,' δύο άρμονίας παρέχεται.

By  $\delta\rho\mu\nu\nui\alpha$  here is meant a solid number, resolvable into factors which have a certain recognized relation to each other, e.g.  $10,000 = 10 \times 25 \times 40$ , reducible to the simple arithmetical progression, 2, 5, 8; and  $7500 = 15 \times 20 \times 25$ , reducible to 3, 4, 5, the sides of the Pythagorean triangle.

ἴσην ἰσάκις, ἐκατὸν τοσαυτάκις] 'A square consisting of 100 multiplied into itself,' i. e. 10,000 = 100<sup>2</sup>. This explanation agrees best with the idiomatic use of τοσοῦτος.

ισομήκη μὲν τῆ] 'Equal to the former in one dimension,' i.e. having a side = 100.

προμήκη δέ] But oblong. Viz. 100  $\times$  75 = 7500.

[Otherwise, supposing the plural  $\delta \nu$  supra to refer to the number 216 as including its factors—and so accounting for the plural—and taking  $\pi \nu \theta \mu \dot{\eta} \nu = 6$ , as the first term of the series 6, 36, 216, the  $\epsilon \dot{\eta} \dot{\eta} \nu = 6$ , as the first term of the series 5, 10, and 25 the result is 10,000 which divides into the two harmonics 2500 and 7500. The former may be described as  $\epsilon \dot{\kappa} \alpha \tau \dot{\nu} \nu \tau \sigma \sigma \alpha \nu \tau \dot{\kappa} \kappa$ , 100 taken so many times.']

έκατὸν μὲν . . . τριάδος] 'Consisting of a hundred numbers formed (i. e. squared) upon rational diameters of the number 5, each wanting one (or if irrational then wanting two), and a hundred cubes of the number three.' In other words  $\{(7^2 = 49) - 1\} = 48 \times 100 = 4800$ ; or  $\{(7.0204)^2 = 50\} - 2\} = 48 \times 100 = 4800$ .

[The words ἐκατὸν μὲν ἀριθμῶν...τριάδος have generally been taken to be a more explicit account of the second harmony, as in the rendering just given. I.e. it is an oblong measuring 100 one way, and composed of two quantities, which are thus described. The sentence, so explained, has a natural rhythm. Mr. Gow on the other hand supposes this to be a repetition of the two previous

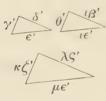
R'epublic VIII. 546

clauses in the reverse order: 2700 being the regular solid figure of which one side is 100: and the oblong being 100 times the square of the diameter of 5 minus 2. Mr. Adam follows up this suggestion by multiplying these two quantities together

$$(4800 \times 2700 = 12,960,000 = 60^4).$$

The διάμετρος ρητή πεμπάδος is the diameter of the square of 5  $(=\sqrt{50})$  neglecting the fraction: i.e. since  $\sqrt{50} = 7.0204$ , and this is the διάμετρος ἄρρητος, the διάμετρος ρητή is 7.

ξύμπας δε οῦτος ἀριθμὸς γεωμετρικός, τοιούτου κύριος, ἀμεινόνων τε καὶ χειρόνων γενέσεων What is to be done with the two harmonies when obtained? Plato leaves this quite uncertain; and it does not appear as if he intended anything further. The ξύμπας ἀριθμὸς γεωμετρικός is the number 216 with all that is involved in it, viz. the production of the two 'harmonies' in the way above described. The knowledge of all this on the part of the rulers is essential to the preservation of the breed in its perfection.



 $\gamma'$   $\theta'$   $t\theta'$ This diagram has been drawn upon the margin of Par. A by an early hand. It seems to represent the Pythagorean triangle τρὶς αὐξηθείς, i. e. simply raised to terms of 3 and 9. The ἐπίτριτος πυθμὴν πεμπάδι συζυγείς is understood to mean simply a com-

bination of 3, 4, 5. But how the scholiast found in this a solution of the whole problem is not apparent. For the numbers 3, 4, 5; 9, 12, 15; 27, 36, 45, are as enigmatical as ever.

As to the symbolic significance of the number or numbers the Muses make no sign, and it is vain to cross-examine them. The following observations contain the more important amongst many suggestions which have been made.

(1) The word περίοδος is vague, and may cover anything from the minimum time of gestation (216 days-Adam) to such a cycle as that described in the Politicus, or the 'great year' of Tim. 39 E. (2) The number 5 was sometimes regarded as the type of justice, sometimes of marriage (= 3 + 2, the first male combined with the first female number): (3) duality enters into human generation as into all material things. (4) The proportion of 40 to 30 may be regarded as suitable for the marriageable ages of men and women (Gow). (5) The successive births of Pythagoras

are said to have taken place at intervals of 216 years (Schneider). (6) A grand cycle for the state might be rounded off with a century of human lives ranging between 100 and 75 years each  $\binom{17500}{2} = 8750$ ). (7) The two harmonies have been supposed by some to signify mental and bodily excellence, by others virtue in the State and the individual, by others again perfection in man and woman.

ών καταστήσονται] 'The men of the former age will appoint the best of them to be their successors.' So the middle voice may be rendered. The reading καταστήσουσι, which has slight manuscript authority, may, however, be the true one, as in the next sentence καταστήσονται is used passively. Cp. note on iv. 442 A.

ὅμως δὲ...ἀμελεῖν] 'Nevertheless' [although the best available] 'when they in turn come into their fathers' power, they will in the first place begin to neglect us.'

φύλακες ὄντες] 'although guardians.' This is an aggravation, for music was to be the first care of the guardians: cp. iv. 424 C τὸ δὴ φυλακτήριου . . . ἐνταῦθά που οἰκοδομητέου τοῖς φύλαξιν, ἐν μουσικῆ.

παρ' ἔλαττον . . . μουσικῆς ] said in explanation of ἡμῶν ἀμελεῖν.

δεύτερον δε τὰ γυμναστικής the 'shadow' of a difficulty is found in these words. For the Spartan or Cretan constitution, which is the first stage in Plato's declining scale, was not negligent of gymnastic: cp. infra 547 D γυμναστικής . . . ἐπιμελείσθαι. Hence the suspicion which gave rise to Madvig's emendation δεύτερά τε γυμναστικής. Cp. infra 548 c πρεσβυτέρως γυμναστικήν μουσικής τετιμηκέναι, and for δεύτερα Xen. Hellen. vii. 1, § 35 έτιματο δεύτερος μετὰ τὸν Πελοπίδαν. But the sense of the reading in the text although arrived at in a different way, is nearly the same. Socrates means to say that in the first place they neglect music: and in the second place, and therefore in a less degree, gymnastic. It is further observable that the first declension in the state is not from music to gymnastic, but from the philosophical to the military government, which no doubt retained gymnastic, but did not care for it in the spirit prescribed in Book iii. For the seeming want of point cp. v. 451 A ωστε εθ με παραμυθεί, and infra 547 Ε άπλουστέρους. Plato from a love of parallelism or for the sake of completeness, often presents the other side of an antithesis, though not in point. Cp. infra 559 c åρ' οὖν . . . ολιγαρχικόν, and ii. 358 A ἀδικία δ' ἐπαινεῖται.

Republic VIII. 546 C

D

Republic 546 Ď

πρὸς τὸ δοκιμάζειν . . . (Ε) γένη 'for the task of assaying the metal of your different races, which are the same as Hesiod's': (Op. et D. 109 ff.). To keep the race pure was a main function of the guardians. Socrates is alluding to the Phoenician tale at the end of Book iii. pp. 415, 416.

547

σιδηροῦ ἀργυρώ] sc. γένους γένει. This is the reading of Par. A. Other MSS, have σιδήρου ἀργύρω (the metals). Cp. the similar doubt as to the reading of iii. 415 c.

ταύτης τοι γενεάς Iliad vi. 211, XX. 241.

B

είλκέτην . . . ἠγέτην What has been described as a possibility of the future is now assumed to be a 'fait accompli.' Hence the imperfect. τὰς ψυχὰς . . . ἡγέτην, in speaking of the gold and silver race is substituted for the harsher είλκέτην.

\*τω δ' αὖ | The slight change from τό to τω, suggested by Schneider, is certainly an improvement, though, as he observes, not absolutely necessary.

κατανειμαμένους] sc. τους πολίτας. Madvig's conjecture, κατανειμάμενοι εξιδιώσασθαι, is extremely plausible, but the change to the nominative δουλωσάμενοι may be occasioned by the feeling that this last is not merely an enactment but an act of the rulers.

τους δε . . . επιμελείσθαι The word φυλακή is used ironically in the new sense of guarding against them instead of guarding them. Cp. iii. 414 Β φύλακας παντελείς των τε έξωθεν πολεμίων των τε έντος φιλίων, and for φίλους τε καὶ τροφέας, V. 463 Β τί δ' οὖτοι τὸν δημον (προσαγορεύουσι); Μισθοδότας τε καὶ τροφέας.

περιοίκους τε καὶ οἰκέτας] are distinguished as subjects and household slaves; the former word conveying an obvious reference to Sparta.

547 (-

The timocratic state will resemble our ideal aristocracy in debarring the ruling and fighting class from other occupations in devotion to military discipline and gymnastic, and in the practice of common meals. Its characteristics will be a certain jealousy of philosophers,. a love of strategy, and a continual tendency to engage in war. On the other hand it will approach the oligarchic spirit in a fierce secret longing after gold and silver, and the illegal habit of keeping large private establishments.

Honour is the ruling passion, leading to ambitious quarrels which are aggravated by the prevalence of extravagance among men whose cirtue has been compulsory and is not inspired by rational conviction. Republic Such is the general outline.

τῆς τοῦ πολέμου ἀγωνίας] 'For military exercises': cp. ii. 374 λ 547 ή περὶ τὸν πόλεμον ἀγωνία.

τῷ δέ γε φοβεῖσθαι, κ.τ.λ.] The construction at the beginning of the sentence is continued from τῷ μὲν τιμᾶν, κ.τ.λ., but resumed with a change to the accusative in τὰ πολλὰ τῶν τοιούτων.

Various attempts have been made to correct &πλουστέρους which is the reading of the MSS, on the ground of inconsistency with &πλοῦς preceding. But (r) inconsistent tautology is not a strong ground of objection to an expression in Plato: (2) the apparent tautology is also an antithesis though feebly expressed; 'the state has no philosophers who are sincere and thorough-going, and therefore falls back on the simpler nature of the soldier.' (3) The want of a word is often found in writing to lead to the inappropriate repetition of a preceding word. For ἀπλότης meaning straightforwardness cp. Xen. Hellen. vi. 1, § 6 κἀκεῖνος μέντοι ἐπαινέσας τὴν &πλότητα τῆς πόλεως ἀπῆλθε, said of Polydamas of Thessaly after his conference with the authorities at Sparta.

ἐπιθυμηταὶ δέ γε, κ.τ.λ.] The words τὰ δὲ τὴν ὀλιγαρχίαν (547 D) are here taken up.

μέμικται γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] The description of Plato may be illustrated by the real declension of the Spartan state. There were divisions in Sparta between the partisans of the Ephors and Kings (φιλονεικίαι). According to Aristotle, no other state was equally corrupt (ἐπιθυμηταὶ χρημάτων): her greatest citizens, Pausunias, Astyochus, Lysander, were the reverse of simple and straightforward (οὐχ ἀπλοῖ καὶ ἀτενεῖς). The 'wild' love of money which existed in the Spartan character is the more remarkable, because unaccompanied by the enterprise which is necessary for the acquisition of wealth. The cruelty to slaves is also touched upon in the corresponding figure of the τιμοκρατικὸς νεανίας (infra 549 Λ).

οὐκοῦν . . . ἀπεργάσασθαι It is observable that Plato implies that his succession of commonwealths is only a rough outline of a few of them, intended to show 'in large letters' the true portraits of the just and the unjust. Cp. supra 544 c, p and the similar suggestion of intermediates in the division of the soul in iv. 443 E καὶ εὶ ἄλλα ἄττα μεταξὺ τυγχάνει ὅντα. The attempt here declined by

E

548 A

· C

Republic Plato was made so far as the constitutions of states were concerned VIII. (by Aristotle or by his school in the Πολιτείαι.

548 E'The Timocratic individual,' says Adeimantus, 'must be about as quarrelsome as Glaucon.' But he will be more obstinate and less inclined to liberal pursuits: although he likes listening to a song or speech. He is obedient to the rulers, but rough to slaves, while civil to his equals, and above all things, he is ambitious of honour in war, while athletics and hunting are his recreations. In youth he despises money, but in age he covets it, having no resources

αὐθαδέστερον . . . οὐδαμῶς] 'He should be made of harder stuff, I said, and somewhat less cultivated, yet a lover of the muses and a good listener, though nothing of a speaker.' In other words the timocrat is an unimpressionable man, with no original power, and yet poetry and oratory have a charm for him. The Spartan will never extract a verse out of 'his own pure brain,' is not in the habit of making long speeches, but will listen to the oratory of Alcibiades when he visits Sparta, or to the recitations of Homer and Tyrtaeus. For the hit at Glaucon, compare the description of him in Xen. Mem. iii. 6, § 1 Γλαύκωνα δὲ τὸν 'Αρίστωνος ὅτ' ἐπεχείρει δημηγορεῖν, ἐπιθυμῶν προστατεύειν τῆς πόλεως, οὐδέπω εἴκοσιν ἔτη γεγονώς, ôν τῶν ἄλλων οἰκείων τε καὶ φίλων οὐδεὶς ἢθύνατο παῦσαι, ἐλκόμενόν τε ἀπὸ τοῦ βήματος καὶ καταγέλαστον ὄντα, κ.τ.λ.

ύποαμουσότερον] The features of the Spartan character are sufficiently apparent in this description. Compare the account at the commencement of the greater Hippias, 285 E, which Hippias gives of the willingness of the Spartans to hear him tell of the genealogies of gods and heroes, and their unwillingness to receive instruction in the sciences. Again, for what follows, compare the statement of the Laws, Book i, that the Spartan and Cretan institutions were exclusively designed for war; also Protag. 343, where Plato adds another trait to the Lacedemonian character, their making brevity the soul of their primitive philosophy.

καὶ δούλοις μέν τις, κ.τ.λ.] This is still part of the character of the Spartan. See the beautiful passage of the Laws (vi. 777 A) in which the Athenian describes the behaviour of a just and noble person towards his slaves: he is not to be too familiar with them, he is to be more just to them than to his equals, herein showing that he loves justice for its own sake.

548 E

av appears in only two MSS, of slight authority. But most MSS, have  $\tau\iota\sigma\iota\nu$  which is probably a corruption of  $\tau\iota\sigma a\nu$ .

Republic

έστι . . . πολιτείας 'this type of character belongs to that form of government (timocracy).' The genitive is the predicate.

549

οὐκοῦν . . . καταφρονοῖ ἄν 'and will not such an one while young be a despiser of riches?'

His origin may be thus conceived: a good man who avoids politics 549 Bin an ill-conditioned state has a son who in boyhood hears his mother complain of 'the slights which she has to endure through the submissiveness of her husband,' and is told by the servants of the house that when grown up he must be a man indeed and reclaim what his father has let go. By and by he comes to know a little of the world as it is. Distracted by these diverse influences, while he admires his father's virtues, he is tempted to covetousness and ambition. And in the end the love of honour becomes his ruling

550 C

πη δή . . . (D) γυναιξίν The sentence ὅταν, κ.τ.λ., is not in any exact construction: the most grammatical way of taking the words is after πη δή ... γίγνεται; sc. γίγνεται ὅταν (cp. πωs followed by ὅταν infra 553 a). But the imperfect construction is supplemented by the deferred apodosis at 550 Λ τότε δη δ νέος.

passion.

549

The legend of the wife of Caius Licinius Stolo in Livy, vi. 34, is a similar tale of feminine jealousy. Plato is perhaps thinking of Laconizing youth at Athens.

D

ἔπειτα όρώσης . . . (Ε) ύμνεῖν αἰσθάνηται reverts to the construction with ὅταν, although having the same subject with the participle ὁρώσης, which itself somewhat loosely follows ἀκούη. Mr. H. Richards proposes to cancel αἰσθάνηται.

ίδία τε έν δικαστηρίοις καὶ δημοσία] 'privately in law courts, and publicly' (sc. in the assembly).

έαυτώ μεν τον νουν προσέχοντα Cp. vi. 496 p αγαπά, εί πη αυτός καθαρός . . . βιώσεται.

καὶ οἱ οἰκέται, κ.τ.λ.] The picture would not be complete without the old servant who is zealous for the honour of the family.

 $\mathbb{E}$ 

καὶ ἐξιών, κ.τ.λ.] 'And when he goes abroad he hears and sees more of the same sort.' The reading of Par. A is ἀκούη, but this is hardly defensible, even on the ground of a supposed construction

550 A

Republic 17/1/. 550 with ὅταν repeated from supra c. The words are too far off, with οἶσθα οὖν, κ.τ.λ., intervening.

μη τὰ αὐτῶν] (sc. πράττοντας) has the force of τὰ μη αὐτῶν. The order of words gives emphasis to the negative.

παρὰ τὰ τῶν ἄλλων] These words are to be taken with ἐγγύθεν, 'having a nearer view of his father's ways than of the ways of others,'—which may account for his father still retaining an influence over him.

έλκόμενος . . . (b) ἢλθε] The first έλκόμενος is resumed after the parentheses τοῦ μὲν . . . κεχρῆσθαι.

διὰ τὸ μὴ... φύσιν] 'being the inheritor of no mean nature.'
 The father (supra 549 c) was a good man whose virtue was rendered inoperative by outward circumstances. For the idiomatic genitive cp. Soph. Trach. 1062 θῆλυς οὖσα κοὖκ ἀνδρὸς φύσιν.

Oligarchy is a form of constitution based on the valuation of rateable property. It is a government in which the wealthy rule and in which the poor have no share. The change to this from timarchy is occasioned by that secret hoard of which we spoke (supra 548 B), alluring them to spend on things forbidden. They vie with one another in accumulation, and in expenditure, until wealth becomes of more account than merit. The poor man is always rejected and the rich preferred, and at last a law is carried, either by intimidation or by force of arms, making money the qualification of citizenship.

70 λέγωμεν . . . τεταγμένον] The line is probably quoted from memory, and made up out of two lines in the Seven against Thebes, 451 λέγ ἄλλον ἄλλαις ἐν πύλαις εἰληχότα and 570 ὑρολωΐσιν δὲ πρὸς πύλαις τεταγμένος. The similarity of πύλη and πόλει was nearer in sound than in spelling.

κατὰ τὴν ὑπόθεσιν] supra 545 B.

την ἀπὸ τιμημάτων . . . πολιτείαν] 'A government resting on the valuation of property I term oligarchy.'

It is to be observed that Plato here absolutely opposes timocracy to oligarchy. But as a fact in the history of Greece, so far as we can judge from somewhat meagre indications, there were many kinds of both, the element of wealth combining in various degrees

550 C

with that of birth: (the right of the strongest, that is, of the heavy armed soldier or horseman, or of the well equipped pirate, or the leader of pirates, largely entering into all of them.

Republic ŶIII. 550 C

D

ěkelvo] supra 548 A.

τους νόμους . . . ἀπειθοῦντες] 'they wrest the laws to this end, disobeying the law,' i. e. they misinterpret the letter and violate the spirit of the constitution.

E

η οὐχ οὕτω... ρέποντε; 'Is not this the sort of difference between riches and virtue? When they are placed in either scale of the balance, the one rises, as the other falls.' The text follows Madvig's correction; the manuscript reading κειμένου έκατέρου may however be explained by placing a comma after έκατέρου, 'the one ever rising as the other falls, as if each were placed in a scale of a balance.

η καὶ πρὸ τούτου, κ.τ.λ.] As in the revolution of the Four Hundred at Athens: Thuc. viii. 66 ἀντέλεγέ τε οὐδεὶς ἔτι τῶν ἄλλων, δεδιώς καὶ όρων πολύ τὸ ξυνεστηκός.

551

Suppose a property qualification to be required of a pilot, what 551 Bwould become of navigation? To guide the helm of the state is more difficult and also more important than to steer the ship; the failure in the practice of it will therefore be more disastrous. The oligarchical city, moreover, is not one, but two at least, viz. the rich and the poor, (Cp. iv. 422 E.) The government cannot go to war, for fear that the multitude may desert in battle and leave the few, who are also covetous, to support both the danger and the expense. Again, under this constitution the same person may have diverse callings; he may be warrior and trader in one. And, what is worst of all, he may reduce himself to beggary. He never was a real ruler, and now he is only a spendthrift and a drone in the hive. And of these wingless drones, unlike the winged ones, there are some with stings. In other words, wherever there are paupers there are also rogues.

έφαμεν supra 544 C.

551 B

πρώτον μέν . . . οδός ἐστιν The first error relates to the very principle of the constitution (supra A ορον πολιτείας ολιγαρχικής ταξάμενοι πληθος χρημάτων): πρώτον, sc. άμάρτημά έστιν: for the turn of sentence cp. i. 331 C τούτο δ' αὐτό, την δικαιοσύνην, πότερα την αλήθειαν αὐτὸ φήσομεν είναι; and for the use of öρos, Laws i, 626 c C

Republic VIII. 551 ου γὰρ ὅρον ἔθου τῆς εὖ πολιτευομένης πόλεως. The meaning of ὅρος in Plato is more general and less abstract than the logical term 'definition,' which is its signification in later Greek. A similar change takes place in the meaning of several words (εἶδος, ἰδέα, συλλογισμός, ὑπόθεσις, ὕλη), which in Plato retain more or less their popular senses,—but in Aristotle have already passed into the technical language of the schools.

ἄθρει γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] The interruption of Adeimantus prevents Socrates from completing the sentence, and the apodosis, ὅποιόν τι ἀν δοκεῖς συμβαίνειν or some such words, is wanting. The reply of Adeimantus, πονηράν . . . ναυτίλλεσθαι, is dependent on the omitted apodosis. The comparison of the ruler to the steersman was always with Socrates a favourite topic: i. 341 c, vi. 488 B; Polit. 297 E; Xen. Mem. i. 1, § 9. [Ast and H. Richards cj. εἰκός for ἢ δ' ὅς.]

οὐκοῦν...ἀρχῆς;] 'And is not this true about any government of anything?' Ast's emendation η̂στινος for η΄ τινος of the MSS., which is here adopted, gives the best meaning with the least alteration. The construction is elliptical, and put by attraction for ἀρχῆς, η΄ τις ἀν η΄. For the use of ὅς τις, cp. Hipp. Maj. 282 D η̈ ἄλλος δημιουργὸς ἀφ' ῆστινος τέχνης.

[]

E

τί δέ; ... ἀλλήλοις] Cp. iv. 422 E, where Socrates strongly insists that other states are not one but many. There is a lively image of the change here described, which probably represents the condition of many Greek cities in the seventh and eighth centuries before Christ, in the poems of Theognis, who laments that the old oligarchical privileges have been superseded by an invasion of rich bad men. (Theogn. 1109 ff. ed. Bergk.)

ἀλλὰ μήν, κ.τ.λ.] Bekker was right in saying that οὐδέ is omitted in Par. A. The MS. reads 'Αλλὰ μὴν | τόδε but τό is written over an erasure and the word as at first written may have been οὐδε (sic). A later hand has replaced οὐδέ in the right hand margin after ἀλλὰ μήν, which comes at the end of the line. If οὐδέ were omitted, the sentence would receive an ironical turn (cp. iv. 426 A), but this is scarcely suitable to the directness of the reply οὐ καλόν.

ἴσως] 'in all likelihood.' [H. Richards cj. ἰσχυρῶς.]

διὰ τὸ ἀναγκάζεσθαι, κ.τ.λ.] As at Lesbos in the Peloponnesian war:—Thuc. iii. 27; Arist. Pol. vi. 7.

όλιγαρχικούς φανήναι For this play of words cp. infra 555 Λ.

πάλαι] ii. 374 B. Republic VIII. γεωργούντας like the αὐτουργοί of the Peloponnese; Thuc. i. 141, 55I §§ 3-5. χρηματιζομένους Cp. Thuc. vi. 31, § 5. 552 A η δοκει ὀρθώς ἔχειν: The position of the interrogative particle implies strong emphasis. είς ἃ νῦν δὴ ἐλέγομεν; viz. the functions mentioned in the words μήτε χρηματιστήν . . . μήτε ὁπλίτην (supra A). αὐτῆς SC. τῆς πόλεως. ούτως] 'The latter; he seemed to be a ruler but was only a spendthrift.' αὐτόν resumed in καὶ τὸν τοιοῦτον to accentuate the parallelism. C έκ μὲν τῶν ἀκέντρων ] ἐκ points to the class from which they come without saying whether all become paupers or only some. πτωχοί . . . τελευτώσιν ] Sc. είς τὸ πτωχοί είναι, like τυραννίδας . . . είς πτωχείας τελευτώσας in x. 618 A. The words have also been translated, though with less point and less meaning in the preposition: 'who die in old age paupers' (Schneider). πάντες, κ.τ.λ. sc. γίγνονται implied in τελευτώσιν. D δήλον ἄρα, κ.τ.λ. In modern language, Where there is pauperism, there is crime:—this is at least true of every oppressive and unequal state of civilized society. βαλλαντιατόμοι The form is doubtful (see L. and S. s. v. βαλλάντιον), but is retained as given by the first hand of Par. A. μὴ οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] 'May we suppose.' μὴ οὖν in this passage is equivalent to μων:—although the affirmative answer has already been implied in the previous argument, Socrates ironically proposes the question as one absolutely undetermined: so supra 552 A opa δη . . . εὶ τόδε . . . παραδέχεται: Theaet. 145  $\Lambda$  η καὶ ἀστρονομικός . . . ;

ἐπιμελεία βία] The insertion of καί between these words is unnecessary: βία has passed into an adverb and lost the idea of a dative case. Cp. ii. 359 c νόμφ δὲ βία παράγεται, κ.τ.λ., infra 554 c κατεχομένας βία ὑπὸ τῆς ἄλλης ἐπιμελείας.

ἴσως δὲ καὶ πλείω] These words betray the same feeling which appeared in the first mention of oligarchy supra 544 c συχνῶν γέμουσα κακῶν πολιτεία.

ἀπειργάσθω Let this form of government too be deemed

553

E

as it is swift.

Republic VIII. 553 A

C

by us to be complete.' For the not uncommon use of the imperative cp. ix. 588 D  $\pi \epsilon \pi \lambda \hat{a} \sigma \theta \omega$ .

γενόμενος] i. e. ἐπεὰν γένηται.

Let us now imagine the transition from the timocratic to the oligarchic man. The former has a son, who walks in his footsteps, until the father meets with some reverse in his ambitious career, and is either put to death or banished and his goods confiscated. The son, impoverished and disenchanted, flings away ambition, and by sparing habits and hard work scrapes a fortune together. Desire of wealth he elevates to the rank of king and lord, to whom the reasoning and aspiring elements are to be subservient. This revolution is as complete

ὅταν, κ.τ.λ.] This clause is partly the answer to  $\pi \hat{\omega} s$ , sc.  $\mu \epsilon \tau a - \beta \acute{a} λ λ α$ , partly the protasis of a sentence of which  $\dot{\epsilon} \pi \grave{\iota}$  κεφαλὴν  $\dot{\omega} \theta \epsilon \hat{\iota}$ , κ.τ.λ., is the deferred apodosis. Cp. supra 549 c  $\pi \hat{\eta}$  δή . . .  $\gamma \acute{\iota} \gamma \nu \epsilon \tau \alpha \iota$ ; ὅταν, κ.τ.λ.

B ἐμπεσόντα . . . ὑπὸ συκοφαντῶν] 'then brought into court, being damaged by informers.' It has been proposed to omit βλαπτόμενον, the insertion of which is attributed to some transcriber's ignorance that ὑπό after ἐμπεσεῦν was good Greek. But the word is very expressive of the harm which informers might do to a man's career (Lys. pro Polystr. § 12 οὐ δίκαιος διὰ τοῦτο ἐστὶ βλάπτεσθαι): and the imperfect tense, which is one ground of the objection, is quite appropriate as describing a continuous state and not like ἐμπεσόντα, &c., a momentary act, i.e. ὑπὸ συκοφαντῶν ἐβλάπτετό τε καὶ ἐμπεσῶν·εἰς δικαστήριον ἀπέθανεν.

καὶ παθών] The son of course suffers in the exile of his father, or in the confiscation of his property.

δείσας] is to be taken closely with what follows: 'He is alarmed and straightway thrusts ambition and passion headforemost from his bosom's throne.'

τὸ θυμοειδές ἐκεῖνο] supra 550 B.

τιάρας τε καὶ . . . ἀκινάκας] περιτιθέντα or the like word which is required for τιάρας, κ.τ.λ., is altered to παραζωννύντα to suit ἀκινάκας. For the plural, which may be described as 'magnific,' cp. vi. 495 λ

πλούτοι τε και πάσα ή τοιαύτη παρασκευή, Svmp. 218 A Φαίδρους, 'Αγάθωνας, 'Ερυξιμάχους.

Republic VIII. 553 C

τὸ δέ γε, κ.τ.λ.] The change from οὐδὲν ἄλλο to μηδὲν ἄλλο is to be explained by the general notion of ἀναγκάζει in the second clause being understood from ouder . . . eq in the first.

E

ή γοῦν ... ὅμοιος ἄν εἴη] 'The change which produces him is from an individual who is similar to the state which produced oligarchy' (viz. timocracy). 'Let us consider then whether he be like oligarchy.' The assumed parallelism of states and individuals is presumptive evidence of the likeness which is now to be verified. αν είη, SC. εὶ οῦτω μεταβάλοι.

555 B

In this conversion from ambition to avarice the individual follows 553 Ethe analogy of the state; he is a lover and getter of money, indulging only his necessary desires and keeping under restraint the extravagant ones: he is penurious, industrious, sordid, negligent of culture (he has deserted the muses for the blind god of wealth). Yet some of his passions are still strong within him because of his neglect of education: and being hungry and unsatisfied they are like the paupers and rogues in the city. In his ordinary dealings he represses them, because he is afraid of losing his character and his property: but when he has a safer opportunity of taking advantage, as when he is guardian of an orphan, he does not scruple to indulge them. The oligarchical man is thus divided against himself; and in the contest of ambition he proves a contemptible adversary, being niggardly of his means and distrusting his own nature, except that meagre portion of it which is absorbed in money-getting.

μη παρεχόμενος 'not affording or allowing himself: 'a special use of the middle voice. The negative is μή, not οὐ, because παρεχόμενος is part of a 'causal expression' (τω . . . εἶναι, κ.τ.λ.).

554 Ā

αὐχμηρός γέ τις . . . ων, κ.τ.λ. This sentence is in effect a participial clause attached to the preceding participles—' and this because he is a shabby fellow,' &c. The idiom is the same as in εὖ γε σὺ ποιῶν and the like expressions. Cp. Aristoph. Nub. 893 λόγος -- ήττων γ' ών.

ους δή, κ.τ.λ.] sc. θησαυροποιούς: for the plural referring to the singular cp. Thuc. vi. 12, 13 νεωτέρω . . . οΰς έγώ, κ.τ.λ.

τυφλον ήγεμόνα] sc. Plutus. Cp. the Plutus of Aristophanes, the

Republic VIII. 554

D

plot of which turns upon the restoration of the god of wealth to sight.

καὶ \*ἐτίμα μάλιστα] ἐτίμα is an ingenious and almost certain emendation of Schneider's, which is confirmed by the expressions τιμῶντες ἀγρίως . . . χρυσόν 548 Α, τιμᾶν μηδὲν ἄλλο ἡ πλοῦτον 553 D, and χρήματα . . . μάλιστα ἔντιμα . . . παρὰ τῷ τοιούτῳ just above. The principal MSS. vary between καὶ ἔτι μάλιστα εἶ, ἡν δ' ἐγώ, τόδε δὲ σκόπει, which has the greater weight of authority, and καὶ ἕτι μάλα εἶ, ἡν δ' ἐγώ, τόδε δὲ σκόπει, either of which leaves the previous thought without assent or approval, and also has an unmeaning emphasis:—μάλιστα is at the end of a line in Par. A.

τόδε δὲ σκόπει] The quality in the individual which corresponds to oligarchy in the state is the love of money. The money-maker has a show of respectability, and his other passions are generally kept under by the main one of avarice. The truth is that he is one half beggar and the other half rogue; this however can only be discovered by watching him in secret places. If you would know his real character, see how he manages a trust, and whether he deals with other people's money as he does with his own.

C κατεχομένας ... ἐπιμελείας;] 'kept down perforce by his general habit of carefulness.' ἄλλης is 'adverbial' contrasting ἐπιμελείας with ἐπιθυμίας, κ.τ.λ.

ἐπιεικεῖ τινὶ ἑαυτοῦ βία κατέχει] (1) 'By some virtuous element in himself he forcibly restrains': βία as supra c, 552 ε (where see note on ἐπιμελεία βία), is to be taken separately as an adverb. For ἐπιεικεῖ τινὶ ἑαυτοῦ cp. infra 555 Λ δλίγοις τισὶν ἐαυτοῦ. [(2) 'By some virtuous restraint which he puts upon himself.' B. J.]

ἄλλας] sc. the non-avaricious passions—here opposed to 'respectable' prudential motives. For ἄλλας opposing things different in kind cp. iii. 396 Ε μιμήσεώς τε καὶ τῆς ἄλλης διηγήσεως.

εύρήσεις] Par. A gives  $\epsilon \nu \rho \eta \sigma \epsilon \iota s$  (sic)— $\epsilon \nu$  by the diorthotes. Schneider observes that, as the text now stands, the dative is too far from the preposition. Perhaps  $\epsilon \nu \epsilon \nu \rho \eta \sigma \epsilon \iota s$  should be read.

τοῦ κηφήνος ξυγγενεῖς] i.e. κηφηνώδεις:—'drone-like,' 'of the nature of the drone.'

οὐδὲ εἷς ἀλλὰ διπλοῦς τις] As the city was divided between

C

rich and poor, so the man is divided between meanness and Republic respectability.

όμονοητικής . . . τής ψυχής ἀληθής ἀρετή] 'the true virtue 554 which arises when the soul is at unity and in harmony.' The expression is somewhat singular, but there is no sufficient reason for omitting the article.

 $\mathring{\eta}$  τινος νίκης, κ.τ.λ.] For the genitives after ἀνταγωνιστής cp. ii. 374 p, Laws viii. 834 β.

χρήματά τε, κ.τ.λ.] τε connects the two parts of the sentence, of which the second, ending with  $\pi\lambda$ ουτεῖ, is loaded with participles: of these δεδιώς expresses the cause, and  $\pi$ ολεμῶν the consequence, of οὖκ ἐθέλων, κ.τ.λ.

όλιγαρχικῶς] 'like the men in the oligarchy': supra 551 E.

Democracy comes next, and is brought about by a natural reaction 555 Bagainst the ruling spirit of oligarchy, which is covetousness. The 557 A extravagance of young men is not properly controlled, because it is profitable to those in power, who lend them money at high interest and when it is spent seize their estates. Thus the class of stinging drones is multiplied, while the ruling class grow fat and soft, neglecting all martial exercises. The hour for revolution ripens; and the oligarchical government is easily overthrown. Some of its members are proscribed, some banished; the rest are admitted to an equal share of the power, which is now in the hands of the people.

ποιόν τινα ἔχει] sc. τρόπον, in a slightly different sense of the word, which occurs again immediately below. τρόπον in τρόπον  $^{\rm B}$  τινὰ τοιόνδε is again used in the first sense.

οὐκοῦν . . . γίγνεσθαι ;] The words δι' ἀπληστίαν are a partial explanation of τρόπον τινὰ τοιόνδε. The pleonastic δεῖν resumes the notion of προκειμένου.

εἴργειν . . . μὴ ἐξεῖναι] ἐξεῖναι is pleonastic.

νόμω] Cp. supra 552 A.

κάθηνται δή, κ.τ.λ.] 'there they sit doing nothing in the city.' D κάθηνται implies that they are biding their time.

οὐδὲ δοκοῦντες . . . ὁρᾶν] 'Making as if they saw them not.' Ε See L. and S. s. v. δοκέω, i. 4.

VOL. III. C C

Republic VIII. 556 A

B

τοῦ πατρός] For the imagery cp. vi. 507 A. πολὺν τὸν κηφῆνα, κ.τ.λ.] The singular is collective.

οὖτε γ' ἐκείνη, κ.τ.λ.] Two ways are suggested of correcting the evil: (1) a man may be prevented from doing what he likes with his own: (2) the protection of the law may be withdrawn from the creditor. The latter principle is laid down in Laws v. 742 c μηδὲ δανείζειν ἐπὶ τόκφ, ὡς ἐξὸν μὴ ἀποδιδόναι τὸ παράπαν τῷ δανεισαμένφ μήτε τόκον μήτε κεφάλαιον: viii. 849 E, xi. 915 D. It is also said to have been a law of Charondas (Stobaeus, Serm. 44, 21).

How far the law should interfere to protect the creditor, and whether no protection is not the best protection, is a question which may be regarded as still undecided. Although commerce can never be wholly without the pale of law, yet as time goes on, the interference or protection of the law seems to be confined within narrower limits, which may probably with advantage be still further restricted. So much in trade has been settled by the consent and common sense of traders. The law again is so powerless to enter into the minutiae of private transactions, where many interests combine against inquiry, as to suggest the thought that except in cases of direct fraud or theft, trade, like morality, is beyond the legal arm. Many contracts of the highest importance are matters of honour only. If legal protection were withdrawn from the creditor, the result would obviously be that no one but a man of established character could borrow money, for the borrower would be under no compulsion to pay except that of his own interest. It is equally obvious, that this would limit the operations of trade—whether advantageously or not, is a doubtful question.

 $\epsilon$ κείνη refers to the regulation which existed in the well constituted state, but was relaxed in the oligarchy (supra 552  $\Lambda$ , 555 c), viz. that young men shall not be allowed to waste their fortunes.

ἐκκαόμενον] like exardescere in Latin: cp. Eupol. Fragm. Incert. lv μάττει γὰρ ἤδη καὶ τὸ πῦρ ἐκκάεται.

τις] 'any one,' i. e. 'the legislator,' 'the state,' 'we.'

νῦν δέ γ², ἔφην ἐγώ, κ.τ.λ.] τὰ τοιαῦτα refers to the whole description from  $\tilde{a}_{\tau\epsilon}$ , οἶμαι (555 c) onwards, οὔτω to the creation of the dangerous class among the poor (supra 555 p ff.).

σφᾶς δὲ αὐτοὺς καὶ τοὺς αὕτῶν, κ.τ.λ.] I.e. on the other hand they leave their sons to grow up in idleness and luxury, while they themselves are absorbed in making money. The sentence is

expanded and becomes two sentences, the condition of the youth being first described; then in  $\alpha \vec{v} \tau \sigma \vec{v}_s$   $\delta \vec{\epsilon}$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ ., that of the older generation: cp. the structure of supra 552 c  $\tau \sigma \vec{v}_s$   $\delta \hat{\epsilon}$   $\pi \epsilon \vec{\zeta} \sigma \hat{v}_s$   $\tau \sigma \hat{v}_s \tau \sigma v_s$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ .

Republic VIN. 556 B

οὔτω δὴ παρεσκευασμένοι, κ.τ.λ.] In this sentence the verb καταφρονῶνται is dependent on ὅταν. (1) An appearance of confusion is caused by the nominative θεώμενοι which seems to be connected with παραβάλλωσιν, but in reality is equivalent to ὅταν θεῶνται preceding καταφρονῶνται. Either παραβάλλοντες . . . ἢ . . . θεῶνται καὶ καταφρονῶνται would be the regular construction. Or (2) the words θεώμενοι . . . καταφρονῶνται οἱ πένητες may be regarded as an instance of the common apposition of whole and part.

С

όταν παραβάλλωσιν] 'when they come along-side,' probably a nautical metaphor: cp. Lysis 203 Ε οὐ παραβάλλεις; For the sense cp. Phaedr. 239 c, p.

άλλοτρίας] 'which he has no right to': 'which does not properly belong to him.' He has grown great at other men's expense. Cp. Gorg. 518 p, Laws vii. 797 E.

D

εἰσὶ \*παρ' οὐδέν;] This is Baiter's correction of εἰσὶ γὰρ οὐδέν which is the reading of the best MSS. εἰσὶν οὐδέν, the reading of the old editions, though giving a more forcible meaning (cp. infra 562 p), is of inferior authority.

E

εὖ οἶδα μὲν οὖν] μὲν οὖν corrects οἴει. 'Do you ask if I think they will do so? Nay, I know it for a fact that they do so.'

ἐκείνω] sc. τῷ νοσώδει σώματι. κατὰ ταὐτὰ ἐκείνω = νοσωδώς.

For the comparison of sedition to disease cp. Soph. 228 A νόσον ἴσως καὶ στάσιν οὐ ταὐτὸν νενόμικας, κ.τ.λ.

557

καὶ ὡς τὸ πολὺ... γίγνονται] This feature of democracy is recalled in the companion picture of the individual infra 561 B, ὅσπερ λαχούση. γίγνωνται is the reading of the best MSS.: the subjunctive is inexact, because any words dependent on ὅταν should describe a characteristic of the origin of democracy, not merely a characteristic of democracy. γίγνωνται may be an error of the copyists caused by the preceding subjunctives.

ή κατάστασις δημοκρατίας] The article goes with both words taken together as a single expression.

διὰ φόβον] διὰ φόβων (Par. A p. m. Ven.  $\Pi$ ) is a natural error occasioned by the apparent parallelism of δι' ὅπλων.

Republic VIII. 557 A-558 C Freedom is now the word and every man arranges his life just as he pleases. The city is like an embroidered robe, in which all modes of life, all forms of government, are represented. There is no one constitution, but samples of all. To take office, to obey authority, to make war or peace when others do so, are matters left to individual caprice. Men publicly condemned to death or banishment go out and in with acclamation of their friends. No training or qualification is required for office as in our state, save only the profession of popular sympathies. It is a city of delightful ease, 'exempt from awe, worship, degree' where all however unlike are 'equal' and 'unclassed, sceptreless, free, uncircumscribed.' — Delightful for the moment!

557 δῆλον γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] This is a reason for deferring the consideration of the democratic man, who appears infra 558 c.

αν...κατασκευάζοιτο] 'may be expected to arrange' (not 'is able to' as in the translation).

C ωσπερ ίμάτιον, κ.τ.λ.] As elsewhere in comparisons there is an asyndeton because the words are explanatory of the preceding clause.

καὶ ἴσως μέν, ἢν δ' ἐγώ] The words τί μήν; ἔφη (following φαίνοιτο), which Bekker retained from earlier editions, are almost, if not entirely, without manuscript authority. The sentence which takes their place in the Munich MS. q—φαίνοιτο γὰρ ἢ δ' ὅs, τοιαύτη τις—betrays the same uneasiness at the repetition of ἢν δ' ἐγώ. But this, like the frequent insertion of ἔφη λέγων in reported narrative, is a natural way of calling attention to a fresh point. Cp. vii. 522 Λ, where fifteenth century scribes have tried to get rid of the second ἔφη by the clumsy expedient of reading ἀδελφὰ ἔθη ἄττα ἔχουσα.

διὰ τὴν ἐξουσίαν] supra Β ἐξουσία ἐν αὐτῆ ποιείν ὅ τί τις βούλεται.
 κατοικίζειν] sc. τὴν πόλιν.

E μηδὲ πολεμεῖν πολεμούντων] Aristophanes indulges in a similar flight of fancy in the Acharnians 180 ff. where he makes Dicaeopolis conclude a private treaty with the Lacedemonians.

μηδὲ αὖ ... μηδὲν ἦττον, κ.τ.λ.] There is a slight confusion arising out of the double negative, the words μηδὲν ἦττον, κ.τ.λ., presupposing ἐξεῖναι, which is implied in μηδεμίαν ἀνάγκην supra. This slight difficulty may have led to the reading ἄρχης, for which

the first hand in Par. A and Ven. Π wrote ἀρχης. For ἐπίη cp. iii. Republic VIII. 388 D εί καὶ ἐπίοι αὐτῷ τοιοῦτον ἢ λέγειν ἢ ποιεῖν: Phaedr. 264 B τὸ έπιὸν εἰρησθαι.

ἴσως . . . ἔν γε τούτω] 'Perhaps so, for the moment': i.e. not permanently.

558 A

τί δέ; ή πραότης . . . οὐ κομψή ] (1) 'And is there not something exquisite in her clemency towards some who have been condemned?' This involves a possibly allowable extension of the 'objective' use of the genitive:  $\epsilon \nu i \omega \nu = \pi \rho \delta s \epsilon \nu i \delta v s$  cp. ii. 359 A  $\xi \nu \nu \theta \eta \kappa a s$  a  $\delta \nu \tau \delta v s$ . Laws iv. 717 Λ σκοπὸς μέν οὖν ἡμῖν οὖτος οὖ δεῖ στοχάζεσθαι βέλη δὲ αὐτοῦ (the darts which reach the mark) καὶ οἷον ή τοῖς βέλεσιν ἔφεσις, τὰ ποῖ' ἃν λεγόμενα ὀρθότατα φέροιτ' ἄν; This was Bekker's view. (2) The genitive δικασθέντων may be taken as of the subject, 'the meekness of some of the condemned': said ironically for their indifference or contempt of the laws: -Both explanations give a sufficiently good sense, but the latter is to be preferred. περινοστεί ωσπερ ήρως infra is in favour of this interpretation, and it is harsh to make ή πραότης without any qualification or hint from the context to mean 'the gentleness of democracy' or 'her gentleness.' Some propose to insert ἐπί, περί or κατά (Stephanus) before ἐνίων.

η οὖπω εἶδες, κ.τ.λ.] The sentence is somewhat irregular, the genitive μενόντων . . . ἐν μέσω being substituted for the accusative after είδες, through attraction to ἀνθρώπων. The construction is softened through an association from the ordinary construction of the genitive with αἰσθάνομαι.

The subject of περινοστεί is to be gathered from μενόντων, κ.τ.λ., 'The man marches about.' Late MSS, insert δ καταψηφισθείς. There is perhaps an implied allusion to the νόστοι. 'He is welcomed wherever he goes like one of the heroes returning from the siege of Troy.' [Madv. cj. καταψηφισθέντος: Schn. cj. αὐτοῦ μενόντων.]

ή δὲ συγγνώμη, κ.τ.λ.] The sentence breaks off and is completed by the answer of Adeimantus πάνυ γ', ἔφη, γενναία, in which γενναία may agree with πόλις (as in the translation) or rather with συγγνώμη, the force of the interrogative having been continued from a preceding sentence—'and what say you of her forgiving spirit, &c.? Yes, said he, that is glorious.' The relation of ώς μεγαλοπρεπώς . . . πλήθει to καταφρόνησις . . . τὰ τοιαῦτα πάντα may be expressed as follows: 'her contempt for the things we spoke of . . . how grandly trampling them under foot she cares not at all,' &c.

Republic VIII. 558 B ών ήμεις ελέγομεν σεμνύνοντες] σεμνύνοντες, sc. αὐτά. The reference is to iii. 401 A, 402 C, iv. 425 A.

ἄπαντ' αὐτά is preferred to  $\tau a \hat{v} \tau a$  as the reading of Par. A and quite unobjectionable.

Before examining the democratical man it is advisable to define the necessary desires, which were above (554 x) distinguished from the unnecessary ones. Necessary desires are those which (1) are conducive to life, (2) impossible to extinguish. The desire of food, for example, is necessary, while that of savoury meats is unnecessary.

And the drone of whom we spoke is the slave of unnecessary desires, but the oligarch only of the necessary.

τίς ὁ τοιοῦτος ἰδίᾳ] τίς, like 'what' in English, has occasionally the meaning 'what sort of' = ποῖός τις. Cp. vii. 537 B.

τοῦ φειδωλοῦ, κ.τ.λ.] 'Our penurious oligarchical man might have (I suppose) a son,' &c.

βία δη . . . κέκληνται] This is said in continuation of the preceding sentence, the participle ἄρχων agreeing with the subject of γένοιτ ἄν. Socrates is proceeding to develop the genesis of the democratic man. A finite verb (e.g. ἐγεύσατο κηφήνων μέλιτος, cp. infra 559 d) would have followed, had not the apodosis been broken off or deferred in favour of the digression about the necessary desires. This is better (as is shown by δή) than to suppose the participle to be merely linked on to the preceding sentence as in 554 Λ αὐχμηρός γέ τις . . . ἄν.

βούλει οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] Socrates here makes a psychological digression, for the first time introducing the distinction which afterwards became the favourite one with Aristotle and the Epicureans, of pleasures which are and are not natural and necessary. The digression may be compared with the one in iv. 436–438 in which Socrates treats of relation and opposition. He returns to the distinction of natural and necessary pleasures in the next book (ix. 572 c ff.).

καὶ πρός ] πρός is taken adverbially, as often with  $\gamma\epsilon$ , e. g. i. 328 ] καὶ πρός  $\gamma\epsilon$  παννυχίδα ποιήσουσιν, and sometimes without: as in Euthyd. 298 ] καὶ πρὸς ἄρα σοι πατήρ ἐστι καὶ κύων: Laws iv. 709 ] c.

αἴ εἰσιν] Cp. vii. 529 Α τὴν περὶ τὰ ἄνω μάθησιν λαμβάνειν παρὰ σαντῷ, ἢ ἐστι: where  $\ddot{\eta}=\ddot{o}$ ia, as in this passage αἴ = οἴαι.

D

5**5**9 A αρ' οὖν οὖχ...(Β) ἀν εἴη;] 'will not the desire of eating within the limits of health and strength, and of simple food and condiments be necessary?' αὖτοῦ σίτου τε καὶ ὄψου is joined with ἡ, and completes the notion of τοῦ φαγεῖν, κ.τ.λ. αὐτοῦ is added to prepare for the antithesis ἡ πέρα τούτων, κ.τ.λ., infra B. Cp. iv. 439 A δίψος ... αὐτοῦ πώματος. The modern distinction between food and the pleasure of eating as the object of hunger, does not occur to Plato.

Republic VIII. 559 A

η τε μη . . . δυνατή] 'and because a man cannot suppress it while he lives.' This reading of the Munich MS. q (not noticed by Bekker) is preferred to those of the chief MSS. on two grounds: (1) κατ' ἀμφότερα must refer to the twofold condition repeatedly mentioned in 558 d, e, 559 a, and again implied in δυνατή δὲ κολαζομένη, κ.τ.λ., infra. This meaning cannot be got out of the reading η τε παισαι ζώντα δυνατή: '(2) παισαι ζώντα, 'to make one cease from living,' would be a very strange expression for ἀποκτιννίναι. Just as βλαβερά, in what follows, is opposed to ἀφέλιμος here, so δυνατή . . . ἀπαλλάττεσθαι contains the opposite of the remaining clause η τε μη . . . δυνατή.

В

For the idiomatic expression cp. vii. 537 β ἀδύνατός τι ἄλλο πρᾶξαι, where, if the subject of πρᾶξαι had been expressed, it would have been in the accusative (τοὺς νέους). So ζῶντα agrees with the subject of παῦσαι here. Negation is expressed through μή rather than οὐ—which Coraes suggested—because the sentence states a condition. The complete expression would be ἀναγκαία (ᾶν εἴη)  $\mathring{\eta}$  μὴ (ἐστὶ) δυνατή (τυν) παῦσαι ζῶντα. Professor W. W. Goodwin, who approves of this interpretation, quotes Xen. Anab. iv. 1, § 24 δυνατὴν . . . ὑποζυγίοις πορεύεσθαι ὁδύν. For the transition from the dative to the accusative with an infinitive cp. iv. 422 β οὐδ' εἶ εξείη . . . ὑποφεύγοντι . . . ἀναστρέφοντα κρούειν. For the corruption of MSS. through dropping the negative, see Essay on Text, pp. 106–109. [L. C.]

τί δέ... ἀπαλλάττεσθαι] 'and the desire which goes beyond this, craving more elaborate dishes, of which, if controlled and trained in youth, most people may get rid': καὶ ἀλλοίων, κ.τ.λ., answers to καὶ αὐτοῦ σίτου in what precedes. ἀπαλλάττεσθαι is passive: cp. supra  $\Lambda$   $\mathring{a}s$ ...  $\mathring{a}παλλάξειεν <math>\mathring{a}ν$ .

χρηματιστικὰς διὰ τό, κ.τ.λ.] Plato seizes the word which comes nearest to his meaning, and justifies it by a false etymology not better than many in the Cratylus.

Republic VIII. 559 καὶ τῶν ἄλλων] 'and the rest': sc. the other desires besides the desire of food.

έλέγομεν] supra 552 c ff.

559 D-562 A

Now suppose the oligarchical individual to have a son, who after a miserly education, falls amongst the drones and tastes their honey. His useless desires are re-inforced, until in turn his prudential inclinations are strengthened with admonition. There is civil war within him, till the democratic faction is turned out, and he returns to regular ways. But his father has no gift in education, and the ill weeds grow apace; and there is again a faction within that holds secret correspondence with strange pleasures, with whose aid at last they rush up and seize the Acropolis of the Soul, It has been swept clean of its true defenders (reason and virtue) and lies open to the assaults of vicious sophistry. The youth returns to the companionship of the drones, and when good counsel (accredited or not) seeks audience, the gates are barred. Perverted reason discards the old-fashioned virtues, and all vices of insolence and excess are openly installed under fair titles as manliness and liberality and freedom. This downward course may be arrested as youth wears off, and then the man gives way to every impulse in its turn, now drinking, now abstaining; now toiling at athletics, then again doing nothing at all; first all for war, then all for business; living not one life but taking a turn at many—an existence truly delightful as many persons think.

559 D πάλιν τοίνυν, κ.τ.λ.] The analogy of the state and the individual, which in the previous stages was helped by real points of resemblance as well as by language, begins to fail more and more. For though the transition from the miserly father to the spendthrift son is natural enough and true to human life, the parallel transition from oligarchy to democracy is not substantiated by history and is fanciful and untrue. πάλιν marks the resumption from 558 p after the digression.

ώς νῦν δὴ ἐλέγομεν] supra 558 c. αἴθωσι θηρσί, sc. the drones.

 $\alpha i\theta \omega \sigma i$  = 'fiery,' a poetical word, in keeping with the rhetorical and grandiloquent character of this part of the Republic.

Ε μεταβολής . . . δημοκρατικήν] There is no difference of reading in this passage, but the words are difficult: either (1) όλιγαρχικής

(supply πολιτείας οτ καταστάσεως) is the genitive after μεταβολής, but the ellipse is harsh; or (2) δλιγαρχικής may be a corruption of δλιγαρχίας, which has led to the further corruption of δημοκρατίαν into δημοκρατικήν. For the double genitive cp. vii. 525 c βαστώνης τε μεταστροφής, κ.τ.λ. The addition of έξ after μεταβολής would certainly make the sentence clearer.

Republic VIII. 559

ξυμμαχίαs] used here, as in Thuc. vi. 73 ὅπως ξυμμαχία . . . παραγένηται and elsewhere, in the concrete sense of 'an allied force.' So also ξυμμαχία below.

ἔξωθεν] viz. from the κηφῆνες with whom he associates. We may note that the quarrel is not between reason and desire, but between a thrifty parsimonious spirit and unsatisfied craving and discontent.

τῷ ἐτέρῷ τῶν παρ' ἐκείνῷ] the self-indulgent desires, as opposed to the necessary ones.

τῷ ἐν ἐαυτῷ] The reflexive pronoun can hardly be right with ἐκείνῳ preceding. Perhaps the two words have changed places in the MSS. from τῶν παρ' ἐαυτῷ . . . τῷ ἐν ἐκείνῳ.

η ποθεν παρὰ τοῦ πατρός] 'it may be from his father': πόθεν expresses the uncertainty from what quarter the alliance will come.

αὖθις δέ... ἐγένοντο] For a time the democracy is partially suppressed by assistance from without, and the house is again swept and garnished. But new passions gather and grow to a head, and possess themselves of the undefended citadel: 'seven other devils' in the shape of opinions and sophisms 'enter in and dwell there': and they hold the gates of the palace against all comers, and suffer no other power to make an alliance, nor even individuals to parley. The inter-penetration of metaphor and fact, and the subtle manner in which the particulars of the life of the state are woven into the life of the individual, add greatly to the beauty and expressiveness of the passage.

τῶν ἐκπεσουσῶν . . . ξυγγενεῖς] 'Other desires, akin to those which were banished, growing up within him.'

δι' ἀνεπιστημοσύνην τροφῆς πατρός] (1) 'because he, their father, does not know how to educate them.' The man is regarded as the parent of his desires (cp. infra 561 B ἐξ ἴσου τρέφων). But the imagery is forced, and not consistent. For his duty towards these

560 A

B

Republic VIII. 560 B

( .

desires was not to educate but to exterminate them. Rather (2) 'because his father had no skill in education.' The reference is to the 'oligarchical' father, who was said above (554 B, 559 D) to have given no attention to education, and to have brought up his son  $d\pi a t \delta \epsilon t \tau ds$ . [L. C.]

λάθρα ξυγγιγνόμεναι] sc. ταις έξωθεν επιθυμίαις, implied in τὰς αὐτὰς όμιλίας which again refers to 559 E.

φρουροί τε καὶ φύλακες] φρουροί is added to sustain the image of a garrison. Cp. infra 56 τ Β τὸ φρούριον.

καὶ πολύ γ', ἔφη] sc. ἄριστοι.

τον αὐτον τόπον Sc. την ἀκρόπολιν.

εἰς ἐκείνους τοὺς Λωτοφάγους] who make him forget his home, like the mariners of Odysseus, Od. ix. 81 ff. The reference is to the κηφη̂νες mentioned supra 550 D.

φανερῶς] 'openly,' no longer λάθρα supra B. Cp. vii. 538 c anaρακαλύπτως. Before, he had hesitated and listened to both sides; now he has made up his mind, and will listen only to this one.

D οὖτε πρέσβεις . . . εἰσδέχονται] 'Nor do they receive the words of old men in a private capacity, which come as ambassadors.' The hóyou, not the persons, form the embassy. The image is complicated and in some danger of being confused by the subordinate contrast between the authority of the family and the influence of friends. The former is described as the action of a league coming publicly in aid; the latter as a commission or embassy. The word πρέσβεις, which is suggested by the association of πρεσβυτέρων, is not necessarily inconsistent with ίδιωτων. See Dem. 1121. 1, quoted by L. and S. s. v. πρεσβευτής, ii. The image, as not unfrequently happens in Greek, is crossed with the thing signified. The advice of private friends is imagined as that of individual commissioners accompanying an army, much as in Xen. Hellen. ii. 4, § 36, the public embassy from the Peiraeus is accompanied by individuals, ιδιώται, who are sent in a private capacity from a party in the city.

The emendation of Badham adopted by Cobet,  $\delta i ~ \alpha \tau \omega \nu$ , is unnecessary and feeble, and the personification of the  $\partial \lambda \alpha \zeta \delta \nu \epsilon s$   $\lambda \delta \gamma \omega \omega$  who have  $\delta \sigma a$ , extravagant.

ίδιωτῶν] may be explained as having the force of ἰδίᾳ, opposed to αὐτὴν τὴν ξυμμαχίαν—'sage words, the ambassadors of elders,

who advise him on their own account,'-not as accredited on Republic behalf of his friends (παρ' οἰκείων τις βοήθεια supra).

560

καὶ τὴν μὲν αἰδῶ, κ.τ.λ. For the inversion of ethical terms, cp. Thuc. iii. 83.

πείθοντες (sc. ως αγροικία και ανελευθερία εστίν) is added to complete the expression.

καθήραντες] is of course ironical (cp. infra 567 c), and, like τελουμένου, alludes to the mysteries.

κατεχομένου] has a twofold association: (1) 'who is occupied like a conquered city,' or (2) 'possessed' by them, cp. Ion 533 E ένθεοι όντες καὶ κατεχόμενοι.

λαμπράς] 'with great éclat': cp. Soph. El. 685 εἰσῆλθε λαμπρός, πασι τοις έκει σέβας.

ᾶρ' οὐχ . . . ἄνεσιν The accusative ἐλευθέρωσιν, κ.τ.λ., expresses the effect of the change: cp. iv. 424 c είδος γάρ καινὸν μουσικής μεταβάλλειν. ἐκ τοῦ . . . τρεφομένου may be either neuter = 'from a life that is nourished,' or masculine 'from one who is nurtured,' cp. supra 558 D υίδς ύπὸ τῷ πατρὶ τεθραμμένος ἐν τοῖς ἐκείνου ἤθεσιν.

έὰν εὐτυχής ή Madvig conjectured ἐὰν εὐτυχήση, partly with a view of harmonizing the tenses, and partly under the influence of a parallel passage ix. 578 c where Bekker reads δs αν ... τυραννικδς ὢν . . . δυστυχήση, κ.τ.λ. But (1) there is no objection to the dissimilarity of tenses, which constantly recurs: (2) the present tense gives a better meaning, 'if he be fortunate,' referring to his whole state and character: (3) there is no reason if Plato wrote δυστυχήση in one place, that he should have written  $\epsilon i \tau v \chi \eta \sigma \eta$  in another: (4) moreover δυστυχήση is itself an unnecessary emendation of δυστυχής  $\hat{y}$ , which in turn is a confirmation of  $\epsilon \hat{v} \tau v \chi \hat{\gamma} \hat{s} \hat{y}$ .

άλλά τι καί πρεσβύτερος, κ.τ.λ.] The words τι καί are opposed to μη πέρα ἐκβακχευθη and modify what follows μέρη τε . . . ἐνδῷ: ' but as he grows older in some degree modifies his passions,' a meaning which is to be gathered from the remainder of the sentence.

τοῦ πολλοῦ θορύβου παρελθόντος 'when the turmoil of passion has mostly passed by.'

τοις έπεισελθούσι] supra 550 E.

είς ἴσον δή τι καταστήσας, κ.τ.λ.] The passions of the democratic man rule by chance, as in a democracy the magistrates are elected 561 ./

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

В

Republic VIII. 561 B by lot. The freeman gives each of them their turn, and will not be the slave of any: but unfortunately he is equally impartial between good and evil. As he grows older, he learns to balance them with one another. He is the Alcibiades or Mirabeau of history: the rake who turns politician in common life— $\pi \rho \epsilon \sigma \beta \acute{\nu} \tau \epsilon \rho o s \gamma \epsilon \nu \acute{\nu} \mu \epsilon \nu o s$ , κ.τ.λ.

παραπιπτούση . . . λαχούση] 'the chance passion, which as it were obtains the lot.'

έως ἃν πληρωθή] sc. ή παραπεσοῦσα ήδονή. πληροῦν ήδονήν is said with a slight degree of inaccuracy for πληροῦν ἐπιθυμίαν.

- C σφόδρα γάρ] This and other strong affirmations indicate that what Socrates asserts is corroborated by Adeimantus' own experience, cp. supra 556 E  $\epsilon \tilde{v}$   $\tilde{v}$   $\tilde$
- ὑς ἐν φιλοσοφίᾳ] 'as if he were spending his time in philosophy':
   ὑς here = quasi.
- E παντάπασιν . . . ἀνδρός] 'You have certainly described the life of a man who is a lover of equality.' The compound, meaning 'equality before the law,' is made to suggest indifferences as to this, that, or the other rule of life.

καὶ παντοδαπόν τε καὶ . . . μεστόν ] sc. βίον.

τον καλόν τε καὶ ποικίλον] not the life but the man. The article in the predicate (τον καλόν τε καὶ ποικίλον) implies 'the man whom we are seeking.' 'And that the man of whom we are speaking is the fair and spangled one whom we are seeking, just as that city was.'

562 A-563 E

As wealth, the good of oligarchy, caused the reaction to democracy, so liberty leads from democracy to tyranny. The first stage however in this progress is from democracy to anarchy. Unscrupulous leaders, the evil cup-bearers, mix the draughts of liberty too strong, until the city is drunken. Then fathers fear their sons, and sons assume authority over their fathers. The citizen, the metic and the foreigner are all as one. The young vie with the old; and the old condescend to the young, lest they should be thought severe and morose. The difference between men and women disappears, and at last even the slaves assume the airs of free-men. Nay the very cattle in the public roads will jostle wayfarers, as having equal rights. The public mind becomes so restive as to be intolerant of the very shadow of authority.

τίς τρόπος . . . γίγνεται; i.e. τίς τρόπος έστὶ τῆς γενέσεως αὐτοῦ; 'What is the nature of the process in the case of tyranny.'

Republic VIII. 562 A

σχεδὸν δῆλον] This is assumed as a corollary from the succession of states. That it comes from oligarchy is clear. The question is how does it come?

['What is the character of tyranny? For it is clear that it arises out of democracy.' 'It is clear.' 'And does not tyranny arise from democracy in much the same sort of way as democracy from oligarchy?' Plato begins by speaking of the character of tyranny, just hinting that its origin is too well known to need discussion. But then, with a certain amount of inconsistency, he proceeds to treat the question at some length. B. J.]

τρόπον τινὰ τὸν αὐτόν] 'In somewhat the same way.' τινά is added because the process is only to a certain extent the same.

δ προὖθεντο, κ.τ.λ.] The construction of the sentence is interrupted by ἢ γάρ; and resumed in ἡ πλούτου τοίνυν ἀπληστία. πλούτου being substituted for τούτου after the digression.

В

[ύπερ]πλοῦτος] occurs elsewhere only as an adjective (supra 552 B, Aesch. Prom. 466). As a substantive it may be defended by the analogy of such words as ὑπέρθεος, ὑπερσοφιστής, ὑπερθεμιστοκλῆς, ὑπέρδουλος. [B. J.]

[But ὑπερ is probably a corruption of που, which occurs elsewhere in similar references: vi. 490 c, vii. 533 d, ix. 572 c, 582 d, 588 d. Other conjectural emendations are ὑπὲρ πλούτου (Madvig), ὑπερπλουτεῦν. L. C.]

έν δημοκρατουμένη πόλει] sc. ών.

ἔχει τε κάλλιστον] sc. ή δημοκρατουμένη πόλις,—(1) 'is the fairest of its fair attributes.' Cp. Theaet. 171  $\Lambda$  τοῦτ' ἔχει κομψότατον. Or (2) 'it has this in the highest perfection,' i.e. better than any other state.

C

λέγεται . . . . ἡῆμα] 'Why, yes,' said he, 'that is continually said.' Cp. Gorg. 465 D τὸ τοῦ 'Αναξαγόρου ἃν πολὺ ἦν: Soph. Ο. C. 305 πολὺ γὰρ . . . τὸ σὸν ὅνομα διήκει πάντας.

ὅπερ ἢα νῦν δὴ ἐρῶν] These words resume the thread that has been broken off by digressions. Socrates has reminded Adeimantus that wealth was the principle and excessive wealth the ruin of oligarchy, and that liberty was the principle of democracy. He

Republic now returns to his main purpose, which was to prove that excessive liberty is the ruin of democracy and prepares for tyranny.

562 την ἀναρχίαν] No longer liberty, but anarchy.

563 καὶ σμικρὰ τοιάδε] σμικρά is used ironically as in i. 339 Β σμικρά γε ἴσως, ἔφη, προσθήκη. Cp. iv. 423 C καὶ φαῦλόν γ', ἔφη, κ.τ.λ., and note.

13 τὸ δέ γε . . . ἔσχατον, κ.τ.λ.] is an exclamation, softened by the epexegesis in ὅσον γίγνεται, κ.τ.λ. See above, 558 Β ἡ δὲ συγγνώμη, κ.τ.λ., and note.

( οὐκοῦν κατ' Αἰσχύλον, κ.τ.λ.] From an unknown play of Aeschylus. Fr. 341 Nauck.

Liberty, Equality, and Fraternity are found to exist among men and women, slaves and freemen. The animals catch the infection.

This and some of the previous passages are translated by Cic. de Rep. i. chap. 43. He has not however been altogether able to 'carry the jest,' which is propounded by him seriously and without the delicate preparation of Plato. 'Ex quo fit ut etiam servi se liberius gerant: uxores eodem iure sint quo viri. Quia tanta libertate canes etiam et equi, aselli, denique liberi sint, sic incurrant, ut eis de via decedendum sit.' The most extravagant and comical ideas (ổ τι νῦν ἣλθ' ἐπὶ στόμα;) often occur in the works of Plato. But the manner of saying them, which enhances the humour, does away with the feeling of bad taste and impropriety.

ἀτεχνῶς γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] 'The proverb is amply verified, 'like lady, like lap-dog,'' The proverb of course refers to assimilation of character;—Master Shallow's men 'by observing of him, do bear themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man: their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society, that they flock together in consent, like so many wild-geese' (Shakespeare, 2 Henry IV, v. 1). But Plato applies it in a new sense with reference to assumed equality. The spaniel disputes the sofa with her mistress.

γίγνονται, κ.τ.λ.] 'and there are horses and asses accustomed,' &c. [B. J.]

[After  $\gamma i \gamma \nu \sigma \tau \alpha \iota$  some general notion such as  $\epsilon \lambda \epsilon \iota \theta \epsilon \rho \sigma \iota$  has to be supplied. Or (2) deleting the commas and construing  $\gamma i \gamma \nu \sigma \tau \alpha \iota$  with what precedes, we may suppose some word of similar ending, c. g.  $\sigma \epsilon \mu \nu \iota \nu \sigma \tau \alpha \iota$ , to have dropped out before  $\tau \epsilon \delta \eta$ ,  $\kappa. \tau. \lambda$ . L. C.]

τὸ ἐμόν . . . πάσχω] Cp. Charm. 173 Α ἄκουε δή, ἔφη, τὸ ἐμὸν Republic ὅναρ, εἴτε διὰ κεράτων εἴτε δι ἐλέφαντος ἐλήλυθεν.

563

πάντων τούτων . . . ποιεί] 'You perceive how the accumulation of all these things renders sensitive the mind of the citizens.' The subject of ποιεί is to be supplied from the genitive absolute. τὸ . . . κεφάλαιον is in apposition with the sentence. 'As the upshot of all this when it has accumulated, how sensitive the soul of the citizens becomes': cp. Theaet. 182 B ἀλλ' ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων πρὸς ἄλληλα συγγιγνομένων τὰς αἰσθήσεις καὶ τὰ αἰσθητὰ ἀποτίκτοντα τὰ μὲν ποιὰ ἄττα γίγνεσθαι, τὰ δὲ αἰσθανόμενα.

προσφέρηται] Dr. W. H. Thompson conjectured προσφέρη.

καὶ μάλ', ἔφη, οίδα] 'I know it only too well, he said.' The alacrity of the response to the description of democracy here and supra 558 c implies personal experience.

νεανική] 'sprightly.' This epithet is specially applied to the exaggerated form of democracy in which liberty becomes license—supra 562 c ff.

The excess of liberty leads to the extreme of servitude, and the

state passes from democracy through anarchy to tyranny.

immediate authors of the change are the class of idle spendthrifts whom we compared to drones. Of these there are two species, the stinging and the stingless: the former lead the way, the latter follow; while between them they have almost a monopoly of power. For the money-making class do but afford them pasturage, and the poor who have to work for their subsistence will not attend to politics unless they are paid. And the drones, taking money from the rich, will give the others just so much as may conduce to their own purposes. The rich, driven to self-defence, incur the suspicion of oligarchy, and power is thus given to the Protector of the people. For the populace have always some one favourite. Let the Protector once taste blood, and his destiny is fixed. By the law of self-preservation he must become a wolf, i.e. a tyrant. When the

ταὐτὸν ... τοῦτο I.e. excess. Socrates raises expectation by drawing out the analogy in the disorders of the oligarchical and

combination of his enemies becomes formidable, he asks for a bodyguard which is readily granted him. When this takes place, then let the rich man fly. For the Protector will cast many down, and

stand erect in the chariot of the state, a full-blown Tyrant.

563 E-

E

Republic VIII. 563 E καὶ τῷ ὄντι . . . (564 Λ) ἥκιστα] τῷ ὄντι marks the fresh exemplification of a familiar truth: cp. vi. 497 D τὰ καλὰ τῷ ὄντι χαλεπά. So ὡς ἀληθῶς, ἀτεχνῶς.

 $\kappa$ αὶ δή] is omitted in Par. A and some other MSS. Though not necessary, the words are Platonic and idiomatic.

είς ἄγαν δουλείαν] Like σφόδρα φιλία Laws iii. 698 c.

 $\xi$ ξ οἷμαι, κ.τ.λ.] οἷμαι is inserted like a particle after the preposition.

Β δουλοῦται αὐτήν] sc. τὴν δημοκρατίαν, or rather τὴν δημοκρατουμένην πόλιν.

άληθη, ἔφη, λέγεις i.e. that was what I meant.

ἐκεῖνο...ἀκέντροις] The pronoun refers to supra 552 c where the 'drones' are first mentioned.

ἐν πάση πολιτείᾳ ἐγγιγνομένω] sc. ἐν  $\hat{\eta}$  αν ἐγγίγνησθον, 'wherever found.' After ταράττετον, τὴν πολιτείαν must be supplied from ἐν πάση πολιτεία, 'make confusion in every state where they arise.'

φλέγμα τε καὶ χολή] According to Aristotle, Prob. i. 29, χολή is hot and φλέγμα cold. The hot humour answers to the stinging, the cold to the stingless drones.

C μελιτουργόν] 'maker of honey,' is the reading of the first hand of Par. A. The other reading μελιττουργόν, 'bee-master,' is the more common, if not the only form elsewhere, which may be regarded as a reason either for adopting or rejecting it. It is also more directly in point.

ἐκτετμήσεσθον] The rare fut. perf. is very expressive,—' that they be extirpated once for all.'

ῶδε τοίνυν . . . καὶ ἔχει] The object of λάβωμεν, sc. τὸ πρᾶγμα, is easily supplied. There is a tendency in Plato to omit the case after verbs which describe dialectical or mental processes, e.g. ἀναλαβεῖν, διορίζεσθαι, ἀναγκάζειν.

τὸ τοιοῦτον γένος SC. τὸ τῶν κηφήνων.

δι' έξουσίαν Cp. supra 557 B, D.

ἐκτὸς ὀλίγων Public offices with few exceptions are filled by

this class of persons. What exceptions Plato had in his mind we can only guess. He may be referring to institutions like the Areopagus, or to individual statesmen like Pericles: cp. infra E χωρίς τινων ολίγων.

προσίζον βομβεί 'settles and keeps up a constant hum.'

βλίττει There is no reason why this verb should not be used intransitively, but it is rather confusing to have it so with βλίσειεν following in the active meaning, and Ruhnken (Tim. p. 63) was perhaps right in reading βλίττεται.

καλοῦνται implies that the rich are now a separate class.

αὖτουργοί 'who work with their hands:' not, as the word elsewhere means, 'tilling their own land.' They are here opposed to the employers of labour.

καὶ ἀπράγμονες 'and keep out of politics.'

ἔστι γάρ . . . μεταλαμβάνη θαμά belongs to the whole sentence, not to ποιείν alone:—'are not often disposed to do so.'

One of the great problems of democracies has ever been how to make the mass of the people use their infinitesimal share of the government. The power which they have is so small that it is very partially exercised except in times of revolution and excitement. The Athenians solved the difficulty by giving the ecclesiasts as well as the dicasts 'a little honey.' Cp. Aristoph. Wasps 655-679, and Dem. Olynth. iii. 37, §§ 35, 36.

The history of Athens in the century after the Persian War, and especially of the oligarchical party,-hardly loyal in the time of Pericles and Ephialtes, and in the later years of the Peloponnesian War usurping the government, which they afterwards accepted from a foreign power in the name of the Thirty Tyrants, and the political reaction to which the remembrance of this tyranny as well as of the older one of Pisistratus gave rise, is the best commentary on this passage.

τὸ πλεῖστον αὐτοὶ ἔχειν | Cp. especially Thuc. iii. 38 and 42.

μεταλαμβάνει . . . οὕτως] 'Why, yes, to that extent the people VOL. III. n d

Republic

564 Ď

Е

565

22

Republic do share: 'i.e. they have what their leaders are willing to leave VIII. them.

565 εἰσαγγελίαι] 'impeachments,' viz. against the oligarchs for arbitrary conduct, leading to reprisals on their part.

ώς ἄρα . . . λύκω γενέσθαι] ὁ γευσάμενος, κ.τ.λ., which is an anacoluthon, is resumed in τούτω.

ένός Sc. σπλάγχνου ἀνθρωπίνου.

The legend is told in Pausanias viii. 2 Λυκάων δὲ ἐπὶ τὸν βωμὸν τοῦ Λυκαίου Διὸς βρέφος ἤνεγκεν ἀνθρώπου καὶ ἔθυσε τὸ βρέφος, καὶ ἔσπεισεν ἐπὶ τοῦ βωμοῦ τὸ αἶμα, καὶ αὐτὸν αὐτίκα ἐπὶ τῆ θυσία γενέσθαι λύκον φησὶν ἀὐτὶ ἀνθρώπου.

E ἐμφυλίου αἴματος] His fellow-citizen is regarded as his kinsman. For an account of the wide prevalence of similar beliefs and various conjectures respecting their origin, see McLennan's article 'Lycanthropy,' in *Encycl. Brit.*, ed. ix.

γλώττη . . . ἀνοσίφ] The tongue and lips which make the slanderous accusation are vividly imagined as actually tasting blood.

566 ὑποσημαίνη] For ὑποσημαίνειν = 'to indicate or intimate a line of action,' cp. Thuc. i. 82, § 3 ὁρῶντες ἡμῶν ἤδη τήν τε παρασκευὴν καὶ τοὺς λόγους αὐτῆ ὁμοῖα ὑποσημαίνοντας. εἴμαρται adds solemnity. It is a law of Destiny.

οὖτος . . . γίγνεται, κ.τ.λ.] οὖτος is predicate. 'The leader of the faction against the rich becomes that person'—the man who is destined to turn wolf.

Β διαβάλλοντες τῆ πόλει] 'by setting the citizens against him.' For the construction cp. Phaedo 67 ε διαβέβληνται μέν πανταχῆ τῷ σώματι.

τὸ δὴ τυραννικὸν αἴτημα, κ.τ.λ.] αἰτεῖν infra is the explanation of αἴτημα.

αὐτοῖς] sc. τῷ δήμφ supplied from τὸν δῆμον supra, marks ironically the personal interest which the people take in their Protector. The simplicity or stupidity of the people, who are compared in vi. 488 A, B to the deaf and short-sighted ship-master, is a favourite theme of Plato in the Republic.

δ δὲ δὴ προστάτης, κ.τ.λ.] αὐτός contrasts the position of the tyrant with that of the adversaries whom he has overthrown. The passage recalls the description of the triumphal return of Pisistratus in Herod. i. 59, 60. The allusion to Homer, Iliad xvi. 776 κεῖτο μέγας μεγαλωστὶ λελασμένος ἱπποσυνάων, is evident.

Republic VIII. 566 M3

What sort of happiness has the tyrant and the city which is under a tyranny? In his early days, the tyrant is all smiles and promises and humbleness, making gifts of lands to all and sundry, but especially to those who serve him. But there comes a time when he must stir up wars, that the people may require his leadership and that he may drain the resources of the powerful and also expose his private enemies to danger. War brings unpopularity, and some of those who helped him to his throne find fault with him. He must put these out of the way, and gradually he is compelled to 'purge the commonwealth' of all high-minded, brave, and able men, leaving only the dregs of the populace. At the same time, to secure his power, he must increase his body-guard with mercenaries and emancipated slaves. These are 'the wise companions whose intercourse,' as the tragic poet says, 'makes the tyrant wise,'—And it is because they say such things that we refuse to admit the tragedians into our state and bid them go elsewhere. They will breathe most freely, where the form of government is worst!—But we wander from the subject. Thus installed, the tyrant will, as long as he can, support his armies by robbery of temples and confiscation: and when that source fails, he will tax the people. If they resist, he will disarm and strike them, though he will be striking his own father,

566 D-569 C

**βροτόs**] is a poetical word and is chosen to express abhorrence:— 'such a creature.' The strain of irony mingles with contempt in such expressions as κάλλιστος ἀνήρ, καλλίστη πολιτεία, τὴν εὐδαιμονίαν τοῦ ἀνδρός, κ.τ.λ., cp. supra 562 A, 563 E.

566 D

ται̂ς μὲν πρώταις ἡμέραις, κ.τ.λ.] cp. Hotspur on Bolingbroke ('this king of smiles') in Shakespeare, 1 Henry IV, i. 3, 246.

E

ὅταν δέ γε . . . καταλλαγ $\hat{\eta}$ ] 'but when in his relations to enemies without he is reconciled to some and destroys others,' &c. The irregularity of the language is softened by the possible construction of πρὸς ἐχθρούς with καταλλαγ $\hat{\eta}$ , and the resumption of ἐχθρούς in ἐκείνων. For ἡσυχία ἐκείνων cp. Herod. i. 45,  $\S$  4 ἐπεί τε ἡσυχίη τῶν ἀιθρώπων ἐγένετο περὶ τὸ σ $\hat{\eta}$ μα.

Republic VIII. οὐκοῦν . . . ἐπιβουλεύωσιν; ] cp. Arist. Pol. v. 11, § 8.

567 A

В

ταῦτα δὴ . . . (Β) πολίταις;] ἔτοιμον, sc. ἐστίν. ἔτοιμος is one of a class of words, ἄξιος, δῆλος, &c., with which this ellipse is common. In the following sentence παρρησιάζεσθαι is governed by ἔτοιμόν ἐστιν, or by a more general notion to be gathered from ἀνάγκη and ἔτοιμον.

B οὐκοῦν καί τινας τῶν ξυγκαταστησάντων] Cp. again Shakespeare, I Henry IV, Act iii. sc. 1, Act v. sc. 1 (Worcester's speeches).

ύπεξαιρείν] 'to remove.' Par. A reads ὑπεξαίρειν by a frequent confusion. For ὑπεξαιρείν in this sense = 'to put out of the way,' cp. especially Thuc. viii. 70, § 2 (of the Four Hundred) ἄνδρας τέ τινας ἀπέκτειναν οὐ πολλούς, οἱ ἐδόκουν ἐπιτήδειοι εἶναι ὑπεξαιρεθῆναι.

ρ C // ὡς ἔοικε γάρ] sc. εἶναι. ἀνάγκη is the subject of ἔοικε.

«ἴπερ ἄρξει] 'if he is to be master.'

D μετὰ φαύλων τῶν πολλῶν] not 'with the many bad' (as in the translation) but 'with companions most of whom are bad.' Cp. ix. 579 Β ὑπὸ πώντων πολεμίων.

τον μισθόν] 'the necessary pay.' It is assumed that he can get no service voluntarily.'

E τί δέ; The early editions read τοὺς δέ, which is not indefensible though weakly supported by the MSS. 'And when he has guardsmen on the spot, will he not prefer to employ them?' Par. A and nearly all the other MSS. give τίς δέ ('but who would not wish to get them on the spot?') This meaning is forced and inconsistent with the ἄρα which is weak even if changed to ἄρα. The most probable variant is that of the Munich MS. q which was preferred by Stallbaum, and is adopted in the text:—'Well, but will he not choose to take retainers (δορυφόρους ποιήσασθαι) from the spot?' According to any way of taking the passage some general notion such as λαβεῖν οr ποιήσασθαι must be supplied with ἐθελήσειεν from μεταπέμψεται in the previous sentence.

568 Α οἱ νέοι πολῖται] viz. the foreign mercenaries. ξύνεισιν, sc. αὐτῷ. πυκνῆς διανοίας ἐχόμενον] 'characteristic of a shrewd wit.' Cp. vi. 496 Λ φρονήσεως . . . ἀληθινῆς ἐχόμενον.

ώς ἄρα... συνουσία] The line σοφοί τύραννοι τῶν σοφῶν συνουσία is variously ascribed by the scholiasts to an unknown play of

Euripides, and also to the Ajax Locrus of Sophocles. See Nauck, Republic Frag. Soph. 13.

568

C.

τούτους] (1) may refer to αὖτοι οἱ ἐταῖροι supra: 'these' (i.e. the associates Plato has mentioned) 'are manifestly the wise men meant by Euripides:' or (2) with a comma before ξύνεστιν, 'these are the wise,' viz. the people with whom the tyrant consorts.

καὶ ὡς ἐσόθεόν γ', ἔφη . . . ποιηταί] The line to which allusion is made is Eurip. Troad, 1169 γάμων τε καὶ της ἐσοθέου τυραννίδος. See also Phoenissae 503-506.

τοιγάρτοι . . . (c) κομψοί The poets, who are ironically supposed to be of a gentle nature, as the law has been already passed, 'do forgive us' for expelling them. Hence the present (ξυγγιγνώσκουσιν) as well as the future παραδεξόμεθα.

Euripides is said to have visited the court of Archilaus king of Macedonia; Pindar and Simonides, perhaps Aeschylus also, were familiar at that of Hiero. Was Plato himself the friend and intimate of Dionysius? The manner in which the relation is here spoken of is at variance with such a supposition, for which the spurious epistles are not a sufficient warrant; and which may, perhaps, like the meeting of Solon and Croesus in Herodotus, be a moral sentiment rather than an historical fact. Whether Plato 'was or was not a good citizen,' no one was ever more intensely penetrated with the Greek feeling against tyrants.

καλάς φωνάς . . . μισθωσάμενοι ] viz. of those who are called the poets' ύπηρέται, supra ii. 373 Β ραψωδοί, ύποκριταί, χορευταί.

¿ξέβημεν] 'In this we have been making a digression.' The D reference to Tragedy beginning at supra Λ οὐκ ἐτός was a digression.

τὰ τῶν ἀποδομένων] This cannot be right. Par. A reads ἀποδομένων, the λ above the line being possibly by the first hand. The reading ἀπολομένων is also found in the Munich MS. q. Baiter reads καὶ τὰ τῶν ἀπολομένων, which has the merit of giving regularity to the syntax. But the deferred apodosis (for which cp. especially ix. 575 A τον έχοντά τε and note) offers no real difficulty, and the suspended construction, to be resumed again after τίδ' ὅταν, κ.τ.λ., is more suitable here than a passing reference to the proscription, which was a fail accompli at 567 c (cp. also supra Λ τους προτέρους έκείνους ἀπολέσας). Stephanus proposed τὰ τῶν ἀποδιδομένων. But

even the present tense ἀποδίδοσθαι hardly occurs with passive Republic VIII.

meaning. The reading ἀποδομένων is very possibly a corruption of πωλουμένων. 'First he will make use of what sacred treasures there are in the city,—so far as the proceeds of what is thus

exposed for sale suffice, reducing the contribution which he exacts from the people.' [L. C.]

 $\mathbf{E}$ εαν δε εάν τε, the reading of Par. A, &c., is difficult to explain, and is not satisfactorily accounted for by Schneider, who supposes it to answer to a suppressed  $\epsilon \dot{a} \nu \tau \epsilon \mu \dot{\eta}$ . It is better either to omit  $\tau \epsilon$ or to read ¿àv &é, as in the text, with two MSS.-M (the Cesena MS.) and v (Angelicus). The latter alternative seems further to involve the omission of δέ in πως [δέ] λέγεις; —πως λέγεις; εἶπον' ἐὰν δέ. The apodosis is supplied by the answer γνώσεταί γε, κ.τ.λ. (infra).

569 A

568 D

κατέστησεν] 'established,' sc. ώς προστάτην τοῦ δήμου.

ἀπό | ὑπό is the reading of the MSS., but is clearly wrong.

καὶ νῦν . . . ἐξελαύνων; ] It may be doubted whether (1) καὶ νῦν κελεύει is dependent on ὅτι, and the indirect form of καὶ νῦν κελεύω; or (2) the preceding construction has been forgotten and καὶ νῦν κελεύει is an independent clause. The former is more lively and every way more probable.

γνώσεταί γε . . . έξελαύνει ] for ηὖξε cp. supra 565 c αὔξειν μέγαν.

καί, τὸ λεγόμενον, κ.τ.λ.] 'And as the saying is, the people who В would avoid enslavement to free-men, which is smoke, have fallen under the tyranny of slaves, which is fire.' For the proverbial phrase cp. Shakespeare, As You Like It, i. 2, 270 'Thus must I from the smoke into the smother; From tyrant Duke unto a tyrant brother.'

δούλων δουλείαν μεταμπισχόμενος i.e. they are enslaved by ( ' slaves (cp. supra 567 E), which is the most galling form of slavery.

## BOOK IX.

The tyrannical individual alone remains To know how he arises out of the democratical man, and whether he lives happily or not, we must examine into the nature of the desires. There are some of them which are active only in sleep, but in our dreams are capable of any amount of lawlessness. Now the democratical man, as we found, deliberately gave play to every impulse in its turn, and we imagine him in later life to have a son, whom he has brought up on the same principle of indiscriminate indulgence. But the son is led away by the temptations to which his father had yielded only in part, and after various oscillations between counter-influences, at length a master-passion is planted in his breast.

Republic IX. 571 A-573 B

λοιπὸς γὰρ οὖν] οὖν adds emphasis which can hardly be expressed in English: 'why, yes, he said, he is indeed the only one remaining.'

571 A

τὸ τῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν, κ.τ.λ.] The thread is taken up from viii. 558 p ff. where the distinction between the necessary and unnecessary pleasures is first clearly drawn. The unchaining of the lower nature, which had been arrested at a certain point (viii. 56 ι Λ) is now to be followed to its consummation, and the working of the desires must therefore be more minutely described.

οὐκοῦν . . . ἔτ' ἐν καλῷ;] 'Is not the inquiry still open to us?'— Β ἐν καλῷ as in Soph. Elect. 384 νῦν γὰρ ἐν καλῷ φρονεῖν.

αΐ κινδυνεύουσι . . . παντί] 'which appear to be innate in every man,'

**ἐνίων μὲν ἀνθρώπων**] 'in some persons.' The genitive follows ἡδοναὶ καὶ ἐπιθυμίαι resumed from the beginning of the sertence, and is to be repeated with ἀπαλλάττεσθαι. The latter word is passive as in viii. 559 A, B.

τῶν δέ] 'but in the case of others,' answering to ἐνίων μέν.

λέγεις δὲ καὶ...ταύτας;] 'and further let me ask, which do you mean by these?' καί is expressive of the surprise and interest which arises about the new point. Cp. Soph. O. T. 1129 ποίον ἄνδρα καὶ λέγεις; Herod. ix. 25, § 2.

C

Republic IX. 571

D

ἐκείνου] sc. τοῦ ἐπιθυμητικοῦ, to be gathered from what precedes, viz. τὸ τῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν supra A.

 $\vec{\epsilon}\nu$   $\vec{\tau}\hat{\omega}$  τοιούτ $\omega$ ] is the resumption of the previous sentence  $\vec{\delta}$ ταν... $\vec{\eta}$ θη, which in turn is the explanation of the clause τας...  $\vec{\epsilon}$ γειρομένας.

μητρί τε γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Soph. O. T. 981:

πολλοὶ γὰρ ἤδη κάν ὀνείρασιν βροτῶν μητρὶ ξυνευνάσθησαν.

ἐπιχειρεῖν] From the irrational element of human nature we here pass insensibly to the person in whom it is active.

ώς οἴεται 'in imagination.'

βρώματός τε ἀπέχεσθαι μηδενός] 'to include in any sort of food.' Plato is preparing for the mention of the tyrant, infra.574 E, who in x. 619 c is supposed to eat his own children. In the latter part of the sentence the negative form of expression οὐδὲν ὀκνεῖ is lost sight of, and the general sense of τολμῷ supra is continued.

ύγιεινῶς ... αὐτὸς αὐτοῦ] αὐτοῦ is a genitive of relation, like καλῶς ἔχειν αὐτοῦ. The passage which follows is translated by Cicero, de Divin. i. 29.

εἰς σύννοιαν αὐτὸς αὐτῷ] 'having come to reflect upon himself.' σύννοια has the meaning of 'reflexion,' 'deep thought' (cp. Aesch. Prom. 437 συννοία δὲ δάπτομαι κέαρ).

Ε ἐνδεία δούς] Cp. infra 574 c πληγαίς τε δοῦναι: Phaedr. 254 Ε εδούναις ἔδωκε.

3λλ εφ̂, κ.τ.λ.] sc. τὸ βέλτιστον. Par. A p. m. has ὀρέγεσθαι καὶ αἰσθάνεσθαι. Par. A corr. has ὀρέγεσθαί του καὶ αἰσθάνεσθαι: the remaining MSS. have ὀρέγεσθαι τοῦ αἰσθάνεσθαι. If the reading ὀρέγεσθαί του καὶ αἰσθάνεσθαι is sound, the meaning is 'it leaves the soul free from pains and lusts to pure contemplation, and to aspire further (καί) to perceive something which it knows not.' But the words καὶ αἰσθάνεσθαι should perhaps be struck out and the accent restored to του. The rational principle is imagined as feeling after that in sleep which it may hope to comprehend in waking. Cp. x. 611 Ε οῖων ἐφίεται ὁμιλιῶν.

καθεύδη] is a resumption of είς τὸν ὕπνον ἴη, which is again

Hour perentures him followers to jour their

(or consider framewhile) of the streaming all

τῆς τ' ἀληθείας . . . ἄπτεται] These words are not to be taken generally, but with reference to the time of sleep. When he goes to rest with his passions calmed and his reason awakened he attains more truth than when he goes to rest in any other frame of mind.

ταῦτα μὲν ... ἐστίν] 'In saying these things we have digressed further than we intended: but the point on which we wish to remark is this.'

Cp. Arist. Eth. Nic. i. 13, §§ 12, 13 ταύτης μεν οὖν κοινή τις ἀρετή καὶ οὖκ ἀνθρωπίνη φαίνεται δοκεῖ γὰρ ἐν τοῖς ὕπνοις ἐνεργεῖν μάλιστα τὸ μόριον τοῦτο καὶ ἡ δύναμις αὕτη, ὁ δ' ἀγαθὸς καὶ κακὸς ἥκιστα διάδηλοι καθ' ὕπνον (ὅθεν φασὶν οὐδὲν διαφέρειν τὸ ἥμισυ τοῦ βίου τοὕς εὐδαίμονας τῶν ἀθλίων συμβαίνει δὲ τοῦτο εἰκότως ἀργία γάρ ἐστιν ὁ ὕπνος τῆς ψυχῆς ἦ λέγεται σπουδαία καὶ φαύλη), πλὴν εἰ μὴ κατὰ μικρὸν διϊκνοῦνταί τινες τῶν κινήσεων, καὶ ταύτη βελτίω γίγνεται τὰ φαντάσματα τῶν ἐπιεικῶν ἣ τῶν τυχόντων.

The truth seems to be, as Aristotle implies, that dreams have little or nothing of a moral nature; they are not the passions let loose from the control of reason, but physical imaginations of good and evil in which the will is almost, if not entirely, absent. Dreams are 'decaying sense'; they are the recollections of our waking life fancifully combined by associations which have no law; and sometimes the animal desires, but hardly ever the malignant ones, find an expression in them.

καὶ πάνυ... εἶναι] 'Even in some of us who unquestionably seem to be virtuous men.' καὶ πάνυ is to be joined with δοκοῦσιν. μετρίοις, 'not in excess,' and therefore, according to Greek notions, 'good and virtuous.'

 $\tilde{\eta}\nu$ ] 'He arose, did he not ( $\pi o \nu$ ), through being trained from his youth upward under a miserly parent?' (supra viii. 559 D).

παιδιάς τε καὶ καλλωπισμοῦ ἔνεκα] 'Disregarding the unnecessary, which have for their object only amusement or ornament.'

cis...τὸ ἐκείνων είδος] 'To their fashions.' είδος is the plan or mode of life adopted by the men. Cp. Thuc. viii, 56 τρέπεται ἐπὶ τοιόνδε είδος. Ficinus gives mores (ἦθος?): cp. vi. 497 B.

B

Α

C

Republic εκάστων] SC. πάντων ὧν ἃν έκάστοτε ἀπολαύη (cp. viii. 56 ι в).

572 οὔτε ἀνελεύθερον οὔτε παράνομον] i.e. in the mean between ολιγαρχία and ἀναρχία,—οὐδὲν μᾶλλον εἰς ἀναγκαίους ἡ μὴ ἀναγκαίους ήδονὰς ἀναλίσκων (viii. 561 Λ), βίον ἰσονομικοῦ τινὸς ἀνδρός (ib. E).

θές τοίνυν... τίθει] The present tense is appropriately substituted for the aorist, because in what follows attention is drawn not merely to the fact of his education which is presupposed, but to his way of life which is represented as continuing.

Ε . δνομαζομένην δ'] 'which however is termed.' Cp. Herod. vii. 155, § 2 ὑπὸ . . . τῶν σφετέρων δούλων, καλεομένων δὲ Κυλλυρίων.

ταις εν μέσω Supra D κατέστη εις μέσον.

τους δ' αυ ] sc. τους διαφθείροντας, supra c.

τὰ ἔτοιμα διανεμομένων] 'which divide his means among them.' Cp. viii. 552 Β τῶν ἐτοίμων ἀναλωτής.

573 τῶν τοιούτων] 'of men like him,' in whom the lower nature is predominant.

573 A-C The master passion, a great and winged drone, leads the swarm of other passions buzzing in his train. They feed and pamper him until his sting is grown, when he is surrounded with a body-guard of furious lusts, which kill or banish what remains in the man of prudential and conventional virtue. Has not Passion long been called the tyrant of the soul? Is not the drunken man a lord? And do not madmen fancy that they can rule over the Gods?

περὶ αὐτόν . . . (Β) ἐν αὐτῷ . . . παρ᾽ αὐτοῦ] περὶ αὐτόν, i.e. the monster winged drone. ἐν αὐτῷ, i.e. the man,—not ἐν αὐτῷ, 'in the drone,' for good opinions and desires could hardly be supposed to exist in him, and οὖτος ὁ προστάτης τῆς ψυχῆς must be the subject of λάβη: παρ᾽ αὐτοῦ, i.e. the monster winged drone. The subject of καθήρη is the drone and the object is the man.

οἴνων] The rare plural may imply variety of wines (Xen. An. iv. 4, 9), but is rather simply 'magnific.' ἀνειμένων is a 'dragging predicate' implying a relative clause (cp. vii. 532 c) 'the pleasures found in such society, which are dissolute.'

ὑπὸ μανίας] A crowd of mad thoughts and fancies supply the place of the tyrant's body-guard—viii. 566 B. The manner in

which the metaphor is harmonized and sustained by the 'buzzing of the appetites,' and the 'sting of desire,' which is implanted in the monster drone, is very characteristic of Plato, in whom such continuous metaphors are used not merely as images but as links of connexion. In the same manner, by the use of the word προστάτην 572 E, continued in the προστάτης τῆς ψυχῆς, the master passion is gradually developed into the demagogue or leader of the people.

Republic IX. 573 A

ποιουμένας χρηστάς] 'regarded as good.' ποιουμένας is one of those disparaging additions which Plato often employs, and here refers to the respectable ideas and motives which hold the desires in check when philosophy is absent. See above in the description of the oligarchical man (viii. 554 E) εὖσχημονέστερος ἄν πολλῶν . . . εἴη, and in the progress of his son (viii. 560 A) αἰδοῦς τινὸς ἐγγενομένης ἐν τῷ τοῦ νέον ψνχῷ. This use of the passive ποιεῖσθαι, although not supported by parallels from other writers, appears to be sufficiently established by the passages quoted on vi. 498 A. Another meaning suggested here is 'good opinions in process of formation.' But this use is no better authenticated, and it is out of keeping with the rest of the description to suppose any genuine tendencies to virtue springing up afresh at this stage of the downward career.

καὶ μανίας ] καί, although found in Par. A and several other MSS. is probably spurious.

καὶ μὴν...ἄρχειν] Cp. Soph. Aj. 116, where Ajax gives his orders to Athena. ὑποκινεῖν suggests mental disturbance or excitement, παρακινεῖν rather alienation or derangement. There is no reason why ὑποκινεῖν should not also be used intransitively.

Plato, in introducing a new sense of τυραννικός, illustrates his meaning by metaphorical uses of the word in common parlance,—τὰ φορτικὰ . . . προσφέροντες (iv. 442 E).

ἀκριβῶς] = τῷ ἀκριβεῖ λόγῳ: 'in the true sense of the word.'

\* $\delta\nu\eta\rho$ ] This word is probably the subject and should be  $\delta\nu\eta\rho$ , although the MSS., as usual in such cases, read  $\partial\nu\eta\rho$ . The presence of the article is proved by the lengthening of the alpha in similar places of tragic dialogue.

The life of riot which ensues awakens clamorous wants, which are supplied through rapine, until he robs and beats his parents, whom

В

C

Republic 1X. 573 C-575 A

he makes subservient to the meanest object of his desires. Then he breaks into houses, and robs temples, while the newly enfranchised lusts, that were formerly chained down except in sleep, overpower his respectable 'democratic' prepossessions. The master-passion is now tyrant to the height, and leads the soul that is under his dominion into every excess of crime, being ministered to partly from without and partly from within.

τὸ τῶν . . . ἐρεῖs] 'As people say in jest, that is not my business to tell you, but yours to tell me.' καί is idiomatic, giving a sly emphasis:—'That is just what you have to tell me.'

παρ' αὐτοῖς] 'Amongst them,' viz. the man and his companions: cp. supra A τῶν τοιούτων, also infra 575 c. Such monstrosities 'never come single.'

ων αν Έρως] ων is governed by Έρως. 'Whatever things are objects of the tyrant Passion that lives within.'

παραβλαστάνουσιν] 'spring up beside' the master-passion. The image is that of young saplings shooting up at the side of a tree.

E της οὐσίας παραιρέσεις] 'encroachments on his capital':—he parts with some of his estate.

ὅταν δὲ... βιασάμενον;] The passage is imitated by Longinus, de Sublim. xliv. 7, where a poetical image is converted into a rhetorical figure.

τοὺς δέ] Still referring to the tyrannical man and his comrades who resemble him:—supra παρ' αὐτοῖς and note. The alternative of sing, and plur, prepares for infra 575 Λ καὶ ἃν μὲν... ὀλίγοι... ὧσι, κ.τ.λ.

σφόδρα γ', ἔφη] sc. ἀνάγκη.

ἀναγκαῖον . . . φέρειν] 'he must get money from each and every source'—carrying on the notion of violence contained in ἀφελέσθαι.

οὐ πάνυ... τοιούτου] 'I do not feel at all comfortable about the parents of such a gentleman as this.'

πρὸς Διός] here as elsewhere, like & θαυμάσιε supra, indicates the rising excitement of the speaker. There is a play on the word ἀναγκαῖος in the two senses of necessitas and necessitudo,—'who is bound to him by the closest ties.' Cp. vii. 527 Λ ἀναγκαίως and note.

574 B

Republic πληγαις τε δοῦναι, κ.τ.λ. In these words Plato is preparing for the actual tyrant: cp. infra 575 D έαν δε μή επιτρέπη, κ.τ.λ.

IX.574 C D

ἐπιλίπη The reading is doubtful between ἐπιλίπη, 'fail,' and έπιλείπη, 'begin to fail.'

νεωκορήσει 'He will clean out,' i.e. plunder, 'a temple': a playful litotes like 'convey' in Shakespeare. This point in the individual answers to viii. 568 D, E in the account of tyranny:—ἐάν τε ίερα χρήματα ή, κ.τ.λ.

τάς δικαίας ποιουμένας ] The reading δικαίας was restored in place of δίκαs by Bekker from Par. A; in which, however, it is a correction, though apparently by the first hand. The phrase is a repetition of supra 573 Β έαν τινας έν αὐτῷ δόξας η ἐπιθυμίας λάβη ποιουμένας χρηστάς, where see the note. The reading of the other MSS., τàs δίκας ποιουμένας, meaning, according to Stallbaum 'which gave judgement about things good and evil,' is equally doubtful in point of Greek and of sense. The 'opinions' are those imparted to him by his democratical father, who still respects, or fears, the law.

αί νεωστί . . . λελυμέναι ] Cp. supra 571 Β κολαζόμεναι, κ.τ.λ., infra 575 A τὸν δ' ἔνδοθεν . . . ἐλευθερωθέντα. This point recalls viii. 567 E.

τυραννευθείς δε ύπὸ "Ερωτος Gut now that he is under the dominion of the great Passion.'-The subject is changed from αί νεωστὶ ἐκ δουλείας λελυμέναι under the influence of the preceding clause ότε ην αὐτός, κ.τ.λ.

 $\mathbf{E}$ 

βρώματος] supra 571 D and note.

τὸν ἔχοντά τε αὐτόν The particle τε after ἔχοντα is probably genuine; but the construction is broken off and resumed in av μέν, κ.τ.λ. which follows, the immediate consequences being thus distinguished from the ulterior result. Plato readily passes from the individual to the state, and plays with language in the transition from one to the other.

575 A

αὐτόν τε καὶ τὸν περὶ αὐτόν The reflexive pronouns refer to "Ερως.

τον . . . θόρυβον The rabble-rout in attendance on the master-The racket and turmoil (viii. 561 B) are poetically substituted for the crowd which makes them.

ύπὸ τῶν αὐτῶν τρόπων καὶ ἐαυτοῦ] 'By those same dispositions

Republic I.V. 575 and by himself' (sc.  $\tau \circ \tilde{\nu}$  "Er $\omega \tau \circ s$ ). The pronoun  $\tau \tilde{\omega} \nu$   $\alpha \tilde{\upsilon} \tau \tilde{\omega} \nu$  refers to the preceding words— $\tau \tilde{\upsilon} \nu$   $\mu \tilde{\varepsilon} \nu$   $\tilde{\varepsilon} \tilde{\xi} \omega \theta \tilde{\varepsilon} \nu$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ . The master-passion, with the help of the alien lusts which are his bodyguard ( $\mu a \nu i a s$  . . .  $\tilde{\varepsilon} \pi a \kappa \tau \circ \tilde{\nu}$  supra 573 B) sets free the servile lusts which have hitherto been held in subjection. The whole description is parallel to viii. 567 D, E.

575 A-576 B Such is the tyrannical person in himself. What is he in relation to his city? When there are a few such men, and they are kept under, they go and serve some tyrant or become mercenaries, if there is war: otherwise they stay at home and do petty mischiefs, such as burglary and kidnapping, or find congenial occupation about the courts of law. But when they have multiplied, and become aware of their numerical strength, they pick out the man from among them who has the most tyrannical disposition and make him a tyrant. He is the most lustful, the most violent of them all; who, before 'his infant fortune comes to age,' is full of smiles and 'courtesies,' but when his end is gained, looks strangely on those that helped him to power. He never has a friend, nor gets a taste of freedom, but is ever faithless, ever unjust. We are now speaking of him as in a dream. But when the dream becomes reality, then is attained the very acmè of human evil.

575 B άλλον τινὰ . . . τύραννον] ἄλλος refers to τυραννικὸς ἀνήρ: they who have the making of tyrants in them, or who are all but tyrants, i. e. οἱ τυραννικοὶ ἄνδρες, go and find another tyrant, in whose service they enlist.

ἐἀν... γένωνται] 'If such characters are bred when there is no war.' The antithesis is suggested by the casual phrase ἐάν που πόλεμος η̂.

C

σμικρὰ . . . βάλλει] 'A small catalogue of evils,—(even) if there are only a few such men!' 'Why yes,' said I, 'for small is small in comparison with great; and all these things in the misery and mischief which they inflict upon a state don't come within a league of the tyrant, as the saying is.' Socrates' σμικρά,—'small in comparison with tyranny,' is ironically echoed by Adeimantus. The meaning, however, is taken up seriously in the next sentence. A similar play on the same word between the ironical and serious occurs elsewhere in Plato: cp. vi. 498 d Eis μικρόν γ', ἔφη, χρόνον εἴρηκας. Εἰς οὐδὲν μὲν οὖν, ἔφην, ῶς γε πρὸς τὸν ἄπαντα. For the catalogue of 'small evils' cp. i. 344 b ff.

πλείστον . . . τύραννον] 'Most of the tyrannical nature.' Cp. ii. 382 D ποιητής . . . ψευδής έν θεῷ οὐκ ἔνι,—viii. 554 D τὰς τοῦ κηφῆνος ξυγγενεῖς . . . ἐπιθυμίας. The expression here keeps up the personification of Ερως, τύραννος ἔνδον οἰκῶν, supra 573 D.

Republic IX. 575 D

τυραννικώτατος] 'Most fit to be a tyrant.' Cp. βασιλικός.

ἐὰν . . . ὑπείκωσιν] For the suppressed apodosis cp. Protag.
 325 D καὶ ἐὰν μὲν ἐκὼν πείθηται εἰ δὲ μή, κ.τ.λ.

μητρίδα] like the English 'mother-country' for the German 'fatherland,'

θρέψει] has a sarcastic force. 'That is his way of supporting her!'

τοιοίδε] refers to what follows: 'they are always associating with their flatterers, cringing to those who have power to aid them, and neglecting their old friends.'—The plural again takes the place of the singular (τοῦ τοιούτου ἀνδρός).

πρῶτον μὲν... ἀλλότριοι;] 'In the first place, in their intercourse with others, they associate with their own flatterers or ready tools; or, if they want anything from anybody, they are equally ready to fall down before them:—there is no attitude of friendship into which they will not throw themselves:—and when they have gained their end, they know them no more.' This also is a point in which tyrannical men resemble the tyrant (viii. 566 E).

καὶ σφόδρα γε] SC. τοιοῦτοι γίγνονται.

κεφαλαιωσώμεθα . . . τοιοῦτος η̂] 'Let us, then, sum up in a word the character of the worst. He is the man who in reality is such as we imagined him in our dream.'

The thought of  $\mathring{v}\pi\alpha\rho$  and  $\mathring{o}v\alpha\rho$  may have been suggested by supra 57 I c, p, but does not directly refer to the bad dreams there spoken of: the word  $\delta\iota\dot{\eta}\lambda\theta\circ\mu\epsilon\nu$  is inconsistent with this explanation:—not 'who is in reality the monster let loose in a dream,' but 'who is in fact the man whom we have described in words.' Plato's love of climax leads to this further step. And here, as in several other places, Socrates enlivens the thought by a transition from the imaginary to the real. Cp. iii. 389 p  $\epsilon\dot{\alpha}\nu$   $\gamma\epsilon$  . . .  $\epsilon\dot{\alpha}\nu$   $\gamma\epsilon$   $\lambda\dot{\delta}\gamma\dot{\omega}$   $\epsilon\dot{\epsilon}\rho\gamma\alpha$   $\tau\epsilon\dot{\lambda}\hat{\eta}\tau\alpha\iota$ . At this point the mock-heroic style passes into seriousness. Socrates, as Chaerephon says of him in the Gorgias, is profoundly in earnest:—'E $\mu\dot{\alpha}$   $\nu\dot{\epsilon}\nu$   $\nu\dot{$ 

Ε

576 A

В

Republic I.V. 576 C-578 A And is the acmè of evil the acmè of wretchedness? Let us compare them, Glaucon,—the five cities and the five men. The men will be as the cities.—For example, as the city under a tyranny is the most wretched of all, so is the life that is under the tyranny of desire. Such at least is the judgement of those who are able to look within. City and man are both seen to be enslaved under the rule of the worst. Both are poor and hungry. Both are full of lamentation and mourning and woe. But there is one being who is yet more wretched than the tyrannical man, and that is the tyrannical man who becomes a tyrant.

576 C τοιοῦτος ἄθλιος,—sc. φανήσεται.

τοῖς δὲ πολλοῖς... δοκεῖ] 'But the many have likewise opinions many.' These words follow closely on τῆ ἀληθεία. Truth is one; error is manifold. He is miserable, though opinions differ. Plato thus signifies his contempt for common opinion. For the turn of expression cp. vi. 500 D διαβολή δ' ἐν πᾶσι πολλή.

ἀνάγκη, κ.τ.λ.] 'that must certainly be as you say.' γοῦν implies 'whatever the many may think.'

ἄλλο τι...οὕτως;] 'And must not the tyrannical man be like the tyrannical city?' ὁμοιότητι is an explanation or illustration of κατά: cp. viii. 555 α ἀπιστοῦμεν μὴ κατὰ τὴν ὀλιγαρχουμένην πόλιν ὁμοιότητι...τετάχθαι;—'Must they not correspond in similitude?' The word in both places has been needlessly called in question. The dative is like πονηρία τε καὶ ἀθλιότητι supra 575 c. ἀθλιότητι would fit the context here. But Plato characteristically prepares for what follows by using a general expression and so affecting to keep the question open. Cp. infra 577 c τὴν ὁμοιότητα ἀναμιμνησκύμενος.

D

τί οὖν ἀρετῆ, κ.τ.λ.] This reading, which is manifestly right, has been corrupted in all the MSS. to  $\tau$ ί οὖν ἆρα (or ἄρα) ή, and has only been preserved as a various reading by the diorthotes on the margin of Par. A.

**εὐδαιμονίας**] For the use of the genitive cp. v. 470  $\Lambda$  τί δέ; γη̂s. τε τμήσεως τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς καὶ υἰκιῶν ἐμπρήσεως. The same notion is resumed with greater distinctness infra 577  $\rm B$  πῶς ἔχει εὐδαιμονίας;

άλλ' ώς χρή] sc. θεασάμενοι ώς χρή, which is resumed in καταδύντες . . . καὶ ἰδόντες, 'having fairly looked at the whole city from within, we will then give our opinion.'

åρ' οὖν . . . διορά;] 'And shall I be right in making the same Republic challenge about the men, and in claiming to have as judge one whose mind can enter into the character of a man and look through him; not like a child who sees from the outside and is dazzled at the parade which the tyrannical nature assumes to those without;—but who has a clear insight?'

576 E

πρόστασις, like προστασία, πρόσχημα, here signifies 'outward show,' the externals of majesty. This meaning of the word, though not common, is defined by the clause which follows: - ην προς τους έξω σχηματίζονται.

577 A

εὶ οὖν οἰοίμην . . . (Β) ταῦτα προκαλοῖο Τhe words εἰ οὖν, κ.τ.λ., are a resumption of the previous sentence: the apodosis to them is the answer; -- 'If I were to suppose, as I am saying' -- '... That, he replied, would like the former be a very right challenge.'

καὶ ταῦτα refers to 576 Ε δρθώς . . . προκαλεί.

В

τῶν δυνατῶν ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] 'Of the number of those who would be able to judge': αν is to be taken with δυνατων = δυναμένων.

What follows is the answer to the question which was raised in the first Book,- 'Whether the life of the just or unjust man is the happier?' The inquiry, which had already become 'ridiculous' in Book iv (445 A), is once more resumed, and the answer to what was at first an unanswerable paradox appears in the most complete and triumphant form.

καθ' ἔκαστον ] sc. πάθημα, anticipating τὰ παθήματα.

C

έν μέρει άθρων ] SC. έκάτερον, — τήν τε πόλιν καὶ τὸν ἄνδρα.

ώς πόλιν εἰπεῖν 'To speak of the city as a city' [i.e. not merely as a number of individuals]. Cp. infra ε ώς περὶ ὅλης είπειν ψυχής.

ανήρ See above, note on 573 c.

D

σμικρον δε και το μοχθηρότατον The ruling passion is here spoken of as a small part of the soul. The object of this, which is hardly consistent with the foregoing description, is to render the parallel between state and individual as complete as possible.

πολύ γε] SC. ηκιστα.

καὶ ή τυραννουμένη ἄρα . . . μεστή ἔσται Then the soul which is under tyranny (I am speaking of the soul taken as a whole) VOL. III. Ее

Е

Republic IX. 577 E

will do least of all what she wishes;—ever violently carried away by frenzy, she will be full of confusion and remorse.' Cp. Gorg. 467 ff

The harmony of affections and faculties is a far higher conception of the powers of human nature than the isolated strength of any one of them under the name of will or passion; which has the appearance and perhaps the consciousness of strength, and is really weakness.

578 A τήν τε τοιαύτην πόλιν, κ.τ.λ. The confusion of τε and γε in MSS. is so frequent, that there need be no hesitation in reading τήν τε here, although it has less of manuscript support than  $\tau \hat{\eta} \nu \gamma \epsilon$ .

δδυρμούς δέ δέ here rests on the authority of Ven. Ξ:-Par. A having  $\tau_{\epsilon}$  with the remaining MSS. Schneider, to account for the variation, suggested  $\delta \epsilon \gamma \epsilon$ .  $\tau \epsilon$  should be adopted: there is no objection to an asyndeton. B. J.]

τήν τε πόλιν τῶν πόλεων] Here the variant τήν γε might seem В preferable. But cp. viii. 568 p and note.

ουπω . . . μάλιστα | 'I do not think that our description has yet arrived at the extreme form of misery.' οὖτος = 'the man before us.' τοιοῦτος = ἄθλιος, sc.  $\mathring{\omega}_{\nu}$ .

Plato is preparing a rhetorical surprise:—There is yet a worse than the worst.

δυστυχής ή is better than δυστυχήση, an emendation unneces-Csarily proposed by Bekker and Cobet. There is no valid objection to the variation of tense. The present here is more pathetic,— 'But is an unfortunate man': cp. infra 580 A δυστυχεί είναι.

Consider first the position of the tyrant. He may be compared to 578 C-580 A the master of a household of slaves, who should be set down with them in a desert place out of reach of aid from his fellows. Nay more, we must suppose him to be surrounded by neighbours who are determined to abolish slavery. He cannot go abroad, or see what is worth seeing anywhere, but, starved in spirit, must abide like a woman in some inner chamber, cowering and unsatisfied.

> Now suppose the man in this position to have the tyrannical nature, such as we have described it. Must he not descend to be the slave of the meanest, the flatterer of the vilest,—becoming daily more avarice-bitten, more inquisitive, more envious, faithless and unjust? Godless and friendless, he is the entertainer and cherisher of all manner of evil,—unhappy and causing unhappiness.

τεκμαίρομαι . . . σκοπείν 'I should infer from what has Republic preceded that what you say is true.' 'Yes,' said I; 'however, these are not matters about which to have an opinion, but of which one should endeavour to gain a clear conception (1) by the help of such a process of reasoning as we now employ': or possibly (2) 'Where the argument is of such a nature.' For the latter (2) cp. infra 579 c τοις τοιούτοις κακοίς and note. The turn of conversation here resembles vi. 504 D οὐχ ὑπογραφὴν δεῖ ὥσπερ νῦν θεάσασθαι, άλλά την τελεωτάτην άπεργασίαν μη παριέναι.

578

ὅσοι πλούσιοι] sc. ὄντες, which seems to be omitted in accordance with the idiomatic ellipse after ooos.

D

διαφέρει . . .  $\pi \lambda \hat{\eta} \theta_{OS}$ ] 'But the number of the persons over whom he (the tyrant) rules is a point of difference.' Cp. Xen. Mem. 4, § 12 ή γὰρ τῶν ἰδίων ἐπιμέλεια πλήθει μόνον διαφέρει τῆς τῶν κοινῶν.

οἶσθ' οὖν ὅτι, κ.τ.λ.] Socrates, wanting to draw attention to a familiar fact, treats it as a new and original observation.—'Did you ever remark ' &c.? Cp. ii. 376 A η οὐπω τοῦτο ἐθαύμασας;

τί γάρ . . .; οὐδέν, εἶπον ' Why should they fear them?' ' Oh, for no reason.' The negative in this and similar places merely waives the point immediately in hand before calling attention to something else, which remains to be said, cp. esp. iv. 424 D οὐδέ γὰρ ἐργάζεται and note. The familiar phrase in Protag. 310 B-μή τι νεώτερον ἀγγέλλεις; Οὐδέν γ', ἢ δ' ὅς, εἰ μὴ ἀγαθά γε,—is an example of the same conversational idiom. [L. C.]

ἐν ποίω . . . καὶ ὁπόσω The indirect form following on the direct is partly occasioned here by the neighbourhood of otes. Some MSS. have πόσφ,—but cp. Gorg. 500 Λ ἐκλέξασθαι ποῖα ἀγαθὰ ήδέων έστὶ καὶ όποῖα κακά.

έν παντί] sc. φόβω. 'In absolute terror.' Cp. Soph. 250 p πάση συνεσχύμεθα απορία.

The single master who has many slaves is safe only because all the masters unite for mutual protection. But suppose the family and their slaves to be carried off into the wilderness: the case of the individual owner is desperate. Or, again, surround the unfortunate man with neighbours who make the possession of slaves a crime,—and there is a worse than what seemed to be the worst position. Both these misfortunes have befallen the tyrant:he is in a solitude, and has nevertheless all mankind for his enemies.

Republic IX. 579 A οὐδὲν δεόμενος] 'When he has no need to do so': i.e. being actuated by no ordinary motive, but by fear. Cp. Plut. Tib. Gracch. c. 21 (quoted by Schneider) δείσασα περὶ τοῦ ἀνδρὸς ἡ βουλὴ ψηφίζεται μηδὲν δεομένη πέμπειν αὐτὸν ἐς 'Ασίαν.

Β ἐν παντὶ κακοῦ] Cp. Symp. 194 Λ εὖ μάλ' ἃν φοβοῖο κοὶ ἐν παντὶ εἴης: Euthyd. 301 Λ.

ύπὸ πάντων πολεμίων] 'By people who are all his enemies.' Cp. vi. 496 D εἶς πᾶσιν ἀγρίοις ἀντέχειν: viii. 567 D μετὰ φαύλων τῶν πολλῶν οἰκεῖν.

Resuming from 578 c Plato now returns to the tyrant and the tyrannical man.

λίχν $\varphi$  δὲ ὅντι, κ.τ.λ.] It is a characteristically Greek trait that the tyrannical nature has not only the lower desires in excess, but also unbounded curiosity, like Glaucon's  $\varphi_i \lambda_0 \theta_{\epsilon} \acute{u} \mu_0 \nu_{\epsilon} s$  in v. 475 p.

C τοῖς τοιούτοις κακοῖς] (1) A dative of circumstance, referring to the immediately preceding description of the tyrant's condition. Ast's conjecture ἐν τοῖς τ. κ. is not necessary. The tyrant's miseries are increased a hundred-fold when he is of the tyrannical nature. The extreme of wretchedness attending the combination of character and position is greater than the evil involved in either taken separately. Or (2) the dative may be explained as denoting the measure of excess—The description of the tyrannical tyrant began at 573 c: what followed was an illustration of his excess of misery over the tyrannical individual as such. The illustration is now applied. 'Do not such evils as these measure the excess of misery accruing to him whom you just now judged to be most wretched of all, when he is raised from a private station to despotical power?' πλείω καρποῦται, sc. κακά.

ωs μη ιδιωτης] The opposition of the following clause logically requires μη ωs, which recent editors have accordingly accepted from Stobaeus and Vat. ω. But the order of words is idiomatic.

D όμοιότατά τε καὶ ἀληθέστατα λέγεις] Cp. Soph. 252 c κομιδῆ λέγεις ὅμοιόν τε καὶ ἀληθές.

καν εἰ μή τω δοκεῖ] The conjunctive δοκῆ—see v. rr.—has the authority of all the MSS. but one. There are too many instances of εἰ, ἐπεί, ὧc., with the subjunctive to allow of confidence in rejecting it: e.g. Laws xii. 958 d εἴτε τις ἄρρην εἴτε τις θηλυς ἢ. [But? ἦν.] And καν εἰ appears sometimes to be treated as = καὶ

έάν. In Arist. Eth. Nic. vii. 7, § 1 the MSS. have καν εἰ ρέπωσι. See also Pol. ii. 1, 1 with the note of Mr. W. L. Newman in his Politics, vol. ii. p. 227.

Republic 579 D

κόλαξ τῶν πονηροτάτων | cp. supra Λ κόλαξ . . . θεραπόντων.

καὶ α τὸ πρότερον εἴπομεν | supra 576 A, B, viii. 567.

580 1.

The case is now ripe for judgement, and Glaucon formally assigns to the five individuals their places in the order of virtue and happiness and the contraries of these. The most royal nature is the best and happiest; the most 'tyrannical' is the worst and wretchedest, while (1) the oligarchical and (2) the democratical man come between.

580 1-1)

ἴθι δή . . . τυραννικόν 'Come now, said I, as the universal arbiter sets forth his sentence,' 'so do you also decide who in your opinion is the first, and who the second, and the remainder, being five in all, in order.'

580 В

The expression δ διὰ πάντων κριτής is obscure, and cannot be certainly explained. It has been compared to τον διὰ πάντων χορόν or ἀγῶνα, found in inscriptions:—Boeckh's C. I. G. vol. i. 425, 1586, 1719, 1720. The words may mean (1) the judge who decides the prizes of all the different kinds of contests; (2) or all the prizes, e.g. first, second, third, in the same contest; (3) the judge who gave the final decision in some musical pentathlon, such as appears to be referred to in the inscriptions. Cp. Herod. ii. 91, § 5 αγώνα γυμνικόν τιθείσι διά πάσης αγωνίης έχοντα, and Laws ii. 658 A τί ἄν, εἴ ποτέ τις οῦτως ἱπλῶς ἀγῶνα θείη ὁντινοῦν, μηδὲν άφορίσας μήτε γυμνικών μήτε μουσικών μήθ' ίππικών, άλλα πάντας συναγαγών τους έν τη πόλει προείποι θείς νικητήρια τον βουλόμενον ήκειν αγωνιούμενον ήδονης πέρι μόνον: ib. xii. 949 Α καὶ κριτήν αὖ χορῶν καὶ πάσης μουσικής. The separate contests may have had separate experts to judge of them—πέντε ὄντας seems to convey an allusion to the pentathlon; and the words ωσπερ χορούς κρίνω in Glaucon's reply are in favour of this line of interpretation, for which see also Xen. Mem. iii. 4, § 3 δσάκις κεχορήγηκε, πασι τοις χοροίς νενίκηκε. The image, however, is not consistent; for διὰ πάντων must have originally referred to all the kinds of performance, but is here applied to all the competitors.

πέντε οντας of course refers to all the individuals and not to τους αλλους with which it is verbally combined.

Republic

καθάπερ . . . εἰσῆλθον . . . κρίνω] ' I assign them their places in the order in which they came in.'

580 C ὅτι ὁ ᾿Αρίστωνος υἰός, κ.τ.λ.] 'That the son of Ariston' (i. e. Best) 'judged the best man to be the happiest': an obvious play on words. Cp. x. 614 Β ᾿Αλκίνου . . . ἀλκίμου.

έάν τε λανθάνωσι, κ.τ.λ.] ii. 366 E. This is one of the threads by which Plato connects the end of the Republic with the beginning.

580 D 583 -1 The judgement of Glaucon,—or of the enlightened observer (supra 577 Å) is confirmed by that of the philosopher, who has the best right to judge. For there are three pleasures, corresponding to the three parts of the soul,—the pleasure of learning, the pleasure of honour or victory, and the pleasure of gain. The philosopher knows them all, but the lover of honour or of gain is acquainted only with one. He has this threefold experience; and in him Reason which is the faculty of judging is far superior: therefore he will be the most competent to decide. And his decision is that the pleasure of knowing and learning is by far the most worth having, while he assigns the second place to the pleasures of ambition.

580 [) έάν τι δόξη] 'If it at all approve itself,'—τι adverbial.

δέξεται . . . ἀπόδειξιν] τὸ λογιστικόν, which is found before δέξεται in Par. A and most MSS., seems to have arisen from a gloss on τριχή, enumerating the three parts of the soul. This is confirmed by the reading of Par. Κ λογιστικόν, ἐπιθυμητικόν, θυμικὸν δέξεται. Κ although a derivative of  $\Pi$  has some readings coming from an independent source. τό in Par. A is marked with two dots as questionable. For the impersonal use of δέξεται, sc. τὸ πρᾶγμα, cp. the use of δείξει, Phil. 45  $\pi$  τάχα . . . οὐχ ἦττον δείξει, and the like expressions.

τὸ μέν,  $\phi$ αμέν,  $\mathring{\eta}$ ν] The past tense refers to the previous discussion in iv. 439 ff.

E

τούτω ἐπωνομάσαμεν] The dative is instrumental. 'We employed this to name it with.' This better corresponds with ένὶ . . . ὀνόματι supra than the various reading  $\tau$ οῦτο, which has very slight authority (Ang. v, Vat. m, Par. K corr.).

581 A μάλιστ' ἂν...τῷ λόγῳ] 'We should be most able to rest on a single comprehensive notion in speaking (τῷ λόγῳ).'

Α

 $\mathbb{C}$ 

ωστε...λέγοιμεν] 'So as to convey a clear meaning to ourselves, in speaking of this part of the soul.'

Republic
IX.
581

οὐ πρὸς τὸ κρατεῖν, κ.τ.λ.] The passionate element resolves itself into the love of power and honour.

η ἐμμελῶς ἀν ἔχοι; ] η like ἄρα sometimes anticipates an affirmative answer.

τούτων] sc. τῶν τριῶν εἰδῶν. I.e. it cares less for gain than θυμός does, and less for power than ἐπιθυμία. The word, though pleonastic, is in accordance with the fulness and precision of Plato's style. W. H. Thompson's πάντων, on the other hand, is over-emphatic. The philosopher (infra 582 A) cares less for gain than for glory. [If rejected, the word must be attributed to an accidental doubling of τούτωι. L. C.]

κατὰ τρόπον ἃν καλοιμεν] 'We should give the proper name.' Cp. ἀπὸ τρόπου, πρὸς τρόπου.

ἀνθρώπων . . . τὰ πρῶτα] sc. γένη. 'Three kinds in chief (or primarily).' For the limitation cp. iv. 443 Ε καὶ εἰ ἄλλα ἄττα μεταξύ τυγχάνει ὅντα and note.

ύποκείμενον εν εκάστω τούτων] 'Corresponding severally to each of these'—i. e. in the order of classification. Cp. Protag. 349 Β εκάστω τῶν ὀνομάτων τούτων ὑπόκειταί τις ἴδιος οὐσία καὶ πρᾶγμα. ὑποκείμενον, not = subject-matter, but simply denoting correspondence as in Protag. l. c.

τρεῖς τοιούτους I. e. one of each kind.

τῶν βίων ] Cp. Arist. Eth. Nic. i. 2.

δ τε χρηματιστικός 'First the money-maker.' The second τε D changes to δε as the sentence becomes adversative.

τον δὲ φιλόσοφον, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, ποιώμεθα, κ.τ.λ.] 'But may we suppose that the philosopher regards the other pleasures in regard to the pleasure of knowing the truth and in that pursuit abiding always, not so very far from the Heaven of pleasure, and that he calls the other pleasures necessary under the idea that if there were no necessity for them he would rather not have them.'

In this way of taking the passage the words της ήδονης οὐ πάνυ πόρρω have a slight irony, intended to express that the philosopher has in knowledge the true pleasure. For ποιώμεθα Gräser and Hermann read τί οἰώμεθα, which diminishes the harshness of the

Republic IX. 581 D expression νομίζειν τὰς ἄλλας ἡδονὰς πρὸς τὴν τοῦ εἰδέναι τὰληθὲς ὅπη ἔχει. With καλεῖν, ἆρ' οὐκ οἰόμεθα has to be supplied from τί οἰώμεθα, in which there is also considerable harshness. In the translation τί οἰώμεθα has been read not without hesitation, as it is difficult to account for the same error, however slight ( $\pi$  for  $\tau\iota$ ) creeping into all the MSS. [B. J.]

τὸν δὲ φιλόσοφον, ἢν δ' ἐγώ, \*τί οἰώμεθα . . . (Ε) εἰ μὴ ἀνάγκη ἢν;] 'And what, are we to suppose, is the philosopher's estimate of other pleasures in comparison with that of knowing the truth as it is and being evermore engaged in such an intellectual pursuit? Must we not think that he accounts them far removed from true pleasure, and that he calls them necessary and nothing more, inasmuch as, apart from knowledge of the truth, he has no wants but what are absolutely necessary?' τί οἰώμεθα is Gräser's correction of  $\pi$ οιώμεθα, the manuscript reading, which may be strained to yield a possible meaning (—' may we suppose?') but is ill-suited to the immediate context, and to the reply—εὖ . . . δεῖ εἰδέναι, which exactly fits οἰώμεθα, cp. i. 341 A, B; viii. 556 D, E.

E

In what follows, Madvig's conjecture  $\tau \dot{\eta} \nu \dots \dot{\eta} \delta \sigma \nu \dot{\eta} \nu$ ; for which see v. rr., is occasioned by the apparent baldness of  $\tau \dot{\eta} s$   $\dot{\eta} \delta \sigma \nu \dot{\eta} s$  in the present connexion. But his reading,  $\pi \rho \dot{\rho} s \tau \dot{\eta} \nu \tau \sigma \dot{\nu} \epsilon \dot{\ell} \dot{\delta} \epsilon \nu a \tau a \lambda \eta \dot{\theta} \dot{\epsilon} s \ddot{\sigma} \eta \ddot{\epsilon} \chi \epsilon \iota$ .  $\dot{\eta} \dot{\delta} \sigma \nu \dot{\eta} \nu$ , is ill-balanced, and the last phrase too abrupt. The word  $\dot{\eta} \delta \sigma \nu \dot{\eta} s$ , which is marked with dots in Par.  $\Lambda$ , is very possibly corrupt, however, and may have grown out of  $\dot{\alpha} \lambda \eta \dot{\theta} \iota \nu \dot{\eta} s$  through an

interlinear gloss,  $\tau \hat{\eta} \hat{s} \hat{a} \lambda \eta \theta \nu \eta \hat{s}$ . It might, indeed, be said that in the philosopher's view other pleasures, as compared with that of knowledge, were far from being pleasure at all. But the sudden introduction of this thought in a passage of such gravity is on the whole improbable. [L. C.]

οὐ πάνυ πόρρω] sc. δεῖ οἴεσθαι νομίζειν αὐτόν. The force of οὐ is continued with καὶ καλεῖν, κ.τ.λ.

582 B πολύ, ἔφη, διαφέρει] The philosopher is at a higher stage of experience than either of the two others: he has passed them, but they can never compete with him. In the world of the moneygetter, where wealth is held in respect, something is known even of the pleasure of honour: but neither he nor the ambitious man can conceive of the pleasure which the philosopher finds in knowledge. Cp. 'He that is spiritual judgeth all things; Yet he himself is judged of none.'

άλλὰ τιμὴ μέν] The best MSS., including Par. A, have ἀλλὰ τί μήν.

ωστε ἀπό γε, κ.τ.λ.] The order is πάντες ἔμπειροι (εἰσὶ) τῆς γε ἀπὸ τοῦ τιμᾶσθαι ἡδονῆς, οἷόν ἐστι.

καὶ μὴν... φιλοσόφου] 'And he is the only one of them whose experience is accompanied by wisdom.—Certainly.—Further, the very instrument by which judgement is to be given is not the instrument of the covetous or ambitious man, but only of the philosopher.'

διὰ λόγων που ἔφαμεν, κ.τ.λ.] supra Α ἐμπειρία τε καὶ φρονήσει καὶ λόγω.

τούτου] τοῦ φιλοσόφου.

ἐπειδὴ δ' ἐμπειρία, κ.τ.λ.] SC. κρίνεται τὰ κρινόμενα.

E 583 A

D

καὶ ἐν ῷ ... ἥδιστος] 'And he amongst us, in whom this is the ruling principle, has the pleasantest life.'

For a similar judgement of lives cp. Phil. 65 ff.

ό κριτής] The argument which began at 582 A is now complete, and the philosopher,—not Glaucon or one of ourselves,—is admitted to be the judge.

αὐτοῦ] SC. τοῦ κριτοῦ.

To add a third and crowning demonstration:—The pleasure of 583 Bthe philosopher is alone real. 587 B

The satisfaction of desire and that of anger only appear pleasant through contrast with antecedent pain. Moreover the things of the body are less real than things of the mind; and therefore bodily pleasures, like the indulgence of appetite and anger, are more unreal than the pleasures of intellect. Most men are ignorant of this, and looking ever downwards prefer the shadow of delight. Whereas if the lower nature be subdued to the higher, even the lower pleasures partake somewhat of reality, because the whole life is standing in the light of truth.

ταῦτα . . . ἀκηκοέναι] The two victories already achieved are (1) the superior happiness of the just in Glaucon's judgement, after

583 B Republic, IX. ( 583 B comparing the individuals with the states: (2) the judgement of the philosopher, accredited by his superior knowledge of true pleasure. The third and last is the proved unreality of other pleasures in comparison with those of philosophy. For the favourite allusion to Zeus Soter cp. Charm. 167  $\Lambda$ , B  $\pi \acute{a}\lambda \iota \nu$   $\tau \acute{o}\iota \nu \nu \nu$ ,  $\mathring{\eta}\nu$   $\mathring{\delta}'$   $\mathring{\epsilon}\gamma \acute{\omega}$ ,  $\tau \acute{o}$   $\tau \rho \acute{\iota}\tau c \nu$   $\tau \mathring{\varphi}$   $\Sigma \omega \tau \mathring{\eta} \rho \iota$ ,  $\omega \sigma \pi \epsilon \rho$   $\mathring{\epsilon} \mathring{\xi}$   $\mathring{\epsilon} \rho \chi \mathring{\eta} s$   $\mathring{\epsilon} \pi \iota \sigma \kappa \sigma \pi \acute{\omega} \mu \epsilon \theta a$ : Phil. 66 D  $\mathring{\iota}\theta \iota$   $\mathring{\delta} \mathring{\eta}$   $\mathring{\tau} \mathring{\sigma}$   $\tau \rho \acute{\iota}\tau \sigma \nu$   $\tau \mathring{\varphi}$   $\sigma \omega \tau \mathring{\eta} \rho \iota$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ . The association of the phrase with the Olympian contests occurs only here.

ἐσκιαγραφημένη] σκιαγραφία is a painting in light and shade, which owes its effect to contrast and is therefore a very appropriate figure of pleasure,—here affirmed to be purely relative. In Phaedo 69 B it is applied to courage and temperance, which are likewise said to be unreal when separated from knowledge. Cp. x. 602 D  $\hat{\phi}$  δη ήμῶν τῷ παθήματι τῆς φύσεως ή σκιαγραφία ἐπιθεμένη γοητείας οὐδὲν ἀπολείπει:—also vii. 523 B, Theaet. 208 E.

ώς ἐγὼ δοκῶ] Compare the part of the Philebus in which the relativeness of pleasure is discussed, especially 44 c, where the opinion of those who deny the existence of pleasure is quoted.

Plato uses a similar anonymous formula in Lys. 215 c, probably referring to the Heracliteans; also in Phaedo 62 B, speaking of the Pythagoreans; in Theaet. 201 p, of the Megarians (?); and of certain anonymous physicists (friends of Democritus?) in Phil. 20. He is probably here alluding to these persons, whoever they may have been,—who maintained a doctrine not unlike that in the text, viz. that pleasure is only an escape from pain. It is not likely, as Stallbaum supposes, that Plato would have used this ironical formula of a doctrine for which he had made himself responsible. And the greater precision and fulness with which the subject of pleasure is treated in the Philebus is one of the reasons for supposing the date of that dialogue to be later than that of the Republic. Both speak of a neutral condition between pleasure and pain; in both the metaphor of health and sickness occurs; both describe pleasure as an enchantment,—yonteia. But in the Republic the object of Plato is only to convict ordinary pleasure of unreality; in the Philebus there is an elaborate attempt to analyse pleasures, and to distinguish true from false kinds:-the higher pleasures are not only the intellectual, but extend also to those which are derived from beauty of form, colour, sound, smell (here only incidentally mentioned), and are unalloyed with pain. Here, again, it is simply assumed that all pleasures are κινήσεις (583 E) and πληρώσεις

(585 A, B); -in the Philebus, as in Aristotle's Ethics, the circum- Republic stance of some pleasures being γενέσεις and πληρώσεις is adduced as a ground for depreciating them. For the Platonic view of pleasure see introduction to Philebus, Eng. Trans. vol. iv. pp. 530 ff.

583

ωδ'...αμα] 'I will make the matter clear in the following way, carrying on the inquiry while you answer me.' δδε points generally to what follows-the manner of which is further particularized by σοῦ . . . ἄμα. For ζητῶν ἄμα cp. v. 450 E.

From the relativeness of pleasure and pain Plato deduces their illusory and unsatisfying nature. There are two extremes, pleasure and pain, and an intermediate state which may be described as the absence of either. But it may also be conceived as pain or pleasure. Health and rest are all the pleasures that a man desires in sickness; and the cessation of enjoyment may be assumed in like manner to be often a pain.

This is an argument characteristic of ancient philosophy, which in modern times has no value. Pleasure is relative and contrasted, admitting of degrees, and associated with certain bodily sensations; also of a fleeting and transient nature when compared with the eternal idea, or the absoluteness of knowledge. But pleasure only partakes in this of the condition of our bodily state; that which is relative or admits of degrees is not the less really existing. Even the power of receiving intellectual pleasure is almost as transient as the enjoyments of sense; the permanence of objects of knowledge must not be confounded with the continuance of our capacity to be pleased by them. This is casually admitted in Symp. 207 E. But it is more clearly seen by us than by Plato and Aristotle, who were confused in their perception of the imperfectly abstract ideas of the 'limit' and the 'relative'; and to whom that which was incapable of being defined seemed also to be incapable of any true existence.

ώς . . . ἄρα 'as they find.'

C

D

τοῦ τοιούτου] sc. τοῦ λυπηροῦ—the absence of pain. Cp. viii. 566 Ε όταν . . . ήσυχία ἐκείνων . . . γένηται.

ή ήσυχία sc. φαίνεται, resuming τοῦτο.

584

οὐδὲν ὑγιές ] cp. vii. 523 B ώς της αἰσθήσεως οἰδὲν ὑγιὲς ποιούσης, Soph. 232 Λ όταν επιστήμων τις πολλών φαίνηται . . . τὸ φάντασμα τοῦτο . . . οὐκ ἔσθ' ὑγιές. And for γοητεία, Phil. 44 C αὐτὸ τοῦτο αὐτης τὸ ἐπαγωγὸν γοήτευμα οὐχ ήδονὴν εἶναι.

Republic IX.
584

 $\tilde{\epsilon}$ φην  $\tilde{\epsilon}$ γώ] Between this and  $\tilde{\eta}$ ν δ'  $\tilde{\epsilon}$ γώ the reading is uncertain. See v. rr.

πολλάκις] 'Perchance': cp. iv. 424 c, &c.

ποίας] sc.  $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu \dot{\eta} \delta o \nu \hat{\omega} \nu$ ,—although pleasures and pains have both been mentioned. Cp. infra 586 c  $\epsilon a \nu \tau \hat{\omega} \nu$  and note.

τὰς περὶ τὰς ὀσμὰς ἡδονάς] Cp. Phil. 51 E: Arist. Eth. Nic. x. 3, § 7 τοῦτο δ' οὐ περὶ πάσας συμβαίνει τὰς ἡδονάς' ἄλυποι γάρ εἰσιν αι τε μαθηματικαὶ καὶ τῶν κατὰ τὰς αἰσθήσεις αὶ διὰ τῆς ὀσφρήσεως: ib. vii. 13, § 2.

C ἐπὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τείνουσαι] Cp. Theaet. 186 c ὅσα διὰ τοῦ σώματος παθήματα ἐπὶ τὴν ψυχὴν τείνει, and the account of sensation in Phil. 38 p. Tim. 64.

καὶ λεγόμεναι] 'And are commonly called pleasures.' For this frequent formula, in contrasting common opinion with philosophic truth, cp. iv. 431 c τῶν ἐλευθέρων λεγομένων.

οὐκοῦν . . . ἔχουσιν;] 'Is this not also true of the anticipations of pleasure and pain which precede them?' πρὸ μελλόντων instead of περὶ μελλόντων, and προησθήσεις instead of προαισθήσεις, are required by the sense, and are the readings of Par. A and other MSS. The form of the word προήσθησις is singular, but is confirmed by the use of ησθημα in the sense of pleasure in the fragments of Eupolis'  $\Delta \hat{\eta} \mu o \iota$ .

1) τὸ μὲν ἄνω, τὸ δὲ κάτω] The Timaeus, p. 62 c ff., shows a clear advance beyond the crudity of this distinction which is parallel to the point of view in Phaedo 109. [L. C.]

Ε κάτω τ' ἃν οἴοιτο φέρεσθαι καὶ ἀληθῆ οἴοιτο] As the man who has no true pleasure has, nevertheless, a true experience of pain.

σφόδρα μὲν...ἀπατῶνται;] 'they firmly believe that they have reached the goal of satiety and pleasure, just as if they were looking at grey when contrasted with black in inexperience of white, and viewing pain in like manner contrasted with the absence of pain in their inexperience of pleasure, they are deceived.' So we may translate, omitting δέ after ὥσπερ with all the best MSS. The antithesis to μέν is to be gathered from the clause καὶ... ἀπατῶνται (= ἀπατῶνται δέ). This is a possible but not a probable way of taking the passage. A much better sense is obtained by the insertion of δέ after ὥσπερ, which is actually found in one MS. (Munich q), 'they firmly believe that they have reached the goal of

satiety and pleasure, but as a matter of fact they are deceived through viewing pain in contrast with the absence of pain in inexperience of pleasure, just as they would be deceived (sc.  $\frac{\partial \pi}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \nu}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \nu}{\partial r}$ ) if they viewed ( $\frac{\partial \pi}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \nu}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \nu}{\partial r} \frac{\partial \nu}{\partial r}$ ) grey contrasted with black in inexperience of white.'

Republic IX. 585 A

πρὸς τὸ ἄλυπον οὕτω λύπην] W. H. Thompson's conjectural emendation, πρὸς λυπὴν οὕτω τὸ ἄλυπον, is certainly more logical, but the 'chiasmus' in the text is not impossible.

ἀλλὰ πολὺ μᾶλλον, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Theaet. 1.42 B καὶ οὐδέν γ' ἄτοπον, ἀλλὰ πολὺ θαυμαστότερον, εὶ μὴ τοιοῦτος  $\mathring{\eta}$ ν.

οὖκοῦν... ἴσχων] 'If this be so, he who takes food and he who gets hold of understanding' (ἴσχω a stronger form of  $\tilde{\epsilon}\chi\omega$ ) 'will both be filled.'

В

πότερα...(c) ἀρετῆς;] 'Which classes of things are they which in your judgement have a greater share in true being?—those of which food and drink and condiments and all kinds of sustenance are examples, or the class which contains true opinion and knowledge and mind and in general all virtue?' Observe the transition from plural to singular in passing from sense to knowledge.

καὶ †ἀληθείας] The word is obelized because the abstract noun is oddly correlated to the adjectives preceding, where καὶ ἀληθείς might equally have been said.

C

τὸ τοῦ μηδέποτε ὁμοίου] The article here was added by Ast, as below (\*τοῦ ἀεὶ ὁμοίου) by Madvig. Though not absolutely required in either place, it might easily have been dropped by a copyist.

εἰ δὲ ἀληθείας ἣττον, οὐ καὶ οὐσίας;] Plato wishes to show that the unchangeable partakes of essence, knowledge and truth in equal degrees: or rather that essence, knowledge and truth go together. First he asks whether it has either of these qualities in a greater degree than the others, and elicits the answer that it has not. Then with the same object in view, he proceeds to inquire whether, 'if the unchangeable had less of truth, would it not also have less of essence?' For the sake of his argument it would have been sufficient to obtain the admission that truth and essence go together: that the pleasures of the body, being less true, are also less real.

For somewhat similar inversions cp. infra 587 E, supra 582 B, c.

Republic It is therefore unnecessary with Madvig to suppose a lacuna IX. before cl.

585 σῶμα δὲ αὐτὸ . . . οὕτως ;] SC. ἦττον ἀληθείας τε καὶ οὐσίας μετέχειν.

Τὸ τῶν ῆττον ὄντων] SC. πληρούμενον.

τῶν φύσει προσηκόντων] 'with things naturally befitting;' i.e. things perishable for the body, things eternal for the mind.

Ε ἀπιστοτέρας] corresponds to η̈ττον . . .  $\beta$ εβαίως in the previous clause.

586 μέχρι πάλιν...μεταξύ] 'back again as far as the middle point'—but no farther upwards.

ταύτη] 'hereabout,' i.e. in the region below the middle. So τοῦτο in the next clause.

τὸ ἀληθῶς ἄνω] Cp. Phaedo 109, Phaedrus 247 c for the similar idea of an upper heaven into which the mind is elevated.

κεκυφότες, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. vii. 519  $\Lambda$  τὰς τῆς γενέσεως ξυγγενεῖς ισπερ μολυβδίδας, κ.τ.λ. Note χορταζόμενοι, a word usually applied to animals (ἐχόρταζες ii. 372 d) and see Milton, Comus, sub init.

'Who knows not Circe, The daughter of the Sun, whose charmed cup Whoever tasted lost his upright shape And downward fell into a grovelling swine?'

ενεκα . . . πλεονεξίας] For the origin of war in luxury cp. ii. 373 ε and Phaedo 66 c καὶ γὰρ πολέμους καὶ στάσεις καὶ μάχας οὐδὲν ἄλλο παρέχει ἢ τὸ σῶμα καὶ αὶ τούτου ἐπιθυμίαι.

Β σιδηροῖς κέρασι] Cp. Aesch. Agam. 1127 μελαγκέρω . . . μηχανήματι | τύπτει.

> oπλαîs] probably with a glance at οπλοις.

τὸ στέγον έαυτῶν] Cp. Gorg. 493 Λ, Β τοῦτο τῆς ψυχῆς οὖ αἱ ἐπιθυμίαι εἰσί, τὸ ἀκόλαστον αὐτοῦ καὶ οὐ στεγανόν, ὡς τετρημένος εἴη πίθος, διὰ τὴν ἀπληστίαν ἀπεικάσας.

παντελώς . . . χρησμωδεῖς βίον] 'Verily, Socrates, said Glaucon, you describe the life of the many like an oracle.'

ξυνείναι] SC. τοὺς τοιούτους.

ύπὸ τῆς . . . ἀποχραινομέναις] 'Whose colour is gained by

586

juxtaposition.' ἀποχραίνειν (Laws vi. 769 A) seems to mean 'to Republic give the last touches,' 'put in the high lights' in painting.

έαυτῶν] refers to ἡδοναῖς only, although ἐκατέρας resumes both ἡδοναῖς and λύπαις.

τοιοῦτόν τι αὐτὸ εἶναι] The life of the pleasure-seekers is like that of men fighting for a shadow. Cp. vii. 520 c, where there is a reference to the shadows on the wall of the den. For the form of the legend of Helen here referred to see especially the Helena of Euripides.

τί δέ; ... οὐχ ἔτερα τοιαῦτα;] The satisfaction of anger also is a relief from pain.

αὐτὸ τοῦτο] sc. τὸ τοῦ θυμοειδοῦς πρᾶγμα understood from τὸ θυμοειδές. For the use of διαπράττομαι cp. Phaedr. 256 c τὴν ὑπὸ τῶν πολλῶν μακαριστὴν αἵρεσιν εἰλέτην τε καὶ διεπράξαντο καὶ διαπραξαμένω τὸ λοιπὸν ἤδη, κ.τ.λ., and for the dative, iii. 411 D βία... πρὸς πάντα διαπράττεται: Gorg. 451 D τῶν λόγω τὰ πάντα διαπραττομένων.

Observe the use of  $\theta u \mu \hat{\varphi}$  in the ordinary sense in the same passage with the more technical  $\theta u \mu o \epsilon \iota \delta \acute{\epsilon} s$ .

περὶ τὸ φιλοκερδές, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. supra 580 E ff.

D

E

τὰ ἐαυτοῦ πράττειν καὶ δικαίω εἶναι] an allusion to the definition of Justice in Book iv.

καὶ εἰς τὸ δυνατὸν τὰς ἀληθεστάτας] ' the truest of which they are capable,'—since the pleasures of θυμός and ἐπιθυμία are less true than that of reason, cp. supra D ὡς οἶόν τε αὐταῖς ἀληθεῖς λαβεῖν.

δ δὲ ὀλίγιστον] 'but the other' (viz. the philosopher-king) 'is least removed from it.'

587 B

The conclusion just arrived at may now receive a mathematical expression. The shadow, which is a surface, may be represented arithmetically as  $3 \times 3 = 9$ , the distance between king and oligarch being simply multiplied into that between oligarch and tyrant. But to fathom the depth of the declension, not 9 but the cube of 9 must serve to express the enormous interval. The square of 9 is 81, the cube is 729, a number not unsuitable to human life, for it is a number connected with days and nights and months and years. And if in pleasure the tyrant differs from the king so widely, how great must be the king's superiority in other ways!

587 B -588 A Republic IX. 587 B

τριῶν ἡδονῶν, κ.τ.λ.] Socrates, having discussed the different kinds of pleasure and the different forms of government and character in relation to pleasure and pain, proceeds to sum up these differences in an arithmetical formula, or rather in two numbers, 9 and 729. These numbers are obtained in the following manner. The oligarch is in the third remove from true pleasure; the king has the pleasure of wisdom, the timocrat that of honour, the oligarch that of wealth, which is an unreal shadow. But the tyrant is in the third remove from the oligarch, and his pleasure is the shadow of the shadow of a shadow—and this a shadow thrice removed from reality. According to the simplest computation, his life is thrice three times less sweet or his pleasure less true than that of the king. His shadow of enjoyment is therefore represented by the superficial number 9. (For the superficial nature of the εἴδωλον cp. x. 598 A, B.) But in order to gauge the depth of the tyrant's misery, or conversely to estimate the *solidity* of the king's happiness, it is necessary to cube the simple number of The number so obtained is 729.

C δ τύραννος] not δ τυραννικός, because we are thinking of the extreme case of the tyrannical individual made tyrant—supra 573 c, 580 c. By the force of antithesis we pass in what follows from the βασιλικός to the βασιλικός, i. e. the philosophical individual who has authority in an ideal community (vi. 497 B, c).

φυγών νόμον τε καὶ λόγον] cp. supra A â πλεῖστον . . . λόγου ἀφέστηκε,

δορυφόροις] 'armed' viz. with stings: supra 573 E, 575 A. They are the body-guard of the tyrant passion.

οὐδέ] is to be joined with εἰπεῖν—' not even to express it.'

ἀπὸ τοῦ ὁλιγαρχικοῦ τρίτος ... τρίτω εἰδώλω] Plato adopts the inclusive mode of reckoning (Oligarch 1, Democrat 2, Tyrant 3), and similarly from the oligarch to the king (Oligarch 1, Timarch 2, King 3). Then to obtain a value for the *shadow* of pleasure enjoyed by the tyrant, he multiplies together the numbers so obtained. But when he turns to consider the solidity of the king's pleasure he is not contented with the square number, but taking this as 'linear,' i. e. as a simple number, he squares and cubes it (9, 81, 729).

D έἀν εἰς ταὐτὸν . . . τιθῶμεν] In accordance with iv. 445 D, E.

eniπεδον...αν είη] 'The shadow of tyrannical pleasure, then, Republic IX.

determined by the number of length will be a plain figure: i.e. the number 9, which is the 'linear' expression of the interval, is also the expression of a surface, the square of 3.

τὸ εἴδωλον ... ἡδονῆς τυραννικῆς] 'The shadow, of which the tyrant's pleasure consists,'

κατά τὸν τοῦ μήκους ἀριθμόν ς. λογιζομένοις.

κατὰ δὲ δύναμιν καὶ τρίτην αὔξην] (1) 'But if we square and cube.' There is some doubt as to the exact process intended and even as to the precise meaning of δύναμις. The δύναμις of a number is properly its square,—τὸ ἐπίπεδον δ δύναται (Theaet. 148 A). Hence either 9:81:729, as above; or  $3 \times 9 \times 27 = 729$ . But in the passage of the Theaetetus just cited, δύναμις is 'the squareroot,' and even 'an irrational square-root'—showing that in Plato the technical usage is not fixed. Here it may possibly mean (2) 'any higher power,' e.g. the cube: 'if we raise the number,' i. e. 9, 'say to the third power.'

όσην, κ.τ.λ. Sc. δ τύραννος τοῦ βασιλικοῦ,

μεταστρέψας] sc. τὸν λόγον. 'If you turn the argument the other way about': i. e. if you show not how far the tyrant is removed from the king in the untruth of his pleasure, but how far the king is removed from the tyrant in the truth of his pleasure.

τελειωθείση τῆ πολλαπλασιώσει I. e. when 9 is raised to the third power; [or when 3, 9, 27 are multiplied together]. It should be remembered that Plato is only playing with numbers and must not be taken too seriously. The number 729 besides being convenient for the measurement of days and nights, also included many numerical compounds, and was the expression of many geometrical figures which gave a seeming authority to it. If it is worth while to raise the question, we can hardly say that Plato is in earnest: but we may perhaps say that he was fascinated by finding a numerical expression of what he conceived to be the truth. He did not trouble himself about minor details, any more than in the number which he assigns in the Laws for the population of his city.

ἀμήχανον... τοῦν ἀνδροῦν] (1) 'You have brought to bear upon the two men' (viz. the king and the tyrant, although the tyrant is chiefly thought of) 'an overwhelming calculation of the difference

E

Republic IX. 587 E between them; or (2) 'you have brought down upon us a wonderful calculation of the difference between the two men.' The image is that of a river coming down in flood and covering everything with debris. Cp. καταχώνννμι in Gorg. 512 B, Theaet. 177 B. In the former case (1) the genitive τοῦν ἀνδροῦν is governed by κατά in composition. [If the other reading, καταπεφώρακας (see v. rr.), were adopted, the genitives would follow διαφορότητος as in (2). But Plato is not likely to have used such a word as καταφωρᾶν without more point than can be found in it here. L. C.]

τοῦ τε δικαίου καὶ τοῦ ἀδίκου] In apposition to τοῖν ἀνδροῖν. The king is the ideal of justice, the tyrant of injustice.

588 A  $a\lambda\eta\theta\hat{\eta}$ ] 'The calculation is a true one and we may remark further,' &c. The mathematical accuracy of the calculation is made an argument for the truth of its application.

ἡμέραι καὶ νύκτες] The year is supposed to consist of about  $364\frac{1}{2}$  days and  $364\frac{1}{2}$  nights. For the approximate number cp. Laws vi. 771 C δε πάσας τὰς διανομὰς ἔχει μέχρι τῶν δώδεκα ἀπὸ μιᾶς ἀρξάμενος πλὴν ἑνδεκάδος αὕτη δ' ἔχει σμικρότατον ἴαμα' ἐπὶ θάτερα γὰρ ὑγιὴς γίγνεται δυοῦν ἐστίαιν ἀπονεμηθείσαιν—said of the number 5040.

καὶ μῆνες] 12 months in a year: 30 +  $\frac{1}{3}$  days in a month:— 12 × (30 +  $\frac{1}{3}$ ) = 364: 2 × 364 $\frac{1}{2}$  = 729.

588 B-592 A To such a pass has the theory of the profitableness of injustice come! Let us try to bring this home to our adversary's imagination. 'Three natures,' we will say, 'are enclosed within the single form of man:—one human, one leonine, and one a many-headed beast. And we are told that it is for the man's interest to starve the human nature, and enslave it to the bestial! But the praise of Justice means that the man should set the human or divine element in charge over the other two, to prune the desires, and train the leonine element to help him in controlling them. That is the purpose for which laws are made and children held under authority, that licence may be kept in check, and the harmony of the soul preserved. And on this purpose every wise man will concentrate his efforts.'

588 B ην δέ που, κ.τ.λ.] Socrates, not without an air of triumph, returns to the source of the discussion, which is finally disposed of,—the old argument of Thrasymachus, who, however, is no

longer attacked by name, as peace was concluded between them at the end of Book i, and Socrates would not allow this to be disturbed in vi. 498 c  $\mu \dot{\eta}$   $\delta \iota \dot{\alpha} \beta a \lambda \lambda \epsilon$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ . He is mentioned once more infra 590 p. The question had become ridiculous at the end of Book iv, but having proceeded so far, it was thought best to complete the discussion by describing the forms of evil (iv. 445 c).

Republic IX. 588

()

αὐτῷ] sc. τῷ ἐκεῖνα λέγοντι—supplied from below and from λεγόμενον supra—rather than τῷ . . . ἀδίκῳ supra.

οἷα ἔλεγεν] 'What a preposterous statement he was guilty of.'

οΐαι μυθολογοῦνται, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Phaedr. 230 A θηρίον . . . Τυφώνος πολυπλοκώτερον.

Milton's description of Sin (P. L. ii. 650, 651) has some degree of similarity:—

'The one seemed woman to the waist, and fair: But ended foul in many a scaly fold,' &c.

See also the image of the charioteer and the two steeds in Phaedr. 246.

ἡμέρων δέ] If δέ is retained, against Madvig's  $\tau \epsilon$ , the fact that the many heads are some wild and some tame, is a fresh point in the description. δέ is not correlative to  $\mu \epsilon \nu$ .

δεινοῦ...(p) πεπλάσθω] 'The work implies marvellous power in the modeller: still, inasmuch as language is more easily moulded than wax or similar substances, let us suppose the model to have been made.'

παde,' referring to ἄνθρωπον immediately above, as distinguished from the man within.

Е

οτι οὐδέν . . . (589 A) ἄλληλα It is hardly necessary to observe that (a) the multitudinous monster represents the desires: (b) the lion, anger; (c) the man within, reason. For the first op. supra 580 D, Ε τὸ δὲ τρίτον διὰ πολυειδίαν ένὶ οὐκ ἔσχομεν ὀνόματι προσειπεῖν ἰδίφ αὐτοῦ.

τὰ περὶ τὸν λέοντα] This phrase prepares for the serpentine element, which is afterwards (590 B) brought in to represent the meaner forms of anger.

Republic governed by ἐγκρατέστατος, or (2) may be taken partitively with δ ἐντὸς ἄνθρωπος.

589 **ξύμμαχον . . . λέοντος φύσ**ιν] Cp. iv. 440 Β ώσπερ δυοίν στασιαζόν-Τοιν ξύμμαχον τῷ λόγφ γιγνόμενον τὸν θυμὸν τοῦ τοιούτου.

C πρός τε γὰρ... ψέγει] 'For whether you consider pleasure, or reputation, or advantage, the eulogist of the righteous man speaks the truth; and he who attacks him has no sanity or knowledge in all his attacks;' ὑγιές is governed by ψέγων λέγει, which is to be gathered from the main drift of the sentence.

πείθωμεν, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Laws x. 888  $\Lambda$  λέγωμεν πράως σβέσαντες τὸν θυμὸν ὡς ἐνὶ διαλεγόμενοι τῶν τοιούτων  $^{?}\Omega$  παῖ, νέος εἶ, κ.τ.λ.

οὐ γὰρ ἐκὼν ἁμαρτάνει] Plato falls back on the Socratic notion of the involuntariness of error.

ω μακάριε ... (D) φύσεως ] 'May we not say that things customarily esteemed fair and foul have come into existence for some such reason as this, that the fair are those which subdue to the man or rather those which subdue to the divine the wild beast element of the nature: that foul are those which enslave the gentle element to the savage.' The words <math>τὰ μὲν καλά, κ.τ.λ., are an explanation of διὰ τὰ τοιαῦτα, the participle taking the place of the prepositional phrase—ποιοῦντα = διὰ τὸ ποιεῦν: 'for this reason, the good being those,' &c. With τὰ μὲν καλὰ ... αἰσχρὰ δέ we must supply φαῖμεν ἄν εἶναι from ἃν φαῖμεν γεγονέναι.—νόμιμα nearly = νομιζόμενα.

D | λαμβάνων . . . μόχθηροτάτω] This sentence is in apposition to | τοιόνδε.

Ε είς ἀγρίων . . . ἀνδρῶν] sc. οἰκίαν.

590 A έν τῷ τοιούτῳ] Sc. ἐν τῷ ἀκολασταίνειν.

τὸ δεινόν, τὸ μέγα, κ.τ.λ.] τὸ δεινόν is used substantively, and τὸ μέγα ἐκεῖνο, κ.τ.λ., added epexegetically: 'the dangerous thing, viz. that great beast.' The reading of the old editions, without the comma after δεινόν, is not so good.

B τὸ...ὀφεῶδες] The serpent element has not hitherto been mentioned [but cp. supra 588 ε τὰ περὶ τὸν λέοντα, where something besides the lion is suggested. L.C.]. It is here added to account for the meaner forms of anger. The image grows under the artist's hand. So in the next sentence the lion when rabid with lust becomes a 'mad-headed ape.'

1)

591

1)

χαλάσει τε καὶ ἀνέσει] ἄνεσις is here 'relaxation,' not 'letting Republic loose' as in ἀνίεται supra  $\Lambda$ . Since faculties are of opposites,  $\theta v \mu \dot{\omega} s$  is the seat of cowardice as well as of courage.

οχλώδει] At once 'multitudinous' and 'troublesome.'

ἐκείνου τοῦ ὀχλώδους θηρίου.

θεραπεύειν] follows ἄστε: δύνηται is governed by ὅταν, the C construction of the earlier part of the sentence being resumed. Cp. vi. 493 A, B, 495 D, E, and, for the imagery, vi. 493.

δ τοιοῦτος] SC. δ βάναυσος καὶ χειροτέχνης.

ώσπερ Θρασύμαχος ῷετο] i. 343 B, C.

καὶ ὀρθῶς γ', ἔφη ] sc. φαμέν supra c.

βούλεται] βουλεύεται is the reading of most MSS.; but βούλεται Ε is the more idiomatic and probably the true one. See v. rr.

καὶ ἡ τῶν . . . (591 A) ἀφίεμεν] Cp. supra iii. 402 A. This mention of the inward  $\pi ολιτεία$  prepares for the highly wrought passage at the end of the book, infra 592 B. Cp. also v. 449 Λ  $\pi ερὶ ἱδιωτῶν ψυχῆς τρόπου κατασκευήν.$ 

 $τ\hat{\varphi}$  . . . τοιούτ $\varphi$ ] sc.  $\beta$ ελτίστ $\varphi$ .

η οὐχὶ ὁ μὲν... γίγνεται] Cp. Gorg. 509, where the noble B paradox is maintained that the wicked are gainers by being punished.

τιμιωτέραν έξιν λαμβάνει 'attains a nobler state.'

είς τοῦτο ξυντείνας] viz. to assert the pre-eminence of the soul C over the body.

Republic τῆ ἀληθεία μουσικός] Cp. iv. 443 D. But we have now risen to IX.

a still higher strain.

D οὐκοῦν . . . ξυμφωνίαν ; ] sc. τῆς ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ ἔνεκα ξυμφωνίας ἁρμοττόμενος ζήσει.

τοῦ πλήθους ] sc. τῶν χρημάτων. οὐκ with αὐξήσει.

Ε μή τι ... τῶν ἐκεῖ] 'That none of his elements therein (ἐν τŷ πολιτείᾳ) give way.' For παρακινεῖν, 'to give,' cp. vii. 540 κα.

καὶ τιμάς γε] The accusative looks forward to φεύξεται, but as the sentence is developed, the genitive  $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu$  μέν is required by μεθέξει καὶ γεύσεται.

'M. If you shall cleave to my consent, when 'tis, It shall make honour for you.

B. So I lose none,
In seeking to augment it, but still keep
My bosom franchised and allegiance clear,
I shall be counselled.'

The wise man, then, will not devote himself to politics, unless by some divine providence he has been born under the ideal constitution.

But whether this be so or not, according to that ideal, and to no other, he will frame his life.

592 νη τὸν κύνα] Socrates excited by the misunderstanding of Glaucon, gives vent to his feelings in his favourite oath. 'By the dog of Egypt, he certainly will in his own city, not however perhaps in his native land.'

ἐὰν μὴ θεία τις ξυμβῆ τύχη ] Cp. vi. 492 Ε ὅ τί περ ἃν σωθῆ τε καὶ γένηται οἷον δεῖ ἐν τοιαύτη καταστάσει πολιτειῶν, θεοῦ μοῖραν αὐτὸ σῶσαι λέγων οὐ κακῶς ἐρεῖς: ib. 499 c ff.

Β έαυτὸν κατοικίζειν] SC. ἐκεῖ.

τὰ γὰρ ταύτης ... οὐδεμιᾶς] 'He will live after the manner of that city, having naught to do with any other': i. e. he will live in the spirit of philosophy and take no part in politics, unless in a perfect state.

Plato is not thinking of the constitution of the state on earth corresponding to the movements of the heavenly bodies (as in vi.

500 c, Tim. 47 c). The heaven which he describes is an ideal one, answering to the individual rather than to the state. His 'Kingdom of Heaven' is within; and in this passage is exhibited to us as a life rather than as a system of government. For παράδειγμα cp. especially Theaet. 176 E.

Republic 592 13

## BOOK X.

The tenth book of the Republic has two parts, the first contain- Republic ing a final settlement of the question of poetry, the second treating of the Immortality of the soul, which is proved and also revealed, 2 A the myth being the crown and completion of the previous argument respecting Immortality, as the allegory of the cave in Book vii is a figure of the stages of the mind in the processes of knowledge as described in Book vi. A preparation was made for the renewal of the first of the two subjects (which could be only partially treated in iii. 391-398) by the casual allusion in viii. 568 A-D; and the way to the second of them has been indicated in scattered hints such as are furnished by the concluding words of the last book, and vi. 498 D είς έκείνον τον βίον, ὅταν αὖθις γενόμενοι τοῖς τοιούτοις ἐντύχωσι λόγοις: cp. also the words of Cephalus, i. 330 E. Plato does not base this life upon another: the empire of virtue is sufficient. But he believes another life to be the natural continuation of this, as is sufficiently apparent from the language of the Phaedo, Crito, Apology, Phaedrus, Gorgias, Politicus. And as in the Gorgias the subject of Justice seems naturally to lead up to a final judgement, so the end of Book x is also the fitting conclusion of the whole dialogue.

The exclusion of poetry from our ideal state has been confirmed by our subsequent analysis, which shows how dangerous imitative art must be to those who have not fathomed its true nature. My love of Homer makes me unwilling to say this, yet it must be said.

595 A-598 D

For what is imitation?

There are many beds, but one ideal bed which the craftsman seeks to imitate. The painter represents a bed or anything in Heaven or Earth with equal ease, because he makes not the ideal nor even the actual bed, but only a superficial likeness of the latter. Thus he is in the third remove from truth. As are in like manner the whole tribe of imitators and the poet among them.

Republic X. 595 A

καὶ μήν, κ.τ.λ. In the third book Tragedy and Comedy were excluded from the state, but there was an intimation that possibly something more than this was intended: 394 D "tows, yo o' eyw" "tows δὲ καὶ πλείω ἔτι τούτων: in other words, the fate of Homer was not finally determined. A hint was also given (392 c) that the nature of Justice must first be investigated, before the poets generally could be brought up for judgement. The attack on poetry is now repeated and receives a new direction. The poet is shown to be at a greater distance from truth than was originally supposed; he affects the feelings only, and not the reason. These new points of view are suggested by the divisions of the soul (iv. 435 ff.) and the doctrine of ideas: not so much however, by the higher view of the idéa of Good, which appears in Book vi, as the lower view, which makes Ithe ideas class-words, as at the end of Book v (cp. Meno, Phaedo, Cratylus): also by the distinction of higher and lower pleasures and desires in Book ix. περὶ αὐτῆς, sc. περὶ τῆς ἐν λόγοις κειμένης πόλεως (ix. 502 A).

φκίζομεν] The imperfect tense refers to the Aorist in the preceding sentence  $\dot{\epsilon}\nu$   $\hat{\eta}$   $\nu\hat{\nu}\nu$   $\delta\iota\dot{\eta}\lambda\theta$ ομεν οἰκίζοντες πόλει (at the end of Book ix).

Β λώβη, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Meno 91 c οὖτοί γε φανερά ἐστι λώβη τε καὶ διαφθορὰ τῶν συγγιγνομένων.

καίτοι . . . λέγειν] Cp. Soph. 217 Ε αἰδώς τίς μ' ἔχει . . . μὴ κατὰ σμικρὸν . . . ποιείσθαι: Arist. Eth. N. i. 6, § 1 καίπερ προσάντους τῆς τοιαύτης ζητήσεως γινομένης διὰ τὸ φίλους ἄνδρας εἶσαγαγεῖν τὰ εἴδη. δόξειε δ' ἀν ἴσως βέλτιον εἶναι καὶ δεῖν ἐπὶ σωτηρία γε τῆς ἀληθείας καὶ τὰ οἰκεῖα ἀναιρεῖν, ἄλλως τε καὶ φιλοσόφους ὅντας ἀμφοῦν γὰρ ὅντοιν φίλοιν ὅσιον προτιμῶν τὴν ἀλήθειαν.

ἀποκωλύει] 'a feeling about Homer which has possessed me from a child makes me reluctant to speak.'

C ἔοικε μὲν γάρ, κ.τ.λ.] So below, 598 p, Homer is called τραγφδίας ήγεμών, 607 λ πρῶτον τῶν τραγφδιοποιῶν, and Theaet. 152 Ε καὶ τῶν ποιητῶν οἱ ἄκροι τῆς ποιήσεως ἐκατέρας κωμφδίας μέν, Ἐπίχαρμος, τραγφδίας δέ, "Ομηρος. Cp. also Aristotle's Poetics, chap. 4 ὁ γὰρ Μαργίτης ἀνάλογον. ἔχει, ὥσπερ Ἰλιὰς καὶ ἡ Ὀδυσσεία πρὸς τὰς τραγφδίας, οὕτω καὶ οῦτος πρὸς τὰς κωμφδίας.

τῶν καλῶν, κ.τ.λ.] 'who have such charms.' The epithet is ironical. Cp. iii. 398 λ προσκυνοΐμεν ἃν αὐτὸν ὡς ἱερὸν καὶ θαυμαστὸν καὶ ἡδύν.

δ λέγω] 'as I say,' referring to 'Ρητέον, ην δ' έγώ, supra.

Republic X.

δλως Imitation in general, as distinguished from poetry, which is a species of imitation.

595 C

η που ... (596 Λ) πρότεροι είδον, κ.τ.λ.] 'A likely thing then that I shall understand! There is no reason why you should not, for those who have the duller sight often see a thing quicker than those who have a keener one.' Cp. iv. 432 c ἐάν μοι ἐπομένω χρŷ ... πάνν μοι μετρίως χρήσει.

Socrates, instead of modestly declining the implied compliment of Glaucon, contrary to expectation adopts it with a kind of irony: at the same time leaving on the mind the impression, which cannot be effaced, of his own superiority. So in vii. 532 E οὐκέτ'... ὧ φίλε Γλαύκων, οὖός τ' ἔσει ἀκολουθεῦν, Socrates, speaking as a master to the pupil, plainly acknowledges that Glaucon will not be able to follow him beyond a certain point.

οὐδ' ἂν προθυμηθηναι οἷός τε εἴην 'I could not muster courage.'

596 A

βούλει οὖν . . . ἐπιφέρομεν] 'Shall we begin our inquiry at this point—with our accustomed method? For, as you know, our custom has been to assume some one single idea in the case of the many individuals to which we apply the same name.' So in vi. 504 E he speaks of the ἰδέα of good as a common subject of speculation with him, πάντως αὐτὸ οὐκ ὀλιγάκις ἀκήκοας: v. 475 E ff.: Phaedo 100 B. See also Phileb. 16 B.

είδος and lδέα are used in many places indifferently. Both have the meaning of form or ideal. But είδος more than ιδέα inclines to the notion of a logical universal, ἐν ἐπὶ πολλῶν.

τῶν πολλῶν] Here equivalent to τῶν πολλῶν ὅντων ἐκάστων: cp. vi. 490 Λ, Β τοις δοξαζομένοις εἶναι πολλοις ἐκάστοις.

άλλ' ὅρα . . . (c) τάχα μᾶλλον φήσεις] 'But consider what name you give to the artificer whom I am about to mention. Who is that? One who is the maker of all things which are made by any and every craftsman. That must be a strange and marvellous man. Wait a little; there will be more reason for your saying so.' For τάχα μᾶλλον φήσεις cp. Cratyl. 410 Ε Σ. πόρρω ήδη, οἶμαι, φαίνομαι σοφίας ἐλαύνειν. Ε. πάνυ μὲν οὖν. Σ. τάχα μᾶλλον φήσεις.

πάνυ θαυμαστόν, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Soph. 233, 234, where the 'wizard'

В

Republic X. 596 of a sophist is described as the maker of all things in play and not in earnest, imposing on the young by imitations which deceive them, like paintings seen at a distance. The 'wizard' here is the  $\mu\nu\mu\eta\tau\dot{\eta}s$  (597 B), of which genus the painter and the poet are specific forms.

 σοφιστήν] The word is here used in the vernacular sense for 'the master of an art or mystery.'

In this passage Plato seems to return from the higher and more speculative theory of ideas which has been exhibited in the sixth and seventh books, to the cruder conception of the earlier dialogues. His aim, however, must be remembered: which is to represent the poet as being in the third remove from the truth. This could only be accomplished by separating the idea from the object, and the object from the shadow or reflection: cp. vi. 509 p. The same imagery is applied to the tyrant in ix. 587 c ff.

But is the poet or painter a mere imitator as Plato seems to imply? That is a question which he has himself answered in another passage, v. 472 D οἴει ἂν οὖν ἦττόν τι ἀγαθὸν ζωγράφον εἶναι δς ᾶν γράψας παράδειγμα οἶον ἂν εἴη ὁ κάλλιστος ἄνθρωπος καὶ πάντα εἰς τὸ γράμμα ἰκανῶς ἀποδοὺς μὴ ἔχη ἀποδείξαι ὡς καὶ δυνατὸν γενέσθαι τοιοῦτον ἄνδρα; No theory can be more erroneous than that which degrades art into mere imitation,—which seeks for beauty in the parts and not in the whole, in colour and ornament rather than in proportion and design, in outward objects and not in the inspiring or informing mind. The requirement of composition in a work of art is alone an evidence that mere imitation is not art.

ποιητής] 'maker': the word is used in the most general sense, [though with a glance at the poet, L. C.].

οὐ χαλεπός ... δημιουργούμενος] 'not a difficult way, I said, but one which is soon compassed and by various methods.' For δημιουργούμενος applied to the manner of the action and not to the thing, cp. Soph. 221 Λ τὸ τῆς ... πληγῆς ... ἀνασπώμενον.

ταχὺ μέν, κ.τ.λ.] There is an asyndeton here, as is not uncommon in explanatory clauses.

Ε εἰς δέον ἔρχει τῷ λόγῳ] 'You bring welcome aid to the argument,' i.e. you go to the point required: viz. to the distinction between φαινόμενα and ὄντα.

 $\Lambda$  μέντοι] recalls a previous statement which tends to modify what

has just been said: the picture is unreal, but is not the bed itself Republic unreal too?

Plato here uses the language of 'crude realism.' But the beginnings of logical technicality are discernible in the expressions δ ἔστιν, ὅπερ ἔστιν.

597 A

τελέως δὲ... ἀληθῆ λέγειν] The idiomatic use of the verb κινδυνεύει makes a change in the usual construction, which would be εἴ τις φαίη... οὐκ ἄν λέγοι. κινδυνεύει = 'he would seem,' i.e. may be presumed to be according to this theory. Cp. Theaet. 152 c οἶα γὰρ αἰσθάνεται ἕκαστος, τοιαῦτα ἑκάστω καὶ κινδυνεύει εἶναι.

ως γ' αν δόξειε, κ.τ.λ.] SC. τοις διαλεκτικής έμπείροις.

καὶ τοῦτο] sc. τὸ τοῦ κλινουργοῦ ἔργον. καί, the work of the maker of the actual bed,—as well as the painter's imitation of it.

πρὸς ἀλήθειαν] 'with respect to reality.' Cp. infra 600 Β γελοιότερος ἔτι πρὸς παιδείαν.

βούλει οὖν ... τίς ποτ' ἐστίν;] 'Suppose that we inquire into the nature of this imitator, basing our remarks upon this example.'

For the use of  $\epsilon m'$  with reference to an example, cp. v. 475  $\Lambda$   $\epsilon l$   $\beta o i \lambda \epsilon_l$ ,  $\epsilon \phi \eta$ ,  $\epsilon m'$   $\epsilon \mu o i$   $\lambda \epsilon_l \gamma \epsilon_l \nu$   $\epsilon \rho i$   $\tau \omega \nu$   $\epsilon \rho \omega \tau_l \kappa \omega \nu$ .

τον μιμητὴν τοῦτον] 'the imitator who is the subject of our inquiry.' Cp. supra 595 ε μίμησιν δλως... δ τί ποτ' ἐστίν; infra ε τὸν μὲν δὴ μιμητὴν ὁμολογήκαμεν. It is now sufficiently evident that the wonderful artificer described on p. 596 is the μιμητής. The accusative τοῦτον is confirmed by Par. A and the majority of MSS. Nor is the inexactness of the antecedent a sufficient reason for reading τούτον, which has the greater fault of being weak. The use of αῦται immediately below is similar to the use of τοῦτον in this passage.

μία μὲν . . . (c) δ ἔστι κλίνη] Plato in the Sophist separates ποιητική into two parts, one divine, the other human (Soph. 265 c). In what follows ib. 266, 267, he further divides human art into creative and imitative.

ἐν τῆ φύσει] 'in nature,' i.e. in the true order of nature. Cp. Phaedo 103 Β αὐτὸ τὸ ἐναντίον ἐαυτῷ ἐναντίον οὐκ ἄν ποτε γένοιτο, οὔτε τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν, οὔτε τὸ ἐν τῆ φύσει. In this passage Plato distinguishes the picture of the bed, the bed made by the carpenter, and the real bed which is ideal, essential, in the nature of things, in the

В

C

Republic X. 597 C mind of God. It may be asked whether the third bed is the idea of a bed. We may reply that it is not distinguished from it, neither does Plato identify them. He uses many forms to express what in the popular language of philosophy is termed by us his doctrine of ideas. [The further relation of the ideal bed to the supramundane ldéau is beyond the scope of this passage. L. C.]

öτι...οὐχ αἱ δύο] Compare a somewhat similar argument in the Sophist 243 D, E, in which the dualistic principles of some of the previous philosophers are reduced to 'being,' because existence is predicated of cold and hot. See also Parmenides 133 A, Tim. 31 A.

Βούλει οὖν . . . πεποίηκεν] 'Shall we then speak of him as the natural maker of this (i.e. the idea of the bed) or by some name of a similar kind? Yes, he replied; inasmuch as by the natural process of creation he has made this and all other things.'

φύσει] is the echo of φυτουργόν = 'by a natural process.'

άλλὰ τί... εἶναι;] 'but what of the bed will you call him?' κλίνης is governed by τί:—'if not the maker or artificer, what is his relation to the bed?' Cp. Symp. 204 D τί τῶν καλῶν ἐστὶν ὁ "Ερως;

Ε τον τοῦ τρίτου ... γεννήματος] sc. δημιουργόν. Cp. Dante, Inferno xi. 105 Sì che vostr' arte a Dio quasi è nipote: 'So that your art is as it were the grandchild of God.'

τοῦτ' ἄρα ἔσται καὶ ὁ τραγφδιοποιός] 'The tragic poet then since he is an imitator will be like these (καί),' i.e. the painter and carpenter, 'in the third remove from the king and the truth.'

God (supra d) is here represented as a king. The word is borrowed from the language of the ninth book in which the imperfect shadow of the king is δημοκρατικός, ὀλιγαρχικός, as here of God the shadows are ζωγράφος, κλινοποιός, &c.

598 αὐτὸ τὸ ἐν τῇ φύσει ἔκαστον] i.e. the several patterns of things as they exist in nature. Cp. again Phaedo 103 B.

I) πεποίηται] Perfect middle = 'is wont to create her productions,'—the perfect being used like τετεύτακε of an habitual state. Cp. viii. 556 c τῶν ἄλλων ἢμεληκότας, καὶ οὐδὲν πλείω ἐπιμέλειαν πεποιημένους ἀρετῆς, κ.τ.λ. πρὸς τὸ ὄν follows πεποίηται, 'with a view to being.'

μιμήσασθαι] sc. τὸ ον.

Republic X.

φαντάσματος . . . μίμησις; | a resumption of the previous question πότερα . . . ώς φαίνεται ;

598 B

πόρρω . . . εἴδωλον πόρρω is a favourite Platonic expression: cp. ix. 581 E, Theaet. 151 C πόρρω οντες του είδεναι: Soph. 234 C ἔτι πόρρω τῶν πραγμάτων τῆς ἀληθείας ἀφεστῶτας. εἴδωλον refers to supra φαντάσματος μίμησις. που is the indefinite adverb of place, 'somewhere far off,' not = 'as I conceive'; cp. vi. 499 c, D πόρρω που έκτὸς ὅιτι τῆς ἡμετέρας ἐπόψεως.

τους αλλους δημιουργούς 'or any other artist,' For the asyndeton cp. iv. 434 A πάντα τάλλα μεταλλαττόμενα.

τῶ δοκείν Sc. τὸ ἐζωγραφημένον.

C

ύπολαμβάνειν δεί τῷ τοιούτῷ] 'We must understand by such | D ? a statement, cp. ix. 578 c τω τοιούτω λόγω σκοπείν and note. The description of φανταστική in Soph. 238 p ff. recalls the present Partles -" we must Askel. This. passage.

ανθρωπος Pessibly ανθρωπος: see note on άνήρ ix. 573 c.

Homer, who is deemed to be an authority on the arts and virtues, 598 Dis in the third remove from truth. Else he would have left laws and institutions and distinguished pupils behind him, and in his life-time would not have had to beg his bread.

οὖκοῦν, κ.τ.λ. In the Ion of Plato, the same argument is drawn out at length in answer to the Rhapsodist's assertion of Homer's omniscience (Ion 538 ff.—Homer is not a physician or a charioteer, or a general or a pilot, and yet he writes of all these subjects).

**5**98

Why should Plato who is himself 'the last of the poets,' and the most poetical of prose writers, be also the enemy of poetry? For reasons partly fanciful and partly real:-

1. He is conscious of a deeply-seated opposition between poetry and philosophy, between the imagination and understanding, between the feelings and reason, between opinion or fiction and truth, between mythology and morality. Poetry is concerned with sense and not with abstractions or ideas, which are to Plato the food of a higher imagination. 2. The poet is from his point of view a mere imitator, who can do everything because he does nothing well; and he encourages the weaker or sentimental side of

Republio X.
598

the human character. 3. He has not forgotten the old quarrel between philosophy and poetry, which is of longer standing and perhaps even deeper than that between the philosopher and the Sophist, just as the difference between Socrates and Aristophanes might be said to strike deeper than that between Socrates and Protagoras or Gorgias. 4. The ironical distinctions which the poet is to receive indicate the sense of his genius and of the beauty of his works; this, however, is not to supersede the sense of truth. 5. Plato's mission is to realize the abstract, and poetry is a picture, not an abstraction. Modern philosophy, in seeking to realize the abstract in the concrete, adopts a different attitude towards poetry and art. 6. He is probably influenced by the decline of poetry in his own age; what he calls in Laws iii. 701 A a 'theatrocracy' was taking possession of the field.

Yet after every allowance has been made, there remains some reason for surprise, (1) that he should not have acknowledged the moral greatness of Sophocles and Aeschylus, or (2) have noticed that he himself like the tragedians is an imitator, for that both have based the form of their writings on conversation.

599 .A

В

τριττὰ ἀπέχοντα] τριττά is adverbial, sc. διαστήματα, nearly equivalent to τρίs, 'three times.'

η τι καὶ λέγουσι] 'or whether there is after all some meaning in what they say.' καί has a deliberative force.

οἴει οὖν . . . (Β) ἔχοντα; For the use of ἀφεῖναι to express self-abandonment to a pursuit, cp. ii. 373 d ἐὰν καὶ ἐκεῖνοι ἀφῶσιν αὐτοὐς ἐπὶ χρημάτων κτῆσιν ἄπειρον (ἐπὶ τῆ, κ.τ.λ., is here to be construed with σπουδάζειν).

προστήσασθαι . . . βίου] 'To set in the forefront of his life.' Cp. viii.  $565 \, \text{c} \, \tilde{\epsilon} \nu a \, \tau \iota \nu a \, d\hat{\epsilon} \iota \, \delta \hat{\eta} \mu os \, \epsilon \tilde{\iota} \omega \theta \epsilon \, \ldots \, \pi \rho o \tilde{\iota} \sigma \tau a \sigma \theta a \iota \, \epsilon a \nu \tau o \hat{\nu}$ .

καλά . . . μνημεῖα] έαυτοῦ is to be joined with μνημεῖα.

ή ώφελία] 'The benefit or usefulness' rather than 'the profit.'

τῶν μὲν τοίνυν...(D) πυνθανομένους] i.e. we will not ask whether Homer as a physician has effected any cures; a fairer question will be (δίκαιόν που) whether he is a general or a legislator, or an educator of mankind:—ἐρωτῶντες is connected with τίνας ὑγιεῖς, κ.τ.λ., not with εἰ ἰατρικός, κ.τ.λ., which merely expresses the supposition on which the question rests. Cp. the construction of infra D  $\mathring{\omega}$  φίλε "Ομηρε, κ.τ.λ.

 $\mathring{\omega}$  φίλε . . . δεύτερος] ἀρετῆς πέρι resumes what is implied in πολέμων . . . ἀνθρώπου. εἰδώλου δημιουργός is an explanation of τρίτος ἀπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας.

Republic X. 599 D

ον δη . . . ωρισάμεθα] ον is the predicate: 'which we defined the imitator to be.' Cp. vi. 499 ε ους λέγεις τους φιλοσόφους, ix. 576 B and note. The reference here is to supra 597 ε, 598 B, c.

Е

σε δε τίς, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Lach. 186 B η εί τις ημών αὐτών έαυτφ διδάσκαλον μεν ου φησι γεγονέναι, ἀλλ' οὖν ἔργα αὐτὸς αὑτοῦ ἔχει εἰπεῖν, καὶ ἐπιδεῖξαι τίνες ᾿Αθηναίων η των ξένων, η δοῦλοι η ἐλεύθεροι, δι' ἐκεῖνον ὁμολογουμένως ἀγαθοὶ γεγόνασιν;

The words which follow after  $\Sigma \delta \lambda \omega \nu \alpha$ , viz.  $\sigma \epsilon \ldots \epsilon i \pi \epsilon i \nu$ , are read in the MSS. and earlier editions without interpunctuation. This great improvement in the text was introduced by Bekker.

600 A

άλλ' οἶα δὴ... λέγονται] εἰς before τὰ ἔργα was omitted by the first hand in Par. A. Whether the preposition is retained or rejected, the words τὰ ἔργα or εἰς τὰ ἔργα are to be connected with σοφοῦ.

ἐπὶ συνουσία] 'For companionship,' i.e. as a companion. ἐπὶ τούτω (Β) refers to ἐπὶ συνουσία, 'on this ground.'

В

καὶ οἱ ὕστεροι ... ἐν τοῖς ἄλλοις; The form of sentence is an expansion of the common idiom αὐτός τε καί, for which see iv. 427 c.

In the confusion of early and later Pythagoreanism, the testimony of Plato to a Pythagorean way of life is not without importance.

οὐδ' αὖ, ἔφη, κ.τ.λ.] The meaning is that Homer could not have educated Creophylus, or judging by the examples of Pythagoras, Protagoras and others, that 'child of flesh' would never have left him to starve. There is no need of emendation, nor any difficulty in the text.

Κρεώφυλος] is mentioned in Strabo xiv. cc. 638, 639 as a Samian who entertained Homer and received from him the poem called Οἰχαλίας ἄλωσις, which, according to an epigram of Callimachus, was really the writing of Creophylus himself. He is mentioned by Pausanias iv. 2, 2 as the author of the Heraclea in which he spoke of Oechalia, probably the same work. Socrates similarly argues in Gorg. 516 against the statesmanship of Pericles and others from the ingratitude of the people towards them.

Republic X. 600 C ểπ' αὐτοῦ ἐκείνου] as infra d. ἐπ' ἐκείνου, 'in his own day.' Of this the words ὅτε ἔζη, 'when he was alive,' are a further colloquial amplification. Plato seems to have supposed that the name ΚρεώΦῦλος was derived from κρέας and Φυλή: 'of the stock of flesh.'

άλλ' οἴει ... οὐκ ἄρ' ἀν ... ἀλλὰ Πρωταγόρας μὲν ... (D) "Ομηρον δ' ἄρα . . . καὶ οὐχί, κ.τ.λ.] The first part of this sentence has a regular protasis (εἰ τῷ ὄντι ... δυνάμενος) and apodosis (οὐκ ἄρ' ἄν πολλοὺς . . . ὑπ' αὐτῶν): the second part has two subdivisions (I) Πρωταγόρας μὲν ἄρα . . . οἱ ἐταῖροι: (2) "Ομηρον δ' ἄρα . . . μεταλάβοιεν. The connexion of the first and second part may be traced as follows: If Homer had been able to make men better, he would have been honoured; but as a matter of fact, while Protagoras was honoured (and therefore may be supposed to have done men good) Homer was not honoured (and therefore cannot be supposed to have done men good). For the interposition of οἴει near the beginning of the sentence cp. especially Meno 93 c ἀλλ', οἴει, οὐκ ἄν ἐβουλήθη;

ἄρα . . . ἄρα . . . ἄρα ] 'As we are expected to suppose.'

D ἐὰν μὴ σφεῖς, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Protag. 318 B.

ἐπὶ ταύτη τῆ σοφίᾳ] has an ironical reference to ἐὰν μὴ . . . ἐπιστατήσωσιν: i. e. a wisdom which has so high a claim.

\*ὀνινάναι] The reading of a majority of MSS. is ὀνεῖναι (A¹Π &c.) or ὀνίναι (A²). As such forms are anomalous, several emendations have been suggested,—ὀνῆναι which rests on slight manuscript authority (Flor. x &c.), and ὀνῆναι which is also found in a single MS. ὀνινάναι, however, which is not found in any MS. is more likely to have been the original of ὀνίναι, and the tense agrees better with the other verbs in the sentence.

καὶ οὐχί, κ.τ.λ.] The force of the negative οὐχί, demanding an affirmative answer, is continued to the end of the sentence.

E αὐτοὶ ἀν ἐπαιδαγώγουν] 'They would have chosen to attend or follow him.' From the more precise sense of watching or following about like a tutor, the word seems to acquire here and in I Alc.

135 D οὐ γὰρ ἔστιν ὅπως οὐ παιδαγωγήσω σε, the more general meaning of following another, never leaving him out of sight. For the whole passage cp. Theag. 128 E.

μιμητάς είδώλων] (1) 'forgers of semblances,' 'imitative makers

of shadows'—from μιμεῖσθαι εἴδωλον, 'to make a shadowy imitation' (εἴδωλον cognate accusative, cp. infra 602 Β τοῦτο μιμήσεται) [L. C.]; (2) 'they copy images of virtue' [B. J. Trans.].

Republic N. 600 E

χρώματ' ἄττα έκάστων τῶν τεχνῶν] 'colours belonging to' ('taken from') 'the several arts.'

601 A

τοῖς ὀνόμασι καὶ ῥήμασιν] The dative is either (1) governed by ἐπί in ἐπιχρωματίζειν, 'he dips his language in the colours of the arts': or (2) instrumental, 'he gives his work a superficial colouring of the arts by the language he employs.' The latter is the more natural mode of expression.

В

ἐπεὶ γυμνωθέντα γε, κ.τ.λ.] Poetry, it is argued, becomes bare and meagre if stripped of poetical diction and colouring. More than half the grace and bloom of a poem necessarily flies off in translation; the same ideas, when expressed in prose, are no longer the same. But the poet might reply that philosophy also would become unmeaning if deprived of a suitable vehicle of expression, nor can language ever wholly lose a musical and poetical element.

αὐτὰ ἐφ' αὐτῶν λεγόμενα] I. e. when the matter or λόγοs is stripped of the form of poetry (λέξις, ἀρμονία, ρυθμός) and merely spoken. Cp. iii. 392 p ff.

τεθέασαι γάρ που] 'For you have seen I suppose, what they look like?' We may paraphrase 'you have seen the Logographer turning poetry into prose.'

Not the imitator, nor even the maker of things is the true authority, but he who uses them and directs them to their end. The imitator consults neither use nor reality (of which he is ignorant) but appearance only.

601 B-602 B

μὴ τοίνυν . . . ἴδωμεν] 'Do not let us leave the subject half explained, but let us have a thorough understanding of it.' Cp. ii. 376 D ἵνα μὴ ἐῶμεν ἱκανὸν λόγον, Phaedo 77 c φαίνεται γὰρ ὥσπερ ῆμισν ἀποδεδεῖχθαι οὖ δεῖ. ἡμίσεως, the genitive used adverbially (corrected to ἡμίσεος in Par. A), is the reading of most MSS.: ἐφ' ἡμίσεως (q) seems to be a conjectural reading: ἡμισέως, the conjecture of Stephanus, is an adverb formed on the analogy of ταχέως, παχέως, &c.

C

ãρ' οὖν ἐπατει, κ.τ.λ.] A favourite idea in Plato:—Cratyl. 390 d vol. III. g g Republic X. 601 C

τίς δὲ τῷ τοῦ νομοθέτου ἔργφ ἐπιστατήσειἐ τ' ἂν κάλλιστα καὶ εἰργασμένον κρίνειε καὶ ἐνθάδε καὶ ἐν τοῖς βαρβάροις; ἀρ' οὐχ ὅσπερ χρήσεται;

ό γραφεύς] sc.  $\tau \hat{\omega} \nu$  ήνίων. ζωγράφος is changed to γραφεύς for the sake of the paronomasia with χαλκεύς and σκυτεύς.

οῖα . . . . φ χρῆται] 'What specimens of that which he (the user) employs, the maker makes that are good or bad in actual use.' The correlation of singular and plural here arises from the collocation of particular aud universal. The instrument (sing.) is good in some cases bad in others (plur.). [L. C.]

έξαγγέλλει (bis)] Some would read έξαγγελεί. But see note on infra 604 Λ ἀντιτείνειν.

οι αν υπηρετώσιν] sc. αὐλοί. 'Which he finds serviceable:'—not merely 'which he makes use of.' Cp. Protag. 326 Β ἴνα τὰ σώματα βελτίω ἔχοντες ὑπηρετώσι τῷ διανοία χρηστῷ οἴση. The occurrence of ὑπηρετώσιν and ὑπηρετήσει in successive lines, but in a different connexion, is worthy of remark.

E πίστιν ὀρθήν] πίστις is here used in the sense of an opinion received from others:—not with the technical meaning which was given to it in vi. 511. The genitive, governed by ποιητής, is resumed with κάλλους τε καὶ πονηρίας.

διὰ τὸ . . . ἐπιτάττεσθαι] 'because of having orders given him.'
 For the passive cp. i, 337 A χαλεπαίνεσθαι.

χαρίεις ἀν εἴη . . . ποιῆ] 'The imitator will be in a charming state of intelligence about his own inventions.' The asyndeton is used as elsewhere to express the persistent feeling with which Socrates (ἐπέχων καὶ οὐκ ἀνιείς) sends the argument home: cp. v. .462 Ε ὅρα ᾶν εἴη . . . ἐπανιέναι. For the ironical use of χαρίεις and the reply cp. iv. 426 Α τόδε αὐτῶν οὐ χαρίεν and the answer (Β) οὐ πάνυ χαρίεν.

B ἀλλ' οὖν δὴ ὅμως γε, κ.τ.λ.] The particles emphasize the absurdity of such a proceeding, considering the nature of imitation: 'nevertheless he will do it.'

τοῦτο μιμήσεται] τοῦτο is a cognate accusative: not 'that he will imitate' but 'such will be the mode of his imitation.'

καὶ ἐν ἔπεσι] Homer is still included among tragic poets: supra 595 c, infra 607 A, Theaet. 153 A.

Thus shallow and unreal itself, imitation works upon what is shallow and unreal in human nature, appealing as it does to the crude experience of sensation and not to the arts of measuring and weighing by which the illusions of sense are corrected. So painting deceives the eye, and poetry introduces similar confusion by her representation of complex and inconsistent emotions, appealing to the passions and not to reason.

Republic 602 B-605 C

πρὸς Διός The exclamation (cp. i. 332 c, ix. 574 B) is uttered in glad anticipation of a new argument, in which Plato having shown the unreality of dramatic performances, proceeds to consider them) as injurious to the moral character: first, as illusive; secondly, as, tending to imitate the feelings when excited and variable rather, than when equable; thirdly, and more than all, as promoting the indulgence and expression of feelings which would otherwise be restrained. Before taking the new step he resumes what has preceded with μέν (περὶ τρίτον μέν τί, κ.τ.λ.). In the next sentence έστίν is to be supplied with ἔχον.

602 B

τοῦ ποίου τινὸς πέρι λέγεις; 'what is the subject of your remark?' The interrogative pronoun is not a repetition of ποίόν τι supra, but refers generally to the whole point in question, asking for an example or illustration of it.

C

πᾶσά τις ταραχή 'a kind of utter confusion' = πάντως τις ταραχή: πâs is used intensively and not extensively: cp. Soph. 250 D πάση συνεσχόμεθα ἀπορία,—and for the use of τις, Gorg. 522 D αυτη γάρ τις βοήθεια έαυτῷ πολλάκις ἡμῖν ὡμολόγηται κρατίστη εἶναι.

D

γοητείας οὐδὲν ἀπολείπει (I) 'fails in no resource of magic art;' (2) 'has all the effect of magic' [B. J.]. Cp. vii. 533 A.

αρ' οὖν οὐ τὸ μετρεῖν, κ.τ.λ.] The apparent variations of the senses are corrected by measure and number. This is the answer to the doctrine of the fallibility of our knowledge of sensible objects, whether suggested by Plato or by Berkeley. The variations are ascertainable or assignable to disturbing causes and afford no reason for doubting the general truthfulness of sense. For Plato's conception of the art of measuring, cp. Protag. 356 p, Philebus 55 E.

E

τούτω δὲ πολλάκις, κ.τ.λ.] The dative would naturally have been followed by some such word as συμβαίνει, 'it turns out,' &c. For this the expression τἀναντία φαίνεται is substituted. Or in other

Republic X. 602 E words, the dative is in a loose construction with the whole sentence, like a genitive absolute, and is not to be taken with φαίνεται. It would not be in accordance with Plato's use of language, or with the context in what follows, to speak of the contradictions of sense as having anything to do with the rational element in the soul. For a similar change of construction, cp. viii. 566 E πρὸς τοὺς ἔξω ἐχθρούς, κ.τ.λ., Theaet. 182 E ἀλλὶ ἐξ ἀμφοτέρων . . . τὰ δὲ αἰσθανόμενα.

οὐκοῦν ἔφαμεν... εἶναι; He refers to iv. 436 A-c. The dative here as there is instrumental:—' with the same faculty to form opposite opinions at the same time.'

603 A ἀλλὰ μήν, κ.τ.λ.] Measure and number are among the leading ideas of the Platonic philosophy. There is a measure in words as in all other things (Polit. 285 A) and the μέτρον and μέτριον in the Philebus are in the highest region of good.

«λεγον] supra 597 E ff., 602 D.

ή γραφική . . . (B) ἀληθεῖ] The chief stress is on πόρρω, which has the first place in each clause and is repeated for the sake of emphasis.

В

 $\epsilon \pi'$  οὐδενί, κ.τ.λ.] The purpose for which their friendship is cemented is utterly unsound and untrue.

φαύλη . . . μιμητική] Cp. vi. 496 Λ ποῦ ἄττα οὖν εἰκὸς γεννῶν τοὺς τοιούτους; οὐ νόθα καὶ φαῦλα;

С

μή τι ἄλλο ἢ παρὰ ταῦτα; ] μή τι ἄλλο ἢν, the conjecture of Ast, is certainly probable. The past tense would refer to iii. 399 A, B, where the true scope of μιμητική was described. But the interrogative use of the subjunctive with μή expecting a negative answer, is a sufficiently well-ascertained Platonic construction—see Goodwin, M. and T., § 268. Cp. especially Parm. 163 D τὸ δὲ γίγνεσθαι καὶ τὸ ἀπόλλυσθαι μή τι ἄλλο ἢ, κ.τ.λ., where, however, Bekker reads ἢν with Heindorf.

[)

κατὰ τὴν ὄψιν ἐστασίαζε] sc. ὁ ἄνθρωπος: supra 602 c ff.

ἀναμιμνήσκομαι δέ... ἡμῶν] Socrates apparently refers to two discussions, one in iii. 387, where the brave man is described as bearing sorrow with fortitude,—the other in iv. 439, where opposite tendencies are spoken of as working together in the soul.

ἀνήρ... ἀπολέσας] The words υίον ἀπολέσας ... ποιείται are an Republic X.
 explanation of τοιᾶσδε τύχης μετασχών.

τότε ] iii. 387 D, E.

οὔτω... ἀληθές] 'Rather the latter, said he, if we are to speak truly.' τό γε ἀληθές is an adverbial phrase =  $re\ vera$ . The reasonableness of this is noticeable. Plato sees that even the good man, who has his feelings most under control, cannot altogether overcome them.

τὸ δὲ....εἰπέ] 'But now tell me this about him.' There is no need of altering τὸ δέ to τόδε with Schneider and the inferior MSS. The neuter of the article is often used thus demonstratively in beginning a new sentence.

Socrates recalls the heads of the former discussion, to which he adds a new one, viz. the tendency of dramatic performances to relax the self-control which is natural in the presence of others.

μαχεῖσθαί τε καὶ ἀντιτείνειν] Cp. i. 342 A σκεψομένης τε καὶ ἐκποριζούσης, supra 601 D ἐξαγγέλλει . . . καὶ ἐπιτάξει:—ἀντιτείνειν, which is supported by the great majority of MSS., is probably genuine, notwithstanding the change of tense.

α οὐκ αν δέξαιτό τινα ίδεῖν δρωντα] 'Which he would not choose to see another doing.' Cp. Soph. El. 1278 ἢ κάρτα καν ἄλλοισι θυμοίμην ίδων. (Unless ε has dropped out—â οὐκ αν δέξαιτό τινά ξίδεῖν δρωντα.)

 $\epsilon \nu \alpha \nu \tau i \alpha s \dots \epsilon i \nu \alpha i$  'But when a man is drawn in two opposite directions in reference to the same object, we say that he has necessarily two distinct principles.'

φαμέν may be understood parenthetically, and ἀναγκαῖον as = ἀναγκαῖον ἐστιν. But ἀναγκαῖον is equally well explained by supplying εἶναι ;—sc. φαμὲν εἶναι ἀναγκαῖον δύο εἶναι ἐν αὐτῷ. Compare again the discussion in Book iv (436 ff.) in which the principle of contradiction is first stated.

The change of construction from δήλου ὄντος to προβαῖνον is caused by the transition to the impersonal verb. Cp. Euthyphr. 4 D ὡς ἀνδροφόνου καὶ οὐδὲν ὃν πρᾶγμα. The accusative, when once adopted, is continued.

οὖτε τι . . .  $\sigma$ πουδη̂s] The spirit of these words resembles that of many passages in the Laws; e. g. vii. 803 B, C ἔστι δη τοίνυν τὰ

604 A

В

C

Republic N.

C

των ανθρώπων πράγματα μεγάλης μεν σπουδής οὐκ ἄξια, αναγκαίον γε μήν σπουδάζειν τοῦτο δε οὐκ εὐτυχές.

έν αὐτοῖς] 'In the circumstances':—i. e. ἐν ταῖς ξυμφοραῖς (supra).

τίνι, ἢ δ' ος, λέγεις; ] Cp. vii. 531 D, E.

άλλὰ μὴ προσπταίσαντας, κ.τ.λ.] For the image cp. Dem. Philipp. i. § 40 ὤσπερ οἱ βάρβαροι πυκτεύουσιν, οὕτω πολεμεῖν Φιλίππῳ καὶ γὰρ ἐκείνων ὁ πληγεὶς ἀεὶ τῆς πληγῆς ἔχεται, κᾶν ἐτέρωσε πατάξης, ἐκεῖσ εἰσὶν αἱ χεῖρες προβάλλεσθαι δ' ἡ βλέπειν ἐναντίον οὕτ' οἰδεν οὕτ' ἐθέλει.

γίγνεσθαι πρὸς τῷ ἰᾶσθαι] The dative appears elsewhere in similar expressions (ix. 585 A, Polit. 264 A, Laws vii. 799 c) and therefore  $τ\hat{\varphi}$  (q) is to be preferred to  $τ\hat{\phi}$ , the reading of the older MSS., which, however, is not impossible after γίγνεσθαι ('to arrive at').

D φαμέν] 'As we are saying'—supra B.

δειλίας φίλον] Cp. iv. 439 D πληρώσεών τινων καὶ ήδονῶν έταῖρον (neuter): supra 603 B.

E ἔχει] 'admits of.' Cp. Thuc. ii. 41, § 3 ἀγανάκτησιν ἔχει.

μιμούμενον] μιμουμένου (sc. τινὸς αὐτό), the reading of Π q and a few other MSS., has been preferred by some editors on the supposition that μιμοῦμαι is not used passively. As other tenses of the verb are taken in a passive sense (Laws ii. 668 Β τὸ μιμηθέν: Cratyl. 425 D γράμμασι καὶ συλλαβαῖς τὰ πράγματα μεμιμημένα: supra 599 λ μιμηθησόμενον) there is no sufficient reason for refusing such a sense to the present. But, as Schneider observes, μιμούμενον here may quite well be an accusative masculine,—'nor is it easy to understand one who tries to imitate this.' Ficinus ('si imitemur') perhaps read μιμουμένων.

πανηγύρει καὶ... ξυλλεγομένοις] πανηγύρει is dative of the occasion, while ἀνθρώποις depends on εὖπετὲς καταμαθεῖν. 'At a public gathering, and for men assembling,' &c.

οὐ . . . πέπηγεν] οὐ negatives the whole sentence; hence καί, not οὐδέ. It follows that  $\tau \epsilon$ , not  $\gamma \epsilon$ , is right, and  $\tau \epsilon$  was probably at first written in Par. A, in which  $\gamma \epsilon$  is a correction. (The mark  $\div$  written over  $\gamma$  by the diorthotes, has been mistaken for  $\tau$ .) For

Α

πέπηγε cp. vii. 530 D ώς πρὸς ἀστρονομίαν ὅμματα πέπηγεν, ὡς πρὸς Republic X. ἐναρμόνιον φορὰν ὧτα παγῆναι.

φαῦλα . . . πρὸς ἀλήθειαν] Cp. supra 597 Λ ἀμυδρόν τι . . . πρὸς ἀλήθειαν.

ετερον τοιοῦτον] sc. φαῦλον, to which τοῦτο before ἐγείρει also B refers.

ωσπερ ἐν πόλει] 'As in the case of a city;' sc. the rational part is destroyed. The subject of comparison is resumed in ταὐτὸν καὶ τόν, κ.τ.λ., infra.

παραδιδώ Sc. αὐτοῖς.

ταὐτόν] Accusative in apposition to κακὴν . . . ἐμποιεῖν, bringing out the antecedent to ὥσπερ.

πολιτείαν] The thought is similar to that in ix. 592 Β: cp. infra 608 Β  $\pi \epsilon \rho \lambda \tau \hat{\eta} \hat{s}$   $\hat{\epsilon} \nu$  αδτ $\hat{\omega}$  πολιτείας δεδιότε.

οὔτε τὰ μείζω οὔτε τὰ ἐλάττω] Cp. i. 343  $\Lambda$  οὐδὲ πρόβατα οὐδὲ ποιμένα and note.

ἀλλὰ τὰ αὐτὰ . . . ἀφεστῶτα] There is great uncertainty about the text and construction of this passage. The reading εἰδωλοποιοῦντα, which refers to the poet, rests on insufficient manuscript authority (q corr.). Nor is the change from the dative to the accusative necessary, as the 'foolish part of the soul' may very well be called 'a maker of images.' There is, however, good authority for ἀφεστῶτα; and it may be argued that if either the dative or the accusative is read in one clause, it should be read in both. But ἀφεστῶτα,—'things remote from the truth,' may quite well be in agreement with εἴδωλα. On the other hand, ἀφεστῶτι, the reading of  $\Xi$  D corr., is also possible.—It may be argued further, on the one hand that εἰδωλοποιοῦντα agreeing with the subject of ἐμποιεῖν preserves better the balance of the sentence, on the other hand that it is too far removed from its context.

The crowning offence of poetry is her corrupting not only bad or indifferent persons, but even the good. Our feelings are stirred when Homer or one of the tragedians represents some pitiful hero weeping or smiting his breast. But in our own sorrows we are expected to play the manly part. And we cannot be right in praising others for a weakness which would disgrace ourselves. The same rule applies to the excess of laughter excited by comedy,

605 C-607 A

C

606

Republic and still more to the awakening of lower feelings. Hymns in praise of God and god-like men are the only poems which we admit in our state.

605 α δοντάς τε καὶ κοπτομένους] 'Chanting and beating their breasts.'

The change from singular to plural marks the transition from the single speeches (δήσεις) of the characters in Epic poetry and tragedy to the combined song or plaint (κομμός) of the chorus and the persons on the stage. The conjectural reading ἡ κλαίοντας for ἡ καὶ ἄδοντας is unnecessary.

E μη ἀξιοῖ εἶναι] μή, not οὐ, is used in putting the case.

οὐ μὰ . . . σκοποίης] ναί here expresses dissent from the negative preceding. 'That does not appear reasonable.' 'Yes, but it will, if you look at it in this way.' εὔλογον is used in slightly different senses in the two clauses. 'It looks very inconsistent,' said Glaucon, 'thus to praise the tragic poet.—Rather, it is easily explained, if you look at it in this way.'

πεπεινηκὸς τοῦ δακρῦσαι] 'compelled to fast from tears:' i.e. which has been denied the satisfaction of weeping.

ανίησι . . . τούτου] 'relaxes its watch over this tearful part of our nature.' Cp. viii. 547 c φυλακής αὐτῶν and note.

B εαυτῷ] Plato passes from the rational part of the soul to the man himself. ατε like ωs is construed with the accusative neuter participle of an impersonal verb.

λογίζεσθαι . . . εἰς τὰ οἰκεῖα Cp. iii. 395 c τοῦ εἰναι ἀπολαύσωσιν.

C άρ' οὐχ ὁ αὐτὸς λόγος, κ.τ.λ.] περὶ τοῦ γελοίου depends on ὁ αὐτὸς λόγος, and is to be continued with ταὐτὸν ποιεῖς, κ.τ.λ., which is added in apposition to ὁ αὐτὸς λόγος.

ὅτι, \*ἀν αὐτός, κ.τ.λ.] The text has been variously emended. Schneider's reading (ἄν for ἄν) has been adopted as involving the least change. Hermann's correction of δέ to δή is to some extent confirmed by the absence of μέν after αὐτός. Supposing this accepted, the simplest change is to add ἄ before αὐτός and ἄν after αἰσχύνοιο:—ὅτι, ἄν ἃ αὐτὸς αἰσχύνοιο ἄν, κ.τ.λ., 'that, if jests, which you would be ashamed to make, sound delightful to your ear.' It is possible, however, that we have here a carelessly written

sentence, in which the differing moods  $\hat{a}$   $\hat{a}\nu$   $ala\chi\dot{\nu}\nu\omega\omega$  and  $\hat{a}$   $\hat{a}\nu$   $Republic \chi a\rho\eta s$   $(=\dot{\epsilon}\dot{a}\nu\,\tau a\bar{\nu}\tau a\,\chi a\rho\eta s)$  are connected with  $\delta\dot{\epsilon}$ .

αὖ] 'again,' as in the former case, supra A.

them where they are in excess.

ἐκεῖ 'On those occasions,' i. e. in hearing poetry, cp. v. 451 B.

ἐν τοῖς οἰκείοις In your private life and conversation (supra Β).

καὶ περὶ ἀφροδισίων ο αὐτὸς λόγος is to be supplied before ὅτι.

Plato is an enemy to sentimentalism; all those influences which are represented to us by novels, plays, poems, are to be sternly repressed. He will not have the feelings excited by unreal sorrows, lest they should be unequal to the support of real ones. That the indulgence of the feelings even in virtuous or religious emotions may be carried to excess, is certainly true. Also, as Butler has remarked, passive impression is (or rather may be) in an inverse ratio to active habit. Still, one who cannot feel is almost as far removed from a rational being as one who cannot think: the sources of imagination and sympathy are dried up in him; and to quicken the feelings and imagination where they are deficient is quite as important a part of education as to moderate

Plato does not recognize that the indulgence of the feelings may also be a cultivation of them ( $\mu$ i $\mu$  $\eta$  $\sigma$ is...  $\pi$  $\epsilon$  $\rho$ alvov $\sigma$ a  $\delta$ i  $\epsilon$ i $\delta$ eov καὶ  $\phi$ ό $\beta$ ov τῶν τοιούτων παθημάτων κάθαρσιν). What would he have thought of a system which resolves the moral sentiments into sympathy? Much of the obscurity of this subject arises out of the strongly marked line of distinction which is drawn between reason and feeling, and from the neglect to observe that reason is often manifested in the form of feeling.

άξιος ἀναλαβόντι μανθάνειν] 'It is well worth while to take him up and learn him.' The reading ἄξιος has the authority of Par. A as well as of Π M, and is also more idiomatic than ἄξιον, which has been adopted by editors on the supposed authority of Par. A.

όσον] owing to the omission of its antecedent  $\tau \sigma \sigma \sigma \tilde{v} \tau \sigma v$ , is in the accusative case; hence  $\tilde{v} \mu \nu \sigma u$  by attraction to it becomes  $\tilde{v} \mu \nu \sigma u v$ .

ἐγκώμια τοῖs ἀγαθοῖs] 'praises of the brave,' like Symp. 194 D ἐγκωμίου τῷ "Ερωτι. The construction here follows that of the preceding words.

τοῦ κοινή . . . λόγου Either (1) 'the reason which by common

D

10

E

607

Republic consent has always been held to be the highest,' or (2) 'that reason which from time to time appears best to the majority,' Cp. supra 604 B, C.

607 B-Such then is our defence for what may seem hard measure 608 B towards the poets who have charmed us. The truth is that there is an old quarrel between philosophy and poetry. But if the Muse, making her defence in turn, can prove that we are wrong, we are only too ready to listen to her. Yet until she or her friends can show that she is not only pleasant but useful to the state, we shall hear her under protest, using the foregoing argument as a countercharm, For great is the issue at stake, And of the highest rewards of virtue we have not yet spoken.

ταῦτα δή, ἔφην, κ.τ.λ.] The reasons for ἀπολελογήσθω, 'let this B be our defence, and  $d\pi o\lambda \epsilon \lambda o \gamma (\sigma \theta \omega)$ , 'let this be our final reckoning' or 'summing up,' are very nearly balanced. In favour of the latter may be urged (1) the agreement of the two best MSS. Par. A and Ven. II, (2) the old argument of the 'more difficult reading,' (3) the apparent anticipation of the defence of poetry in the word ἀπολελογήσθω, which may also have suggested the alteration to the mind of the copyist, (4) the tone of the preceding pages, which has not been that of apology but of accusation or judgement (supra 595 A, B, 604 D, E). On the other hand, ἀπολελογήσθω .(1) has the consent of the remaining MSS., (2) is a more natural and appropriate expression; (3) towards Homer at least the attitude has been one of apology; (4) in the immediate context, the epexegesis ὅτι εἰκότως ἄρα, κ.τ.λ., is more suitable to this idea, for which cp. also iv. 420 B, vi. 490 A; Phaedo 63, 69; (5) 'this is our defence; let poetry make hers if she can,'-is not by any means an illogical sequence.

δ γάρ λόγος ήμας ήρει The expression δ λόγος αίρει is not infrequent in the sense, 'reason constrains us.' In the present passage & loyos may mean either (1) 'the argument,' as in Laws ii. 663 D ως καὶ νῦν αὐτὸ ἥρηχ' ὁ λόγος ἔχειν, or (2) 'reason' generally. The addition of huas which gives a touch of liveliness, is rather in favour of the former.

προσείπωμεν] 'let us say in addition,' cp. Soph. 250 B. The scribe of r, not understanding this, wrote αὐτήν instead of αὐτή.

607

καὶ γὰρ ἡ λακέρυζα, κ.τ.λ.] for the saying of 'the yelping hound barking at her lord' and 'one mighty in the vain talk of fools,' &c. The first of these two quotations is said by Plato (Laws xii. 967 c, n) to be applied by certain poets to the disciples of Anaxagoras, who though nameless, are sufficiently indicated by their doctrine ώς νοῦς εἴη ὁ διακεκοσμηκώς πάνθ' ὅσα κατ' οὐρανόν,—which doctrine of theirs however they ruined, and themselves with it, by also making earth and stones the universal causes.

Republic X. 607 B

ό τῶν Δία σοφῶν ὅχλος κρατῶν] The best mode of construing this clause is to take Δία with κρατῶν, 'the crowd of philosophers overmastering Zeus.' Cp. Shakespeare, *Hamlet*, v. r, 86–88 'A politician, . . . one that would circumvent God.'

С

σημεία] sc. ἐστίν, which gives the required verb.

ή πρὸς ἡδονὴν ποιητική] is opposed to the 'austere' poetry which is to be admitted: iii. 398 Λ αὐτοὶ δ' ἃν τῷ αὐστηροτέρῳ καὶ ἀηδεστέρῳ ποιητῆ χρώμεθα.

D

ἀπολογησομένη] The reading ἀπολογησαμένη, which seems to have been that of A<sup>1</sup>, is probably right. οὖτω, 'on this condition,' is explained by ἀπολογησομένη... μέτρω.

E

τῶν καλῶν πολιτειῶν] said ironically, like ή καλλίστη . . . πολιτεία in viii. 562 A.

608 A

† αἰσθόμεθα] is a word of doubtful genuineness. And even if it be changed to αἰσθανόμεθα, the expression is feeble. Ἡισθόμεθα and ηἰσθήμεθα are not much better. Εἰσόμεθα, the reading of q, is probably conjectural. Madvig very ingeniously conjectured ἀσόμεθα, continuing the idea of ἐπάδοντες. But (1) the participial clause εὐλαβούμενοι . . . ἔρωτα is hardly enough of a digression to justify the resumptive δ' οὖν: (2) the expression ἀσόμεθα ὡς, κ.τ.λ., is not quite natural or idiomatic: (3) there is nothing in the words ὡς οὖ

Republic σπουδαστέον... περὶ ποιήσεως to suggest the style of a chant or ἐπφδή. Some verb with the meaning of ἀφεξόμεθα seems to be required. [L.C.]

One life is far too little to reward virtue, or to deserve the serious care of an immortal soul.—That the human soul is immortal is a strange thought to Glaucon, But Socrates undertakes to prove it.

ουδέ γε ποιητικ $\hat{\eta}$ ] Poetry is emphasized as being the immediate subject of the previous discussion.

C τί οὖν . . . (n) παντός ;] 'and should a thing immortal be seriously interested about a period of time which is no more than this, rather than with eternity?' Cp. Phaedo 107 c εἴπερ ἡ ψυχὴ ἀθάνατος, ἐπιμελείας δὴ δείται οὐχ ὑπὲρ τοῦ χρόνου τούτου μόνου, ἐν ῷ καλοῦμεν τὸ ζῆν, ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ τοῦ παντός : also supra vi. 486 A, 498 D.

οἶμαι ἔγωγ², ἔφη] sc. δεῖν σπουδάζειν ὑπὲρ τοῦ παντός, referring not to the word οἴει in what precedes, but to the main drift of the question, and emphatically affirming the latter part of it. Cp. i. 336 Ε μὴ γὰρ δὴ οἴου . . . ὑπείκειν ἀλλήλοις καὶ οὐ σπουδάζειν, κ.τ.λ. . . . οἴου γε σύ, ὧ φίλε: where see note. Glaucon can only answer Socrates' question in one way, but he does not see the aim of it.

οὖκ ἤσθησαι, κ.τ.λ.] That the doctrine of the immortality of the soul, which is asserted in the Crito, Phaedo, Phaedrus, and referred to in the Apology, Timaeus, Politicus, Laws,—and also in Rep. vi. 498 p, should be here spoken of as a new revelation of which Glaucon hears for the first time, is remarkable.

εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ γ', ἔφην] 'I should think I ought, said I :' i. e. δίκαιός εἰμι ἔχειν τοῦτο λέγειν. So infra 612 D ἢ οὐ μνημονεύεις ; ἀδικοίην μέντ' ἄν, ἔφη, εὶ μή.

That which perishes can be destroyed only by its own proper evil.

Now the soul has an evil proper to it, namely vice. But vice does not destroy the soul. It would lose all it terrors if it did. For it would release the wicked man from evil. Instead of which it keeps him alive and wide awake. It follows that as the soul is capable of being destroyed by its own evil, the soul therefore must be imperishable and immortal.

608 ἀγαθόν τι ... καὶ κακὸν καλεῖς;] The argument is as follows:—
The soul has a proper evil, which is vice. Now if vice has no

destroying power over the soul, no merely external evil can  $\frac{Republic}{X}$ .

κακόν τι] The best MSS. read κακόν τε, which is possibly right.

609 A B

τοῦτο μέντοι . . . ἀπολλύον] 'An evil however whose destructive agency cannot cause its dissolution.'

οὐκ ἦν;] cp. iv. 436 B, C εἰσόμεθα ὅτι οὐ ταὐτὸν ἦν ἀλλὰ πλείω: and the note.

άλλ' ὧδε ποίει 'But put the matter in this way.'

C

ωσπερ...(D) ἀφικνεῖται] The apodosis is deferred to make room for the question οὐχ οὕτως; It is resumed in a new form in ἴθι δή, κ.τ.λ., infra.

καὶ ἃ νῦν δή, κ.τ.λ.] καί must here mean 'and '—not 'also,' as in καὶ ψυχήν infra p, because the comparison is not between the body and corn, iron (supra A), &c., but between all these and the soul.

 $\hat{\epsilon}$ κεῖνό  $\gamma$ ε] 'The other (and more remote) alternative,' referring D to supra  $\Lambda$ .

ύπὸ τῆς ... πονηρίας ... ἐκείνων] 'by the evil which is proper to them alone,' i. e. in so far as it is an evil of food considered in itself. For example, mildew, the disease of corn, can destroy the ear of corn, but the mildewed ear of corn will not destroy the human body of itself, but only by introducing into it some disease of the body.

\*ὀρθότατα] ὀρθότατ' ἄν is the reading of all the MSS, with two unimportant exceptions (ὀρθώτατ' ἄν Vind. F, ὀρθότατ' ἄρ' Vind. E), but is probably corrupt. Either ὀρθότατα as in the text, or ὀρθότατά γ', should be read.

610 A

E

ἢ τοίνυν . . . (B) ἀνοσιωτέρα γίγνεται] Compare the first chapter of Butler's Analogy, Part i:—especially the curious observation, 'we have no way of determining by experience what is the certain bulk of the living being each man calls himself; and yet till it be determined that it is larger in bulk than the solid elementary particles of matter which there is no ground to think any natural power can dissolve, there is no sort of reason to think death to be the dissolution of it, of the living being, even though it should not be absolutely indiscerptible.' Here however Butler seems to imply that the soul may be a primary atom, and so indivisible. Plato argues that no disease

Republic of the body nor division of the particles however minute can affect X, the soul.

- 610 For εἴ τις ὅ τι σμικρότατα we should perhaps read εἴ τις εἴς ὅ τι σμικρότατα: but cp. vi. 509 D γραμμὴν δίχα τετμημένην . . . ἄνισα τμήματα.
- C δμόσε τῷ λόγῳ τολμᾳ ἰέναι] 'boldly closes' (1) 'with our argument,' or (2) 'with us in argument.' The latter may be supported by the absolute use of ὁμόσε...χωρήσεται in Theaet. 165 Ε, and for τῷ λόγῳ thus used cp. ii. 361 Β τὸν δίκαιον παρ' αὐτὸν ἱστῶμεν τῷ λόγῳ. But the first explanation is perhaps simpler and more natural.
- D μάλιστα . . . ήττον] sc. λαμβάνοντας αὐτό.

ἀλλὰ μή, ὥσπερ νῦν . . . οἱ ἄδικοι] Cp. vii. 539 D καὶ μὴ ὡς νῦν ὁ τυχὼν καὶ οὐδὲν προσήκων ἔρχεται ἐπ' αὐτό—and the note there.

Ε πρὸς . . . τῷ ζωτικῷ] Cp. Theaet. 185 Ε καλὸς γὰρ  $\epsilon \hat{l}$ , ὧ Θεαίτητε . . . πρὸς δὲ τῷ καλῷ  $\epsilon \hat{v}$  ἐποίησάς με.

οὖτω πόρρω . . . εἶναι] 'So far is she removed from being deadly.' I. e. Injustice is far enough from being one of the things which cause death. Cp. Phaedo 107 c εἶ μὲν γὰρ ἦν ὁ θάνατος τοῦ παντὸς ἀπαλλαγή, ἔρμαιον ἃν ἦν τοῖς κακοῖς ἀποθανοῦσι τοῦ τε σώματος ἄμα ἀπηλλάχθαι καὶ τῆς αὐτῶν κακίας μετὰ τῆς ψυχῆς. Yet at the end of Book i (351 ff.) Socrates uses an argument apparently inconsistent with this, which he applies both to the state and to the individual, viz. that evil is a principle of dissolution or annihilation, which subsists only through the latent presence of good.

For the figurative language cp. Polit. 284 E  $\pi \acute{a} \nu \theta$  ὁπόσα εἰς τὸ  $\mu \acute{\epsilon} \sigma \sigma \nu$  ἀπωκίσθη τῶν ἐσχάτων.

10 Now the number of souls, since they are immortal, must always be the same, neither less nor more; they cannot become less, because none of them can die: and they cannot increase, because they could only be increased if what is mortal became immortal, of which the result would be that all things would become immortal. Nor can their nature really be so complex as appears to us. The fact of immortality is proved. But the nature of the soul is beyond the limits of our knowledge. For she is plunged in the sea of mortality and encrusted with earth. Only the divine spark of philosophy within her gives an inkling of her pristine and true being.

εὶ δ' ἔχει, κ.τ.λ.] Plato teaches that souls are eternal, and have a certain fixed number which is incapable of increase or diminution. Any process of change by which the mortal passes into the immortal must end after infinite ages in the immortality of all the mortal. That this is Plato's meaning, which is, however, obscurely, expressed, appears from Phaedo 72 B, C εὶ γὰρ μὴ ἀεὶ ἀνταποδιδοίη τὰ ἔτερα τοῖς ἐτέροις γιγνόμενα, ὡσπερεὶ κύκλῳ περιιόντα, ἀλλ' εὐθεῖά τις εἴη ἡ γένεσις ἐκ τοῦ ἐτέρου μόνον εἰς τὸ καταντικρύ, καὶ μὴ ἀνακάμπτοι πάλιν ἐπὶ τὸ ἔτερον μηδὲ καμπὴν ποιοῖτο, οἶσθ' ὅτι πάντα τελευτῶντα τὸ αὐτὸ σχῆμα ἃν σχοίη: where an opposite turn is given to the same argument and it is urged that life must follow death as death follows life. One of the reasons given by Anselm in Cur Deus Homo, for the redemption of mankind, is 'the appointed number of the souls of the blessed.'

Republic X. 611 A

τῆ ἀληθεστάτη φύσει] 'in her truest nature,' as distinguished from that phenomenal nature of the soul which is known to us in experience, and has parts and opposing desires as in Book iv.

В

οὐ ῥάδιον, κ.τ.λ.] (1) 'that can hardly be eternal, as we have now discovered the soul to be, which is compounded of many elements, and is not perfectly compounded.' The words σύνθετόν τε, κ.τ.λ., may be illustrated by ix. 588 ff. where the soul is said in a figure to be composed of a many-headed beast, a lion, and a man. Otherwise (2) the words &s νῦν . . . ψυχή may be taken closely with the clause immediately preceding and referred to the psychology of Books iv and ix. The position of the words in question is in favour of the latter explanation—'that can hardly be eternal which is imperfectly compounded of various elements, as in our present conversation the soul has appeared to be.' [L. C.] Cp. infra c νῦν δὲ εἴπομεν, κ.τ.λ., 612 A νῦν δὲ . . . διεληλύθαμεν.

καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι] such as the reasonings in the Phaedo and Phaedrus.

ἀναγκάσειαν ἄν] 'would prove beyond doubt.'

εύρήσει . . . διόψεται] The subject of these verbs is to be gathered from the preceding sentence: viz. δ οῦτω διαθεώμενος.

С

δικαιοσύνας τε καὶ ἀδικίας] The plural signifies the concrete realization of the abstract notion:—Justice and Injustice in their various forms.

τεθεάμεθα μέντοι . . . την ἀρχαίαν φύσιν ] The construction is

LOWIN X. 611

altered to suit the expansion of the simile; and there is a resumption of τεθεάμεθα . . . αὐτό in infra p οῦτω καὶ τὴν ψυχήν, κ.τ.λ.

With the following image cp. Phaedrus 250 C καθαροί οντες καὶ ασήμαντοι τούτου δ νῦν σῶμα περιφέροντες ἀνομάζομεν, ἀστρέου τρόπον δεδεσμευμένοι.

E ύπὸ ταύτης της όρμης SC. της του τω θείω εφέπεσθαι,

νεηρά καὶ πετρώδη These words in the relative clause resume 612 A πέτρας τε καὶ ὄστρεα supra.

ύπὸ... ἐστιάσεων 'as the effects of what are called blissful banquets.' Cp. supra γην έστιωμένη.

612 A-

We have found, as Glaucon and Adeimantus required, that apart 613 E from reputation and rewards, justice in her own nature is best for the soul in her own nature, even though a man could make himself invisible. Having answered this requirement, we may now, without offence, state the truth about the just man's reward. He does not escape the notice of the gods, and they love him and make him blessed. And though his justice may not soon appear to men, yet at the end of the race he wins the prize against those who started brilliantly with a splendid show. The unjust may elude detection for a while; but in their age they are exploded and despised; and suffer all those horrors which were formerly recounted as falling on the head of the just man who was misconstrued by mankind.

612 .\

οὐκοῦν, κ.τ.λ. The passage which follows is one of the many reminiscences of earlier portions of the work which occur in later ones, and which form an exquisite thread of connexion amid apparent disorder. The old allusion to the ring of Gyges is heightened and enriched by the reference to Iliad v. 844, 845

αὐτὰρ ᾿Λθήνη

δῦν "Αϊδος κυνέην, μή μιν "δοι "βριμος "Αρης.

This very early piece of folk-lore is alluded to also in Hesiod. Scut. 227, Aristoph. Ach. 390, and in the legend of Perseus in Pherecydes. See Leaf's note on Iliad. l. c. He compares the Tarn-Kappe or Nebelkappe of northern mythology.

For the bearing of the words τον Γύγου δακτύλιον on the reading of ii. 350 c, see note in loco.

ἀπελυσάμεθα] 'we have cleared away in the argument the difficulties raised by Glaucon and Adeimantus.' To answer accusations or clear away objections is a meaning constantly assigned to ἀπολύεσθαι. On the other hand there is no certain instance of the use of the middle voice of this verb in the sense of 'paying a debt.' A various reading ἀπεδυσάμεθα is found in the Cesena MS. (M), in Ven. Ξ, and in Stobaeus: this may be connected with the passage (ii. 36 I C γυμνωτέος δὴ πάντων πλὴν δικαιοσύνης, κ.τ.λ.) in which Glaucon and Adeimantus desire Socrates to 'strip' justice. The allusion, however, is too remote; the form is unusual in Attic prose, and the reading is not assisted by the immediate context.

Republic X. 612 A

B

ἐπηνέκαμεν] Par. A reads ἐπηινέγκαμεν (sic) with a dot over the γ, suggesting ἐπηνέκαμεν, and Par. K reads ἐπηνέσαμεν. This recalls the words of Adeimantus (which may however have suggested this reading to the scribe) ii. 363 A οὐκ αὐτὸ δικαιοσύνην ἐπαινοῦντες, ἀλλὰ τὰs ἀπ' αὐτῆς εὐδοκιμήσεις, ib. 367 D μισθοὺς δὲ καὶ δύξας πάρες ἄλλοις ἐπαινεῖν. But for ἐπιφέρειν, 'to bring to bear,' 'apply' (reading ἐπηνέγκαμεν), cp. Soph. 251 A λέγομεν ἄνθρωπον δή που πόλλ' ἄττα ἐπονομάζοντες, τά τε χρώματα ἐπιφέροντες αὐτῷ καὶ . . . κακίας καὶ ἀρετάς.—The word ἐπηνέκαμεν with the same variant ἐπηνέσαμεν occurs in Polit. 307 A.

ύμεις γάρ ήγεισθέ] ii. 361 π ff., 367 ε.

C

 $\mathring{\eta}$ τεῖ $\sigma$ θε, the reading of Par. A, which is supported by M ( $\mathring{\eta}$ τεῖ $\sigma$ θε) is perhaps to be preferred to  $\mathring{\eta}$ γεῖ $\sigma$ θε: it agrees better with ἔδωκα and δοτέον, and with ἀπαιτῶ in the following sentence. Cp. infra p, E. There is a slight pleonasm or anacoluthon in δοτέον following  $\mathring{\eta}$ τεῖ $\sigma$ θε, which however is not unplatonic.

ταῦτα λανθάνειν] 'That one should escape notice in this.' ταῦτα, cognate accusative.

δοκεῖσθαι] For the passive cp. vi. 490 Λ τοῖς . . . δοκουμένοις.

D)

 $\Lambda$ 

εἰ μή τι ἀναγκαῖον, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Butler, Analogy, Part. i. chap. 2 'Why the author of nature does not make his creatures happy without the instrumentality of their own actions, and prevent their bringing any sufferings upon themselves, is another matter. Perhaps there may be some impossibilities in the nature of things which we are unacquainted with.'

**ἐκ προτέρας ἁμαρτίας**] The effect of one life on another is again referred to infra 620 Λ κατὰ συνήθειαν γὰρ τοῦ προτέρου βίου τὰ πολλὰ αἰρεῖσθαι.

οὐ γὰρ δή, κ.τ.λ.] cp. vi. 500 c, n θείφ δὴ καὶ κοσμίφ ὅ γε φιλόσοφος vol. 111.

Republic X. 613 A

В

C

όμιλῶν κόσμιός τε καὶ θεῖος εἰς τὸ δυνατὸν ἀνθρώπῳ γίγνεται: Apol. 41 C καὶ ε̈ν τι τοῦτο διανοεῖσθαι ἀληθές, ὅτι οὐκ ε̈στιν ἀνδρὶ ἀγαθῷ κακὸν οὐδὲν οὕτε ζῶντι οὕτε τελευτήσαντι, οὐδὲ ἀμελεῖται ὑπὸ θεῶν τὰ τούτου πράγματα. Cp. also, for the ὁμοίωσις θεῷ Theaet. 176 B-E, Laws iv. 716 B, C.

Socrates is about to show that righteousness has the rewards both of this life and of another. He may be said to have partly begged the question of this life by imagining the existence of true happiness in a perfect state. Yet, as he has himself implied at the end of Book ix, the good man has also the power of constructing a 'Kingdom of God' within him, even when the world is against him. Nor is he so antagonistic to his fellow-creatures in fact as he is supposed to be in idea. The world comes round to him at last: appearances as well as realities must be at length restored to him: virtue in the long run is also happiness and good repute.

 $\hat{\alpha}$ ρ' οὐχ  $\hat{\omega}$ δε ἔχει . . . (c) ἀποτρέχοντες 'Is not the actual truth as follows? Are not those clever unjust men in the position of runners who run well from the lower end of the course to the upper, but not from the upper to the lower? They lead off at a great pace, but in the end come to look foolish, slinking away with their ears down on their shoulders, and without a crown.' The words ἀπὸ τῶν κάτω...ἀνω have been taken to mean 'from the lower and upper parts of their body,' i.e. their hips and shoulders; and Socrates is supposed to be describing those who have good legs and no chest. See Riddell's Digest of Idioms, § 111: also Madvig quoted by Baiter in his preface. But it seems more natural to apply the ambiguous words ἄνω and κάτω to the upper and lower end of the race-course than to the parts of the human body. The 'upper end' of the course is that farthest from the starting-place, and only a course up and down the stadium is contemplated. The second statement (τὸ μὲν πρῶτον, κ.τ.λ.) as in many similar passages is an expansion of the first. The race alluded to is of course the δίαυλος: cp. Aesch. Agam. 343, 344 δεί γὰρ πρὸς οἴκους νοστίμου σωτηρίας | κάμψαι διαύλου θάτερον κώλου πάλιν. The new interpretation in which Riddell and Madvig concur rather takes from the point of the comparison, but the use of ἀπό which it implies is idiomatic: cp. Xen. Rep. Lac. v. 9 όμοίως γὰρ ἀπό τε τῶν σκελῶν καὶ ἀπὸ χειρῶν καὶ ἀπὸ τραχήλου γυμνάζουται.

απερ αὐτὸς ἔλεγες] ii. 361 p, E.—Another of the numerous links by which Plato connects the beginning with the end of his work.

γέροντες ... προπηλακίζονται] (1) 'As they grow old they are miserably insulted' (ἄθλιοι predicative), rather than (2) 'becoming wretched old men they are insulted.'

Republic N. 613 E

The words εἶτα στρεβλώσονται καὶ ἐκκαυθήσονται, though found in all MSS., are omitted by some editors and bracketed by others. There is no necessity for this. The addition of the word εἶτα, which improves the effect of them, sufficiently shows that they are not a gloss arising out of a reference to the words of Glaucon, ii. 361 E. They suggest the antecedent to α, and may be sufficiently defended as a humorous epitome of the original to which Socrates briefly refers.

δ λέγω] supra c.

καὶ  $\mu$ άλ², ἔφη, κ.τ.λ.] καὶ  $\mu$ άλα (καί intensive) is to be taken closely with καλά τε καὶ βέβαια. 'They are indeed most fair and well assured.'

614 A

Yet greater far are the rewards of the just and the punishments of the unjust in another life. This is shown by the report which Er the Pamphylian brought from the other world. He was left for dead amongst the slain, and twelve days afterwards came to life upon the funeral pyre. His tale was as follows:-- 'When his soul left the body, he proceeded with a great company to a place where there were two chasms in the earth, near together; and directly above them two chasms in the sky. Judges sat there in the midst, and after judgement, some souls ascended through the chasm on the right, while others descended into the chasm on the left. He himself on approaching the judgement seat, was told that he was to observe what took place, and carry the report of it back to living men. Then he beheld how from the chasm on the right hand were coming up souls parched and dusty, while from the chasm upon the left came down another troop clean and bright. All gladly rested in the meadow after their long journey of a thousand years.'

614 A-E

Plato ends the Republic with a myth: partly (1) because he is on the limits of human knowledge: imagination necessarily enters into any representation of another life: (2) also because he has the old garment of mythology still clinging to him: (3) that he may popularize moral truths by investing them with the charm of a religious tale: (4) since he is embodying in literature the Pythagorean and Orphic feelings of the age. Like religious

Republic N. 614 A paintings, the myths of Plato have also some traditional elements which lend them verisimilitude and help to bring them into harmony with contemporary ideas. Plato is accepting the old forms and trying to breathe a moral and intellectual life into them. His myth consequently, instead of being a mere fiction or fairy tale, is supported by the strength of traditional belief. The attempts of Numenius, Proclus and others to connect this myth with those in Gorg., Phaed., Phaedr., Tim. so as to get a complete and consistent view of Plato's supra-mundane theories, only show the futility of such a method.

τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ λόγου ὀφειλόμενα ἀκοῦσαι] 'The debt of description which the argument owes to them.' Supra 612 c â ἐδανείσασθε ἐν τῷ λόγῳ. The repetition of ἀκοῦσαι has been suspected by Stephanus and Stallbaum, but the word is not without meaning if it be taken in the sense of 'to have related concerning them.' Cp. supra vi. 496 Λ, Lys. 207 Λ οὐ τὸ καλὸς εἶναι μόνον ἄξιος ἀκοῦσαι. The debt which has been incurred in words has to be paid in words.

λέγοις ἄν, κ.τ.λ.] 'As one who delights in listening to few things more.'

B ἀλλ' ἀλκίμου μὲν ἀνδρός] Socrates makes a pun on the name of Alcinous; as we might say, parodying the words: 'I will introduce you to a hero: not the well-known one of the Pilgrim's Progress:—yet this too is-a Great-heart.' Cp. Symp. 185 c Παυσανίου δὲ παυσαμένου. There is perhaps an allusion to the descent among the shades (Odyssey xi) which forms a part of the tale of Ulysses to Alcinous. The epithet is appropriate to one who fell in battle.

τοῦ ᾿Αρμενίου] not 'the A:menian' but 'the son of Armenius' as in the quotation of Clement infra: his country is mentioned afterwards. Pamphylia is again referred to, infra 615 c.

Er, the son of Armenius, is declared by Clement of Alexandria (Stromat. v. 710, § 24) to be Zoroaster: ὁ δ' αὐτὸς (sc. Πλάτων) ἐν τῷ δεκάτῳ τῆς Πολιτείας Ἡρὸς τοῦ ᾿Αρμενίου τὸ γένος Παμφύλου μέμνηται, ὅς ἐστι Ζοροάστρης αὐτὸς γοῦν ὁ Ζοροάστρης γράφει Τάδε ξυνέγραψε Ζοροάστρης ᾿Αρμενίου τὸ γένος Πάμφυλος ἐν πολέμῳ τελευτήσας ὅσα ἐν Ἅλδη γενόμενος ἐδάην παρὰ θεῶν.

δεκαταίων...δωδεκαταίος] This gives two days for the home-bringing and funeral preparations. The twelve days are not forgotten in the narrative. The sojourn of seven days is succeeded

В

C

by a journey of four days, and this by another journey of one day Republic X.

616 B).

ἐπειδή ού] The first hand in Par. A wrote ἐπειδή οὖ with Ven. Ξ: an early corrector changed this to ἐπειδή οὖν. The genitive goes with the noun: not 'when the soul left him,' but 'when his spirit went forth.' In what follows, the soul or spirit is spoken of as the man

είς τόπον τινὰ δαιμόνιον 'to a wonderful place.'

δικαστὰς δὲ . . . ἔπραξαν] Cp. Phaedo 107 Ε λέγεται δὲ οὕτως, ώς ἄρα τελευτήσαντα ἔκαστον ὁ ἐκάστου δαίμων, ὅσπερ ζῶντα εἰλήχει, οὖτος ἄγειν ἐπιχειρεῖ εἰς δή τινα τόπον, οἶ δεῖ τοὺς ξυλλεγέντας διαδικασαμένους εἰς κλιδου πορεύεσθαι μετὰ ἡγεμόνος ἐκείνου ῷ δὴ προστέτακται τοὺς ἐνθένδε ἐκεῖσε πορεῦσαι; and Gorg. 524 ff.

των δεδικασμένων is neuter: cp. infra σημεία πάντων ων έπραξαν.

διακελεύοιντο] Oblique for διακελευόμεθα: 'The judges or their apparitors said, "You must be the messenger, and we exhort you to look and listen."'

'The souls that came from heaven, pure and bright, and those that rose out of the ground, dusty and soiled, met and rested in the meadow, friends greeting friends and telling of what they had seen in their respective journeys. The one told of delights beyond compare; the other with lamentation and weeping recounted all that they had suffered and seen others suffer. Each sin was punished ten times over, once in every hundred years; and the rewarding of good deeds was in the same proportion. Newly born infants, too, were there, but of them there is not much to be said. The punishments of impiety and parricide were greater than of other sins. I heard a Pamphylian ask, "Where is Ardiaeus the Great?" "Not here," was the reply,—" nor will he ever come. The mouth of the chasm refused him with a terrific roar, and he was thrown down and flayed and dragged away over spikes of flint to be cast into the abyss." The same happened to other tyrants.

όσα τε καὶ οἷα πάθοιεν] 'Of all the dreadful things they had experienced.'

χιλιέτη] The form χιλιετ $\hat{\eta}$  is supported by the Cesena MS., and by Par. DK which may be taken as representing Ven.  $\Pi$ , of which the concluding pages are wanting.

614 E-616 A

D

615 A Republic X. 615 B τοῦτο δ' εἶναι ... ἀνθρωπίνου] 'that is to say, once in every hundred years, this being reckoned as the measure of the life of man.' Plato often deals in round numbers. See ix. 588 Α προσ- ήκοντα ... βίοις ἀριθμόν. τοῦτο refers to δίκην δεδωκέναι ... δεκάκις.

καὶ οἶον, κ.τ.λ.] The sentence breaks off with an illustration and is continued as if  $\"{o}\tau\iota$  had preceded: καί, which is found in all the MSS. is genuine, and the phrase may be explained as a colloquialism:—' And, for example, if there were any,' &c.

πολλῶν] This is the reading of Ven. Ξ, and may be a conjectural emendation of  $\pi$ ολλοί, the reading of most MSS., which cannot be right. A corrector of Par. D has changed  $\pi$ ολλοί to  $\pi$ ολλοῖς,—certainly an idiomatic reading. Schneider is hardly justified in saying of it 'propter pluralem  $\theta$ ανάτων ferri nequit.' Cp. Laws IX. 870 D. The words ἢ  $\pi$ όλεις . . . ἐμβεβληκότες explain  $\theta$ ανάτων . . . αἴτιοι.

κομίσαιντο . . . κομίζοιντο] The agrist refers to the fact, the present to the general rule.

τῶν δὲ εὐθὺς γενομένων . . . πέρι] 'And of those (who died) as soon as they were born, or after living only a little while.' Since the dead alone are in question, the ellipse of ἀποθανόντων or ἀπογενομένων (conjectured by Cobet) can be endured, especially since it avoids the collision of two participles.—Plato also has a 'limbus infantum,' at which he hints.

(' εἰς δὲ θεοὺς . . . διηγεῖτο] 'and of piety and impiety to Gods and parents and of the murder of kindred (reading αὐτόχειρος φόνου), the retributions which he narrated were yet greater.'

The reading of all the MSS. is αὐτόχειρας, as in the text, of which, however, no grammatical account can be given. The conjecture of Ast, αὐτόχειρος φόνου, is extremely probable. Αὐτόχειρ is used, as often in tragedy, to imply violence to kindred: cp. Laws ix. 872 c ξυγγενῶν αὐτόχειρας φόνους. The sentence thus includes all acts of impiety, as involving a higher degree of crime.

'Aρδιαῖος ὁ μέγας] The tyrant of Books viii, ix, is still alive, and is having the reward of his crimes. The spirits amongst whom Er finds himself are his own countrymen. The questioner is obviously a Pamphylian, who, having passed his thousand years in Heaven, is still interested in the concerns of his native country. He asks of his friend who has come from Hell (cp. supra 614 Ε ὅσαι γνώριμαι) not without a certain degree of dread, how it has fared with the

C

contemporary tyrant, of whose greatness he still retains the Republic

X.

615

χιλιοστὸν ἔτος] Cp. supra  $\Lambda$  εἶναι δὲ τὴν πορείαν χιλιέτη. Plato would not have us forget that a thousand years have passed since these spirits were in the body.

άποκτείνας] =  $\hat{o}_s$   $\hat{a}$ πέκτεινεν, 'who in the course of his tyranny had slain.'

où  $\delta$  a  $\eta \in \mathbb{R}$  and  $\delta$  combined with the future indicative throws ( a shade of irony into the meaning: 'nor is he likely to be coming here.' See Goodwin,  $\delta$  and  $\delta$  197.

**ἐθεασάμεθα**, κ.τ.λ.] These are not the words of Er, but of the spirit whom he overhears. The narrative which follows is a confirmation of the words 'he is not likely to come.' Er begins again to speak in his own person at infra 616 Β καὶ τὰς μὲν δή.

τοῦτο] refers both to what precedes and follows: 'for this' viz, the fate of Ardiaeus 'was one of the terrible sights which we' i.e. the spirits in the world below 'witnessed.' The partitive genitive here forms part of the predication.

καὶ τἄλλα πάντα πεπονθότες] 'and had suffered all that we told you.' These words, like τῶν·δεινῶν θεαμάτων supra, refer to the conversation which the pilgrims from the lower world had held with the pilgrims from the upper respecting their experiences in the thousand years,—supra 614 Ε. τἄλλα, 'the rest,' i.e. ail except the spectacle now to be described.

ἦσαν δὲ καὶ . . . ἡμαρτηκότων] It was not the position of the tyrant that had merited judgement, but the character of his life. Cp. Gorg. 524 Ε ὁ 'Ραδάμανθυς . . . θεᾶται ἐκάστου τὴν ψυχήν, οὐκ εἰδὼς ὅτου ἐστίν, ἀλλὰ πολλάκις τοῦ μεγάλου βασιλέως ἐπιλαβόμενος, κ.τ.λ.

η μη ίκανως, κ.τ.λ.] Ardiaeus was incurable, but the attempt might be made prematurely by others whose term of punishment was only to be temporarily prolonged.

ἐνταῦθα δή, κ.τ.λ.] The ministers of vengeance are represented as they might be in Dante or by one of the early Italian painters. They are waiting (παρεστῶτες) for the well-known signal.

τὸν δὲ ᾿Αρδιαῖον ... (616 Λ) ἄγοιντο The transposition of ὅτι εἰς to εἰς ὅ τι in Par. Λ led Hermann to conjecture that τὸν Τάρταρον as well

E

Republic

As ταῦτα ὑπομένοιεν was an accretion. The latter words are probably a gloss: they are not found in Λ M. It is not possible, nor is it very important to determine accurately the reading of this passage: the general meaning is clear enough.

616 σφίσι] 'to him and to his fellows' viz. the souls just ascended A from beneath.

τοῦτον...ἀναβαίνοι] There is some confusion in the MSS. here. Par. K appears to read as in the text. Par. A omits τὸν φόβον: other MSS. retaining τὸν φόβον read εἰ μυκήσαιτο τὸ στόμιον instead of μὴ γένοιτο...ἀναβαίνοι. There can be little doubt that in these MSS. a gloss has taken the place of the true reading. But τὸν φόβον is probably genuine, although in the reading of Par. A it has been rejected as superfluous.

σιγήσαντος] sc. τοῦ στομίου supra 615 E. The agrist points to the moment of passing the aperture. Observe too, the difference between ἀναβαίνοι, 'tried to ascend,' and ἀναβῆναι, 'ascended.'

Β καὶ αὖ τὰς εὖεργεσίας] εὖεργεσία seems to be used here for the rewards of merit, much as ἀρετή is used for 'reputation of virtue.'

616 B617 D journey. And during the fourth day's journeying we saw far off
a light, straight like a pillar, in colour like unto a rainbow.

Another day of travel brought us to the light, and in the midst of it
we saw the spindle of necessity depending from the fastenings of the
sky. This spindle is the cause of all the celestial revolutions, and
the ball or whorl of it is eight-fold, as there are eight concentric

circles or orbits (fixed stars, Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, Venus, Mercury,

Sun and Moon), endued with appropriate motions, and each having its peculiar Siren tone. The three Fates sit round and set their hands to the revolutions of the spindle as it turns on the knees of their mother Necessity, where she sits enthroned. And they sing, to the music of the spheres, Lachesis of the past, Clotho of the present, Atropos of the future?

 $\frac{616}{B}$  same day. 'each company,' i. e. all those who had arrived on the

 $\delta \epsilon \hat{\iota} \nu$ ] is general, referring to all the souls: ἀφικνε $\hat{\iota}$ σθαι refers to Er and his company in particular.

ὄθεν . . . φως εὐθύ] ἄνωθεν is to be taken with τεταμένον. Republic 'Whence they descried a line of light reaching from above.' It is worth observing as illustrating the difference between Greek and English on the subject of Tautology, that in this most finished passage Plato three times over uses the same word (τεταμένον) within ten lines. The phrase διὰ παντὸς τεταμένον is applied in the Timaeus, p. 40, to the axis of the universe ( $\pi \delta \lambda o s$ ).

616 В

μάλιστα τη ιριδι προσφερή | That is, not in shape, but in colour. It has been remarked by Boeckh, following Numenius and others, that the idea of the luminous column was suggested by the Milky Way. But this is hardly consistent with the distinct statement that the light was straight and vertical, or with the rainbow colours.

τὰ ἄκρα αὐτοῦ τῶν δεσμῶν 'the extremities of the chains of Heaven' or 'of the Light.' αὐτοῦ is ambiguous, and may refer either to οὐρανοῦ or φῶς,—more naturally to the former.

(`

The Earth is imagined as an inner sphere, concentric with the outer sphere of the heaven, and connected with it by the column of light, in the midst of which are fastened the ends of the chains of Heaven. In the centre of the column and attached to the ends of these chains is the spindle which the Fates are turning upon the knees of Necessity. This together with the whorl which 'governs' it gives law to the movements of the heavenly bodies.

The Light is compared to the ὑπόζωμα of a trireme, which is variously explained as the undergirding rope (Acts xxvii. 17), or as a rope passing from stem to stern. See especially E. Warre in Journal of Hellenic Studies, v. 216 ('On the raft of Ulysses'): 'The hawser, called ὑπόζωμα, stretched from stem to stern, over crutches, kept up bow and stern and prevented "hogging." This is seen very clearly in the representation of an Egyptian ship given in Duemichen's Fleet of an Egyptian Queen. Possibly the difficulty about the ὑπόζωμα, Plat. Rep. Bk. x, finds its solution in this straight truss amidships. But the ὑποζώματα in the case of triremes seem generally to have been applied outside, stretching from stem to stern on both sides of the vessel. These hawsers, put on dry, would shrink when wet, and so tighten up the timbers of the lightly built vessel.' The thought of Plato seems to be that the whole circle of the Universe was held fast by the column, which, like the rope that fastened a trireme from stem to stern, passed through the midst of it. The words, olov κίονα, show that the position of Republic N. 616

D

the column was vertical from Er's point of view. The lower hemisphere is not considered, because everything is viewed from the upper surface of the Earth. The form of expression,  $\epsilon i \nu \alpha \iota \gamma i \rho$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ ., shows that the figure of the  $i \nu \pi \delta \zeta \omega \mu \alpha$  illustrates rather the function than the appearance of the pillar of light.

τὴν περιφοράν] 'the revolving sphere,'—not merely 'the revolution.'

'Ανάγκης ἄτρακτον] The spindle of necessity is the pole or axis of the heaven and earth, which passes through the midst of the column of light.

τὴν . . . ἢλακάτην] Not here the distaff, but 'the shaft' of the spindle.

ἔκ τε τούτου καὶ ἄλλων γενῶν] Cp. the difference, in Tim. 41 D, between the Divine and Mundane elements of the Creation.

τὸ μὲν . . . ἐνθάδε] 'In shape it (ἡ τοῦ σφονδύλου φύσις) resembled that (ἡ sc. φύσις) of a common whorl.'

νοῆσαι δὲ δεῖ, κ.τ.λ.] The whorl is fastened round the spindle like the body of a teetotum on its shaft, and is formed of eight whorls fitting one into the other like a number of boxes, and showing on the upper side a continuous surface. It is doubtful whether this whorl is in the form of a cylinder or of part of





τὸν μὲν οὖν πρῶτόν τε, κ.τ.λ.] The passage which follows is to be explained (1) from the phenomena of the Heavens, as they

616

E.

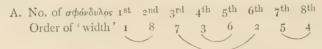
present themselves to the eye, or as they were accounted for by the crude astronomy of Plato's age: (2) from certain Pythagorean ratios or harmonies of number. The description of the heavenly bodies is still partly a work of fancy. This part of the Republic agrees with the Timaeus in general outline. (a) The order of the planets is the same in both: (b) there is an axis of the universe in both, which passes through the centre of the earth: (c) in both there is one motion of the whole, and a different motion of the seven inner circles. (d) In neither is there any distinct mention of a motion of the earth. The whole and the outermost circle are moving in one direction, the seven inner circles while partaking of this motion, έν τω όλω περιφερομένω, move also gently, ήρέμα, in an opposite direction. This conception of a double movement seems intended to explain the difficulties of astronomy arising out of the apparent diurnal motion of the Heavens round the Earth and the distinct and apparently inconsistent movements of the Sun, Moon and Planets: cp. Tim. 38 E ff. The outer whorl, which is spotted, represents the fixed stars (which, as in the Timaeus, have only the 'motion of the same'); the seventh which is described as the brightest is the sun; the eighth shining with borrowed light, and having more of retrograde motion, is the moon; the second and fifth, which are of a yellower colour than the sun and moon, are Saturn and Mercury; the third and whitest of all is Jupiter; the next whitest or sixth is Venus; the fourth, which is reddish, is Mars. The whorl of the fixed stars is the widest; the others are enumerated according to their width; the breadth of the rims may be intended to signify the supposed distances of the orbits from each other; it may also rest merely on some notion of harmonical arrangement.

[It is difficult to reason about a description of the universe which is mythical and fanciful, and only has a faint basis in the astronomical notions of the ancients themselves. The following note on this subject has been contributed by Mr. W. A. Craigie, and deserves insertion here.

The order of Plato's enumeration of the planets in Rep. x, 616 E, ff.

Although the relative distance, brightness, &c. of the σφόνδυλοι, in this theory of the universe, correspond in the first instance to the real or supposed distance &c. of the planets denoted by these, there is a curious fact connected with Plato's order of arranging them

Republic X. 616 E that can hardly be accidental, and may account for his views regarding some of their properties. This is that each enumeration seems to be based on combinations which rest on the number 9. Thus to take first the 'breadth of the lips' of the  $\sigma\phi$   $\delta\nu$  $\delta\nu$  $\delta\nu$ , which gives Plato's view of the distance of each planet from the other, we have the following series, the 1st  $\sigma\phi$  $\delta\nu$  $\delta\nu$  $\delta\nu$  being the outermost and the 8th the innermost of the set.



By thus joining those  $\sigma\phi\delta\nu\delta\nu\lambda\omega$  whose united numbers produce a sum of 9, we have a symmetrical figure with its centre between the 4th and 5th.

This appears even more clearly in the next enumeration, that of the respective colours, for here it comes out in the otherwise arbitrary way in which Plato springs from one to another instead of taking them in the order of some scheme of colour. Thus the 4th, which is reddish, is inserted between the 3rd and 6th, which are both white. Writing down the numbers then in Plato's order, we get

B. 
$$1 \quad 7 \quad 8 \quad 2 = 5 \quad 3 \quad 4 \quad 6$$

which gives another set divided in the centre of the 8 rings, where it is indeed coupled by the remark that the 2nd and 5th nearly resemble each other.

The respective speed of the rings gives them in their natural order from 8 to 1 which of course produces a similar result



It may also be significant here that the three which move at the same rate (5, 6, 7) produce the sum of 18, or half that of the whole series.

Note.—Series A gives a still more claborate figure if we invert the lines: thus

Order of width	I	2	3	4	5	6	7	8
No. of σφόνδυλος	I	6	4	8	7	.5	3	2]

τὴν ἐναντίαν τῷ ὅλῳ ἡρέμα περιφέρεσθαι] I. e. while they partake of the diurnal revolution, the sun, moon and planets alter their position in the sky from day to day,—the moon most rapidly, then the sun with Venus and Mercury, and so on. The peculiar apparent motions of Mercury and Venus are noticed in the Timaeus (p. 38 p); but this point is too minute for Plato's purpose here.

Republic N. 617 A

τρίτον δέ] τὸν τρίτον which is in all the MSS. except q, may possibly be defended: 'the third in order of reverse motion was the fourth':—but the ambiguity of this expression and the probability that τόν may have arisen out of πέμπτον, justify the rejection of the article.

15

σφίσι] To Er and the other souls, who are thus kept in mind.

ἐπανακυκλούμενον] 'in the reverse or retrograde revolution,' which it shares with the other six inner circles. This word is to be closely joined with φορφ ἰέναι.

αὐτόν] sc. τὸν ἄτρακτον.

ένα τόνον] is the reading of the best MSS. and of Proclus: 'one sound and one note.' Another reading, of inferior authority, is ἀιὰ τόνον.

C

Moίρας, κ.τ.λ.] The touches of the Fates regulating the motions of the inner and outer Heaven are obscurely symbolical. 'Lachesis, wise in past events, allots to each his life (she touches both motions); Clotho spins this in the present (touching the larger motion), Atropos (touching the inner circles) makes the destiny irreversible. Why does Clotho touch the outer circle? Is it because the present, as the moment of choice, alone from time to time lays hold upon eternity? Lachesis touches both alternately:—the past is unalterable but influences what is to come. Atropos, the future, not to be averted, is alone contingent, ἐνδεχόμενον ἄλλως ἔχειν.' So we may attempt to interpret Plato's symbolism.

ώσαύτως] 'In like manner,' i.e. at intervals, referring to διαλείπουσαν χρόνον.

'As soon as we came thither we were taken before Lachesis, from whose lap an Interpreter took lots, and samples of lives. After some warning words he threw the lots to each of us, but I was forbidden to take up mine. Then he laid out the samples and bade

617 D-619 B Republic X.
617 D619 B

the souls in order of their lots make choice of the lives which they desired to lead on earth?—Socrates observes by the way that of the whole of human existence this is the most critical moment. And in order to make the choice aright, not merely the life of good habits, but philosophy is required.

 $\stackrel{617}{\rm D}$  πρὸς τὴν Λάχεσιν] The allotment of lives is assigned to Lachesis,  $\stackrel{d}{\rm d} \pi$ ὸ τοῦ λαγχάνειν.

ἄλλης περιόδου θνητοῦ γένους] 'Another period of belonging to the race of mortals.' θανατηφόρου agrees with περιόδου,—'leading to death.'

E πρῶτος δ' ὁ λαχῶν...βίον] 'Let him who draws the foremost lot, first choose a life.' The order of words seems intended to produce the effect of tragedy.

ἀρετὴ δὲ ἀδέσποτον] 'Virtue is free to all' or 'is not the exclusive property of any.' In such allegorical fashion does Plato assert the freedom of the human will in a previous existence, as determining the condition of this. Cp. Tim. 42 D διαθεσμοθετήσας δὲ πάντα αὐτοῖς ταῦτα, ἵνα τῆς ἔπειτα εἴη κακίας ἐκάστων ἀναίτιος:—also Laws x. 904, in which God is described as, after consideration of their nature, placing living beings, in whom the connexion of soul and body, though not eternal, is morally speaking indissoluble, in a state of probation, and making their future character and dwelling-place depend upon virtue and vice, of which one or other is to be chosen in an instant.

The allegory is not to be too closely pressed: for while it is said below that the life chosen determines the character of the soul during that life, this is followed by the exhortation that a man should study philosophy, so that everywhere, as far as possible, both here and hereafter, he may choose the best life with reference to his individual character. Compare the parallel passage of the Phaedrus, pp. 248, 249, where in the first instance the law of transmigration is called  $\theta\epsilon\sigma\mu\delta s$  'Adrastias, and then in what follows the individual choice is mentioned incidentally:—Phaedr. 249 B  $\tau\hat{\phi}$  δὲ χιλιοστ $\hat{\phi}$  (ἔτει) ἀμφότεραι ἀφικνούμεναι ἐπὶ κλήρωσίν τε καὶ αἴρεσιν τοῦ δευτέρου βίου, αἰροῦνται ὁν ἀν ἐθέλη ἐκάστη.

ρ̂ιψαι ἐπὶ πάντας τοὺς κλήρους] 'Threw the lots so as to reach them all.' πάντας, sc.  $σφ\hat{a}_s$ .

έ δὲ οὐκ ἐᾶν] 'But him' (viz. Er) 'the minister did not permit to do so.' οὐκ ἐᾶν, sc. τὸν προφήτην.

ψυχής δε τάξιν, κ.τ.λ.] 'There was no definite character Republic in the samples of their lives: because the character was given to the individual by the life which the soul had chosen.'  $\tau \acute{a} \xi \iota \nu = \pi \hat{\omega} s$ έχοι τάξεως. Cp. supra 617 Ε ύμεις δαίμονα αιρήσεσθε: infra 621 D.

618 В

(

D

τὰ δὲ καὶ μεσοῦν τούτων I.e. 'some were in a mean state between health and sickness, riches and poverty.' So infra 619 A τὸν μέσον . . . τῶν τοιούτων βίον.

τίς αὐτόν, κ.τ.λ. depends immediately on έξευρεῖν. The idea of seeking out the truth is developed into that of finding the true teacher, which has been suggested by the word μαθητής.

τὰ νῦν δη ἡηθέντα All the various circumstances of life included in the previous description (supra A) of the βίων παραδείγματα.

μετὰ ποίας τινὸς ψυχης έξεως The whole of a man's present life is to be a preparation for his choice in the life to come. To this choice he is to bring with him a knowledge of the influence which circumstances exercise on character,—whether the circumstances in which nature places him, or in which he places himself. He must also know the nature of the soul, and how she may be made better or worse.

εάσει A return from the participle to the finite verb. Ven. Ξ E reads ¿av. Vat. r ¿áσειν.

άδαμαντίνως is a stronger word for βεβαίως.

πλούτων The plural is used with a certain grandiloquence to express the various degrees and kinds of wealth, cp. vi. 495 A. For ἀνέκπληκτος cp. ix. 577 A καὶ μὴ καθάπερ παῖς ἔξωθεν δρῶν έκπλήττεται ύπὸ τῆς τῶν τυραννικῶν προστάσεως.

.1

καὶ ἐν παντὶ τῷ ἔπειτα This truth is anticipated in the remark (vi. 498 d) half understood by Glaucon πείρας γάρ οὐδεν ἀνήσομεν, K.T.A.

Er proceeds with his narrative.— 'In hidding us choose, the Interpreter told us to use judgement; and if we did so, even the last comer need not despair. No sooner had he spoken than one of the souls came forward and chose the greatest tyranny; he was one of those who came from heaven, and had dwelt in a well-ordered city: but like others who were similarly overtaken, he had no philosophy. He lamented his choice when it was too late, but disregarding the word of the Interpreter, blamed everybody but

620 D

Republic X. 619 B-620 D himself. This was a typical instance of sudden reversal of destiny, due to chance and inexperience. The spectacle of the election was at once pathetic, ludicrous, and wonderful. Most of the souls chose the opposite of their former lives. The soul of Orpheus took the nature of a swan, disdaining to be born of a woman, because women had been his murderers. Those of Ajax and Agamemnon, in resentment of their wrongs, preferred the lives of a lion and an eagle severally to the life of man. Atalanta chose the life of an athlete, Epeius that of a woman cunning in the arts. Thersites who came late, put on the likeness of an ape; and the soul of Odysseus which came last of all, weary of travel and ambition, rejecting every other, chose the quiet life of a private man?

619 B καὶ δὴ οὖν, κ.τ.λ.] 'and according to the report of the messenger from the other world,'—viz. Er, supra 614 p,—'these were the very words of the prophet: "Even the last comer, if he chooses with understanding and lives earnestly, is destined to have an eligible life and one which is anything but bad. Let not him who chooses first be careless, nor let the last despair."'

We note the rhetorical art with which Plato first enunciates his 'whole duty of man,' and then confirms his precepts by recurring to the myth of Er.

εἰπόντος δέ | SC. τοῦ προφήτου ταῦτα.

ἔφη sc. δ "Ηρ.

С

είμαρμένην . . . βρώσεις, κ.τ.λ.] An apposition which may be compared with supra 616 D κύκλους . . . τὰ χείλη φαίνοντας.

τοῖς προρρηθεῖσιν] 'to the former speech'; supra 617 E aiτia έλομένου.

ἐν τεταγμένη πολιτεία...(D) ἀρετῆς μετειληφότα] Plato means to intimate that the life of mere habit is no safeguard of truth or virtue, under altered circumstances. Cp. Phaedo 81, 82, where those who have lived virtuously in a well-ordered community, though their condition is said to be comparatively blessed, are only permitted to attain some tolerable social state, whether of men or other political animals, such as ants or bees: their life is contrasted with that of the votaries of philosophy, who are meet to be the companions of Gods. See also vi. 506 c where he compares those who have right opinion without knowledge to blind men who manage to keep the straight path; also Meno 97.

ώς δε καὶ εἰπεῖν 'and as indeed one might say,' a qualification Republic of the seeming paradox that quite as many of the souls who made a bad choice came from Heaven as from underground. For kai, which marks the bearing of the new remark on what precedes, cp. Gorg. 520 Β μόνοις δ' έγωγε καὶ ὤμην τοῖς δημηγόροις τε καὶ σοφισταῖς ούκ έγχωρείν, κ.τ.λ.

Χ. 619 D

ούκ έξ ἐπιδρομῆς ] Cp. Herod. iii. 135, § 5 οὔτι ἐπιδραμών πάντα τὰ διδόμενα έδέκετο.

διὸ δη ... τύχην 'and because of this' (i.e. because of the experience of some and the inexperience of others) 'and also because of the chances of the lot, many of the souls exchanged a good destiny for an evil, or an evil for a good.' Innocence and happiness in his previous life are not sufficient to sustain a man in the choice for the future: a severer probation or discipline is required, which is that of philosophy. And, suppose a man to have had the discipline, even the journey from one life to the other is a heavenly pilgrimage: and the return hither, if he have only moderate fortune in his opportunity of choice, is not unblessed. But most men are under the dominion of habit, and few know how to profit by experience.

μίσει τοῦ γυναικείου γένους, κ.τ.λ. The dative is to be taken closely with οὖκ ἐθέλουσαν:—'because of hatred of the sex who destroyed him, not choosing to be born of a woman.'

620 A

В

ώσαύτως. εἰκοστὴν δέ This reading is confirmed by the quotation of Plutarch. The reader naturally asks what some of the copyists (who read εἰκός τήν, or who changed the reading into ώσαύτως, ώς τὸ εἰκός τήν) perhaps asked themselves: 'Why should the soul of Ajax have been the twentieth?' Plutarch, who also raises this question (Symp. Quaest. lix. 5), says that Ajax is the twentieth soul who appears in Homer (Od. xi) to Ulysses,—that is to say after excepting Elpenor, who is not worth counting. The real answer is that no answer is needed. Ajax is twentieth and Agamemnon twenty-first for the same reason that Atalanta is in the middle and Ulysses at the end of the series: that is to say, in order to heighten the effect of the narrative by the appearance of exactness, and to illustrate the working of the element of chance. The copyists may have been merely misled by the letters ws at the end of ώσαύτως suggesting the familiar phrase ώς εἰκός.

την δ' επί τούτω] sc. λαχοῦσαν είναι ψυχήν. VOL. III.

Republic X. 620 C πόρρω δ' ἐν ὑστάτοις ἰδεῖν] 'and that he saw far away among the last.' πόρρω refers to the place assigned to Thersites by the number of his lot. He is luckless as well as despicable. Odysseus, on the other hand, is unfortunate but superior to misfortune.

D καὶ ἀσμένην έλέσθαι] 'and took up the lot with joy.' έλέσθαι is co-ordinate with εὐρεῖν . . . εἰπεῖν.

τὰ μὲν ἄδικα, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. Phaedo 82 Λ τοὺς δέ γε ἀδικίας τε καὶ τυραννίδας καὶ ἀρπαγὰς προτετιμηκότας εἰς τὰ τῶν λύκων τε καὶ ἱεράκων καὶ ἰκτίνων γένη, κ.τ.λ. For δίκαια as an attribute of  $\theta$ ηρία cp. vi. 496 D.

620 D-621 D 'When all had chosen, they went each in order to Lachesis, and received from her the Genius who was to be the guardian of their lives. This Genius led them for confirmation beneath the hands of Clotho and of Atropos successively. Then all passed under the throne of Necessity; and when we had passed through the midst of it we came into the arid plain of Oblivion, and encamped beside the waters of Forgetfulness, whereof each soul was compelled to drink a certain measure, but some drank to excess. I, however, was not permitted to drink of it. But when, at midnight, it had thundered, and the Earth had quaked, and the souls had shot upwards like stars to their places of birth, I, without knowing how I returned to the body, opened my eyes at dawn, and found myself lying on the pyre.'

'And so,' adds Socrates, 'this Vision of Judgement vanished not, but was preserved for our instruction. By taking to heart its lessons, we may secure true happiness here and hereafter.'

620 D δν είλετο δαίμονα] Supra 617 Ε. δαίμων here = 'the genius,' or 'guardian angel,' or 'the double' of a man, as in Phaedo 107 c δ έκάστον δαίμων, ὅσπερ ζῶντα εἰλήχει: elsewhere one of the race of demi-gods or sons of God who are supposed to have governed and to govern mankind: cp. Polit. 271 D καὶ δὴ καὶ τὰ ζῶα κατὰ γένη καὶ ἀγέλας οἶον νομεῖς θεῖοι διειλήφεσαν δαίμονες: Laws iv. 713 D ταὐτὸν δὴ καὶ ὁ θεὸς ἄρα καὶ φιλάνθρωπος ὧν τὸ γένος ἄμεινον ἡμῶν ἐφίστη τὸ τῶν δαιμόνων. In the Timaeus, 90 Λ, the δαίμων of each one is spoken of as the rational principle, κυριώτατον τῆς ψυχῆς εἶδος, which God had given them.

Ε κυροῦντα] 'Ratifying' (participle of κυρόω), agreeing with δαίμονα.

λαχών] is masculine instead of feminine: the person for the soul. The same gender is continued in ἐφαψάμενον and διεξελθόντα, which are more naturally referred to the person than to the Genius, who, however, is the subject of κυροῦντα, ἄγειν, ποιοῦντα.

Republic X. 620 E

ἀμεταστρεπτί] follows up ἀμετάστροφα, and helps to mark the solemn moment when, their destiny having been made irreversible, they pass singly beneath the throne of Necessity. The words ἐπειδὴ . . . διῆλθον imply that they pass one by one. Each, when he has passed through, has to wait for the rest.

διεξελθόντα] The subject has changed insensibly from δαίμονα with which the previous participles agree, to the spirit, or the man himself. Cp. οἱ ἄλλοι.

621 A

διὰ καύματος . . . δεινοῦ] They are passing through the midst of the pillar of light.

καὶ γὰρ . . . φύει The plain of Oblivion is appropriately described as a barren wilderness, having nothing to remind us of this world.

σφᾶs] Er, in continuing his narrative, now includes himself in the company of souls. From 617 E,  $\hat{\epsilon}$  δὲ οὐκ έᾶν, he has been only a spectator.

οὖ τὸ ΰδωρ...στέγειν] Another suggestive image of forgetfulness. These words metaphorically describe the failure of memory to retain the things which have happened to men in a former state of existence. No vessel, such as the human soul, can hold the stream of recollection after it has drunk of the water.

τοὺς δὲ ἡρονήσει . . . μέτρου] The eagerness of the soul to forget past cares is the source of temptation here. The soul that drinks too deeply of forgetfulness is 'defiled,' infra c: cp. vii. 535 Ε ἡ ἀν . . . ἀμαθία μολύνηται. The wise seek to retain, if possible, some recollection of a former state of existence. For the forgetfulness of a former state cp. Phaedrus 250 A. This is the only allusion which occurs in the Republic to the doctrine of ἀνάμνησις, which, moreover, is rarely spoken of elsewhere—and chiefly in the earlier writings of Plato (Meno 81 ff., Phaedo 73–76, Phaedrus 250, 275).

πιόντα . . . ἐπιλανθάνεσθαι] The agrist denotes each several act of drinking: the continuous, or general tense, answering to ἀεί, describes the uniform result.

Republic
N.
621

(

αὐτὸς . . . ἰδεῖν . . . αὐτόν] The grammar reflects the strangeness of the situation, in which the disembodied spirit returns, and the man suddenly finds himself lying on the funeral pyre.

ἤδη κείμενον] The MSS are a good deal divided between the omission and insertion of ἤδη. It may be explained as referring back to the beginning of the narrative (supra 614~B) where the dead are described as being taken up for burial on the tenth day, two days before Er's coming to life upon the pyre.

καὶ οὕτως, κ.τ.λ.] 'And so' (by Er's coming back to Earth) 'the tale, Glaucon, was saved and has not perished, and may be our salvation, if we are obedient to it.' οὕτως is the reading of Par. A, the Cesena MS. (M), Ven. Ξ and several other MSS., εὖτος of Par. D κ (the representatives of Ven. Π), the Munich MS. q, &c. Both readings seem to require the article before μῦθος, which appears only in Par. κ. The reason of its omission may be the familiarity of the proverbial phrase μῦθος ἀπώλετο. (Theaet. 164 D, Phil. 14 A, Laws i. 645 B.)

πάντα . . . ἀνέχεσθαι] Supra 610 Β.

πάντα δὲ ἀγαθά] After ἀγαθά some more general word like δέχεσθαι has to be understood from ἀνέχεσθαι.

της ἄνω όδοῦ . . . ἐπιτηδεύσομεν] Cp. Theaet. 176 Β πειρασθαι χρη ἐνθένδε ἐκείσε φεύγειν . . . δίκαιον καὶ ὅσιον μετὰ φρονήσεως γενέαθαι.

ΐνα καὶ ἡμῖν αὐτοῖς, κ.τ.λ.] Cp. i. 351 E-352 B.

ωσπερ... περιαγειρόμενοι] 'Like the victors at the games, who go round to collect gifts.'

The words καὶ ἐνθάδε . . . πορεία, which are pleonastic, resume what has been said of the rewards of virtue both in this life and in the life to come (614  $\rm E$  ff.); and the continuous tense in κομιζώμεθα corresponds to the long period over which the recompense is spread.

ην διεληλύθαμεν] 'Which we have gone through,' i.e. described; but with a playful suggestion of our having made the pilgrimage ourselves.

## INDEX TO VOL. III.

## I. ENGLISH.

Accusative, cognate, 63, 101, 184, 194, 205, 212, 215, 238, 270, 288, 360, 449, 450, 465; in apposition to the sentence, 66, 188, 455; accusativus pendens, 72, 147; out of construction, 80; of reference, 147, 265; used adverbially, 159, 231. Achilles, the character of, 117. Actual, the, and the ideal, 250, 251, 295. Adam, Mr., on the Platonic Number, 366, 372. Adeimantus, 1, 302. Adrasteia, the Goddess, 213. Adverb, the, referring to the condition of the agent, 17; used in place of the adjective, 354. Aeschines, quoted, (c. Ctesiphont. 85, 35), 146; (de Fals. Leg. § 152), 222. Aeschylus, the Palamedes of, 329:quoted, Agam. (165), 354; (312), 6; (343, 344), 466; (1127), 430; (1633), 27:-Prom. (437), 408; (936), 213; (1008), S. c. T. (16-20), 157; (412-416), ibid.; (592), 64. Ajax; -why the 'twentieth' to choose a new life? 481. Akbar Khan, 254. Alcibiades, 282, 364. Alcibiades I., quoted, (127 D), 21; (135 ), 448. Alcinous, 468. Alfred the Great, 254.

Anachronisms, in the Platonic writings, Anacreon, quoted, (fr. 63), 87. Anacolatha, 11, 72, 138, 183, 199, 213, 465. Analogy of the Arts, see Arts. Anatolius, (Theolog. Arithm.) quoted, Anaxagoras, the disciples of, 459. Androcydes, 369. Anselm, 301, 463. Antecedent, vague, 85, 90, 92, 95, 98, 100, 101, 102, 105, 142, 158, 164, 171, 172, 173, 193, 197, 211, 243, 265, 273, 276, 298, 322, 355, 430, 440, 454. Aorist, the gnomic, 29, 145; of the immediate past, 47; use of the Aorist, 470, 472, 483;-Aorist participle with  $\gamma \epsilon$ , = 'not until,' 303. Apollo πατρώος, 176. Apology, quoted, (17 B), 286; (21 C), 182; (23 B), 28; (ib. c), 356; (26 C), 38; (27 C), 51; (34 D), 362; (35 B), 168; (39 E), 76; (40 B), 24; (41 C), 466. Archelaus, King of Macedonia, 405. Aristides, on the meaning of  $\dot{\alpha}\gamma\omega\gamma\dot{\eta}$  in rhythm, 134. Ariston, father of Plato, Glaucon, and Adeimantus, 1. Aristophanes, quoted, Acharn. (126), 240 :- -Eccl. (495), 122:-Nub. (126), 213; (131), 249; (449), 143; (783), 166; (893), 383;

(11745, 31)

Aristophanes, quoted, Ran. (23), 150; (66), 255; (82), 10; (96), 77; (100), 116. Aristotle, his discussion of casuistical questions, 13; his use of the τρίτος ἄνθρωπος argument, 36, 37; his distinction of goods, 58; his criticism of Plato's manner of constructing the state (Pol. iv. 4, \$ 12), 82; his account of θυμός, 93; his conception of άγνοια καθόλου, 107; on the three elements of utterance, 127: his criticism of Plato for retaining the Phrygian mode, 131; on the disuse of the more elaborate musical instruments, 132; misunderstood Plato's meaning in regard to the familiarities allowed to lovers, 139; criticizes Plato for confining office to a single class, 160; wrongly attacks Plato for 'depriving the guardians of happiness,' 162; on the size of the state, 169, 230; on the virtue of courage, 181; his psychology compared with that of Plato, 185; his criticism of [Plato's] error in conceiving the state as a large family, 189; denies that the same qualities are to be ascribed to men and women, 224; on the exposure of children, 232; thinks that the tie of relationship will be wanting in Plato's state, 237; does not mention the ἀνηταὶ βασιλείαι, his use of the word τιμοκρατία, 363; on the corruption of Sparta, 375; on the nature of dreams, 409. Aristotle, quoted, Ath. Pol. (c. 55),

Met. (i. 1, § 1), 256; (2, § 13), 97;

Meteor. (ii. 2, § 9), 289 :-

 $(6, \S 4), 312 : -(iii. 2, \S 24), 313 : -$ 

440; (7, § 17), 95; (13, §§ 12, 13), 409:-(ii. 7, § 12), 26; (3, § 2), 138:-(iv. 1, § 33), 266:-(v. 9, § 9), 63:—(vii. 13, § 3), 64:— (ix. 2,  $\S$  9), 172:—(x. 3,  $\S$  7), 428:-Poet. (c. 3, § 2), 120; (c. 4, § 12), 440:--Pol. (i. 3, § 4), 30; (13, § 9), 224:— (ii. 2, § 3), 235; (4, § 3), 139;  $(5, \S 14), 236; (\S 26), 160; (\S 27),$ 162; (8, § 17), 350:—(v. 12, § 8), 370:—(vii.7, § 2), 192; (16, § 15), 232:-(viii. 5, § 22), 130; (7, §§ 9-11), 131:-Probl. (xix. 48, § 1), 132:-Rhet. (i. 5, § 10), 144; (ii. 16, § 2), 272; (23, § 29), 7; (iii. 4, § 3), 246, 272. Aristoxenus, 127, 130, 134, 135, 342, Art, the relation of, to morality, 136; the power of the whole, the highest excellence of, 163:art of government, 37; of pay, 43; of measuring, 451 :art and imitation, 4.42 :-Arts, analogy of the, 15, 19, 35, 47, 54; 'excellence'  $(\dot{a}\rho\epsilon\tau\dot{\eta})$  in, 36, 54; measure in, 48. Article, the definite, pronominal use of, 117. Ast, 60, 112, 126, 200, 266, 271, 349, 380, 420, 429, 452, 470. Astronomy, 340, 343; connexion of, with music, 344; the astronomy of Plato, [Book X], 475. Astyochus, 375. Athens, music at, 342; the Solonian constitution, 363; the oligarchical party, 401:-Athenian law, compelling the nearest kinsman to marry an orphan maiden, 284. Attraction (in Greek) of the simile and the thing compared, 265.

Nic. Eth. (i. 1, § 1), 302; (6, § 1),

Bacon, Lord, 325. Badham, 39, 162, 344, 394. Baiter, 51, 74, 154, 221, 258, 298, 323, 387, 466. Barocci, 366. Beauty, absolute, 104. Being and not-being, 257. Bekker, 126, 183, 199, 203, 209, 221, 278, 289, 301, 380, 388, 389, 395, 413, 418, 447, 452, 459. Bendis, the Goddess, 3, 4. Bentham, 358. Bergk, 72, 73. Berkeley, 451. Body, the, in relation to the mind, 140. Boeckh, 8, 79, 473; on the date which Plato assumed for

the Republic, 2. Boswell, 'Life of Johnson,' quoted, 356.

Butler, on the permission of evil in the world, 102;

his doctrine that passive impression is in an inverse ratio to active habit, 457:--

quoted, (Analogy, Part i), 461; (Part i. c. 2), 465.

Bywater, Professor, conjecture of, 348.

Cadmus, 156. Callimachus, 447.

Casuistry, ancient and modern, 12, 13.

Cephalus, 1, 2, 6, 15.

Character and talent, 265;

effect of circumstances upon character, 276, 277;

greatness of character, 283.

Charmantides, 2.

Charmides, quoted, (154 B), 255; (155 D), 256; (156 A), 182; (ib. E), 141; (161 C), 38, 210; (ib. E), 83; (162 A), 17; (164 A), 27; (166 A), 29; (167 A, B), 426; (168 B), 196; (169 A), 190; (173 A), 363, 399; (176 B), 151.

Charondas, 386.

Chorus, the, a favourite image of Plato's,

Cicero, defective in his imitation of Plato's writings, 10;

borrowed much from Panaetius, 13; his remark on the withdrawal of

Cephalus from the argument, 15:quoted, (Ep. ad Att. iv. 16), 15:-(de Off. iii. 9), 62:—(de Orat. iii. 32), 7:—(de Rep. i. c. 43), 398:— (de Senect. c. 14), 10.

'Cities,' the game of, 168.

Class-differences, the evil of, 160:references to the lowest class of citizens, 164 (cp. p. 239).

Cleitophon, 2, 7, 30, 31, 32.

Cleitophon, the dialogue, spurious, 7. Clement of Alexandria, quoted, (Stromat.

v. 710, § 24), 468.

Cobet, 10, 24, 25, 28, 39, 70, 142, 166, 218, 239, 298, 323, 327, 337, 394, 418, 470.

Communism, Plato's scheme of, 228; not extended (?) by him to the lower classes, 239.

Comparative, the redundant, 66.

Constantine, 254.

Contradiction, a motive of thought, 332.

Contradictories, the truth of, 193.

Coraes, 391.

Corinth, 363.

Courage, the virtue of, 181;

in the state and in the individual, not the same, 191.

Craigie, W. A., note by, on the order of the planets, (Book X), 475.

Cratylus, quoted, (390 D), 449; (391 C), 142; (392 C), 222; (396 B), 307; (398 C), 243; (ib. E), 186; (401 E), 212; (405 B), 40; (407 D), 350; (410 C), 54; (ib. E), 441; (414 C), 269; (419 A), 183; (425 D), 454; (437 D), 45.

Creditor, the, should he be protected by law? 386.

Creophylus, 447.

Cretic (foot), the, in metre, 134.

Critias, 364.

Critias, relation of, to the Republic, I:-quoted, (46 E), 242.

Crito, quoted, (44 D), 148; (49 B), 22; (53 D), 26; (54 C), 165.

Croesus, story of his meeting with Solon, 405.

Cynics, the, 301. Cypria, the, 102. Cypselidae, the, at Corinth, 363. Cyrenaics, the, 301.

Damon, 133, 134, 172. Dante, quoted, (Inferno xi. 105), 444. Dative, the, after  $\delta \eta \mu \iota \sigma \nu \rho \gamma \epsilon \hat{\iota} \nu$ , 37; of measure or excess, 91, 420; of the person interested, 99, 145; ethic, 242, 274; of the instrument, 275, 422, 449; of reference, 275; of measure or comparison, 304; of circumstance, 420; of the occasion, 454. Davies and Vaughan, 333. Democracy, political indifference of the people in, 401. Democritus, 426; quoted, (Fragm. Moral. 128), 141. Demosthenes, 357:-quoted, de Cor. (241 Bekk., § 46), 52:-c. Meid. (541, § 84), 262:—Philipp. (1, 51, § 40), 454:-c. Tim. (730, § 95), 75. Descartes, 301. Desire, not always ' of good,' 195. Dialectic, unnecessary multiplication of the steps in, characteristic of Plato, 100; 'the longer method' (iv. 435 D), the nature of, 354. Difference and sameness, 192. Diogenes Laertius, quoted, 4. Diomede, the 'necessity of,' 281. Dionysius, the Elder, 363, 364, 405. Dionysius of Halicarnassus, quoted, Diphilus, a fragment of, quoted, 108, 180. Dittography, 83, 221. Division of labour, 185, 186.

Dorian Mood, the, 132.

267. Dreams, 400.

Drama, Plato's enmity to the, 123.

Draughts, game of, metaphors from,

truth and falsehood in, 96; morality in, 137; should not be made to serve political ends, 170; the education of women, 216; difficulty in, arising from loss of reverence, 355. Emerson, quoted, 355. Ephialtes, 401. Er, son of Armenius, identified by Clement with Zoroaster, 468. Ethics, difference between ancient and modern, 54. Eubulides, 369. Euler, quoted, 251. Euphorion, 4. Euphron, tyrant of Sieyon, 364. Eupolis used ἥσθημα in the sense of 'pleasure,' 428:—quoted, (Fragm. Incert. lv), 386. Euripides, the Palamedes of, 329; said to have visited the Macedonian court, 405 :quoted, Alc. (967), 71:-Androm. (1088), 227:-Hec. (1271), 247:-Heracl. (176), 159:-H. F. (871), 151:-Hippol. (102), 291; (469), 219; (953), 71; (1301-1303), 255:-Med. (1051, 1052), 113:-Phoen. (549), 39:-Troad. (1169), 405:-Fragm. 364, (11-17), 76. Eurypylus, 144. Eustathius, 122. Euthydemus, son of Cephalus, 2, 6. Euthydemus, quoted, (271 B), 45; (279 C), 275; (287 D), 22; (290 B), 89; (293 A), 250; (298 D), 390; (302 C), 67; (303 A), 213, Euthyphro, quoted, (2 B), 274; (4 D), 453; (6 B, C), 99; (7 D), 91; (15 D), 122.

Evil, the permission of, in the world,

the nature of, 207.

Earth-born race, the fable of the, 157.

cient, 95;

Education, study of the poets in an-

Falsehood, Plato's views on the use of, Fates, their manner of regulating the motions of the Heavens, 477. Feelings, the, opposition of, to reason, Few, the, and the many, 281. Ficinus, 41, 78, 119, 126, 346, 409, Flute, the, character of, as a musical instrument, 132. Flute-playing, introduction of a quarternote  $(\pi \nu \kappa \nu \delta \nu)$  into, 342. Forgetfulness, the River of, 483. Foucart, Associations religieuses, 3, 4. Freedom of the will, Plato's doctrine of, 478. Future, the, used as a stronger present, the Future Indicative, after a verb of fearing, 121. Genitive, objective, 61, 155, 286, 389; absolute, 5, 83, 229, 399; partitive, 9, 178, 264, 436, 471; poetical, 93; suspended, 107, 178; subjective, II2; after iepós, 117; dependent on a general word to be supplied from the context, 170; descriptive or explanatory, 187, of relation, 195, 408; of reference, 228; after φύσιν, 378; after κρίνω, 416; used adverbially, 449. Glaucon, 1, 57, 302, 376. God, growth of the idea of one, 102. Good, the idea of, see Idea of Good. Goods, division of, in Plato and Aristotle, 58. Goodwin, Professor W. W., 391. Gorgias, quoted, (448 D), 167; (450 D), 34; (451 C), 229; (ib. D), 431;

Fact and idea, the opposition of, 250,

Faber, 366.

Faesi, 39.

251, 295.

(463 D), 180; (465 D), 397; (ib. E), 79; (473 C), 59, 65; (480 B), 17; (*ib*. C), 153; (481 C), 22, 415; (482 B), 132; (ib. E), 270; (483 B), 60; (ib. 1), 288; (485 A), 268; (487 A, B), 53; (488 A), 25; (489 A), 235; (490 B), 278; (ib. c), 11; (491 D), 183; (ib. E), 46; (492 B), 161; (493 A, B), 430; (ib. B), 68; (495 C), 27; (ib. E), 121, 163; (497 B), 21; (500 A), 419; (ib. B), 50; (502 A), 18; (ib. B), 123; (ib. C), 120; (ib. D), 128; (506 A), 24; (508 A), 48; (ib. D), 116; (510 C), 282; (512 B), 239; (ib. C), 95; (514 A), 209; (516 B), 52; (517 C), 224; (518 E), 152; (520 B), 481; (521 E), 224; (522 D), 451; (524 E), 471. Gow, Mr., on the Platonic Number, 366, 371, 372. Gräser, 423. Gray, the poet, misunderstood a passage in Plato, 359. Guardians, the distinction between the, and the lower classes, not always observed, 159; their happiness, 162. Gyges, the story of, 61, 62, 464. dangers of the life of, 480.

Habit, the power of, 295;
dangers of the life of, 480.
Hardie, W. R. (Class. Review, iv. 182),
102.
Harmony, the nature of, 343.
Harpocration, 212.
Hegel, on Being, 257.
Heindorf, 55, 123, 452.
Hellespont, the, (i.e. the country adjacent), 142.
Hephaestus and Herè, legend of, 99.
Heracleitus, quoted, (fr. xxi), 304; (fr. cv), 93; (fr. cxv), ibid.:—
the followers of Heracleitus, 193, 310, 426.
Hermann, K. F., 28, 74, 75, 99, 179, 195, 221, 223, 258, 278, 323, 423,

Hermocrates, in the Timaeus, probably

the Syracusan general, 2.

456, 471.

Hermocrates, the dialogue which Plato intended to write, 1.

Herodicus, of Selymbria, 144.

Herodotus, 292:—quoted, (i, 45), 403; (74), 83; (114), 31:—(ii. 80), 172; (91, § 5), 421:—(iii. 14, § 12), 9; (36, § 5), 63; (57), 137; (135, § 5), 481:—(iv. 180), 241:—(vi. 86, § 16), 76; (106, § 3), 304; (130), 25:—(vii. 36), 158; (155, § 2), 410:—(ix. 49, § 2), 25.

Herrick, quoted, 255.

Hesiod, quoted, (Theog. 27), 96.

Heyne, 102, 113.

Hiero, tyrant of Syracuse, 405.

Hippias Major, quoted, (282 D), 380; (290 B), 163; (290 C), 38.

Hirschig, 10.

Hobbes says that power is the source of right, 30.

Homer, inaccurate citations of, by Plato, 101, 111, 113, 115, 116, 144, 171: —quoted, Il. (v. 394), 50; (844, 845), 464:—(xvi. 112), 365; (355), 25; (776), 403:—(xviii. 385), 7:—(xix. 147), 117:—(xx. 83), 188; (168), 25:—(xxi. 308), 66:—(xxiv. 486), 9.

Od. (ix. 219), 231; (425), 230:—
(xi. 174), 228:—(xv. 246), 9:—
(xvi. 97), 66:—(xviii. 340), 25:—
(xix. 163), 362; (573), 217:—(xxi. 141), 164.

Hymn to Demeter, (480–482), 71. Horace, quoted, (Sat. I. iii. 38), 255. Hypotheses, the ascent from, to first principles, 312.

Iamblichus, 345.

Idea of Good, the, 104, 306;

the descent from, to particular things, 312;

the foundation of the sciences, 340, 344, 346:—

Ideas, intercommunion of, 256; abstract ideas, importance of, in ancient philosophy, 339;

ideas of number and figure, 347; the Doctrine of Ideas in Book X, 442,444. Ideal, the relation of, to the actual, 250, 251, 295:—Ideals, the value of political, 251, 253.

'Idols,' the, of Lord Bacon, 325.

'Images,' the, 311, 315;

the 'images' of justice, and their 'shadows,' 321.

Imitation, the place of, in art, 442.

Imperative, implied, (μηδὲν καινόν, iii. 414 C), 156.

Imperfect, the iterative, 24.

Inachus, the 'children' of, 105.

Infanticide, not at variance with Greek feeling, 232.

Infinite time, a familiar thought to the Greeks, 292.

Infinitive, the epexegetic, 159, 212, 213;

after φαίνομαι, 162.

Ion, quoted, (533 E), 395; (534 B), 72, 128; (537 D), 259; (541 A), 175.

'Ionic' dative plural form, 11, 43. Ismenias, the Theban, 2, 23.

Judge, the, how far to have knowledge of evil, 149.

Justice, to be sought in the relations of men to one another, 64;

as one of the virtues, 185;

in the individual and in the state, not the same, 189;

the ideal of, 250.

Kant, his conception of freedom as obedience to law, 48.

Keble, quoted, 283.

Knowledge, is it 'brought to us,' or 'drawn out of us'? 322.

Labour, the division of, 85.

Laches, quoted, (181 C), 8; (182 C), 334; (185 A), 40; (186 B), 447; (187 A), 231; (ib. B), 171; (188 D), 153; (190 A), 56; (194 B), 185; (ib. C), 219; (195 C), 147; (200 A), 133.

Lang, Mr. A., on the ring of Gyges, 61.

Language, fallacious nature of, 301. Law, the complexity of, 174.

Laws, difficulty in the alteration of, 173.

Laws, quoted, (I. 624 A), 192; (626 C), 379; (ib. D), 39, 52; (ib. E), 183; (628 D), 39; (630 D), 34, 354; (633 D), 13; (639 D), 55; (642 E), 97; (644 C), 123; (646

D), 93. (II. 653 B), 61; (658 A), 421; (659 C), 224; (660 E), 148; (663 D), 458; (ib. E), 156; (664 C), 25; (ib. E), 127; (666 B), 112; (668 B), 454; (671 B), 112; (672 B),

(III. 677 C), 164; (683 E), 365; (691 A), 48; (*ib*. E), 88; (698 C), 400; (700 C), 128; (*ib*. D), 132;

(702 C), 35.

(IV. 709 E), 252, 267; (712 E), 54; (713 D), 482; (714 C), 28; (715 E), 121; (717 A), 389; (722 D), 57.

(V. 73I C), 107; (734 E), 245; (739 D), 228; (742 C), 386; (743 E), 262; (747 A), 328.

(VI. 753 E), 97; (771 C), 434; (776 B), 6; (781 A), 66.

(VII. 790 E), 151; (792 A), 96, 212, 280; (798 D), 187; (800 B), 171; (*ib*. D), 351; (803 B), 453; (814 E), 131; (817 B), 320; (819 D), 338; (824 A), 459.

(VIII. 829 E), 141; (834 D), 215; (840 A), 142.

(IX. 872 C), 470; (879 E), 238.

(X. 888 A), 436; (890 D), 255; (891 A), 177; (897 D) 303; (899 D), 257; (908 D), 72; (909 B), *ibid.*; (*ib.* E), 176.

(XI. 926 B), 131.

(XII. 944 C), 211; (949 A), 421; (958 D), 420; (967 C), 459.

Leaf, Dr. W., 464; quoted on Il. i. 39, 122.

Legislation, minute particulars in, 173. Letters, the elements (στοιχεία) of things compared to, 138.

Lie, the, in the soul, 107.

Logic, imperfect state of, in the Socratic age of Greek philosophy, 189.

Lucian, quoted, (Encom. Dem. § 16), 40; (De Salt. c. 80), 127.

Lucretius, quoted, (ii. 79), 6; (iv. 1160-1164), 255.

Luxury, modern declamations against, 167.

Lysander, 282, 375.

Lysias, (the orator), son of Cephalus, 2, 6:—

quoted, (pro Polystr. § 12), 382.

Lysis, quoted, (203 E), 387; (204 C), 48; (207 A), 284, 468; (*ib*. C), 170; (208 D), 38; (211 C, D), 56; (212 A), 39; (213 E), 263; (220 E), 179; (222 C), 431; (223 A), 10.

Machaon, 144, 148.

McLennan, on 'Lycanthropy,' 402.

Madvig, 32, 68, 126, 208, 239, 251, 323, 337, 373, 374, 379, 389, 395, 397, 424, 429, 430, 435, 459, 466.

Manuscripts of the Republic, cited, 11, 17, 19, 20, 25, 28, 29, 31, 35, 36, 42, 45, 47, 49, 51, 54, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 67, 68, 70, 73, 74, 75, 76, 78, 83, 84, 88, 91, 94, 96, 98, 99, 100, 105, 108, 110, 111, 112, 113, 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 126, 137, 142, 143, 145, 146, 148, 153, 154, 158, 163, 164, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 179, 181, 182, 183, 187, 194, 199, 200, 203, 207, 208, 200, 210, 212, 214, 217, 220, 221, 223, 229, 238, 239, 242, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 258, 259, 261, 263, 264, 271, 272, 275, 278, 279, 282, 286, 292, 293, 298, 299, 302, 306, 307, 308, 309, 311, 319, 323, 327, 328, 332, 333, 342, 344, 346, 348, 358, 362, 374, 375, 380, 381, 384, 387, 388, 389, 391, 400, 404, 405, 406, 408, 411, 413, 416, 418, 419, 420, 422, 424, 428, 443, 447, 448, 449, 453, 454, 455, 457, 458, 459, 461, 465, 469, 470, 471, 472, 479, 484.

Many, the, and the few, 281.

Marcus Antoninus, 254. Mathematics, Plato's view of, 312; their use in education, 320; their relation to physics, 340; the common element of the sciences, 344; not a science in Plato's sense, 346. Matter, 'contingent' or 'probable,' 257. Measure in the arts, 48. Megara, the battle of, 79. Megarians, the, 301, 426. Memory, 352. Meno, quoted, (71 B), 22, 56; (80 A), 21; (86 E), 307; (87 E), 77; (QIC), 440; (Q3 D), 242; (ib, C), 448; (94 E), 83. Metaphysics, the true conception of, 268. Metre, the elements of, 133. Middle Voice, the reciprocal, 226; used for verbs signifying a mental process, 337; special use of, 383. Milky Way, supposed to have suggested the 'Column of Light,' 473. Milton, quoted, (Comus), 430; (P. L. ii. 650), 435. Mind, the, in relation to the body, 1.40. Moderation, necessity of, in speculative philosophy, 356. Monro, Mr., on the meaning of tà èv τοις φθύγγοις τέτταρα, (iii. 400 A), on the Platonic Number, 366. Montezuma, 254. Morality, relation of, to religion, 103;-to art, 136; in education, 137. Morals and casuistry, 12, 13. Motion, in the philosophy of Plato. 341. Muretus, 20, 70, 74. Music, modern, as compared to ancient, exaggerated importance sometimes attributed to, 172; music at Athens, 342; connexion of music and astronomy,

344.

Nägelsbach, 345. National character, differences of, 192. Necessity, the Spindle of, 474. Neuter plural, referring to two words not in the same gender, 137. Niceratus, son of Nicias, 2. Nicomachus Gerasenus, 370. Nominative, in apposition, 239. Not-being, 257. Number, the Platonic, 366 foll. :the number which expresses the difference in happiness between the king and the tyrant, 432, 433. Numenius, 468, 473.

Obedience, duty of, 29, 30. Oblivion, the Plain of, 483. Oechalia, 447. Oligarchy, relation of, to timocracy, 378:-the oligarchical party at Athens, 401. Onomacritus, 71. Opinion, 259. Opposition, nature of, 192. Optative Mood, 17, 32, 63, 64, 66, 139,

150, 154, 181, 301, 318; without av in a relative clause, 179; after Future Indicative in an indirect sentence, 274.

Orelli, 249, 299.

Orpheus, the writingsattributed to, 72:-Orphic teaching in the myth of the Republic, 467.

Pain, the nature of, 427.

Palamedes, plays on the subject of, Panaetius, 4; indebtedness of Cicero to.

13. Panharmonic instruments, the, 131.

Parmenides, quoted, (130 E), 24, 138; (131 E), 219; (137 A), 201; (144 E), 171; (163 D), 452.

Passives, of verbs governing the dative,

Paul, St., quoted, (1 Cor. vi. 4), 44; (1 Tim. iv. 8), 153;his conception of evil, 207.

Pausanias, quoted, (i. 30, § 2), 5; (viii. 2, § 4), 402.

Pausanias, king of Sparta, 282, 375.

Pay, the art of, 43.

Peloponnesian War, 401.

Pericles, 401.

Perictionè, mother of Plato, 1.

Permanence in the state, the great object of ancient philosophers, 170.

Persius, quoted, (vi. 61), 6.

Personification of the argument, 263,

of philosophy as a maiden compelled to marry a tinker, 284, 285.

Pessimism, traces of, in the Republic,

Phaedo, quoted, (61 A), 328; (62 B), 254; (63 A), 302; (ib. B), 161; (64 D), 179; (65 E), 365; (66 B), 146; (ib. C), 146, 318, 430; (67 B), 258; (ib. E), 402; (68 B), 26; (69 A), 100; (ib. B), 326; (ib. C), 68; (70 C), 27; (72 B, C), 463; (ib. D), 75; (73 D), 17; (77 A), 302; (ib. C), 449; (ib. E), 107; (78 D), 229; (79 E), 211; (82 A), 482; (ib. B), 294; (84 C), 52; (89 B), 321; (103 B), 295, 443; (104 A), 332; (107 C), 460, 462, 482; (ib. E), 469; (114 C, D), 346; (116 C), 352; (ib. E), 319.

Phaedrus, quoted, (228 D), 22, 303; (230 A), 435; (ib. C), 94; (235 A),116; (ib. E), 168; (236 C), 5; (ib. E), 132; (237 A), 122; (238 D), 307; (239 B), 179; (241 B), 327; (246 A), 190; (247 D), 333; (248 B), 275; (249 B), 188, 478; (ib. D), 188; (250 B), 311; (ib. C), 335, 464; (ib. D), 306; (253 A), 253; (ib. B), 128, 177; (254 E), 408; (256 C), 431; (258 C), 239; (ib. D), 69; (260 C, D), 225, 279; (263 B), 346; (264 A), 339; (ib. B), 113, 389; (265 D), 226; (ib. E), 110, 220; (267 C), 7; (268 D), 293; (ib. E), 257; (269 B), 175; (ib. D), 7; (272 D), 339; (275 B), II, 69; (279 C), 229, 326.

Phalaris, 364.

Philebus, the, Idea of Good in, 306;

treatment of the subject of pleasure in, 426:—quoted, (11 c), 57; (13 c), 31; (ib. E), 361; (14 B), 28; (ib. D), 261; (16 A), 5; (ib. C, D), 304; (ib. D), 197; (18 D), 5; (20 D), 44; (ib. E), 64; (23 A), 204; (ib. B), 95, 106; (26 C), 59; (27 D), ibid.; (ib. E), 49; (38 E), 195; (39 A, B), 107; (44 C), 427; (50 B), 129; (ib. C), 119; (51 C), 123; (56 A), 135, 343; (ib. E), 334; (58 A), 348; (61 C), 158; (64 E), 304; (66 D), 426; (67 B), 301.

Philosopher-king, the, 37, 254.

Philosopher, the, attitude of, to the world, 287;

reasons why he incurs the hostility of mankind, 294;

his ludicrous appearance in common life, 319;

must have acquaintance with practical affairs, 357:—

Philosophers, the ancient, aimed at securing permanence in the state, 170.

Philosophy, Greek, place of casuistry in, 12, 13;

puzzles about the use of language, 33; ideal conception of art, 36;

the argument from infinity, ibid.;

the notion of a  $\tau \dot{a} \gamma a \theta \dot{o} \nu$ , 54:—

differences between ancient and modern, ibid.;

necessity of moderation in, 356.

Phrygian mode, the, why retained by Plato, 131.

Physician, the good, should have personal knowledge of disease, 149.

Physics, relation of, to mathematics, 349, 347.

Pindar, 225; visited the court of Hiero,

quoted, (Isthm. iv. 35), 132:— (Olymp. i. 28 foll.), 96; (vii. 21), 132:—(Pyth. iii. 55), 148.

Pirithous, 118.

Pisistratus, 401.

Plato, often introduces members of his family into his Dialogues, I; careless of accuracy in minute details,

2;

Plato, less precise than Aristotle in Plato, his metaphysical enthusiasm, 274; his use of logical terms, 14, 380; etymological fancies of, 28; his use of the argument from infinity, his notion of the 'philosopher-King,' 37, 254; the humorous element in his Dialogues, 49, 398; imitations of, in later writers, 55; his division of goods, 58; connects the argument by allusions to previous passages, 77, 464, 466; as a political economist, 85; prefers to seek for justice in the more complex form of the state, 88; on the permission of evil in the world, 102: on the 'lie in the soul,' 107; on the use of falsehood, 114; his relation to the poets, 121, 128, 445; his enmity to the drama, 123; his ideal in music, 135; on the relation of morality to art, on the relation of the mind to the body, 140; on simplicity in the art of medicine, 147; on the good judge and the good physician, 149; allows merit to rise in the social scale, does not, (as Aristotle supposes), deprive the guardians of happiness, his feeling towards the Gods of Hellas, his psychology compared with that of Aristotle, 185; his theory of female education, 216; his scheme of communism, 228; on the size of the state, 230 (cp. 169); does he allow infanticide? 231; carries the idea of unity to excess,

attempts in the Republic to unite the speculative and the practical, 253;

value set by him on the power of

abstraction, 264;

exaggerates the difference between the many and the few, 281; much under the influence of mere abstractions, 302; his meaning in the Idea of Good, does not distinguish between abstractions of sense and abstractions of mind, 312; his doctrine of conversion, 322; his theory of vision, 331; his treatment of physics, 340; does not regard mathematics as a science, 346: his conception of dialectic, 354; his succession of states, 363: abstract nature of his philosophy, his use of technical language, 380; the legend of his friendship with Dionysius, 405; his use of metaphors, 411; + seems to regard artists as mere imitators, 442; on the fallibility of our knowledge of sensible objects, 451; an enemy to sentimentalism, 457; teaches that souls are eternal, and limited in number, 463; reasons why he ended the Republic with a myth, 467; on the fate of children dying soon after they are born, 470; his doctrine of the freedom of the will. 478. Pleasure, Plato's doctrine of, 426: the nature of, 427. Plural, the neuter, with a plural verb. masculine and feminine, with a singular verb, 67, 236; 'magnific,' 382, 410, 479; referring to the singular, 383. Plutarch, on the question, 'Why the soul of Ajax was the twentieth to choose?' 481:-quoted, (De Aud. Poet. ii. 19 E), 100:-(De Educ. Puer. 3, 26), 98:-(De Mus. c. 16), 130, 133:-(Tib. Gracch. c. 21), 420.

Podaleirius, 148.

Poetry, the language of, 449.

Poets, the expulsion of the, 89, 128; study of, in ancient education, 95;

Plato's treatment of, 121, 128, 445. Polemarchus, son of Cephalus, 2, 6.

Politician, the, 325.

Politicus, quoted, (259 A), 221; (263 B), 32; (ib. D), 57; (262 C), 331; (267 A), 303; (268 E), 300; (271 D), 482; (ib. E), 300; (278 A-C), 188; (ib. D), 138, 257; (281 D), 51; (284 E), 462; (286 D, E), 300; (292 E), 282; (293 A), 271; (294 B), 173; (295 D), 72; (297 A), 170; (ib. C), 179, 209; (ib. E), 269; (290 B), 272; (ib. D), 89; (ib. E), 187; (302 A), 270; (303 C), 278; (308 C), 168; (310 B), 208.

Polybius, quoted, (B. P. iii. 57, 7), 55.

∘ن ن معامدام

Polydamas, 29.

Polydeukes, 326.

Population, limit of, 229.

Poverty and wealth, 166.

Practical life, the, and the speculative, 253.

Proclus, 132, 468.

Prometheus, invention of number attributed to, by Aeschylus, 329.

Protagoras, his use of the word  $d\lambda \dot{\eta}\theta\epsilon u a$ , 317.

Protagoras, quoted, (310 B), 172, 419; (ib. C), 210; (312 E), 34; (314 B), 123; (315 B), 39; (ib. D), 50; (316 C), 227; (ib. E), 144; (318 A), 241; (319 C), 152; (ib. D), 270, 280; (320 A), 290; (ib. D), 157; (321 C), 79; (323 A), 78; (325 D), 171, 415; (326 B), 135, 222, 289, 450; (329 A), 45, 211; (331 C), 336; (335 E), 78; (337 D), 61; (338 A), 113; (349 B), 423; (ib. E), 112; (354 D), 29; (359 E), 34; (360 E), 28;

Psychology, 201. Cp. Soul.

Puppets, the image of the, (vii. 514), 315.

Purves, translation of the Iliad quoted, (Il. iv. 218), 148.

Pythagoras, the successive births of, 369, 372:—

Pythagoreans, the, 310, 342, 344, 369, 426;

the 'Pythagorean way of life,' 447:—Pythagorean elements in the myth of the Republic, 467, 475.

Reason, and the feelings, 457.

Relationship, degrees of, in Plato's Republic, 234.

Relatives and correlatives, qualifications of, 196.

Religion, relation of, to morality, 103. Reminiscence, the Doctrine of, 483. Republic, the, second title of, 1;

scene of, ibid.;

relation of, to the Timaeus and Critias, i/id.:

characters of, I, 2;

the story that Plato made many alterations in the opening sentence, 4;

the First Book and the first half of the Second, chiefly destructive, 56; traces of pessimism in, 101;

no real place for the lower classes in, 224 (cp. p. 239);

an attempt to unite the speculative and the practical, 253;

indications in the work itself of its scope and aim, 303;

why closed by Plato with a myth, 467;

description of the heavenly bodies in, [Book X], compared with that in the Timaeus, 475.

Residues, the method of, 177, 185.

Richards, Mr. H., 377, 380.

Riddle, the, of the eunuch and the bat, 261.

Ridicule, the nature of, 216.

Ruhnken, 401.

Sacrifices, human, were they permitted in antiquity? 232.

Sakya Muni, 254.

Sameness and difference, 192.

Sauppe, 148.

Schleiermacher, 292.

```
Schneider, 19, 29, 31, 41, 54, 74, 182,
      214, 217, 222, 223, 250, 286, 349,
     369, 370, 373, 374, 381, 384, 389,
     406, 418, 420, 453, 454, 456, 470.
 Scholiast on Arist. (Nubes 651), quoted,
 Science, the reasonings of, (διάνοια),
     why inferior to dialectic, (vovs),
   the sciences all based upon the Idea
     of Good, 340, 344, 346.
Sentences, unfinished, in the Republic.
     165.
'Shadows,' the, 311, 315:
   ' the shadows of the images of justice,'
     321.
Shakespeare, quoted, As You Like It,
     (i. 2. 270), 406: - Hamlet, (v. 1.
     86-88), 459:- I Henry IV, (i. 3.
     246), 403:-2 Henry IV, (ii. 2.
     62), 280; (v. 1), 398:- Jul. Caesar,
     (iii. 1. 111), 291:-K. John, (iv.
     2. 28), 48:—Lear, (i. 4. 369), 48:—
     Macb. (ii. 1.25-29), 438 :—Sonnets,
     (103.9, 10), 48.
Sicily, the tyrants of, 363.
Sign, the, of Socrates, 285.
Simonides, 272, 405.
Society, the growth of, S1.
Socrates, the dialectic of, 16;
  his pretended awe for the poets, ibid.:
  his enthusiasm for an argument, 18;
  frequently employs the analogy of the
    arts, 19;
  irony of, 26, 44, 269;
  his ridicule of the Sophists, 28;
  his skilful treatment of opponents,
  his oath 'by the Dog,' 132;
  his sign, 285.
Solomon, Mr. J., 220.
Solon, the constitution of, 363; story of
    his meeting with Croesus, 405:-
  quoted, (Fr. 10.7), 73; (Fr. 20), 352.
Sophist, quoted, (216 C), 105, 294;
    (217 B), 211; (ib. D), 95; (ib.
    E), 440; (218 C), 220; (219 A),
    105; (221 A), 442; (224 B), 165;
    (228 A), 247, 266, 387; (229 E),
    38; (230 B), 267; (231 A), 276;
    (ib. B), 46; (ib. D), 89; (232 A),
```

130; (234 C), 445; (235 A), 195, 259; (237 B), 262; (ib. D), 260; (239 B), 60, 186; (ib. D), 24; (246 B), 65; (ib. E), 219; (248 D), 280; (250 D), 419, 451; (251 A), 465; (ib. B), 56; (252 C), 420; (ib. D), 228; (254 A), 186, 260, 321; (ib. B), 227; (259 D), 220; (262 C), 327; (263 C), 54; (ib. D), 44; (264 E), 125; (267 A), 126. Sophists, the, in the Dialogues of Plato, 24, 56, 277; ridiculed by Socrates for taking pay, 28, 41; their habit of making long speeches. 33; their use of the word ἀλήθεια, 65; according to Plato, only reproduced the opinions of the world, 277, 280. Sophocles, description of, in Aristophanes, (Ran. 82), 10; the Palamedes of, 320:quoted, Ant. (192), 165:-Elec. (384), 407; (685), 395; (1034), 175; (1278), 453:-O. C. (269), 302; (305), 397; (354, 355), 228; (574), 262; (809), 27; (1518), 41; (1636), 112:--O. T. (151), 353; (175), 328; (336), 64; (379), 213; (402), 139; (612), 154; (922, 923), 349; (981), 408; (1008), 302; (1129), 407; (1169), 252:--Phil. (17), 319; (324), 238; (1009), 276; (1031), 52; (1370, 1371), Trach. (358), 249; (1062), -378; (1131), 283:-Fragm. (719), 71. Soul, the parts of the, and the corresponding virtues, 182; the whole and the parts in, 192; how far can the soul be said to have parts? 202:souls not infinite in number, according to Plato, 463. Sparta, the decline of, 375; Spartan character, 375, 376. Speculative life, the, and the practical 253.

330, 427; (233 C), 20; (ib. E).

Stallbaum, 62, 74, 78, 82, 194, 199, 249, 260, 266, 277, 279, 289, 292, 404, 413, 426, 468.

Standing armies, evils of, 91.

State, the, final cause of, not distinguished by Aristotle from the cause of its origin, (Pol. iv. 4, § 12), 82;

Greek idea of the necessity that it should be limited in size, 169, 230;

the harmony of the state, 184;

the unity of, carried to excess by Plato, 235.

States, Plato's succession of, how far true to history, 363.

Statues, the colouring of, in Greek art, 163.

Stephanus, 31, 58, 105, 146, 275, 389, 405, 449, 468.

Stobaeus, 225.

Stolo, Caius Licinius, 377.

Subjunctive, the, in some phrases originally interrogative, 88;

interrogative use of, with  $\mu \dot{\eta}$ , expecting a negative answer, 452.

Suidas, 71, 148, 212.

'Summum bonum,' the, 54.

Superlative, the redundant, 66.

Symposium, quoted, (178 D), 16; (185 C), 68, 359, 468; (187 E), 92; (189 A), 114; (191 C), 25; (192 C), 118; (ib. E), 75; (194 A), 420; (ib. D), 457; (195 C), 152; (204 D), 444; (206 E), 46, 275; (209 B', 139; (ib. E), 346; (210 B, C), 139; (ib. E), 257; (211), 104; (ib. C), 141, 347; (ib. D), 320; (ib. T), E), 306; (212 A), 253; (214 A), 298; (ib. E), 275; (216 E), 26; (218 A), 255; 383; (219 C), 222; (222 D), 291; (223 D), 123.

Tacitus, quoted, 174.

Talent and character, 265.

Tautology, in Greek and English, 473. Temperance, the virtue of, 182.

Theaetetus, quoted, (142 B), 429; (143 A), 300; (144 A), 254; (ib. B), 266; (ib. D), 117; (145 A), 9, 292,

381; (ib. c), 236; (146 A), 349; (ib. D), 196; (ib. E), 61; (147 A), 27; (ib. A, B), 301; (ib. E), 332; (148 A), 433; (ib. E), 275; (150 A), 214; (ib. C), 26; (ib. D), 92; (151 B), 17; (ib. C), 39, 445; (ib. D), 265; (152 C), 17, 443; (ib. D), 261; (ib. E), 440; (154 A), 245; (ib. D), 79; (ib. E), 27; (155 E), 259; (156 B), 77; (ib. C), 59, 185, 234; (157 A), 187, 261; (ib. C), 223; (159 C), 152; (160 A), 195; (ib. D), 20; (161 A), 121; (164 C), 220; (ib. D), 329; (ib. E), 219; (165 D), 152; (ib. E), 270, 462; (166 C), 17; (ib. D), 34, 220; (167 E), 357; (168 B), 85; (169 B), 97; (170 A), 273; (171 A), 397; (ib. B), 31; (172 D), 94; (173 A), 266, 323; (ib. C), 252, 321; (ib. D), 113; (ib. E), 255; (175 B), 318; (ib. D), 323; (ib. E), 88; (176 B), 484; (ib. D), 69; (177 A), 326; (ib. D), 222; (178 A), 21; (179 E), 46; (181 C), 171; (182 A), 121; (ib. B), 399, 452; (ib. C), 42; (183 A), 145; (ib. E), 77; (184 A), 294; (ib. D), 190; (185 E), 95, 152, 328, 462; (186 C), 197, 236, 354, 428; (188 D), 260; (189 C), 93, 106; (194 A), 146; (ib. C), 97; (197 C), 80, 138; (ib. D), 138; (200 E), 65; (201 B), 256; (202 B), 349; (203 D), 93; (ib. E), 51; (204 E), 57; (206 A), 133; (ib. c), 258; (209 E), 302; (210 B), 50.

Themistius, 320; quoted, (Orat. xxi. 250), 265:—

(Orat. xxii. 279 A), 73.

Themistocles, 282, 364; story of, and the Seriphian, 10, 11.

Theocritus, quoted, (x. 26), 255; (xiv. 22), 25.

Theognis, 38o.

Theophrastus, quoted, 26.

Theseus, 118.

Thetis, 102, 105.

Thirty Tyrants, the, 2, 6, 401.

Thompson, Dr. W. H., 166, 217, 363, 399, 423, 429.

Thrasymachus, 2, 7.

Thueydides, quoted, (i. 21, § 1), 145; (40, § 2), 108; (82, § 3), 402; (140), 61, 125:—(ii. 37), 164; (41), 246; (ib. § 3), 454; (51, § 6), 165; (60), 192:—(iii. 10, § 1), 139; (12, § 1), 353; (56, § 7), 286; (82, § 4), 117:—(iv. 88), 55:—(v. 8), 335; (45), 293; (71), 282:—(vi. 12, § 13), 383; (18), 184; (73), 393:—(viii. 55), 177; (56) 409; (66) 379; (70, § 2), 404; (96, § 5), 18. Timaeus, the, relation of, to the Republic, 1;

description of the heavenly bodies in, compared with that in the Republic, [Book X], 475:—

quoted, (18 D), 230; (ib. E), 437; (19 A), 232, 339; (22 C), 340; (26 B), 97; (27 A), 64; (28 D), 11; (29 C), 313; (39 B), 329; (40 B), 473; (ib. D), 107; (42 D), 100, 478; (ib. E), 105; (47 B, C), 341; (50 D), 125; (59 D), 113; (68 C), 180; (75 B), 145; (83 C), 354; (86 B, C), 198; (87 E), 147; (88 C), 339; (89 D), 144; (90 A), 482.

Timocracy, meaning of the word, 363; relation of, to oligarchy, 378.

Timodemus, of Belbina, 11.

Torch-races, 5.

Triangle, the Pythagorean, 369, 371, 372.

Truth, the love of, a powerful instrument of education, 96;

the first of intellectual virtues, 351. Tyranny, history of, in Greece, 364.

Tyrant, the, picture of, anticipated in Book I, 39.

Tyrants, the, Greek feeling respecting, 364.

Tyrtaeus, quoted, (Eleg. iii. 5, 6), 148.

Unit, the abstract, 333.
Unity of the state, carried to excess by Plato, 235.

Valckenaer, 122. Van Heusde, 115. Vermehren, M., 138. Virgil, genius and skill of, 10:—quoted, (Ecl. ix. 53), 25.
Virtues, the, and the parts of the soul, 182:

the four cardinal virtues, 185.

Visible world, subdivisions of the, 309. Vision, the theory of, 331. Vögelin, 337.

Wall, the north, at Athens, 198. War, the usages of, 243-245. Warre, E., on the meaning of the word

ὑπόζωμα, 473.

Wave, the image of the, 219, 226, 241, 250, 252.

Wealth, ancient and modern ideas concerning the effects of, 166.

Westphal, 130, 133, 135, 342. 'Whole,' the idea of the, 255.

Wise, the, fewness of, 179.

Wolf, theories of, respecting the unsettled state of the Homeric text before the Alexandrian grammarians,

Words, use of, in early philosophy, 33. Wordsworth, quoted, (Prelude), 360. World, the, and the philosopher, 287.

Xenophon, his use of the word τιμοκρατία, 363:—

quoted, Anab. (iv. 1, § 24), 391:— (vii. 3, § 9), 278:—

Cyr. (i. 2, § 16), 143:—(ii. 4, § 16), 59:—

Hellen. (i. 6, § 14), 245:—(ii. 4, § 19), 246:—(iii. 2, § 23), 248:—(v. 1, § 3), 242:—(vi. 1, § 6), 375:—(vii. 1, § 35), 373:—

Mem. (i. 2, § 4), 146:—(iii. 1, § 4), 221; (4, § 3), 421; (ib. § 12), 419; (6, § 1), 376:—(iv. 2, § 2), 11:—

Oecon. (c. xvii. 8), 47:— Rep. Lac. (v. 9), 466.

Zeus Soter, 426. Zoroaster, 254.

## II. GREEK.

ἄγαλμα (ἀναγκαζύμενος . . . ἀγωνίζεσθαι περὶ τῶν τοῦ δικαίου σκιῶν ἢ ἀγαλμάτων ὧν αἱ σκιαί vii. 517 D), 321.

ἀγωγή (τὰς ἀγωγὰς τοῦ ποδός iii. 400 C), 134.

άδελφόs, metaphorical use of, 165.

άδέσποτος (ἀρετή δὲ ἀδέσποτον x. 617 E), 478.

**ἀδικέ**ω (εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ γ', ἔφην x. 608 D), 460.

άδρός, 241.

άδυναμία (καὶ τὸ τοῦ ἡλίου φῶς ἐπ' ἀδυναμία βλέπειν vii. 532 B), 345.

ἀεί (ὁ γὰρ Γλαύκων ἀεί τε ἀνδρειότατος ὤν ii. 357 A), 57.

άθλητής (ἄνδρες ἀθληταὶ πολέμου iii. 416 D), 160 (cp. p. 360).

åθλοs, 200.

άθρόος (ξυγκαθεζόμενοι άθρόοι \*οί πολλοὶ εἰς ἐκκλησίας vi. 492 B), 278.

άθυμος, 223.

αἴθων (καὶ ξυγγένηται αἴθωσι θηρσί viii. 559 D), 392.

αίρέω (ὁ μουσικὸς γυμναστικὴν διώκων ... αἰρήσει, ὥστε μηδὲν ἰατρικῆς δεῖσθαι iii. 410 B), 150;

(ὁ γὰρ λόγος ἡμᾶς ἥρει x. 607 B), 458.

aισθησις, as a hunting term, 93:—

(τὰ μὲν οὐ παρακαλοῦντα... ὕσα μὴ ἐκβαίνει εἰς ἐναντίαν αἴσθησιν ἄμα vii. 523 C), 330.

αἴσθομαι (†αἰσθόμεθα δ' οὖν, κ.τ.λ. x. 608 Λ), 459. αίτία (οὶ δὴ καὶ ἔχουσι ταύτην τὴν αἰτίαν iv. 435 E), 192.

αἰτιάομαι (τίνα οὖν ἔχεις αἰτιάσασθαι τῶν ἐν οὐρανῷ θεῶν τούτου κύριον; vi. 508 A), 305.

ἀκροσφαλής (ἀκροσφαλείς . . . πρὸς ὑγίειαν iii. 404 B), 141.

άλήθεια, meaning of, in the teaching of the Sophists, 65.

άληθής (τό γε άληθές x. 603 Ε), 453.

άλλά, expostulatory and deprecatory uses of, 4, 43:—

(ἀλλὰ μέντοι...τοῦτο μέντοι i. 331 E), 16:

(ἀλλὰ τί μήν ; ib. 348 c), 46 ;

ἀλλὰ γάρ, 242; ἀλλ' οὖκ, 277.

**ἀλλοῖος** (ἀλλοίαν τοι φήσεις αὐτοὺς δύξαν

λήψεσθαι vi. 500 A), 293. ἄλλος (ἰάτρευσίς τε καὶ ὁ ἄλλος χρημα-

τισμός ii. 357 C), 59 ; (τεκμαίρομαι δὲ ἐκ τοῦ ἄλλου τοῦ ὑμετέρου τρόπου ib. 368 B), 79 ;

(ὑπὸ τῆς ἄλλης ἐπιμελείας viii. 554 C),

(εὶ δέ τινα ἄλλην ἡδονήν iii. 390 A), 116:

(ἄλλο τι οὖν ... ποιήσεις ; i. 337 C),27; (παντὰ τἄλλα μεταλλαττόμενα iv. 434 A), 187 ;

(καὶ τῶν ἄλλων σίτων iii. 404 B), 141; (τῶν ἄλλων πολιτῶν . . . ἄριστοι v. 456 D), 224;

(τοὺς ἄλλους αὖ δημιουργοὺς σκόπει, κ.τ.λ. iv. 421 D), 165;

(τὰs δὲ ἄλλας φύσεις v. 453 E), 220;
 (... κατέχει ἄλλας κακὰς ἐπιθυμίας viii. 554 C), 384.

άλλότριος (πολλάς έχοντι σάρκας άλλοτρίας viii, 556 D), 387.

άλλως (ὀλίγης καὶ άλλως γιγνομένης vi. 495 B), 283.

άλουργόν, the colour, 180.

άμαθαίνω, 351.

άμέλει, as adverb, 167, 211.

αμιλλα (οὐκοῦν . . . καὶ τρίτου εἴδους τούτοις γοητείας αμιλλαν ποιητέον iii. 413 D), 155.

av, sometimes omitted before the agrist in confident prediction, 227;

with the future indicative and the future infinitive, 278 (cp. note on x. 615 D, p. 471);

omission of, 305, 319:-

(οὐδὲν ἄν σε ἔδει i. 328 C), 8.

ἀναγκάζω (καὶ δὴ τὸν ἄλλον . . . χορὸν τί δεῖ πάλιν . . . ἀναγκάζοντα τάττειν; vi. 400 C), 275;

(... καὶ ὁ ἄρτι λόγος καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι άναγκάσειαν άν χ. 611 Β), 463.

άναγκαίος (ή γε άναγκαιοτάτη πόλις ii. 369 D), 82:-

άναγκαίως, 335 (cp. note on ix. 574 B, p. 412).

ἀνάγκη (ἀνάγκην σωμάτων ἐπιμελεία τιθέντες ν. 464 Ε), 238;

(οὐ γεωμετρικαίς γε...άλλ' έρωτικαίς ἀνάγκαις ib. 458 D), 227.

άνάγω (οἱ εἰς φιλοσοφίαν ἀνάγοντες vii. 529 A), 338.

αναζωπυρέω (ὅτι . . . ὄργανόν τι ψυχῆς . . . ἀναζωπυρείται, κ.τ.λ. vii. 527 D), 336.

άναιρέω (τὰς ὑποθέσεις ἀναιροῦσα vii. 533 C), 347.

åναλαβεῖν, intrans. = 'to recover,' 241. άναμιμνήσκομαι, followed by  $\pi \epsilon \rho i$  (i.

329 A), 9. ανάξιος (... είς ανάξιον καὶ μείζον έαυτῶν ἀφικνούμεναι ἐπιτήδευμα vi. 491A), 276.

άναπετάννυμι (άναπεπταμένην πρός τὸ φως την είσοδον έχούση μακράν vii. 514 1), 314.

άνδρείκελος, 205.

άνέκπληκτος, 470.

άνεπιστημοσύνη (δι' άνεπιστημοσύνην τροφής πατρός viii. 560 B), 393.

άνεσις, 437.

ἀνέχομαι (ὡς ἐγὼ τῶν μὲν ἄλλων ἀνασχοίμην αν ii. 367 D), 78.

ανήρ (ανδρί λοιδορουμένην iii. 395 D),

άνθρωπος (ὥσπερ τοῖς θαυματοποιοῖς πρὸ των ανθρώπων πρόκειται τὰ παραφράγματα vii. 514 B), 315.

ανίημι (ὅταν δ' ἐπέχων μη ἀνίη ἀλλὰ κηλη iii. 411 B), 152;

(ή γη αὐτοὺς μήτηρ οὖσα ἀνηκε ib. 414 E), 157;

(καὶ μᾶλλον μὲν ἀνεθέντος αὐτοῦ μαλακώτερον είη τοῦ δέοντος ib. 410 E), 151.

ανισος (. . . ανισα τμήματα, πάλιν τέμνε vi. 500 D), 307.

άνομοιόω (δμοιούντων τε καὶ άνομοιούντων viii. 546 B), 368.

άνταγωνιστής, followed by genitive, 385.

άντικατατείνω (άντικατατείναντες λέγωμεν αὐτῷ i. 348 A), 45.

άντιλαμβάνω (καὶ ὁ Θρασύμαχος πολλά-336B), 24;

(καὶ αὖ φύσεις χρησταὶ τοιαύτης παιδείας άντιλαμβανόμεναι, κ.τ.λ. iv. 424 A), 171.

άντιπράσσω (αίροῦντος λόγου μή δείν άντιπράττειν iv. 440 B), 199.

ἄνω (τὸν ἄνω τόπον iv. 435 E), 192; (ἄνω που ἐκεῖ ib. 441 B), 201.

άξιος (καὶ οὐκ ἄξιον κινδύνου v. 467 C), 241;

(καὶ οὐδὲν . . . Φρονήσεως +άξιον άληθινης εχόμενον vi. 496 A), 285.

ἀπατεών, 213.

άπλοῦς (ἐπὶ δὲ ... άπλουστέρους ἀποκλίνειν viii, 547 E), 375.

άπλῶς οὕτως (i. 331 C), 13.

ἀπό and ὑπό, confused in MSS., 65; (ὅσοι ἀν θέωσιν εὖ ἀπὸ τῶν κάτω, ἀπὸ δὲ τῶν ἄνω μή x. 613 B), 466:-

άποκμητέον, to be read, with Bekker. for ἀποκνητέον (iv. 445 B), 209.

άπολαμβάνω (ἀπολαβών μέρος τι iii. 392 E), 121 (cp. note on iv. 420 C, p. 163).

απολείπω (ή σκιαγραφία . . . γοητείας οὐδὲν ἀπολείπει x. 602 D), 45 L.

άπολογέομαι (τί οῦν, ἔφη . . . ἀπολογή-(ξυνθήκας αὐτῶν [v.l.αὐτῶν] ii. 350 Λ),σει; iv. 419), 161, 162;  $(\tau \alpha \hat{v} \tau \alpha \delta \dot{\eta} \dots \dot{\alpha} \pi o \lambda \epsilon \lambda o \gamma \dot{\eta} \sigma \theta \omega \quad [v.l.$ αὐτουργός, 401. ἀπολελογίσθω] x. 607 B), 458. αὐτόχειρ (καὶ αὐτόχειρας [?] φόνου χ. ἀπολύω (οὐκοῦν . . . τά τε ἄλλα ἀπελυ-615 C), 470. σάμεθα [υ. Ι. ἀπεδυσάμεθα] χ. 612 Α), αύτῶν (ξυνθήκας αύτῶν ii. 359 A), 61. ἄφετος, 200. aπopos, 98, 219. άφίημι (... ξαυτόν άφείναι x. 599 A), 446. άπόρρησις, 57. άποχραίνω, 430. άφίστημι (τοῦ δὲ ἀληθοῦς πόρρω πάνυ άπτώς (ἀπτῶτι τῷ λόγφ vii. 534 C),  $\dot{a}\phi\epsilon\sigma\tau\hat{\omega}\tau a \text{ x. }605 \text{ C}), 455.$ άφροσύνη = unconsciousness, 318. άρα (πεισθείς ώς άρα τοιαθτα πράττουσι iii. 391 E), 118; βαλλαντιατόμος, 381. ("Ότι οίμαι ήμας έρειν ώς άρα...ποιηταὶ . . . κακῶς λέγουσι, κ.τ.λ. ib. βάσις, 128. βία (νόμφ δὲ βία παράγεται ii. 359 C), 302 A), 110. ἄρδην, 164. άριθμός (καὶ ξύμπας άριθμὸς ταὐτὸν (οΰς ἐπιμελεία βία κατέχουσιν αἱ ἀρχαί πέπονθε τούτω vii. 525 A), 332. viii. 552 E), 381; 'Αρμένιος (τοῦ 'Αρμενίου x. 614 Β), (ἐπιεικεῖ τινὶ ἑαυτοῦ βία κατέχει ib. 468. 554 C), 384. άρμονία, various meanings of, 127, 371. βλάπτω (... δμοίως δίκαιον άδίκω βλάψει άρρατος, 350. ii. 364 C), 70; (βλαπτόμενον ύπὸ συκοφαντῶν viii. άρρητος, 372. άρρωστία, (ii. 359 B), 61. 553 B), 382.  $\dot{a}\rho\chi\dot{\eta}:-\dot{\epsilon}\xi$   $\dot{a}\rho\chi\hat{\eta}s=$  beginning at the βλίττω (πλείστον δή . . . μέλι . . . έντεῦbeginning,' 46, 211. θεν βλίττει viii. 564 Ε), 401. άρχω (ώς εὐθὺς ἀρχόμενοι της πόλεως βλοσυρός, 350. οἰκίζειν iv. 443 B), 205. άστεῖος, 48. αὖ (δ τηρήσετον μή . . . πολὺ καὶ ἰσχυρὸν γελοίως (δ ήμεις γελοίως έπί . . . των γενόμενον οὐκ αὖ τὰ αὑτοῦ πράττη δημιουργών αἰσθανόμεθα iii. 406 C), iv. 442 A), 203. 145; αύξησις, 367. (ὅτι τῆ ζητήσει γελοίως ἔχει vii. 528 D), αύξω (καὶ αὐξόντων καὶ φθινόντων viii. 338. 546 B), 369; γενναίος, 46, 86, 362; (τρὶς αὐξηθείς ib. C), 370, 372. (ω γενναίε vii. 527 B), 335. αὐτίκα='for example' (ἐπεὶ αὐτίκα γέρων (καὶ γέροντες γιγνόμενοι ἄθλιοι προπηλακίζονται χ. 613 Ε), 467. *ἰατρὸν καλεῖς, κ.τ.λ.* i. 340 D), 34. γίγνομαι (οὕτε γάρ που γίγνεται οὕτ' αὐτός, referring to an indefinite word, αν μείνειεν ... νομοθετηθέντα iv. 44; = 'the well-known,' 361:-425 B), 172; (αὐτός τε καὶ τὰ ποιήματα βουλόμενος (ὅταν γίγνηται ii. 373 Ε), 91; έπιδείξασθαι iii. 398 A), 128; (εἰ γένοιτο, καὶ οῖος αν εῖη γενόμενος (αὐτός τε καὶ τὸν ἀδελφὸν παρακάλει v. 472 C), 251; (άλλα μην . . . είς ίκανος γενόμενος vi. iv. 427 D), 177; (ὀλίγου πρὸς τὴν αὐτήν iii. 397 B), 502 B), 296. γλίσχρως, 269.

γνωματεύω (τας δε δη σκιας εκείνας . . .

γνωματεύοντα vii. 516 E), 320.

(αὐτὸ δικαιοσύνην ii. 363 Λ), 67;

(αὐτοὶ ἀποκτενοῦσιν iii. 410 A), 150;

γόνιμος, 77.

γραμμή (ἀλόγους ὅντας ὥσπερ γραμμάς vii. 534 D), 349.

Γύγης (τῷ [Γύγου] . . . προγόνφ ii. 359 D), 61.

δαιμόνιος (τὸ δαιμόνιον σημεῖον vi. 496 C), 285.

δαίμων, 482.

δεῖ (πολλοῦ δεῖ . . . καὶ ποικιλτέον ii. 378 C), 99.

δεινός, 26 :--

τὸ δεινόν as a substantive (ix. 590 A),

δεξιόομαι (τί δέ ; δεξιωθήναι ; v. 468 B),

δέομαι (οὐ γὰρ ἔχει φύσιν κυβερνήτην ναυτῶν δεῖσθαι ἄρχεσθαι ὑφ' αὐτοῦ vi. 480 B), 273;

(οὐδὲν δεόμενος ix. 579 A), 420.

δευσοποιός, 108, 180.

δέχομαι:—impersonal use of δέξεται, 422.

δηλόω (τότε δηλώσει ὅτι, κ.τ.λ.νί. 497 C), 288.

δημιουργέω, with dative, 37;

(οὐ χαλεπός . . . δημιουργούμενος x. 596 D), 442.

διά, omission of, 179.

διαβάλλω (μὴ διάβαλλε . . . ἐμὲ καὶ Θρασύμαχον vi. 498 C), 291; (διαβάλλοντες τῆ πόλει viii. 566 B),

402.

διαβολή, 275.

διαγράφω (ταῦτα . . . παραιτησόμεθα "Ομηρον . . . μὴ χαλεπαίνειν ἂν διαγράφωμεν iii. 387 B) 111.

διαμπερές, 474.

διανοέομαι (άλλως πως ήγει διανοείσθαι πρός τοὺς ἀρχομένους i. 343 B), 39; (καὶ διανοείσθαι ὑς διαλλαγησουμένους

(καὶ διανοεῖσθαι ὡς διαλλαγησομένων καὶ οὐκ ἀεὶ πολεμησόντων v. 470 E),

διάνοια, 310: -διάνοιαι, 328.

διαπαύω (ώς δὲ διεπαυσάμεθα i. 336 B),

διαπράττομαι, as a neuter verb, 152, 431. διαπτοίω (i. 336 B), 25.

διάστασις (κεφαλης...διαστάσεις, reading of Par. A, iii. 407 C), 146.

διαστέλλω (ποία δὴ διαστέλλει; vii. 535 B), 350.

διασώζω (τὸ ἔν τε λύπαις ὅντα διασώς ζεσθαι αὐτήν, κ.τ.λ. iv. 429 C), 180.

διάτασις (κεφαλής τινὰς ἀεὶ διατάσεις iii. 407 C), 146.

διαφεύγουσα (reading of best MSS. for διαφέρουσα viii. 544 C), 362.

διάφορος (ή τε ταύτη διάφορος ... δημοκρατία viii. 544 C), 361.

διδάσκω (οὐς ἃν διδάσκη χείρους δημιουργοὺς διδάξεται iv. 421 E), 166.

δίδωμι (οἱ μὲν κακίας πέρι εὐπετείας διδόντες ii. 364 C), 70 ;

(τὸ ἐπιθυμητικὸν δὲ μήτε ἐνδείᾳ δοὺς μήτε πλησμονῆ ix. 571 E), 408.

διέξειμι (διὰ πάντων ἐλέγχων διεξιών vii. 534 °C), 349.

διεξέρχομαι (διὰ μακροῦ τινὸς διεξελθόντος λόγου vi. 484 A), 262.

δίκαιος, of animals, 482:—δικαίως (δικαίως αν είεν ν. 464 Ε), 238.

δίκη (δίκην δ' ἔχει vii. 520 B), 325.

διπλη (διπλη η οι άλλοι ἀσπάζονται αὐτά i. 330 C), 11.

διώκω (κατ' αὐτὸ τὸ ὅνομα διώκειν ν. 454 A), 220.

δοκέω (οὐδὲ δοκοῦντες τούτους ὁρᾶν viii. 555 E), 385;

(... παρὰ δόξαν τοῖς νῦν δοκουμένοις vi. 490 A), 274.

δόξα (τὰ δὲ . . . μηδαμόσε ἄλλοσε τείνοντα ἢ πρὸς δόξαν vi. 499 A), 291.

δρᾶμα, 214.

δριμύς (ὡς δριμὰ μὲν βλέπει τὸ ψυχάριον vii. 519 A), 323.

δρόμος (ἐπειδὰν τὴν ὀξυτάτην δρόμου ἀκμὴν παρῆ v. 460 E), 233.

δύναμαι (δυνάμεναί τε καὶ δυναστευόμεναι viii. 546 B), 368.

δύναμις, 366, 433.

δυναστεύω (δυνάμεναί τε καὶ δυναστευόμεναι viii. 546 B), 368.

δωμάτιον (μηδ' είς τὸ δωμάτιον ἐθέλειν '
ἐλθεῖν iii. 390 C), 116.

ἐἀν (ἐάν σοι ταὐτὰ δοκἢ ii. 358 B), 59. ἐάνπερ, emphatic (i. 332 B), 17. ἑαυτοῦ (δι' ἐαυτούς iv. 419), 161. **ἐγκώμια** (ἐγκώμια τοῖς ἀγαθοῖς x. 607 A),

**ἐθέλω**, applied to things without life, 83; (ἀλλὰ διαίτη ἐθελόντων ὑπακούειν v. 459 C), 229.

 εἰ, used with directly interrogative force in Homer and in Hellenistic Greek,

with the subjunctive, 420:-

(εἰ μὴ εἰ πάρεργον, to be read, iii. 411 E), 153;

(ἀλλὰ μέντοι . . . εἰ μὴ ἀδικῶ iv. 430 E), 182.

**είδον** (δοκείς...διαφέρειν αὐτοὺς ἰδείν vi. 495 E), 284.

είδος, 187, 409, 441.

εἴδωλον (καὶ μετὰ τοῦτο ἐν τοῖς ὕδασι τὰ... εἴδωλα vii. 516 Λ), 316, 318 (cp. note on 520 C, p. 325).

**εἰδωλοποιέω** (εἴδωλα εἰδωλοποιοῦντι x. 605 C), 455.

elev, various uses of, 34.

**εἰλικρινῶ**s (τοῦ εἰλικρινῶs ὅντος V. 477 A), 258.

εἶμι (ἐπ' αὐτὸ δὴ . . . εἶμι v. 473 °C), 252. εἰμί (δεσποτῶν πάνυ πολλῶν ἔστι . . .

ἀπηλλάχθαι i. 329 D), 10; (οὐκ ἄλλο ἔτι ἦν iv. 428 A), 178; (οὐ ταὐτὸν ἦν ib. 436 C), 193.

είρωνεία, 26.

**ϵἰs** (δόξαν **ϵἰ**s δύναμιν . . . οἴσομ**ϵ**ν ; ν. 477 E) 259.

είσαγγελία, 402.

**ἔκαστος** (παρ' ἔκαστον τὸ ἐρώτημα vi. 487 B), 267 ;

(ἐφ' οἶs \*ἐκάστας ib. 493 B), 279.

**ἐκεῖνος** (ἐκείνου τοῦ ἀνδρός ii. 368 Λ), 78;

(ἐκείνοις πρὸς ἐκεῖνα vii, 511 A), 311, ἐκκαθαίρω (ὅτι . . . ὅργανόν τι ψυχῆς ἐκκαθαίρεται, κ.τ.λ. vii, 527 D), 336.

έκκαίω :---

ἐκκαυθήσεται, reading of best MSS. (ii. 361 E), 65;

(τὸ τοιοῦτον κακὸν ἐκκαόμενον viii. 556 A), 386.

ἐκμυζάω, meaning of, in II. iv. 218, 148.
 ἐκπλύνω (ἴνα... μὴ αὐτῶν ἐκπλίναι τὴν βαψήν iv. 430 Λ), 181.

έκων είναι, 265.

έλκω (τό γε της άμινσου . . . φύσεως .

αν φαίμεν έλκειν . . . είς αμετρίαν vi. 486 D), 266.

**ἐλπίς** (οὐχ ἁμαρτήσει τῆς γ' ἐμῆς ἐλπίδος vii. 517 B), 320.

έμπίπτω (εἰς φαῦλόν γε αὖ . . . σκέμμα ἐμπεπτώκαμεν iv. 435 C), 190.

έμποδίζω with the accusative, 146.

ἐμποιήσας, conj. Schneider for ἐμποιῆσαι(i. 333 E), 20.

ένδεής, 369.

ένδύω (μάλιστα γὰρ δὴ τότε . . . ἐνδύεται τύπος ii. 377 B), 97.

ένίστημι (αύτον ἐκμάττειν τε καὶ ἐνιστάναι iii. 396 D), 125.

ένόπλιος (πούς), 134.

έντεῦθεν (ὥς γε ἐντεῦθεν ἰδεῖν iv. 430 E), 182,

έξαγγέλλω (ἵν' έξαγγέλλοιεν ii. 359 E), 62.

έξαιρέω (θεῖον μέντοι ... ἐξαιρῶμεν λόγου vi. 492 E), 279.

έξεπίτηδες (δήματα έξεπίτηδες άλλήλοις ώμοιωμένα vi. 498 E), 291.

έξις (ἀλλ' έτι μειζόνως τιμητέον τὴν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ έξιν vi. 509 Λ), 307;

(ἀλλ' δ ἂν μόνον δηλοῖ πρὸς τὴν ἕξιν σαφηνεία, κ.τ.λ. vii. 533 E), 348.

έπαινέω (... οὐδὲ τὰς δόξας δικαιοσύνης ἐπηνέκαμεν [al. ἐπηνέγκαμεν] x. 612 B), 465.

έπανακυκλέω (ἐπανακυκλούμενον τὸν τέταρτον x. 617 B), 477.

ἐπάνοδος (ἀλλὰ ψυχῆς περιαγωγὴ . . . εἰς ἀληθινὴν τοῦ ἔντος οὖσαν ἐπάνοδον vii. 521 C), 327.

έπέχω (ἢ τοὐναντίον ἄλλφ . . . έαυτὸν έπέχοντα iii. 300 B), I3I.

 $\epsilon \pi i = \text{on condition of, 240:}$ 

(εὶ βούλει... ἐπ' ἐμοῦ λέγειν ν. 475 A), 256 (cp. note on x. 597 B, p. 443); (ἐπ' αὐτοῦ ἐκείνου x. 600 C), 448;

(ἐπ' ἀδυναμία βλέπειν vii. 532 B), 345. ἐπιδέξιος (καὶ τοὺς κεραμέας . . . ἐπιδέξια

πρὸς τὸ πῦρ διαπίνοντας iv. 420 E), 164.

ἐπιεικῶs, 201.

**ἐπίκουροι**, distinction between the, and the ἄρχοντες, 157.

(ϊνα οί τε γεωργοί ἐπὶ τὸ ἀροῦν ἔχοιεν έπιλαμβάνω (νῦν οῦν ἐπειδὴ ἄλλης ἐπι-Boûs ii. 370 E), 84: λαμβάνει πολιτείας, κ.τ.λ. V. 449 D) (ἡ χαίρειν ἔχοντα ib. 357 B), 58; (πως έκτέον σοι τούς στρατιώτας, κ.τ.λ.; (τοιαύτης έξουσίας ἐπιλαβόμενος ii. v. 468 A), 242; 360 D), 63; άληθείας έχόμενον ii. 362 A), 65; (καὶ σοῦ ἐπιλαβομένου vi. 490 C), πυκυής διανοίας έχόμενον viii. 568 A), 101. (ἐπιλαβόμενοί μου ν. 450 Α), 211. έπινεύω (ἐπινεύειν τοῦτο πρὸς αὐτήν iv. 437 C), 195. ζητέω (ἰσχυρὰν καὶ μεταβολήν ζητεῖ τὸ ἐπιπέτομαι (ἐπὶ πάντα τὰ λεγόμενα ώσπερ τοιούτον iii. 388 E), 114; ἐπιπτόμενοι ii. 365 A), 72. (ύπὸ δὲ τῶν ζητούντων vii. 528 C), έπιτήδευμα, 92. έπιτυγχάνω (τὰς δέ γε ἀπλᾶς τε καὶ ζω (ή τε μή παθσαι ζώντα δυνατή viii. μετρίας . . . ἐν ὀλίγοις τε ἐπιτεύξει iv. 559 B), 391. 431 C), 183. ζώον, 223. έπιχειρέω (τοις έπιχειρούσι λέγειν iii. 386 B), 110. έπιχρωματίζω (τοις ονόμασι καὶ δήμασιν η, to mark surprise, 46; έπιχρωματίζειν κ. 601 Α), 449. indicative of indignation, 125; έπομαι (τῶν μέντοι ἔμπροσθεν προειρηto anticipate an affirmative, 423:μένων έπομένας ἀποδείξεις vi. 504 B),  $(\mathring{a}\lambda\lambda)^*\hat{\eta}$  . . .  $\mathring{\epsilon}\nu\theta\nu\mu\epsilon\hat{\iota}$  iv. 440 D), 300. 200 :-έπος (ἀπὸ τοῦδε τοῦ έπους iii. 386 C), η γάρ; expecting an affirmative, 52. ή (ὥστε ἀδύνατος εἶναι πολλὰ καλῶς ερεψα, meaning of, in Homer (Il. i. 39), μιμείσθαι ή αὐτὰ ἐκείνα πράττειν iii. 305 B), 124; έριον (καὶ ἐρίω στέψαντες iii. 398 Λ), 129. (η ἀλαζόνι ὄντι, κ.τ.λ. vi. 490 A), ετι (οὐκοῦν . . . ἔτι ἐν λείπεται [MSS. έλλείπεται] i. 327 C), 5; ήγεισθαι, with simple accusative and (ἔτι [sic MSS.] ἐγὼ εἶπον V. 449 B), without eîvai, 257. ήδύς (ὧ ήδιστε i. 348 C), 46. έτοιμος, 404; ήκεν, aor. of ίημι (i. 336 B), 25. (των . . . τὰ ἔτοιμα διανεμομένων ἐπιήλακάτη, 474. θυμιῶν ix. 572 E), 410. ηλιοs = 'sunlight,' 319. εὐδαίμων (εὐδαίμων εί . . . ὅτι οἴει, ημί: $-\tilde{\eta}$  δ' ős after έφη (i. 348 D), 47. к.т.л. iv. 422 E), 167 (ср. р. ήμισυς (μή τοίνυν ήμίσεως αὐτὸ κατα-212): λίπωμεν δηθέν χ. 601 С), 449. (ὑπὸ τῶν εὐδαιμόνων λεγομένων ἐστιάήρῶος (πούς), 134. σεων χ. 612 A), 464. ησθημα = 'pleasure' (in Eupolis' <math>Δημοι), εύεργεσία, 472. εψήθεια (πάνυ γενναίαν εψήθειαν i. 348 C), ήσυχία (καὶ ήσυχία ἐκείνων γένηται viii. 46. 566 E), 403. εύλογος, 456. ήτοι, 186. εύχερῶς, 70. εὐωχέω (καὶ εὐωχῆται εὖ μάλα iii. 411 C), θανατηφόρος (ἀρχὴ ἄλλης περιόδου . . . 152. θανατηφόρου x. 617 D), 478. έχω (ἡ οὐ πρόφασιν μεν τοῖς δειλοῖς έχει; θαρραλέος, 213. v. 469 C), 246; θαυμάσιος (ὧ θαυμάσιε ii. 366 D), 76 (ώς έχει τε κάλλιστον viii. 562 C), (cp. p. 219).

θείοs, 345 θεοις έχθρός, 52. θερμός (μή ἐκ τῆς τοιαύτης φρίκης θερμότεροι ... τοῦ δέοντος γένωνται ἡμῖν iii. 387 C), 112. θέω (θέοντες ήδη τότε έγγύτατα ὀλέθρου iii. 417 B), 160. θηρευτής (οἷον οί τε θηρευταὶ πάντες ii. 373 B), 89. θυμός, Aristotle's account of, 93. ίδέα (οὐ σμικρᾶ ἄρα ἰδέα, κ.τ.λ. vi. 507 Ε), 304:idéa and eldos, 441. ίδιος (ἐν ιδίοις λόγοις ii. 366 Ε), 76. ίδιώτης (ούτε πρέσβεις πρεσβυτέρων λόγους ίδιωτῶν εἰσδέχονται viii. 560 D), 394. ίδιωτικός, 277. ίερός (τὰς τοῦ . . . Σπερχειοῦ ίερὰς τρίχας iii. 391 B), 117. ίημι (ἡκεν ἐφ' ἡμᾶς ὡς διαρπασόμενος i. 336 B), 25. ίκανός (ΐνα μὴ ἐῶμεν ἱκανὸν λόγον ἢ συχνόν διεξίωμεν ii. 376 D), 95. ίσομήκης (ἰσομήκη μὲν τῆ viii. 546 C), ίστημι (αὖ σπουδάζει πρὸς ἄλλον τινὰ σκοπὸν στησάμενος, κ.τ.λ. v. 452 E), 217. καθαρός (μετ' άλλήλων οἰκεῖν ἐν τῷ καθαρώ vii. 520 D), 326. καθίστημι (οἱ καθιστάντες . . . παιδεύειν " iii. 410 B), 150; (ὧν καταστήσονται μεν τους άρίστους viii. 546 D), 373. καί, emphatic, 7; indicating surprise, 29; = 'also,' 284;as in  $\kappa \alpha i \pi \epsilon \rho$ , 292;—  $\kappa \alpha i \dots \kappa \alpha i =$ 'not only'...'but,' 351;καὶ δη καί, to introduce a special instance, 8 :καὶ μέντοι . . . καί, I.4 ;--

καίτοι γε, 200 ;-καν εί, 420;--

(καὶ μετὰ Δάμωνος iii. 400 B), 133;

(ὥστε καὶ κακοὺς γίγνεσθαι iv. 421 D),  $(\kappa \hat{a} \nu \ \delta \tau \iota o \hat{v} \nu \ \hat{\eta}^{\hat{i}} \ i b. \ 422 E), \ 168;$ (καὶ ὕστερον ν. 458 Β), 227; (ή †καὶ ἐὰν οὕτω θεῶνται vi. 500 A), 293; (καὶ μάλα, ἔφη, ἄξιον τὸ διανόημα ib. 504 E), 300 (cp. note on x. 614 A, p. 467); (καὶ λογίζεσθαί τε vii. 522 E), 329; (τοῦτο σὰ καὶ ἐμοὶ ἐρεῖς ix. 573 D), 412; (ή τι καὶ λέγουσι x. 599 A), 446; (καὶ α νῦν δη ἐλέγομεν ib. 609 C), 461. κακουργέω (ώστε . . . αὐτοὺς τοὺς κύνας έπιχειρήσαι τοίς προβάτοις κακουρ- $\gamma \epsilon \hat{\imath} \nu$  iii. 416 A), 159. καλέω (ἐπὶ μὲν οὖν τῆ τοῦ οἰκείου ἔχθρα στάσις κέκληται v. 470 B), 247; (αί . . . ἄλλαι ἀρεταὶ καλούμεναι ψυχης vii. 518 D), 323; (τὸ ὑπὸ τῶν τεχνῶν καλουμένων vi. 511 C), 313. καλλίπολις (ἐν τῆ καλλιπόλει σοι vii. 527 C), 335. καλός (οὐκοῦν . . . ἔτ' ἐν καλ $\hat{\varphi}$ ; ix. 571 B), 407. κατάκλισις, 172. καταλαμβάνω (ή που ὑπὸ φυγῆς κατα- $\lambda \eta \phi \theta \dot{\epsilon} \nu$ ,  $\kappa.\tau.\lambda$ . vi. 496 B), 285. κατασκευή (καὶ αἱ τῶν ἰδιωτῶν κατασκευαὶ της ψυχης viii. 544.Ε), 362. κατατείνω (διὸ κατατείνας έρῶ . . . ἐπαινῶν ii. 358 D), 59. καταφορέω (ἀμήχανον...λογισμόν καταπεφόρηκας, κ.τ.λ. ix. 587 E), 433. κατελεέω (μηδενὶ τρόπω κατελεήσουσιν iii. 415 C), 158. κατέχω (τὴν τοῦ κατεχομένου τε ὑπ' αὐτῶν . . . ψυχήν viii. 560 D), 395. κατηγορία (καὶ κατηγορίας πέρι καὶ έξαρνήσεως καὶ ἀλαζονείας χορδών vii. 531 B), 343. κατήκοος (καὶ τῆ πόλει \*κατηκόφ γενέσθαι

vi. 499 B), 292.

κείμαι (ούτοι κακώς σοι κείσεται i. 344 Ε),

πόλεως έκειτο iv. 425 A), 172.

(ἐπανορθοῦσα εἴ τι καὶ πρότερον τῆς

κελεύω (κελεύοντας τούτοις iii. 396 A), 125.

κινδυνεύω (κινδυνεύει οὐκ ἃν ἀληθῆ λέγειν x. 597 A), 443.

κλέπτω (κλαπέντας μὲν γὰρ τοὺς μεταπεισθέντας λέγω iii. 413 Β), 154.

κοινη (καὶ τοῦ κοινη ἀεὶ δόξαντος εἶναι βελτίστου λόγου x. 607 A), 457.

κομψόs, 94.

κρατέω (ὁ τῶν Δία σοφῶν ὅχλος κρατῶν x. 607 C), 459;

(... πολὺ κρατείται ἐν ἄπασιν ... τὸ γένος τοῦ γένους v. 455 D), 222;

(ὥσπερ ξενικόν σπέρμα . . . εἰς τὸ ἐπιχώριον φιλεῖ κρατούμενον ἰέναι vi. 497 B), 288.

κρίσις (οὐδὲ θεῶν ἔριν τε καὶ κρίσιν ii. 370 E), 101.

κυβερνάω (ὅπως δὲ κυβερνήσει ἐάν τέ τινες βούλωνται ἐάν τε μή vi. 488 d), 270.

κυλίνδειν, not κυλινδείν, the Homeric form, 113:—

(τὰ τῶν πολλῶν πολλὰ νόμιμα . . . μεταξύ που κυλινδεῖται τοῦ τε μὴ ὅντος καὶ τοῦ ὅντος εἰλικρικῶς v. 470 D), 261.

κυρόω (κυροῦντα ἡν λαχὼν εἴλετο μοῖραν x. 620 E), 482.

κύων: - Socrates' oath, νη τον κύνα, 132.

λαβή (ὥσπερ παλαιστής, τὴν αὐτὴν λαβὴν πάρεχε viii. 544 B), 361.

**λαμβάνω** (καὶ ἐἀν . . . ἐξ ἀρχῆς φύσει ἄθυμον λάβη, κ.τ.λ. iii. 411 B), 152.

λανθάνω (ἆρ' οὖν καὶ νόσον ὅστις δεινὸς φυλάξασθαι, καὶ λαθεῖν i. 333 E), 19.

λέγω (λέγεις . . . λόγων σύστασιν ν.  $457 \, \mathrm{E}$ ), 227;

(αἴ γε . . . λεγόμεναι ήδοναί ix. 584 C),

(τῶν ἐλευθέρων λεγομένων iv. 431 C),

(τῶν νῦν λεγομένων ἀληθῶν vii. 516 A), 318.

λείος (λείη μεν όδός ii. 364 D), 70.

λέξιs = the style (of a written composition), 120, 127.

λήξις δικών, 173.

λιστός (λιστοί read in some MSS. for στρεπτεί ii. 364 D), 71.

λογίζομαι (ώς δεινός ῶν . . . λογιζόμενος, reading of most MSS. iii. 405 C), 143.

λογιστικόs, use of, in Plato, 34:— (ἢ μηδέποτε λογιστικῷ γενέσθαι vii.

525 B), 333.

λόγος = 'description' (ii. 361 B), 64; = 'the subject' (of a written composition), 127;

= 'idea,' 'notion,' 288 :-

(ὁ γὰρ λόγος ἡμᾶς ἥρει x. 607 B), 458;

(ἐάν γε . . . ἐπὶ . . . λόγφ ἔργα τελῆται iii. 389 D), 115 ;

(ἐὰν δέ γέ τις . . . δμόσε τῷ λόγῳ τολμᾳ ἰέναι x. 610 C), 462.

λυγίζω (ώς δεινός ών . . . λυγιζόμενος iii. 405 C), 143.

μακρός (μακροτέρους ἀποτείνουσι μισθούς ii. 363 D), 68.

μαλθακόs, in the Homeric sense (μαλθακὸν αἰχμητήν iii. 411 Β), 152.

**μανθάνω** (εἴ μοι μανθάνεις iii. 394 C),

μαρμαρυγή (ὑπὸ λαμπροτέρου μαρμαρυγῆς ἐμπέπλησται vii. 518 B), 321.

μεγαλοφρονέω (... οἱ περὶ ταῦτα ζητητικοὶ μεγαλοφρονούμενοι vii. 528 B), 337-

**μέγιστος** (τὴν μεγίστην τῆς εὐλαβείας iii. 416 B), 159 ;

(τὸ δὲ δὴ μέγιστον ib. 407 B), 146.

μείζον='too great' or 'high,' 276.

μελιτουργός, 400. μεν οῦν, 387.

μέντοι, use and meaning of, 30, 199, 246, 442:—

(ἄλλο μέντοι . . . ἔφη ὶ. 332 Λ), 17. μένω (μενεῖ ἐπὶ τούτῳ τῷ βίῳ v. 466 C), 240.

μέρος (ἀπολαβὰν μέρος τι iii. 392 E),

μέσος (εἰς τὸ μέσον φθεγξάμενος i. 336 B),

(ἐν μέσφ τινὰ ἦχήν vii. 531 Λ), 3.42. μετά (μετὰ πολλῆς δαπάνης σπουδάζεται vi. 485 E), 266. μεταβάλλω (είδος γάρ καινόν μουσικής νῦν (ἐν τῆ νῦν ὁμολογουμένη στάσει ν. μεταβάλλειν εὐλαβητέον, κ.τ.λ. iv. 470 D), 247; νῦν δή, 337. 424 C), 171; (καὶ εἰς ἡδονὰς αὖ μεταβλητέον iii. 413 E), 155. μεταξύ, joined with a participle (i. ξυγγενής (... διὰ τὸ ... ξυγγενές τῶν λόγων vi. 494 D), 283. 336 B), 24; (τὸ μεταξὺ οἰκονομίας καὶ χρηματισμοῦ ξυμβάλλω (ξυμβάλλειν . . . οίς αν έθέλη іі. 362 в), 66. vi. 498 A), 289. μετεωρολέσχης, 273. ξυμβιβάζω (ὅτι τριττὰ εἴδη ψυχῆς διαστησάμενοι ξυνεβιβάζομεν δικαιοσύμέτριος (μέτριοι ἄνδρες iv. 423 Ε), 170 (cp. p. 409):νης τε πέρι, κ.τ.λ. vi. 504 A), 299. ξυμμαχία, 303. μετρίως, 263. ξυμποδίζω (τὸν δὲ γενναῖον ναύκληρον μή, after an interrogative, 48; ... ξυμποδίσαντας vi. 488 C), 270. in oratio obliqua, 162; ξυναναιρέω (ἐὰν καὶ ἡ Πυθία ξυναναιρῆ followed by the future indicative, vii. 540 C), 358. 213:ξύνδεσμος (ἐπὶ τὸν ξύνδεσμον τῆς πόλεως μη ού, 177; vii. 520 A), 324.  $\mu \dot{\eta}$  o $\tilde{v} = \mu \hat{\omega} v$ , 381. ξυνεθίζω (καὶ ξυνεθιστέον τὰ σκοτεινὰ μηδαμώs, with ellipse (i. 334 D), 21. θεάσασθαι vii. 520 C), 325. μηδείς (καὶ μηδέν εἰς τὸν ἔπειτα χρόνον ξυνίστημι (καὶ ἐν τοῖς ὅσα πυκνὰ . . . ii. 357 B), 58. ξυνέστηκε vi. 510 A), 30S. μητρίς, 415. μηχανή (τίς μηχανή; ii. 366 B), 75. ξύστασις, 227. μιμέσμαι, passive use of, 454. μιμητής (οὐκοῦν τιθῶμεν . . . πάντας τούς ποιητικούς μιμητάς είδώλων δ (τὰ εἴκοσι ἔτη ν. 460 Ε), 233. άρετης είναι x. 600 E), 448. δ (τὸ δ', οἶμαι i. 340 D), 34. μιξολυδιστί, 130. όδε (ή τῶνδε τῶν ἀσκητῶν ἔξις iii. 403 Ε), μοίρα (την ἐκείνοις Γἐκείνης, MSS.] μοίδδός (καθ' όδόν iv. 435 A), 189; ραν δμοιοτάτην έξειν ν. 472 C), 251. μων μή, 52. (δδῷ περὶ παντὸς λαμβάνειν vii. 533 B), 346. οίκειν, in a neuter sense, 164, 236, 359. val, with a negative preceding, 456. οίμος (τὸν αὐτὸν οίμον . . . πορευόμενοι νεανίας (τοῖσδέ τε τοῖς νεανίαις i. 328 D), ευρήσομεν iv. 420 B), 162. οιομαι (δήλον οιμαί σοι ήν i. 337 B), 27; (τὸν δὲ φιλόσοφον . . . τί οἰώμεθα; νεανιεύματα (νεανικεύματα, Paris A, iii. [conj. Gräser] ix. 581 D), 424; 300 A), 116. (οἴου γε σύ i. 336 Ε), 26. νεανικός, 173, 277, 399; (καὶ νεανικοί τε καὶ μεγαλοπρεπείς τὰς οίον (οίον οί γραφής . . . γράφουσι vi. .188 A), 269 :διανοίας vi. 503 C), 299. (οἶόν τε [al. τί ὄν τε] ii. 358 E), 60. νεάτη, ή, in the Greek musical scale, ομαδος (βίβλων δὲ ομαδον παρέχονται ii. 206. 364 E), 71. νευρορράφος, 164. νέω (νέων έν γη ή έν θαλάττη vii. 520 C), όμοιοπαθής (παραδείγματα δμοιοπαθή τοι̂ς πονηροι̂ς iii. 409 B), 149. νεωκορέω (ίερίν τι νεωκορήσει ix. 574 D), όμοιότης, 416. όμοιόω (όμοιούντων τε καὶ ἀνομοιούντων νόμος, opposed to φύσις, 60. voûs (εἰ νῷ ἔχεις vi. 490 Λ), 274. δμολογουμένως, 300.

ονίνημι (είπερ οδός τ' ην πρώς άρετην \*ὀνινάναι ἀνθρώπους x, 600 D), 448.

ονομα='a word,' opposed to  $\hat{\rho}\hat{\eta}\mu a=$  'an expression,' 34.

čπωs, with subjunctive, 437.

όρθῶς  $(τ \hat{\omega})$  ὀρθῶς λέγοντι iii. 397 B), 127.

όρμάω (ὅθενπερ ἄπας ὁ λόγος οὖτος ὥρμησε ii. 366 D), 76.

ὅρος (ὅρος ἐστὶ δικαιοσύνης i. 331 D), 14; (ὅρος αὐτῆς οἶός ἐστιν viii. 551 C), 379.

ős (δ πασα φύσις διώκειν πέφυκεν ii. 359 C), 61 ;

(ἐφ'  $\mathring{\phi}$  ἔμελλε . . . ἐργαζόμενος ib. 374 B), 91 :--

= olos, 390:-

ős Tis, 380.

ős, archaic form of the Possessive Pronoun, used by Plato (τὰ α δάκρνα iii. 394 A), 122.

οστρακον (δστράκου περιστροφή vii. 521 C), 327.

ὅταν, probably never followed by the optative, 154.

οὐδαμῶs, followed by ἀλλά, 233, 234 (cp. 250).

οὐδέ (ὅτι οὐδ' ἀδικήσομεν τοὺς παρ' ἡμῖν φιλοσόφους vii. 520 A), 325.

οὐδός (δ δὴ ἐπὶ γήρασς οὐδῷ φασὶν εἶναι οἱ ποιηταί i. 328 E), 9.

oùv, 407.

οὔπω (ἀλλ' οὖκ ἄν πω πάνυ γε μέγα τι εἴη ii. 370 D), 84.

οὖτος, ' deictic' use of, 4;—
οὖτος ἀνήρ, 302;—

(τούτου ἐπ' εὐλαβεία vii. 539 D), 357:—

οῦτω[s], employed to add emphasis, 5;—
(ἀπλῶς οῦτως i. 331 C), 13;

(ώς Θησεὺς... Πειρίθους τε... ὥρμησαν οὕτως ἐπὶ δεινὰς ἁρπαγάς iii. 391 C), 118.

όφείλω (τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ λόγου ὀφειλόμενα ἀκοῦσαι x. 614 A), 468.

όφλισκάνω (οὔ τι γέλωτα ὀφλεῖν ν. 450 Ε), 213.

όχλώδης, 437.

ὄψις (ὁπόθεν ἃν αἰτοῖς . . . πρὸς ὄψιν . . . τι προσβάλη iii. 401 C), 137.

όψον (ἄνευ όψου . . . ποιείς τοὺς ἄνδρας έστιωμένους ii. 372 C), 87. παγίως, 187, 261.

πάθος (τὸ πάθος τῶν οὕτω λόγων ἄπτομένων vii, 530 A), 356;

(μετὰ ταῦτα δὴ . . . ἀπείκασον τοιούτω πάθει τὴν ἡμετέραν φύσιν ἐὐ. 514 A), 314;

(τὰ τῆς Νιόβης πάθη ii. 380 A), 102. παιδαγωγέω (. . . αὐτοὶ ὰν ἐπαιδαγώγουν

x. 600 E), 448. παιδαγωγικός (τῆ παιδαγώγικῆ τῶν νοσημάτων . . . ἰατρικῆ iii. 406 A), 144.

παιδαγωγός (παισί τε καὶ παιδαγωγοῖς iii. 397 D), 128.

παιδεύω (οὕτε γὰρ γίγνεται . . . ἀλλοῖον ηθος πρὸς ἀρετὴν παρὰ τὴν τούτων παιδείαν πεπαιδευμένον vi. 492 E), 279.

παίζω (τὸ τῶν παιζόντων iv. 422 E), 167, παῖς (καὶ οἱ θεῶν παῖδες ποιηταί ii. 366 B), 75;

(οὐκοῦν ϵὐθὺς ἐν παισὶν [MSS. πᾶσιν], κ.τ.λ. vi. 494 B), 282;

(ὧ παίδες ἐκείνου τοῦ ἀνδρός ii. 368 A), 78.

παναρμόνιον (καὶ ψόξη τῆ ἐν τῷ παναρμονίω . . . πεποιημένη iii. 404 D), 142.

**πάντωs** (οὐ πάντωs [MSS.] δῷαστον vi. 497 D), 289 ;

(πάντως αὐτὸ οὐκ ὀλιγάκις ἀκήκοας ib. 504 Ε), 300.

πάνυ (οὐ πάνυ... προσέσχον τὸν νοῦν ii. 376 A), 94;

(οὐ πάνυ . . . ἔμαθον iv. 429 C), 180; (οὐ γὰρ πάνυ γε v. 474 D), 255;

(οὐ πάνυ . . . ἔτυχες οὖ λέγω vii. 523 B), 330.

παρά, in composition = 'unawares,'

(βεβαιώσασθαι παρὰ τοῦ λόγου v. 461 E), 235:—

(παρὰ τῷ δημίῳ iv. 439 E), 198 :— (ὑπὸ τοῦ λόγου τοῦ παρ' αὑτῷ ἀνακληθείς ib. 440 D), 199 :—

(παρὰ πάντα ib. 424 B), 171.

παραβάλλω (ἀνάγκη τις ... παραβάλη [inferior reading] vi. 499 B), 292; (ὅταν παραβάλλωσιν ἀλλήλοις viii. 556 C), 387.

παραδύομαι (ή γοῦν παρανομία . . . λανθάνει παραδυομένη iv. 424 D), 172. παραίρεσις (καὶ τῆς οὐσίας παραιρέσεις ix. 573 E), 412.

παρακαλέω (α νῦν ὑμεῖς παρακαλοῦντες, κ.τ.λ. v. 450 A), 211.

παρακινείν, intransitive use of, 358, 438;

distinguished from ὑποκινεῖν, 411.

παραλλάττω (καὶ οὐδαμῆ οὐδὲν παραλλάττειν vii. 530 B), 340.

παραμυθέομαι (ώστε εθ με παραμυθεί v. 451 A), 214.

παρασκευάζω (είς πύκτης ώς οίόν τε κάλλιστα έπὶ τοῦτο παρεσκευασμένος, к.т.л. iv. 422 В), 167.

παρατείνειν, 335, 366.

παρέχω, with the infinitive, 151;

(καὶ μὴν καὶ ὄργανά γε μὴ ἔχων παρέχεσθαι ὑπὸ πενίας iv. 421 D), 166.

παs (πασά τις ταραχή x. 602 C), 451;

(ἐν παντὶ [sc. φόβω] ix. 578 E), 419; (ἐν παντὶ κακοῦ ib. 579 B), 420;

(έγω . . . κινδυνεύω έκτος των πάντων είναι iii. 398 C), 129;

(ὑπὸ πάντων πολεμίων ix. 570 B), 420; (ὁ διὰ πάντων κριτής ib. 580 B), 421; (διαβολή δ' έν πασι πολλή vi. 500 D), 294;

(δίψαι ἐπὶ πάντας τοὺς κλήρους χ. 617 E), 478.

πεινάω (διὰ \*τοῦ πεινῆν, κ.τ.λ. iv. 440 C), 199;

(καὶ πεπεινηκὸς τοῦ δακρῦσαι 606 A), 456.

πένης (κολακείας τε πλουσίων πένητες ν. 465 C), 239.

περαίνω (ἆρ' οὖν οὐχὶ ήτοι ἁπλῆ διηγήσει η δια μιμήσεως γιγνομένη . . . περαίνουσιν; iii. 392 D), 121.

περί after ἀναμιμνήσκομαι (i. 329 A),

(ὁ περὶ τοῦ τοιούτου λόγου λέγων ii. 360 D), 63;

(... †περὶ κάτω στρέφουσι τὴν τῆς ψυχης όψιν vii. 519 B), 323.

περιαγείρω (ώσπερ οἱ νικηφόροι περιαγειρόμενοι x. 621 D), 484.

περιβάλλω (πρίν αν . . . ανάγκη τις έκ τύχης περιβάλη vi. 499 B), 292.

περινοστέω (περινοστεί ώσπερ ήρως viii. 558 A), 389.

περίοδος, 372.

περιοριζομένοις, the old reading (iii. 392 A), II9.

περιφορά, 474.

 $\pi \hat{\eta}$ , followed by  $\hat{\eta}$ , 94;

= 'at any point,' 267. πήγνυμι (. . . καὶ ἡ σοφία αὐτοῦ τούτω

άρέσκειν πέπηγεν Χ. 605 Λ), 454. πηκτίς, 132.

πιστεύω (ποτε ἀκούσας τι πιστεύω τούτω iv. 439 E), 198.

πίστις, 312, 450.

πλανάω (οί δε . . . εν πολλοίς καὶ πάντως ἴσχουσι πλανώμενοι vi. 484 B), 263.

πλάττω (καὶ πλάττειν τὰς ψυχὰς αὐτῶν τοις μύθοις ii. 377 C) 98;

(μάλιστα γὰρ δὴ τότε πλάττεται ib. 377 B), 97.

πλείστος (καὶ πλείστον ἐν τῆ ψυχῆ τύραννον έχη ix. 575 D), 415.

 $\pi\lambda\hat{\eta}\theta$ os ( $\dot{\omega}$ s  $\dot{\epsilon}\pi\dot{\iota}$   $\tau\dot{o}$   $\pi\lambda\hat{\eta}\theta$ os ii. 364 A), 69; (τὸ δὲ πληθος τῶν γάμων ἐπὶ τοῖς ἄρχουσι ποιήσομεν ν. 460 Α), 229.

πλωϊζω, introduced by Plato into a citation from Homer (Il. xxiv. 12 πλωίζοντ' ἀλύοντ' ἐπὶ θῖν' άλὸς άτρυγέτοιο), 113.

ποιέω (τί οἰόμεθα . . . ψυχὰς ποιείν; ii. 365 A), 72;

(η οὐχ οὕτω ποιείτε; ν. 474 D), 255; (τὸν δὲ φιλόσοφον, ἦν δ' ἐγώ, ποιώμεθα [sic MSS.], ix. 581 D), 424;

(οἱ φιλοσοφώτατοι ποιούμενοι vi. 498 A), 289 (cp. notes on vii. 538 C, p. 355; ix. 573 B, p. 411; ib. 574 D, p. 413):-

use of the perfect middle, 444.

ποίημα (αὐτός τε καὶ τὰ ποιήματα iii. 398 A), 128.

ποιητής = ' maker,' 442.

ποικίλλω (πολλοῦ δεῖ . . . καὶ ποικιλτέον ii. 378 c), 99.

ποίος (ποι' ἐπεκτησάμην; i. 330 B), II. πολιορκέω (ίνα μὴ ἔρημα τὰ τοῦ ἐτέρου λόγου πολιορκήται v. 453 A), 210.

πολλάκις (καὶ τοῦτο ποιοῖ πολλάκις ἐν ήλίω τε καὶ πνίγει iv. 422 C), 167; (μή πολλάκις τὸν ποιητήν τις οἴηται λέγειν, κ.τ.λ. ib. 424 B), 171 (cp. note on ix. 584 B, p. 428).

πολλαπλασίωσις (τελειωθείση τῆ πολλαπλασιώσει ix. 587 Ε), 433.

**πολύς** (καὶ πολὺ τοῦτο τὸ βημα viii. 562 C), 397;

(μετὰ φαύλων τῶν πολλῶν ib. 567 D),

(καὶ οίτινες πολλών [Par. Α πολλοί] θανάτων ήσαν αίτιοι x. 615 B), 470.

πόρρω, Platonic use of, 445:— (πόρρω δ' ἐν ὑστάτοις ἰδεῖν τὴν [ψυχὴν]

΄... Θερσίτου x. 620 C), 482. πόρρωθεν (τὰ δὲ κομψὰ ... πόρρωθεν ἀσπαζομένων vi. 490 A), 201.

πότερος, 198, 292.

**που**, an indefinite adverb of place, 445. **πρόειμι** (προϊούσης δὲ τῆς ἡλικίας, ἐν ἡ, κ.τ.λ. vi. 498 Β), 289.

προήσθησις, 428.

προΐστημι (καὶ τούτω . . . προστήσετον [sic MSS.] iv. 442 A), 203.

**προμήκηs** (προμήκη δέ viii. 546 C), 371. **πρόs** = 'in comparison with,' 364;

adverbial use of, 390:-

(ὅ τι κάλλιστα μεμυθολογημένα πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἀκούειν ii. 378 E), 100;

(ἐπινεύειν τοῦτο πρὸς αὑτήν iv. 437 C),

(πρδs ἀλήθειαν x. 597 Λ), 443 (cp. note on <math>ib. 605 Λ, p. 455);

(καὶ πρὸς . . . τῷ ζωτικῷ ἄγρυπνον ib. 610 E), 462.

προσάγω (καὶ τὸ προσάγεσθαι τῷ ἀπωθεῖσθαι iv. 437 B), 194.

προσείπον (προσείπωμεν δὲ αὐτ $\hat{\eta}$  x. 607 B), 458.

προσέχω (δεί ἄρα καὶ τοῦτο προσέχειν τὸ μάθημα vii. 521 D), 328.

προσήγορος, 369.

προσήκω (ἆρ' οὐχ ὡς ἀληθῶς προσήκοντα ἀκοῦσαι σοφίσματα vi. 496 Λ), 284. πρόστασις, 417.

προστατήσετον, conj. Bekker for προστάτησετον (iv. 442 A), 203.

προσφέρω (τὰ φορτικὰ αὐτῶ προσφέροντες iv. 442 E), 204.

πρότερον (μαντεύομαι δὲ μηδένα αὐτὰ πρότερον ἡνώσεσθαι ἱκανῶς vi. 506 Δ), 302.

προφαίνω (τῷ νῦν προφαινομένω λόγω viii. 545 B), 363.

πρώτος (ἐν ῷ πρώτῳ viii. 546 B), 367. πτοέω (καὶ περὶ τὰς ἄλλας ἐπιθυμίας ἐπτόηται iv. 439 D), 198. πυθμήν (ὧν ἐπίτριτος πυθμήν viii. 546 C), 370, 371, 372.

πύκνωμα, 342.

πωλουμένων, suggested for ἀποδομένων (viii. 568 D), 406.

δημα = 'an expression,' opposed to<math>δνομα = 'a word,' 34.

ρητόs, 372.

δυθμός, various uses and meanings of, 127.

σαφήνεια (διὰ δὲ τὴν τούτου σαφήνειαν vii. 524 C), 331.

σκευαστός (τὰς τῶν σκευαστῶν σκιάς vii. 515 °C), 317.

σκεύος (καὶ . . . τά γε ξύνθετα πάντα σκεύη ii. 381 A), 105.

σκιά (περὶ τῶν τοῦ δικαίου σκιῶν vii. 517 D), 321;

(τας τῶν σκευαστῶν σκιάς ib. 515 C), 315.

σκιαγραφία, 73, 426.

σκυτοτόμος, 82.

σμικρός, 414.

σοφιστής = 'the master of an art,' 442. σπουδάζω (καὶ καλοῦ αῦ σπουδάζει v. 452 E), 217.

στέγω (οὐδὲ τὸ στέγον ξαυτῶν πιμπλάντες ix. 586 B), 430.

**στερεός** (τοῦτο . . . ἤδη στερεώτερον i. 348 E), 47.

στοιχεῖον (ὅτε τὰ στοιχεῖα μὴ λανθάνοι ἡμᾶς ὀλίγα ὄντα iii. 402 A), 138.

στραγγευομένω, to be read for στρατευομένω (v. 472 A), 249.

συγχωρέω, with a double construction,

συζεύγνυμι (πεμπάδι συζυγείς viii. 546 C), 370, 372.

σύνερξις, 230.

σύννοια, 408.

συστρέφω (συστρέψας ξαυτὸν ώσπερ θηρίον i. 336 B), 25.

συχνός (ίνα μὴ ἐῶμεν ἱκανὸν λόγον ἡ συχνὸν διεξίωμεν ii. 376 D), 95.

σφόδρα, 319.

σχέσις (περὶ τὴν τῶν ὅπλων σχέσιν ν. 452 C), 215.

σχῆμα (φωναίς τε καὶ σχήμασιν iii. 397 B), 126;

(οἱ περὶ τὰ σχήματά τε καὶ χρώματα ii. 373 B), 89.

σχολή (σχολης τε των άλλων πλείστης ... δεόμενον ii. 374 E), 92.

τάξις (ψυχῆς δὲ τάξιν οὐκ ἐνείναι x. 618 B), 479.

ταύτη (ταύτη Ιτέον, ως . . . φέρει ii. 365 D), 73.

τέγγω (τῷ μὴ τέγγεσθαι ὑπὸ κακοδοξίας ii, 361 C), 64.

τείνω (τῶν ἐπὶ πάντα τεινόντων τι λάβωμεν vii. 522 B), 328;

(πᾶσα ή κοινωνία ή κατὰ τὸ σῶμα πρὸς τὴν ψυχὴν τεταμένη v. 462 C), 236 (cp. note on ix. 584 C, p. 428).

τέμνω (τοῖς τότε τμηθεῖσιν [al. μιμηθεῖσιν] ώς εἰκόσι χρωμένη vi. 510 B), 308.

τετραγωνίζειν, 335.

τίθημι (θῶμεν . . . καὶ ἔχειν γε καλῶς, κ.τ.λ. v. 471 C), 248;

(πῶς χρη τοὺς δαιμονίους τε καὶ θείους τιθέναι ib. 469 A), 243;

(τίθεσθαι τὰ ὅπλα πρὸς τοῦ λογιστικοῦ iv. 440 E), 200.

τιμάω (καὶ \*ἐτίμα (conj. Schneider) μάλιστα viii. 554 B), 384;

(δεδοξασμένοις τε καὶ τετιμημένοις vi. 511 A), 311.

τιμή, active verbal use of, 61, 72:—
(ἀλλὰ τὴν τῆ φύσει προσήκουσαν τιμὴν ἀποδόντες iii. 415 C), 158.

τis = πο $\hat{ι}$ ός τis, 353:—

(ἀλλὰ τί οἴει; i. 332 C), 17;

(ὅτι δὴ τί μάλιστα ib. 343 Λ), 38; (τί μάλιστα ; ἔφην v. 449 Β), 210.

τις (πᾶσά τις ταραχή x. 602 C), 451; (τοὺς δέ τινας i. 339 C), 31:— adverbial use of τι, 422.

τόκος, 303.

τότε (τότε καὶ εἶδον ἐγώ i. 350 D), 50.

τραγικῶς (τραγικῶς . . . κινδυνεύω λέγειν iii. 413 B), 154.

τριβή (καὶ χρόνου τριβη vi. 493 B), 280. τρίζω, use of, in Homer, 111.

τρίτος ἄνθρωπος, the argument of the, 36, 37.

τριττά, 446.

τριττυαρχέω, 256.

τρόπος: παντί τρύπω, 57;

κατά τρόπον, 423.

τύχη (θεοφιλείς ξμὰς τύχας | παιῶν' ξπευφήμησεν (ap. Aesch.) ii. 383 B), 108.

ύγιής (ὡς τῆς αἰσθήσεως οὐδὲν ὑγιὲς ποιούσης vii. 523 B), 330.

ύμνεῖν, intransitive, 237.

ύπάρχω (τοῦτο μὲν ἄρα ὑπαρκτέον v. 467 C), 242.

ὑπάτη, ἡ, in the Greek musical scale, 206.

ύπεξαιρέω, 404.

[ύπερ]πλοῦτος, 397.

ύπερτελής, 369.

ὑπέχοντα, not to be read for ἐπέχοντα (iii. 399 B), 131.

ύπηρετέω (οὶ αν ύπηρετωσιν x. 601 D), 450.

ύπό, confused with ἀπό, in MSS., 65. ὑπογράφω (οὐκοῦν μετὰ ταῦτα οἴει ὑπογράψασθαι ἀν τὸ σχῆμα τῆς πολιτείας; vi. 501 A), 295.

ύπόζωμα, 473.

ύποκατακλίνω (ύποκατακλινόμενοι ύμιν αὐτοι̂s i. 336 C), 25.

ύπόκειμαι (ύποκείσονται άρα δεόμενοι καὶ τιμῶντες vi. 494 C), 282;

(ὑποικείμενον εν ἐκάστῳ τούτων ix. 581 C), 423.

ὑποκινέω, distinguished from παρακινέω,

ύπολαμβάνω (ἐν τούτῳ ὑπέλαβε Πολέμαρχος viii. 544 A), 361;

 $(\ddot{\epsilon}\phi\theta\eta s . . . \dot{\epsilon}\dot{\epsilon}\dot{n}\dot{\omega}v \dot{\eta} \ddot{\epsilon}\mu\epsilon\lambda\lambda ov \dot{\upsilon}\pi o-\lambda\dot{\eta}\psi\epsilon\sigma\theta\alpha\iota v. 466 d.), 241.$ 

ύπόνοια (ἐν ὑπονοίαις πεποιημένας ii. 378 D), 100.

ύποπίνω (μετρίως ύποπίνοντες ii. 372 D), 87.

ύποσημαίνω, 402. ύπόχαλκος, 158.

φαίνω: various uses of οὐ φαίνεται, 43, 263.

φαῦλος, ironical use of, 169, 329.

φέρω (δύξαν εἰς δίναμιν , . . οἴσομεν ; v. 477 E), 259. φημί (τάχα μᾶλλον φήσεις x. 506 B),

441 :--

use of the infinitive for the second person imperative, 252.

φθίνω (καὶ αὐξύντων καὶ φθινόντων viii. 546 B), 369.

φθόγγος (ὥσπερ ἐν τοῖς φθύγγοις τέτταρα [ςc. εἴδη] iii. 400 A), 133.

φίλιος, 155.

φιλονεικείν, φιλόνεικος, 28.

φιλοσοφία = 'the higher kinds of knowledge,' 339.

φιλοφρονείσθαι, 337.

φορτικώς, 76.

φυλακή, 374, 456.

φυλάττω (ἐὰν τὸ λεγόμενον εν μέγα φυλάττωσι iv. 423 E), 170;

(ὅταν αὐτὴν ὁ σιδηροῦς φύλαξ ἡ ὁ χαλκοῦς φυλάξη iii. 415 C), 158;

(τὸν ὡς ἀληθῶς ποιμένα . . . ἀκριβῶς φυλάξαι i. 345 C), 42.

φῦσα (φύσας τε καὶ κατάρρους iii, 405 C),

φύσις (εἰ φίσει τοιάδε ξυμβαίνοι αὐτοῖς vii. 515 C), 318;

(ἐν τῆ φύσει x. 597 C, 598 A), 443,

(την δε τοῦ σφονδύλου φύσιν εἶναι τοιάνδε <math>ib. 616 D), 474:—

opposed to νόμος, 60.

**φυτόν** (σῶμα . . . καὶ πᾶν φυτόν ii. 380 E),

**χαίρω** (καὶ ὀρθῶς δὴ \*χαίρων [conj. Vermehren] . . . καταδεχόμενος iii. 401 E), 137.

χαλαρός (αἴτινες χαλαραὶ καλοῦνται [sc. άρμονίαι] iii. 398 E), 130.

χαλεπός, with infinitive, 11.

χαλεστραίον, 181.

χαρίεις (τί δέ; ... τόδε αὐτῶν οὐ χαρίεν, κ.τ.λ. iv. 426 A), 174, 175 (cp. note on x. 602 A, p. 450).

χράομαι (πάνυ μοι μετρίως χρήσει iv. 432 C), 186;

(ὅ τι χρήσωμαι ii. 368 B), 79.

χρεία (ἐν . . . χρεία τινὶ τῆ πρὸς ἀλλήλους ii. 372 A), 86.

χρησμωδέω (τὸν τῶν πολλῶν . . . χρησμωδέις βίον ix. 586 B), 430.

χρυσοχοέω, 212.

ώs, before genitive absolute, 5;

= 'how,' 247;

= 'quasi,' 306 :-

(ώς δη όμοιον τοῦτο ἐκείνω i. 337 C), 27;

(ως δέ, δηλον ii. 366 d), 75;

(οὐδ' ὡς ταμίας ἡμῖν Ζεύς ἰδ. 379 Ε), 101;

(ωs οδόν τε, lect. prob., iii. 387 C),

(ώς πλήθει ib. 389 D), 115.

ώστε (ὥστ' εἶναί που ἐλλόγιμος iii. 394 E), 123 ;

(ὥστε καὶ κακοὺς γίγνεσθαι iv. 421 D), 165.

ώφελία, 446.

THE END.



